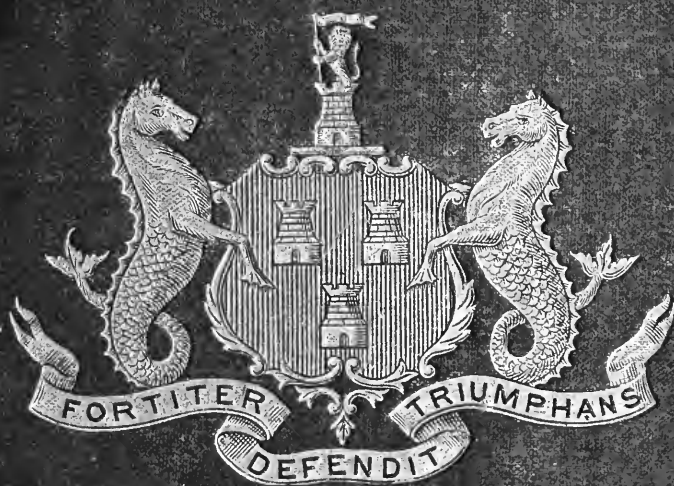




3 1761 03621 2314





PURCHASED FOR THE  
*UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY*  
FROM THE  
*CANADA COUNCIL SPECIAL GRANT*  
FOR  
ECONOMIC HISTORY



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
University of Toronto



HISTORY  
OF  
NEWCASTLE  
AND  
GATESHEAD

VOL. III.

*SIXTEENTH & SEVENTEENTH CENTURIES.*

EDITED BY

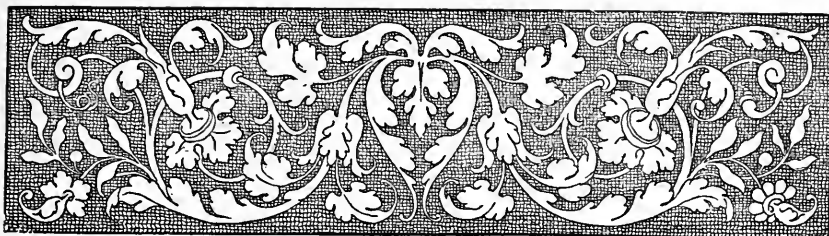
**RICHARD WELFORD.**

AUTHOR OF "A HISTORY OF THE PARISH OF GOSFORTH," "THE MONUMENTS  
OF ST NICHOLAS' CHURCH, NEWCASTLE," "PICTURES OF TYNESIDE  
SIXTY YEARS AGO," ETC.

LONDON:  
WALTER SCOTT, 24 WARWICK LANE.

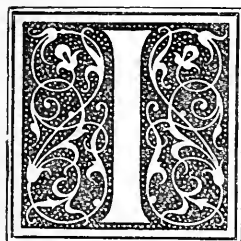
1887.





## Preface.

---



IN the first volume of this series of records relating to Newcastle and Gateshead it was easy to find room for the local events of two centuries. The contents of the second volume encompassed eighty years. Into this, the third collection, it has not been found practicable to compress the annals of much more than half a century.

Commencing with the year 1581, in the middle of Queen Elizabeth's reign, the book ends with the year 1640, when religious differences with Scotland, and grievances at home, were driving both kingdoms into Civil War.

During the greater portion of this period the records show us the people of Tyneside engaged in extending their trade, and developing new branches of industry. The later years of Elizabeth, and the reign of James the First, were not fruitful in imperial events that specially affected the Northern counties, or interfered with the commercial progress of Northern communities. Echoes of wars and treasons, rumours of plots and conspiracies, sometimes reached them, and there were frequent alarms of Spanish invasion, and recurring fears of designs by Spaniard or Frenchman, belligerent or pirate, upon the great coal fleet which sailed regularly between the Tyne and the Thames, and away to the Low Countries and France. Occasional border raids, too, kept the northern and western parts of Northumberland in a state of ferment and anxiety; while there was seldom

absent a vague apprehension of danger from jesuit and papist, at home or abroad. But the foreign scares passed harmlessly over; the union of the English and Scottish crowns joined two long-warring peoples in bonds of friendship and peace; the adherents of the old faith were coerced into subjection, or driven into exile. Under the last of the Tudors, and under the first of the Stuarts, Tyneside enjoyed periods of repose from war and war's alarms, to which it had rarely been accustomed.

After the accession of Charles I. the course of peace and prosperity in Northern England was diverted. Dread of piracy, fear of Spain, impatience of taxation, and the widening quarrel between king and parliament, discouraged manufacture and paralysed commerce. From 1625 to the end of the volume these pages are filled with dismal records of imposition and exaction on the one hand, and remonstrance and impoverishment on the other. In the discussions to which they gave rise, the defences of Newcastle and the Tyne were neglected. In prosperous times industrial fervour had weakened the military spirit of the inhabitants; and now, in the years of adversity, when protection was sorely needed, the means of affording it were not forthcoming. The fortifications of Newcastle, which, for generations, had been "the principal refuge for the North country in time of war," had fallen into decay; even the great bridge of Tyne was allowed to become dilapidated. When, after long suspense, it became evident that war was at hand, the town was unprepared for serious resistance. The first hostile force that demanded admission marched straight in—Newcastle surrendered without striking a blow.

The staple industry of Tyneside then, as now, was the coal trade. Although the appliances for winning and extracting minerals were rude, and the means of transit uncertain, the trade had developed into one of the leading commercial enterprises of the kingdom. Newcastle coal had become an important source of revenue to the Crown; it contributed to the enrichment of the municipality; and while, like all mining operations, the working of it was attended with great risk, and the selling of it was weighted by heavy burdens, yet to most of those who were privileged to engage in the trade came wealth and prosperity. A considerable portion of this volume is

occupied by details of royal grants and orders in council conferring privileges in this great industry, by protests from those who suffered from such monopolies, and by particulars of squabbles among the townspeople as to their respective shares in the profits. From the complaints of the citizens of London and the replies of the coal-owners, and from proceedings in the Star Chamber and in Parliament, we learn how the trade was manipulated to supply the needs of the Crown, and to satisfy the greed of private persons. Through the angry correspondence which attended the "grand lease" of the rich coal-yielding manors of Gateshead and Whickham, we derive new light as to the standing and character of the men who formed the governing body in Newcastle, and learn something fresh about the motives which inspired their public action and regulated their private conduct. The coal monopoly was the source of endless discussion ; it became one of the grievances which led to the outbreak of Civil War.

Attracted by the handiness and cheapness of mineral fuel, other industries upon Tyneside were rising into importance. There were salt works at the harbour mouth, which produced increasing quantities of an indispensable article, and provided employment for salters and shovellers, keelmen and wainmen, in considerable numbers. Sir Robert Mansell, vice-admiral of England, aided by three noble Huguenot families, fugitives from persecution in Lorraine, commenced to make glass upon the Tyne, and in no long time he had succeeded in establishing, upon the eastern boundary of Newcastle, an industry that, in after years, grew until Tyneside produced two-fifths of all the glass manufactured in England, and more than the whole output of France. Concurrently with these developments of commercial activity, the ships of the Tyne increased in size, and the sailors in numbers. It was computed in 1614 that two hundred sail of hoys, great and small, were engaged in serving with Newcastle coal the city of London alone, and that as many more were employed in supplying the wants of the sea-coast towns.

Next to commerce, the great subject of public interest in Newcastle was that of religion. It is possible that the varying currents of opinion ran with greater force in that direction here than elsewhere. Situated midway, so to speak, between puritanical fervour in the north and prelatical zeal in the south, the town was especially liable

to become the debating ground of faction, and the arena of religious strife. Under queen Elizabeth the river, with its ever-moving fleet of colliers, afforded facilities for surreptitious embarkation of fugitives from her persecutions, and for landing of plotters against her Draconian enactments. During the reigns of James and Charles freedom of immigration from beyond Tweed brought hither scores of hard-headed Scotchmen, who helped to dilute the intense loyalty of the authorities with a strong infusion of puritanism. Thus there were always hostile religious elements at work in the community, and the municipal rulers were ever busy in the task of repression. Against papist first, and puritan after—their hands were never idle. Basking in the sunshine of privilege, they were themselves devoted to the Crown, and they took care to admit into their own body, and into places of power and trust under them, none but those upon whose undoubted fidelity they could safely rely. King James, coming through the town on his way to take possession of the English crown, was surprised at the exuberant demonstrations with which he was greeted. "By my saul," he is said to have exclaimed, "they are enough to spoil a gude king." Loyal and devoted they remained throughout the fierce controversies which followed the accession of Charles. They did their best to cope with the rising tide, but they could not stem its flow. The puritan element, permeating the mass of the townspeople, spread to the higher classes. John Blakiston, Robert Bewick, John Fenwick, Henry Dawson, and Dr. Jenison, were all men of good family and good position, and when such men joined their humbler fellow-citizens in a crusade against royal exaction and episcopal pressure, the system of coercion, successfully practised in past generations, failed; the movement could no longer be restrained. At Michaelmas, 1639, the municipal supporters of the Crown were defeated in their own chamber. Disregarding alike royal counsel, clerical influence, and knightly authority, the twenty-four electors chose two puritans—Robert Bewick and John Emmerson—to be mayor and sheriff of Newcastle. A few months later the army of the covenant trooped across the border; the royalists were beaten in the "irreparable rout" at Newburn; the puritan mayor of Newcastle met upon Tyne bridge the victorious leader of the invading forces, and conducted him

into the town. Thus, for the first time in three hundred years, Newcastle was in possession of the Scots; upon the Tyne had been struck the first blow in that fierce struggle which, though postponed for a year or two, did not end till it had subverted the aristocracy, suppressed the church, and wrecked the throne.

In matters municipal the reigns of Elizabeth and James were favourable to the citizens of Newcastle. Already endowed with special grants and charters by successive monarchs, they obtained from these two sovereigns fresh concessions and secured new privileges. From the queen they received the transferred lease of the manors of Gateshead and Whickham before mentioned, and a new charter, by which the municipal body was invested with admiralty jurisdiction, entitled to appropriate fines and forfeitures, and authorised to receive, for the public benefit, all wreck and treasure coming within the port and harbour of the Tyne. Towards the end of her reign, her majesty, in a deed called "The Great Charter," confirmed to them all previous grants of herself and her predecessors, regulated the manner of electing the Corporation, reconstituted the local courts, established upon a surer foundation the Free Grammar School, and incorporated the fraternity of hostmen. King James confirmed, with some variations, Elizabeth's charter, refounded the hospitals of the Virgin Mary and St. Mary Magdalene, and vested in the mayor and aldermen, and certain members of the Merchants' Company and Trinity House, the conservancy of the river.

Thus favoured and enriched, the Corporation distinguished themselves by giving bountiful entertainments, and exercising munificent hospitality. When illustrious strangers passed through the town the mayor and his brethren received them royally, gave them presents, paid their charges, and sent them on their way rejoicing. A dinner, which the corporation gave to the "States of Flanders," returning from a royal christening in the sister kingdom in 1594, reveals sumptuous hospitality which must have rivalled that of the metropolis. Nor did they limit to foreigners their liberality. Ambassadors from England to Scotland, the bishop of Durham, the lord president of the council, and other distinguished persons whom it was their desire to honour, or their interest to propitiate, received handsome gifts; the judges of assize at all times were feasted luxuriously; and on

occasions of public rejoicing in the town the expenditure upon banqueting and carousing was lavish to prodigality.

The population of Newcastle in the middle of the 15th century was, probably, ten thousand ; in the middle of the 16th century it was hardly more. The effect of natural increase, and the addition of settlers from beyond the border, had been counterbalanced by frequent visitations of pestilence, which, when mild, swept away the townspeople by scores, and, when aggravated, carried them off by hundreds. Between 1550 and 1579 the scourge came to Newcastle four or five times ; in the latter year two thousand of the inhabitants were its victims. Ten years afterwards over seventeen hundred persons were taken away, and in 1597 the plague was so severe that people died in the streets, and the town was practically excluded from intercourse with the outlying country. From thence to 1610 pestilence raged triennially, and was seldom absent in the intervals. In 1636 fully one-third of the inhabitants died, and the tide of population, which had begun to flow, after a mild visitation in 1625, was turned back to its markings a hundred years before.

The chief sources of the information contained in these pages are the State Papers, wills preserved at Durham, the books of the Corporation and the Incorporated Companies of Newcastle, T. J. Taylor's *Archæology of the Coal Trade*, the MS. collections of Brockett and Sharp, the volumes of the Surtees' Society, and the publications of the Newcastle Society of Antiquaries. Many documents are here printed for the first time ; others that, in a condensed form, have been published in local collections, are amplified ; a few, such as royal grants and charters, which have been fully transcribed by Brand and other accessible historians, are abridged and summarised.

Thanks are due, and are heartily given, to Mr. Clephan (whose contributions, as before, bear his initials), Col. Carr Ellison, Canons Lloyd and Franklin, the Rev. T. W. Carr, the Rev. John Reid, M.A., Mr. F. W. Dendy, Mr. Joseph Denison, and Mr. W. E. Adams, who have in various ways aided in the compilation of another somewhat dry, but, it is to be hoped, useful and manageable book.

\* \* \* The dates throughout are those of the historical year, commencing on the 1st of January.





Chronological + History  
OF  
Newcastle-upon-Tyne + and + Gateshead.

---

SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

~~~~~  
NINTH DECADE—1581-90.  
~~~~~

1581.

23 and 24 ELIZABETH.

Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

Richard Hodgson, Mayor, and Robert Atkinson, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—William Jenison.

Arms : Azure, a bend or, between two swans argent.

Sheriff—Henry Chapman.

Arms : Per chevron argent and gules, a crescent counterchanged ; in dexter chief  
a crescent sable.



EVERE laws were enacted against papists. The names of all recusants—*i.e.*, persons who declined to communicate in their respective parish churches—were to be sent up to the council; private houses were broken open by authority of parliament to search for priests and popish books, and torture was applied to prisoners to extort confession or recantation. "Spies and informers were let loose till the land swarmed with them; the adherents to the old faith were incessantly harassed, cast into prison on vague suspicions, ruined in their property and prospects."

*January 5.*

Date of the will of William Sotheran, of Newcastle, merchant. To be buried at All Saints' church. Leaves Alice, his wife, two houses; at her death his brother Robert to have one, and his wife's son, John Cooke, the other. To Elizabeth Cooke, his wife's daughter, 20s.; to Thomasine Cooke, and his sister, Elizabeth Sotheran, 10s. each. Executors—Robert and Alice Sotheran. Proved 13th March 1581.

*January 29.*

The family vault in St. Nicholas' church received to-day the remains of Cuthbert, son and co-heir of Cuthbert Ellison, whose will and inventory are summarised in vol ii., p. 324. Deceased married Elizabeth Metcalf, of Gloucester Hill, near Warkworth, by whom he had five sons. His will is not accessible—perhaps he died intestate—but the inventory remains. In his hall, or family apartment, he had tapestry hangings, a pair of virginals, a case for glasses, and the usual furniture of a well-to-do merchant. The counting-house contained one hundred and fifty-five ounces of double gilt plate, and forty-six ounces of plate parcel gilt, while the parlour, the little chamber above the buttery, the kitchen, the chamber above the kitchen, the fore chamber, and the little chamber over the shop, were fitted up in a manner suited to his position. His shop was not extensive, but at Nether Heworth he had a mill and a farm, with corn and cattle and implements of husbandry.

The rise of the Ellison family forms a valuable chapter of local biography. Mr. Clephan's genial pen has summarised it in the following paragraphs:—

John Ellison, the first of the name on municipal record, was bound apprentice to a merchant adventurer in Newcastle, as shewn by the books of the company, at Martinmas, 1523, and although he achieved no enrolment as sheriff or mayor, he took an active and serviceable

part in the affairs of the incorporation, was trusted and employed by his brethren, rode to and fro, even as far as the Thames, on their errands, and was commended and encouraged in his activities on their behalf. Cuthbert Ellison, who may be taken as the founder of the family on the Tyne, entered upon his apprenticeship in the following year. Industrious and prosperous, he was held in such respect and confidence by his fellow-burgesses that he passed upward to the offices of sheriff, mayor, and governor of the merchants' company; and the same succession of honours fell upon Robert Ellison, who was making the last payment for his freedom 32 Henry VIII.

Such were the three merchant-apprentices who made the name of Ellison familiarly known in Newcastle in the sixteenth century, and gave it a distinction which it has ever since retained—a distinction extending itself from the council chamber to the church and to parliament. It was one of the three—Cuthbert Ellison—who was governor of the merchants' company in the reign of Queen Mary, at the time when the famous sumptuary edict was launched against the apprentices, denouncing their extravagance in dress and manners, and making severe provision for their reformation; and he who feels tempted to moralise on the decadence of the age in which he lives, and sighs for the simplicity of bygone days, may turn to page 310 of our second volume and con over the 'Act for the Apparell of the Apryntices, made in November 1554, Mr. Cuthbert Ellyson then beyng Governour'—a statute for the restraint of the embryo merchants of the Tyne, and probably as inoperative as such experiments are apt to be.

The son and namesake of Cuthbert Ellison, bound apprentice to him in 1552, succeeded him in his mercantile pursuits, acquiring under his will, with other possessions, the house in the Bigg Market in which he dwelt, and where the intermarriage of Barbara Ellison with the family of Carr was celebrated. The inventory of the second Cuthbert, committed to print by the Surtees Society, enables us to go over the premises of a substantial merchant of the Tudor period—one of those homesteads on the Tyne in which peerages have had their rise; and take the reader with us—from the hall with its "payer of virginalls" (for the dwelling-place of the Ellisons had its musical instrument), to parlour and kitchen, buttery and brew-house, shop and counting-house.

From this roll of the personal possessions of the Newcastle merchant we know in what thoroughfare of the town he lived and laboured, the extent of his residence, and how it was stocked and furnished; and we have, beside, a note of his apparel, and may see him in imagination in the very habit in which he passed daily to and fro. Dying as above recorded, he was succeeded by another Cuthbert,

baptised twelve months before, who grew to man's estate, and had sons and daughters; and it was the destiny of Robert, son of this third Cuthbert Ellison, to play a more conspicuous part in the world than any member of the family who had gone before him. His lot was cast in a stormy period of our local and national history; he was in the prime of his manhood in the year of the siege of Newcastle; and he shared in the mutations that marked an age in which lords and bishops, and royalty itself, were for years in eclipse. Yet, in such a time, he purchased Hebburn; and it still remains in the family which his great-grand sire founded. [J. C.]

*February 27.*

Half-a-dozen lines of the will of Lawrence Rookbye, merchant, Newcastle, are printed by the Surtees Society. The document is here given at greater length, for testator belonged to the highest rank of merchants in Newcastle, and his bequests are valuable. In the muster of 1539 we see him entered as the servant, or most likely apprentice, of Robert Cromer. His sister was married to George Farnaby, a leading member of the corporate body. In the *Æconomia Rokebeiorum* the family relationships of deceased are thus set out:—"William Rokeby, esquire, an attorney-at-law, and justice of peace, married Grace, one of the daughters of Fith-Harris, in Mansfield; and by her had Ralph Rokeby, esquire, his eldest son, justice of the peace; William Rokeby, clerk, Archdeacon of Cleveland, and judge of one of the Spiritual Courts of York; and Lawrence Rokeby, gentleman, and merchant of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. Ralph, the son of William, had issue Robert Rokeby, esquire, owner of Marske, who liveth at this time (being 1593), I thank God, an honest and upright gentleman. William, another son of the same William, died without issue. Lawrence, another of William's sons, had issue, and John Rokeby, now dwelling at Newcastle-upon-Tyne. Rokeby, eldest son of Ralph of Marske, had by Salven, his wife, issue four sons—Ralph, Christopher, Robert, and . . . , and three daughters, Ellen, Margaret, and Joane. Ralph, the eldest, is married to [sic], and now dwelleth at Mansfield, and this is the pedigree of the house and branch of Marske, and Newcastle, whom God by learning, merchandise, honest lives, and good dealing, hath advanced to a worshipful ability, and place of credit in our country."

Neither deceased, nor any of his name, appears in the lists of mayors and sheriffs of Newcastle. Living in All Saints' parish, he instructs his executors—Robert Rookbye of Marske, and Alderman Henry Anderson—to bury him under his own stone in his parish church; gives his lands and tenements as in a former will (annexed,) except

that Robert, his son Robert's base-begotten son, is to have the new cellar in All Hallow Bank for twenty-one years, paying the old rent, if the said Robert live so long, otherwise the said cellar, and all other lands, etc., bequeathed him herein, to go to testator's son John. Leaves to his son, Cuthbert Rookbye, £20; to his cousin, Robert Rookbye, his stone pot with a silver cover; to his sons Cuthbert and John, and to Alice Farnaby, a silver pot each; to John, Cuthbert, and Robert Rookbye, a dozen silver spoons each (the best dozen he reserves to himself;) two nests of goblets are to be divided among Cuthbert, John, and Robert, son of Robert, deceased, above-mentioned. Gives two silver belts to Cuthbert, two to John, one to his sister Farnaby, and one to Robert Rookbye. One silver salt to Cuthbert, one to John, and one to Robert, son of Robert. Witnesses—James Middleton, George Farnaby, Edward Taylor, and Wm. Crawforth.

Then follows the former will, in which testator gives to his son Cuthbert for life his dwelling-house in Allhallowgate, with the implements in the same; a warehouse there, a burgage in Pilgrim Street, occupied by William Crawfurth, mariner; another burgage there, occupied by Thomas Robinson, tailor; a tenement without Pilgrim Street Gate, occupied by Alexander Cleugh, carriageman, and the moiety of a garden in Pilgrim Street, with remainder to his son John. Gives also to Cuthbert his patent of the office of the bailiwick of Heddon-on-the-Wall, with the fees, etc., on his paying 33s. 4d. yearly to Richard Anderson, of Newcastle, cooper, out of the burgage occupied by William Crawforth; an annual rent of 6s. 8d. out of a tenement in the Broad Garth, belonging to the heirs of Robert Litle, of Newcastle, merchant; an annual rent of 2s. out of a tenement in Plummer Chare, with remainder as before, to his son John. Gives his said son John a burgage on the Quayside, occupied by John Horne, vintner; the other moiety of the garden in Pilgrim Street; his tenements, barn, and closes in Sandgate, without the walls; a close of arable land, and 14 riggs or leazes of land in the Shieldfield, with remainder to testator's son, Cuthbert Rand, Robert Rookbye of Marske, and Christopher Rookbye of Mortham. To his base-begotten son Robert, son of his son Robert deceased, a tenement in the Broad Garth, and a tenement and meadow held by Roger Rawe, baker, with remainder to Cuthbert and John, Robert Rookbye of Marske, and Christopher of Mortham. Proved 2d August 1581.

*May 18.*

From the grant of arms to the family of Philipson of this date we learn the origin of the name:—"Forasmuch as Rowland Philipson, *alias* Thirlwall, of Calgarth, in the county of Westmoreland, and

Miles Philipson, *alias* Thirlwall, of Thwatterden Hall, in the county aforesaid, brother's sons to Christopher, son to Robert, son to Rowland Philipson, *alias* Thirlwall, of Thwatterden Hall aforesaid, which Rowland was descended of a younger brother, forth of the house of Thirlwall, in the county of Northumberland, which said Rowland, by reason of the Christian name of one of his ancestors, was called Philip, the younger son of the said Philip was called Philipson, and so continueth the same surname." The Philipsons of Newcastle trace their descent from this Rowland, who was born 30th August, 1516, and married Katherine, daughter of Richard Carus of Stavely. He was the son of Robert Philipson of Hollinghall, the first who took the name of Philipson.

*May 28.*

Date of a return and certificate indented of Richard Hodgson, mayor of Newcastle, and William Selby, esquire, commissioners of the queen, being two of the persons named in a commission of the 3rd April, for the first payment of a subsidy granted by parliament "to be levied upon all strangers born, the sum of their substance whereat every of them are assessed, and the money for the first payment thereof due to the queen, with the total sum thereof, and the name of the general collector of the same in that behalf appointed." "Massie Brigges, a Scott, assessed at nil, payeth by the poll 4d. [All the rest are Scots but two, and each has a line to himself like the foregoing.] John Browne, Maryan Brown, Elizabeth Steward, Elizabeth Hynde, Katherin Waterston, Nicolae Wood, Henry Williamson, John Stannee, Janet Fennick, Hugh Williamson, John Hodshon, . . . . Davison, widow, Elizabeth Marshall, Alice Rickbye, Marian Philipson, Janet Stewarde, David Anderson, Agnes Kirkus, Agnes Martyn, Jane Pope, Elizabeth Freer, Alexander Spence, Christian Read, Robert Tromble, Alexander Addeston, Janet Addeston, John Tully, Janet Tully, Marian Chapman, John Walles, Henry Garret, Christian Amorrie, John Clerck, John Carr, Christopher Howetson, Thomas Kyng, George Bevelston, David Bawflower, John Wilson, John Howetson, John Mote, George Turner, Thomas Bachelor, Cuthbert Browne, Christopher Carr, . . . . Dallahaie, widow, Alexander Grame, Elizabeth Marshall, Janet Shemanye; Edward Rix, John Graye, Thomas Clerck, Margaret Lee, . . . . Lowes, Christian Heron, Jane Skell, John Rennyson; Marck Anthony, an Italian; Paul Estman, a Dutchman." Sixty altogether, at 4d. each—20s. "We, her highnesses' commissioners aforesaid, have appointed Anthony Felton of London, gentleman, to be our collector, and he of the same to make account in the queen's majesty's court of exchequer at Westminster according to the said act of parliament in that case

provided. Signed, the 28th May—Richard Hodgson, William Selby."

*May 31.*

Buried this day, Alderman Christopher Mitford, sheriff of Newcastle in 1551, and mayor in 1556 and 1569. He was the son of an alderman and merchant of the same name, and married Jane, daughter of Henry Anderson, four times mayor of the town. His will directs that his body be buried under his father's stone in the church of St. Nicholas. To his son Henry he gives 40*l.*, besides 10*l.* that his grandfather Anderson left him; all his lands at Heaton, Tynemouth, and Denam, and in Newcastle (with remainder to his son Robert, and his daughter Alice Craster;) also his lease of coal mines at Kenton, held of Robert Fenwick. To his son Robert, 100*l.*, besides 10*l.* that his grandfather Anderson left him, and the lease of the coal mines in Elswick. To his wife Jane, his lease of his cousin Robert Mitford's lands in Heaton for life, with remainder to his son Henry; also his part of the lease of the salt pans he bought of Michael Mylborne, with remainder to his son Robert. To Edmund and Alice Craster, 20*l.*; to Jane Craster, daughter of Edmund, 10*l.* To Jane, daughter of his son Henry, 10*l.*, and to Christopher and Henry, Henry's sons, an angel a-piece. To each of his daughter Craster's children, 10*s.* To Jane, daughter of his son Robert, 10*l.*, and to Christopher, her brother, an angel. To Agnes, daughter of his son Henry, his sister Brandling's three children, and his sister Orde's two children, an angel each. To his cousin, Henry Anderson, and his good wife, for a token of his good-will, two old angels. To his sister, Marian Chapman, an old angel noble. To Barbara, his son Henry's wife, and Ellinor, his son Robert's wife, an angel noble a-piece. To his brother-in-law, Henry Anderson, and his godson, Abraham Anderson, each an angel. Residue to his son Robert, executor. [Various tokens to servants and friends]. Supervisors—Henry Anderson, alderman; Edmund Craster; Henry Mitford; George Stell. Proved July 5th, same year.

*June 30.*

The dispute respecting Admiralty jurisdiction which was discussed in October and November 1576 had not been satisfactorily adjusted, and the privy council write to the mayor and aldermen of Newcastle a peremptory letter in these terms:—"After our hearty commendations. Whereas upon complaint of one Henry Todd, late of Newcastle, deceased, for a certain contempt had and done by you, the mayor and aldermen, in condemning an execution against one John Baxter, gentleman, for the sum of 40*l.* 7*s.* due to the said Henry Todd, whereupon we directed forth our letters for the satisfying of the

said debt, for the said abuse, or else to show cause to the contrary. And now complaint being made again unto us by the wife and children of the said Henry Todd, that neither the debt is satisfied nor the contempt answered, we thought good again by these letters to require you not to fail upon the sight hereof, either to see present satisfaction of the said debt to the complainants, or else forthwith to make your personal appearing before us, to answer as well the contempt as the not satisfying of the same complainants. And hereof fail you not as ye will answer to the contrary. And so we bid you farewell."

*September 1.*

An ordinary of the company of masons of Newcastle of this date constitutes them a body incorporate of themselves, with perpetual succession; enjoins them to meet yearly to choose wardens, etc., and orders that whenever the general plays of the town, anciently called Corpus Christi plays, shall be played, they shall cause to be set forth and played, among other plays of the town, the play anciently called "The Burial of our Lady St. Mary the Virgin;" fining every absent brother 2s. 6d.; and that at the marriages and burials of brethren, and their wives, the company should attend to the church such persons to be married or buried. Members of the fraternity are not to dwell or inhabit anywhere out of the town, but perform watch and ward, and bear scot and lot as other burgesses ought to do. "And every brother neglecting his duty for to do, and doing contrary to the tenor hereof, to be utterly disfranchised, and to be removed from the said corporation for ever." One half of the fines are to go to the maintenance of "the great bridge," and the other half to the fellowship.

*September 22.*

Desiring to be buried in St. John's church, near his father, Humphrey Millerson of Benwell, yeoman, bequeaths to Ralph Anderson of that place a black bellied cow and four young ewe hoggs; to the three children of his brother, Robert Mole—John, Agnes, and Elizabeth—3*l.* a-piece; to John Stephenson, his wife's brother, of Berwick-on-the-Hill, a black stott; to Christopher Mole of Benwell, a russet jerkin and a russet pair of breeches, unmade in cloth. Other bequests to Ralph Anderson aforementioned, Mark, son of Ralph Anderson, and Isabel and Magdalen Watson, his wife's sister's daughters. Executors—Janet his wife and Robert his brother. Witnesses—Stephen Errington, George Wallis, Ralph Anderson, and Humphrey Sicklemore, clerk.

*October 16.*

One of the ancient body of waits or minstrels was interred in St.



Nicholas' churchyard in the person of John Barnes. By his will, dated four days before his funeral, he bequeathed to his apprentice, Nicholas Fletcher, all his musical instruments, "unless my fellow William Bennett will take and enjoy them, paying unto my said apprentice for them 13s. 4d.;" to his maid servant, over and above her wages, 3s. 4d.; "the rest to Agnes Twigbird, so that she have a just consideration of her daughter, Janet Story, to see her somewhat recompensed for such things of hers as I sometime did expend." Witnesses—William Bennett, wait, . . . Walters, chirurgion.

*October 28.*

Humphrey Yowton of Newcastle, miller, in his will of his date, wishes to be laid on the north side in Allhallows; leaves his eldest son Robert his framed table and an iron chimney; to his son Christopher, two pewter plates, a three year old quey, and a pottle pot; to his son John, two pieces of pewter and a pottle pot; to his daughter Hellinor, two pewter dublers, two copper basins, and a pottle pot. Wills that his mill be the aid, succour, and relief for the bringing up of his children during the lease. Gives his sister, Isabel Yowton, a brass pot and two candlesticks. Executors—his wife Margaret and his four children. Witnesses—William Cutter, Anthony Hunter, Robert Taylor, Cuthbert Ewbank, curate, and others. Proved 13th March 1582.

*December 12.*

Ninian, third son of Mark Shafto, died this day, and was buried with his kindred in St. Nicholas' church. His father and brother both filled the municipal chair, but he was content to remain an alderman. By his marriage with Anne, daughter of Henry Brandling, he had nine children, five of whom preceded him in the tomb. The eldest surviving son of the family, Robert, sheriff in 1607, was the father of Robert Shafto of Benwell Tower, and of Mark Shafto, recorder of Newcastle, who acquired the estate of Whitworth, and founded the family there. A MS. visitation of Northumberland in 1615, by Sir Richard St. George, preserved in the library of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, quotes two inscriptions on stones in St. Nicholas'—one commemorating Ninian Shafto, and the other his brother Mark, mayor in 1578:—"Ninian Shafto, merchant and alderman, who died ye 12 of December 1581, with Anne his wife and their five sons, Stephen, Henry, Robert, John, and Henry." "Mark Shafto, merchant and alderman, and sometime mayor of this town, lieth here; and departed ye 9 of April 1593." Bourne mentions the stone with a later inscription:—"Mark Shafto, merchant adventurer, sometime mayor of this town, April 1593. Under the same lye [Ninian] Shafto, who

died December 1581, and Robert Shafto, alderman of this town, who died September 1623."

---

Payments made on behalf of the master and brethren of the Trinity House about this period include the following interesting items:—"To a poor woman that kept James Arnold the time he lay sick, 4d. ; a pair of shoes for Ally Cooke, 14d. ; paid in Mr. Briggs' in good cheer, 2s. 6d. ; Cornelius Brandling for his pains in perusing the evidences the 10th day of May 1581, and paid the 11th day of May for good cheer, in my gossip Gibson's, when Humphrey Taylor and Cornelius Brandling perused the writings, 3s. ; a coat cloth, for Janet Wilkinson, widow, 7s. 1d. ; to the poor, being Whitsun even, 3s. ; Isabel Stevenson, for her pains in watching the lime, 3d. ; Henry Huntley, for 6 loads of lime, 2s. 6d. ; Robert Tothericke, and his two sons, for 3½ days' work, 7s. ; James Rutlande, for bearing the sand, 8d. ; to Ledgert's wife, 4s. 8d. ; to making and lining her coat, 9s. ; Clement Anderson for 10 chalder of coals, 2*l.* 10s."

---

## 1582.

24 and 25 ELIZABETH.

Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

William Jenison, Mayor, and Henry Chapman, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—William Riddell.

Arms : Gules, a lion rampant within a bordure indented argent.

Sheriff—Henry Mitford.

Arms : Argent, a fess between three moles sable.



THE property near the Wall Knoll Tower, formerly the monastery of the Trinitarians, which, after the dissolution, had been conveyed to William Dent, by Gresham and Billingsford, grantees from the crown, was, sometime this year, transferred by alderman Dent and his son to William Jenison, mayor, and Richard Hodgson, alderman, in

trust for the corporation of Newcastle. A rent appears to have been reserved to the crown. In Bourne's time the east end of the chapel was standing. When City Road was formed, in 1882-3, a few stones, and a scattered heap or two of bones, were all that remained of the monks of St. Michael of the Wall Knoll, their house, their chapel, and their burying place.

*January 10.*

George Ellison of Newcastle, shipwright, in his will, proved 13th March following, desires to be buried in Allhallows church. Bequeaths to his brother, Stephen Ellison, all his work tools, silver whistle, three pair of breeches, a motley slop, and a fustian doublet laid with lace; the said Stephen to pay his (testator's) wife, 26s. 8d. Gives to his sister, Margaret Ellison, 50s.; to his brother, Andrew Ellison, all his ships (eight); to his brother, Cuthbert Ellison, his black doublet laid with lace; to his sister, Ann Ellison, 10s. Residue to his wife Isabel, executrix.

*February 12.*

The bishop of Durham disputed his liability to repair his portion of Tyne Bridge, endeavouring to throw the expense upon the county palatine, and to avoid payment out of the revenues of the bishopric. Issue was joined in the spring of 1581, and the cause taken into the court of exchequer. On the 9th June in that year the queen issued a commission to Ralph Lawson, Nicholas Girlington, junior, Richard Mauleverer, and John Middleton, esquires, to take evidence, the cause being described as that of Ralph Tailbois, George Lawson, William Hodgson, William Lee, and others the queen's tenants in the county palatine, plaintiffs, and Richard, bishop of Durham, defendant. The commissioners met at Durham in the summer, and examined the following witnesses on behalf of the plaintiffs:—Thomas Thompson of Gateshead, joiner, aged 80; Robert Mayson of Morden, yeoman, 87; Robert Chambers, butcher, 68; Ranold Walton, tailor, 66; William Carr, carpenter, 60; James Cole, smith, 63; all of Gateshead; Thomas Parker of Rickledon, barber, 87; George Laybourne, Durham, glover, 75; Nicholas Harrison, Whickham, yeoman, 80, and Ralph Russell, Newcastle, barber, aged 68. Witnesses for the bishop—Thomas Thomson, Gateshead, joiner, aged 80; William Lawson of Thorpe Bulmer, esquire, 60; Thomas Layton of Sexon, York, esquire, 65; Christopher Maire, Durham, gentleman, 61; Thomas Calverley, Esington, aged 48. Their evidence was duly filed in the exchequer, and on the 1st of this month of February the court ordered,

by the assent of the parties, "that Mr Chancellor and the Lord Chief Baron of this court and Mr. Baron Shute may think upon some reasonable means for the repairing of the said bridge, to be ordered and set down by the court as a decree upon this suit."

The end of the dispute was, that upon the date which heads this paragraph the court decreed the liability of the bishop, and his lordship, like his predecessors, had to defray the cost out of the revenues of the see.

*June 11.*

Proved, at Durham, the will of John Sotheran, merchant, of Newcastle, who was buried on the 19th May at St. Nicholas' church. He left his house in Newcastle to his wife Florence, and then to his sons Thomas, Nicholas, and John in succession. 20*l.* which his brother William owed him, he gave to his brother's sons, Rowland, Roger, Robert, and Cuthbert; and 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* to his nephew, William Sotheran. Mentions his father-in-law, Robert Robinson; his brother-in-law, Ralph Harle, and his children, James and Margaret Harle; also his cousin, Thomas Horsley. Supervisors—Nicholas Hedley, George Farnaby, and Thomas Horsley. The inventory of his effects exhibits the usual variety of articles, and the value of his personal estate in Newcastle and at Heworth was 1355*l.* 6*s.* 1*d.*

*June 23.*

Thomas Akenside, Janet his wife, and Robert Akenside, all of the parish of St. Andrew, Newcastle, presented for witchcraft and sorcery before the Consistory Court of Durham, were ordered to appear this day and purge themselves, by the hands, in each case, of four honest neighbours. They appeared accordingly. Thomas and Janet produced as compurgators John Chanlye, Walter Robson, Gerard Burn, and Oswald Chater; Robert produced on his behalf Thomas Foggart, William Hall, Richard Readot, and Edward Harcas, in whose presence the accused, upon their oaths, denied that the accusation was true. And the compurgators said and deposed that they believed the said Thomas and Janet and Robert had sworn truly. Whereupon the judge pronounced that the accused had lawfully and canonically purged their offence, and he restored them to their original fame with letters testimonial. Furthermore the judge adjured the aforesaid Thomas, Janet, and Robert, that they never use any sorcery or witchcraft hereafter.

*July 28.*

Buried in St. Nicholas' church John Lassels, the first of the sword-bearers attached to the corporation of Newcastle of whom we

have official record. Sword-bearers in the sixteenth century were gentlemen of fairly good position, and John Lassels, although apparently not too well furnished with worldly goods himself, was well connected. One of his daughters married John Lawson of Chesterle-Street, and another became the wife of Henry Tennant, merchant, sheriff of Newcastle in the year that his brother-in-law Lawson died. Lassels, in his will, desires to be buried in St. George's porch, St. Nicholas', near his wife Anne; bequeaths to his son, George Lassels of Darlington, his best gown, faced with black budge, his best doublet of satin, black chamlet jacket guarded with velvet, 6 silver spoons with lions on their ends, one white silver piece, and a doublet of black worsted; to his daughters, Margaret Sheills, Elizabeth Tennant, and Anne Casson, two silver spoons and 10s. a-piece. Residue to his son William, executor. Supervisor—William Selby, alderman.

*August 6.*

The will of Thomas Heron of Newcastle, merchant, signed on this date and proved 9th November, contains the following entry:—"I will that if my wife be with child, and God send it to be a son, I will that he shall have all my lands, except that land in Mickel Benton which my daughter Margaret must have; and if it shall please God to send it a daughter, I will that then she shall be joined with my two daughters, Margaret Heron and Barbrey Heron, to have her equal portion. I give the child my wife is with, and the portion due to it, to my cousin, Mr. Henry Anderson, esquire, until it come to lawful age." His eldest daughter Margaret and her portion he gave to his cousin, Henry Mitford; his second daughter, Barbrey, and her portion, to his cousin, Henry Chapman, "now sheriff." The living children and the one unborn to be executors, and Henry Anderson, Henry Mitford, and Henry Chapman, supervisors.

*August 14.*

Died, Isabel, wife of Henry Anderson, M.P. She was the younger of two daughters and co-heirs of Christopher Morland of Pittington, and at the time of her death was only thirty-three years of age. Four daughters survived her—Barbara, who married William, afterwards Sir William, Gascoigne of Ravensworth; Alice, who became the wife of John Gower; Elizabeth, wife of Isaac Anderson of Newcastle; and Isabel, who was united to Thomas, afterwards Sir Thomas, Liddell of Ravensworth, baronet. Deceased was interred in St. Nicholas' on the 15th, and her tombstone, surviving alike puritan and churchwarden, still preserves, in well-worn characters, the statement that "Heare lieth buried the corpes of Isabell Anderson, late wyf of Henry

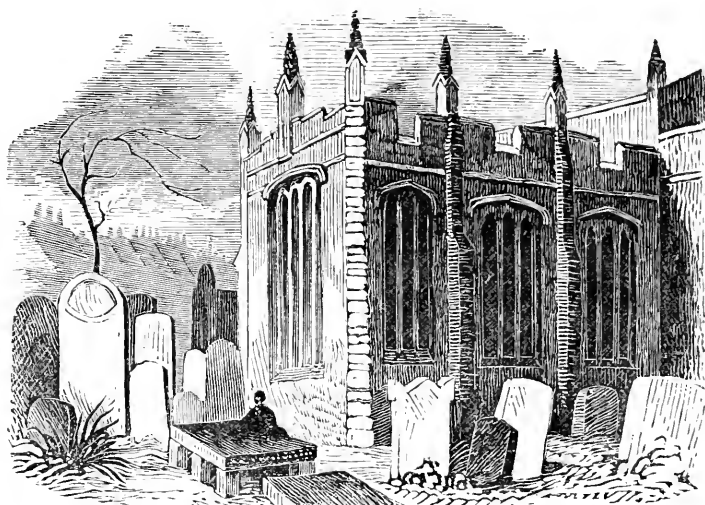
Andersonn, marchant & alderman of this towne, who deceased the xiv. daye of August an. dni. 1582. Bewayled of the poore that tasted much her renowined vertue."

*November 10.*

Oswald Chaitor, linen weaver, appointed parish clerk of St. John's, Newcastle, "to read, sing, respond, and assist in the divine office in the said chapel of St. John in the town of Newcastle."

*December 17.*

Addition made to the ordinary of the drapers' company of Newcastle — "No brother of the fellowship now, or hereafter, shall take or receive for his apprentice, any more than one apprentice, before that his apprentice now present being bound to him for the term before in this order mentioned, have served his master by the term of six years fully to be expired, ended, and run ; otherwise the offender, being a brother of the company, and so offending, shall forfeit and pay to the use of the company of this said fellowship for every offence so by him committed, 10*l.* without any further delay. Also it is agreed and ordained that all such apprentice as is to be or enjoy any freedom amongst the fellowship aforesaid shall, within one whole year after the expiration of his indenture, come in to the said company for his freedom, or else to pay for his offence in not doing the same the sum of 26*s.* 8*d.* And also, if any do challenge their freedom by patrimony, and not coming in upon lawful warning, he shall pay for his offence the sum of 33*s.* 4*d.*"



ST. JOHN'S CHURCH, NEWCASTLE (SOUTH TRANSEPT), 1843.

1583.

25 and 26 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***William Riddell, Mayor, and Henry Mitford, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Henry Anderson.**

Arms : Gules, three oak trees argent, acorned or.

**Sheriff—Roger Nicholson.**

Arms: Argent, on a pale sable, three martlets or ; in sinister chief a mullet of the second.



O date of incorporation of the company of bakers and brewers of Newcastle has been recorded, but "an old ordinary of the society, now lost, appears to have been in their possession in this year, 1583, and long afterwards, as several entries in the old books testify."

*March 3.*

Bernard Gilpin, rector of Houghton-le-Spring, the "apostle of the north," died. In his will he bequeathed 4*l.* to the poor of Newcastle, and to "Elizabeth Gilpin, dwelling in Newcastle, above the 5*l.* which I do owe her for my mother's legacy, other 5*l.*" Expressing his desire for the success of Kepier school, he enumerates his purchases of land, etc., to maintain it, and, among others, mentions that he bought of Mr. Roger Rawe, merchant of Newcastle, a fine in Houghton, called the White House. "I paid to Mr. Rawe for it the sum of 15*l.*, since that it hath cost me, in reparations and other charges, well towards 5*l.* ; it is surrendered by Mr. Rawe and his children, but it remaineth still un-fined to the school, till my lord's [the bishop's] pleasure be known, both for it and such others. Also there is given to our foundation out of the lands of Cocken, by Mr. William Carr of blessed memory, a rent of five marks by the year ; . . . there is also given to our foundation out of the town chamber of Newcastle, by the gift and appointment of Mr. John Franklin of blessed memory, one pension of four nobles by the year, to be paid all at one payment, about St. Andrew's day, before Christmas, and to be bestowed wholly

among the poor of Houghton parish ; for this we have no evidence to show, but only a writing of Mr. John Franklin, written all with his own hand, with his name subscribed, but no seal ; these gifts I trust will stand sure enough," etc. One of Gilpin's biographers, Carlton, afterwards bishop of Chichester, relates the following story about the rector of Houghton and a Newcastle citizen :—

"After that age began to grow upon him, there was in the town of Newcastle one Genison, who had received to home a son of his own brother's lately returned from the parts beyond the seas. This Genison was much aggrieved for that his brother's son was, as he understood, made a Jesuit. Whereupon he sent the young man to Mr. Gilpin, intreating him to have a care of him, and to dissuade him if he could possibly from his wicked and dangerous opinions. After that Mr. Gilpin had often conferred with him, he found the young fellow most insolently proud, and armed with boldness and impudence, corrupting the holy scriptures with certain new and unheard of expositions. Whereupon Mr. Gilpin wrote to his uncle, Mr. Genison, that he was a most audacious young fellow, and came not to him to be instructed, but to teach him rather."

*March 20.*

On this day James Cole of Gateshead, aged 64, signed his last will and testament. Following the calling of a smith, he had managed to accumulate money, and to place his sons in positions favourable to an increase of the family store. His descendants, the Coles of Newcastle and Brancepeth, rose to eminence in the civil wars. Charles I. made one of them a baronet, but misfortune followed, and the grandchildren of the baronet died in comparative poverty.

James Cole's will contains the following bequests :—To the poor 20s., and to the poor box, 10s. To his wife, Jane Cole, his dwelling-house for life, with remainders to his sons Ralph, Richard, Thomas, and Nicholas successively. To his son Nicholas the house he (Nicholas) occupied, 20*l.*, and a quarter of a quarry, with the working gear belonging to it. To Ralph, 52*l.* 18s., owing by him to testator, and an old ryall. To his son Richard, 20*l.* and four angels. To James Cole, son of Nicholas, 3*l.* 6s. 8d. ; to Ralph and Janet Cole, each 20s. ; to Robert Cole, Ralph's son, 20s. To his sons Richard and Thomas, 10*l.* each, and to his daughter Jane, an angel. To his sister, Anne Mylborn, 20s., to her son, Robert Mylborn, 10s., and to her daughter, Christobel Tyndell, 5s. To Edward Howeson, his sister's son, his bellows and stedye hammers, tongs, "nayll-toylves," and all his shoeing gear. To his servant, Henry Houton, and to Edward Cole,



Margaret Hethe, and Isabel Pattison, 12d. each. Residue to his wife Jane.

Goods in his shop comprised the usual gear—84 dozen new horse shoes, valued at 4*l.* 4s.; 6000 horseshoe nails, 24s.; 600 “hetche” nails, 3s.; 1500 latt brods, 6s.; 1200 single nails, 5s.; 200 single tack nails, 2s. 4d.; 27 dozen wain clouts, 3*l.* 6s. 8d.; 19 bands for wheels, 2s. 4d.; 42 stone English iron, 42s., and 65 stone of old iron, 56s. At the bishop’s staith and Heworth staith he had 101 chalder of grindstones, 35*l.* 7s.; in money and gold he had 5*l.* 10s.; 30 fire daylls, 20s.; 2 barrels of salmon, 6*l.*; 5 salmon-sheets for nets, etc., 20s.; a fishing boat with nets, etc., 40s.; leases of a house, a close, and a fishery, 10*l.*

*May 9.*

Ralph Pattinson, clerk, presented to the mastership of the Virgin Mary Hospital, by the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle. Pattinson gave a bond of 100*l.* to the bishop of Durham for the faithful discharge of his duties in accordance with the statute and deed of foundation of the hospital.

*June 30.*

Proved at Durham the will of Marion Chapman, widow of Oswald Chapman (sheriff of Newcastle 1545, mayor 1558), and daughter of Henry Anderson, four times mayor. Bequeaths to her son Matthew, 100*l.*; to her daughter Emat, all her household stuff and plate; to the four sons and one daughter of Matthew Chapman, 4*l.* a-piece; to the four younger daughters of her son-in-law, Roger Nicholson, and his wife Jane, 4*l.* a-piece, and to the two elder daughters, 20s. a-piece; to her sister Mitford, 13s. 4d. Executor—her son, Henry Chapman.

*August 12.*

Sir Valentine Broune, congratulating Secretary Walsingham on his intention to come north, and not dealing with the behaviour of the people who would resort to him after he had passed the Tyne, or before, “nor their long speeches, tending to the praise of themselves, and their great services to the realm,” craves, for the good of queen and country, that, in his passage or returning, he will visit Newcastle, and her majesty’s house there, with the river and the fort standing upon the mouth of the haven, which was called Tynemouth Abbey, and so along the sea coast, where, besides the castles of Alnwick and Warkworth, belonging to the earl of Northumberland, and other houses of gentlemen kept in good repair, he will see the great and ruinous castles of Dunstanborough and Bamborough, with the towns adjoining, that were of great receipts for her majesty’s forces in his time, but now laid waste for sheep and husbandry, and the

people clean driven away that should have been succours to such as might be placed there.

*November 12.*

The queen granted to Henry Anderson and William Selby of Newcastle, for the residue of two terms of 79 and 99 years, a lease of the manors of Gateshead and Whickham :—" Elizabeth, etc., greeting. Whereas the rev. father in God, Richard, by God's permission now bishop of the bishopric of Durham, by his indenture or deed indented, bearing date the 20th June, in the 23rd year of our reign [1581], and enrolled of record in our Court of Chancery, hath, amongst other things therein contained, given, granted, demised, and to farm letten, unto us and our assigns, for the term of 79 years, to be accounted from the feast of St. Martin the bishop in winter, which was in the 19th year of our reign [1577], without impeachment of any manner of waste : All those his lordship's towns and boroughs of Gateshead, also Gateshead and Whickham, with their appurtenances, in the county of Durham, etc. And whereas the said bishop of Durham, by one other his indenture or deed indented, bearing date the 26th April, in the 24th year of our reign [1582], and enrolled, etc., hath given, etc., unto us and our assigns for the term of 99 years, etc. [as above]. Know ye that we, for the good and faithful service done unto us by our trusty and well-beloved servant, Thomas Sutton, master of our ordinance in our north parts, and at his humble suit and petition to us made in that behalf, of our especial grace, etc., have accepted and received, etc., the said two several indentures and deeds indented, gifts, grants, demises, and leases, and either of them, and all manner of grants, covenants, liberties, commodities, demands which we or our assigns have or may have by virtue or means of the said indentures, etc. And further, know ye that we, for the consideration aforesaid, and of our special grace, etc., hath given, granted, etc., unto our well-beloved subjects, Henry Anderson and William Selby, of our town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, aldermen, not only the said indentures, etc., but also all our estates, rights, titles, interests, uses, possessions, terms of years, claims and demands whatsoever, of, in, and to the said manors or lordships, etc. To have and to hold all and singular the said manors, etc., unto the said Henry Anderson and William Selby, and to the survivors of them, and to his and their executors, administrators, and assigns, for and during all the said whole and several terms, etc., without any rent, service, or account whatsoever therefor to be had, made, or done unto us, our heirs or successors, for the premises, or any part or parcel thereof, etc."

This lease, known as the "grand lease," was apportioned among

the society of hostmen for the benefit of the town, and became a fruitful source of contention in after years.

---

Leonard Harle brought Agnes Ripley, administratrix of the goods of Robert Ripley, late of Newcastle, her husband, before the court at Durham, in a dispute about a whistle. One of the witnesses, Leonard Diggles of Gateshead, testified that, four or five days before Ripley died, he went to see him, and heard Agnes say to him, "Bullie, thou hast given thy silver whistle and chain to Leonard Harle, but I trust thou shalt live to wear it thyself," whereunto the said Robert did not reply. Thought the value of the whistle was about 5*l.* 10*s.* John Armirer, of Newcastle, mariner, stated that he was in Ripley's house with Leonard Harle, Alan Gibson, Robert Ashe, Robert Chicken, and others, and the said Leonard going to the bed where Ripley lay, which was in the hall house, asked him how he did, calling him mate. Ripley answered, "I thank you much," and afterwards said, "I have given you a gift, that is, my whistle and chain, which I wear by sea." Harle gave him thanks, and said he trusted to see him live and wear it himself. Thought the whistle and chain well worth 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, or thereabout. [In the arms of the Trinity House are depicted a boatswain's whistle and chain. Testator was a mariner, and his whistle, from the value named by the witnesses, was probably of silver.]

---

## 1584.

26 and 27 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Henry Anderson, Mayor, and Roger Nicholson, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Henry Mitford.**

Arms as in 1582.

**Sheriff—Lionel Maddison.**

Arms : Argent, between three martlets a chevron sable, charged with three mullets or ; in chief a crescent of the second.



T an election in the autumn of two burgesses to serve the town in parliament, the choice fell upon

**William Jenison and Henry Anderson, Jun.**

*March 22.*

Disputes had arisen between the mayor and burgesses and the Trinity House of Newcastle, respecting the right of the latter to a compulsory pilotage fee for conducting foreign vessels into the port, and upon this date the corporation set forth at length their reasons for opposing the claim which the Trinity brethren made. We are introduced to the discussion by a petition to the privy council, in which the Trinity brethren complain that the mayor and aldermen have treated an order of the judges respecting this matter with contempt, and have gone so far as to put one of the brethren in prison :—

“ Whereas it pleased your honors to direct your honorable letters to Sir Edmond Anderson, knight, Lord Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas at Westminster, and to Mr. Justice Meade, one of the justices of the same court, touching the hearing and ending of the controversy between your poor suppliants, the master and fellowship of the Trinity House, in the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and the mayor, aldermen, and commonalty of the same town. And whereas the said justices, according to your honourable letters, did, in the presence of certain persons authorised for the following of the said cause by either of the said parties, and of their counsel learned in the law, hear what could be said on the behalf of either party. And thereupon, as well for the speedy trial of the said cause, as also for quietness to be had between either party in the meantime, did make and set down a certain order concerning the said controversy, and to the intent that the same might be the better performed, did write letters (the true copy whereof is herein enclosed) directed to the said mayor, aldermen, and commonalty, purporting their said order at large, which letters were delivered unto them accordingly. But so it is, right honourable, that after that the said mayor had received the said letters, he called the aldermen and the common council of the said town together, and then sent for certain of your said suppliants, being of the said company of Trinity House, and there openly the said mayor demanded of them whether they had any order or thing other than the letter of the said justices ; who answered that they had not. Then the said mayor said that for the order touching the pilotage contained in the said letter, that if they had ten or more of the council's hands, or all the judge's hands, to any order to enjoy it, yet

your suppliants should not enjoy it before they had won it by law, and further, in great contempt of the said order, have remitted one of your suppliants' said company to prison, for putting the said order in execution. May it therefore please your honors, either to call the said mayor, now present in London for the said cause, or to direct your honorable letters to the said mayor, aldermen, and commonalty, commanding them thereby to obey the said order set down by the said justices by your honors' direction, and your said suppliants are, and always will be, ready to join with them in any suit at common law for the speedy trial of the said cause; and shall be always, according to their bounden duty, most bounden to pray to God for your honors in honorable and most prosperous estate long to continue."

The "true copy enclosed" by the Trinity brethren is as follows:—  
"After our hearty commendations. Whereas it pleased the right honourable lords of her majesty's most honourable privy council to direct their honorable letters to us, touching the hearing of the controversy between you and the Trinity men of your town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, which we have done accordingly. But because we do perceive that it was very convenient that it should receive some trial at the common law, for the final determination of divers things contained in the said Trinity men's letters patent; therefore we thought good to move both you and their learned counsel, that you and they should agree upon some point whereupon a present trial may be had in law. But in the meantime we think it good, according to the said mariners' request, that they shall quietly enjoy the pilotage for conducting of strangers to them granted in their said letters patent; and that by our order they shall have 4d. a-foot for the same, without allowing them any right in law, if you can by the said trial avoid them thereof. And because your counsel seemed both to yield thereunto, until they should have further conference with you, therefore we have thought good, by these our letters, to signify the same unto you, wishing you not to stand with them, or to hinder them in the enjoying of the said pilotage, and the said duty for the same, according to our said order, until the said trial may be heard between you and them. Touching your purpose and determination in the premises, we do wish you to certify us in the beginning of the next term by your letters. And so we bid you heartily farewell. At Serjeants Inn, the 14th February, 1583-[4]. Your assured friends, Judge Anderson; Judge Meade."

On the 22nd March the mayor and aldermen reply, as before stated, addressing their letter to Lord Chief Justice Anderson. They give five reasons why they think it would be very prejudicial and

hurtful to them to condescend to the request of the Trinity brethren, as follows:—

“ 1st. For that the same is against sundry charters and grants made to us touching the river of Tyne, and the ancient orders and usages of this town, heretofore accustomed, for the preservation of the same. 2nd. For that, during the time of our remembrance, there hath not been any money paid for pilotage of any stranger’s vessel arriving here, otherwise than by voluntary agreement made with the said strangers. 3rd. If any new exaction should be made by the said mariners upon strangers repairing hither, the same would not only be a means to drive the said strangers hence into Scotland, and other places adjoining, as upon bruit thereof in summer last came to pass, but would also be a great hindrance to her majesty’s customs, and the profits of this, her majesty’s town. 4th. For that the said new exaction would be a means to make the like, or greater, to be raised in foreign countries against us; whereof we have had experience of late. Lastly. For that the same is thought by us to tend to the breach of league and amity between her majesty and other princes, as may appear in a clause of a charter made to the mariners of this town by our late sovereign lord of famous memory, king Henry VIII., in the twenty-eight of his reign. For which, and many other considerations, for avoiding of tediousness by us omitted, we humbly pray you, not only to vouchsafe that the matter may stand in the plight that it now doth till the same by order of law be decided (wherein we are and always will be ready to proceed with expedition in such order as it shall please you to appoint), but also to continue your accustomed favourable goodness towards this her highness’s town. And so, committing you to the tuition of the Almighty, we humbly take our leave. At Newcastle, etc. Your honour and worship’s humble at commandment, the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff of Newcastle-upon-Tyne: Henry Anderson, Richard Hodgson, Robert Anderson, William Jenison, William Selby, John Watson, Robert Barker, Mark Shaftoe, Roger Rawe, William Riddell, Henry Mitforth, Roger Nicholson.”

Before the year was out the queen granted the Trinity brethren a new charter, which probably ended the dispute. Unfortunately, only a fragment of it remains [Brand ii.-694], and that fragment is the commencing, and therefore the least interesting, part of the document.

Her majesty, reciting the previous charter of Henry VIII., states that some imperfections have grown up by the alteration of time, and therefore she is pleased to give and grant to her well-beloved liege men and subjects, Edward Taylor, Robert Errington, Robert Sotheren, Roger Raw, John Bates, John Michaelson, Thomas Fife,

Robert Johnson, Thomas Nicholson, Henry Michaelson, Nicholas Potter, Thomas Gray, Thomas Musgrave, Edward Barde, John Storree, Richard Harigade, James Nicholson, Thomas Tucker, John Skelton, and all other natural subjects, being shipmasters and pilots, seamen of Newcastle, that they, or any twelve of them, may make and establish a perpetual brotherhood or society of themselves, and that the nineteen persons before named and their successors, to the full of that number, be called elder brothers, and all the rest younger brothers of the society, out of which number of nineteen, every year on the Sunday after Candlemas day, by general consent, or most voices of the brotherhood, as well of the younger as of the elder brothers, they may appoint one master and two wardens, by the name of the master and elder wardens; and out of the younger brethren two other wardens by the name of younger wardens. The master and wardens so elected are to have the rule and custody of all lands and tenements, revenues, possessions, goods and chattels belonging to the brotherhood, and the master and elder wardens, and also the younger wardens, may from time to time be removed or discharged from office and others be substituted. They may elect out of the elder brethren, four assistants, and out of the younger brethren, four other assistants, with power of removal, substitution, etc. The brotherhood shall be one body, perpetual commonalty, or society, and be called by the name of "Master, pilots, and seamen of the Trinity House of Newcastle-upon-Tyne," with power to purchase lands, tenements, etc., to hold to them and their successors for ever, and may at all times plead and be impleaded, answer and be answered, etc.

*May 25.*

Letters of administration granted to Elizabeth, widow of Tristram Heron, musician, of Newcastle. Deceased played the lute, for the inventory of his goods includes a lute and case, and four lute books, valued at 16s. altogether. He had also a "recognisance of scutcheon of silver" worth 2s. 6d., indicating that he held a position as servant in a family or under the corporation. Among the items owing is one of 29s. 1d. "for dighting and cleansing the house, with the expenses in time of their visitation, and his burial and his child's"—showing that he, and one of his children died of the plague.

*June 15.*

Dr. Colmore, vicar-general, Archdeacon Tunstall, and others held a visitation of the clergy in St. Nicholas, Newcastle. Colmore and Tunstall visited the master or keeper of the Virgin Mary Hospital, called West Spital, the master of the Maison Dieu, the master of the

hospital of Mary Magdalen, and the master of the chapel upon the bridge in Newcastle, with their members. A month later, on the 15th July, Dr. Colmore held his court in the chapel of the castle of Stockton and excommunicated in the greater excommunication, for non-appearance when called, Robert Garret, vicar of Eglington, Thomas Warwick, rector of Morpeth, and Ralph Pattinson, master of the West Spital, Newcastle. The punishment of George Bartram, master of the chapel at the bridge-end, Robert Midford, master of Mary Magdalen Hospital, and Martin Halliman, master of the Maison Dieu, who also had made no appearance to the citation, was reserved till the afternoon of the same day, when the two latter appeared and were commanded to repair to the royal commissioners at Stockton on 3rd August following, there to exhibit the foundations, ordinations, statutes, and endowments of their respective hospitals. James Bartram, son of the master of the chapel on the bridge, proved his father's illness, and was referred to the commissioners.

*June 30.*

Proved at Durham, the will of Richard Walton, mayor of that city, who, among other bequests, gave to John Gray of Newcastle, draper, a satin doublet, and to the parson of Gateshead an old ryall. The "parson of Gateshead"—William Hodgson—was one of the persons appointed to take the execution of the will during the minority of testator's sons. William Gray and Robert Eden, both of Newcastle, are among the witnesses to this will.

*July 4.*

Jane Willey, widow of Ralph Willey of Houghton, and daughter of James Hodgson of Newcastle, merchant, leaves the following, among other legacies, to her kindred :—To each of her brother Richard Hodgson's children, 6s. 8d. ; to Jane, her brother William's daughter, 20s. ; to his other daughter Dorothy, whom she christened, 3*l.* 6s. 8d. ; to John, her brother William's son, a grey stagg ; to her sister Eggell, 10s. ; to her daughter Katherine Sotheran, a little grey ambling mare and her foal ; to her son-in-law, William Sotheran, a gray colt stagg of four years old ; to Jane, daughter of William Sotheran, 10s. ; to William Sotheran, his son, 20*l.*, and to Christopher, his youngest son, 40s. Residue to John, her brother William Hodgson's son, whom she makes executor.

*September 23.*

Probate granted to the will of John Hudson, of Newcastle, merchant. Testator expresses his religious convictions with much fervour :—"First, I do give my soul to Almighty God, Father, Son



and Holy Ghost, my maker and redeemer. I believe to be saved by the death and passion of my redeemer Jesus Christ the righteous, and trusteth to be saved by His precious death and passion." Gives his son John the family home, and the rest of his houses and all his goods he leaves to his sole executrix, his wife Jane, to dispose of "to the pleasure of our Lord God, and to the commodity of herself and such children of ours as hath had no portions." To Ann Clarkson, his daughter, because she had least, 10*l.*; to the poor almshouses, 20*s.*; to poor householders, 20*s.* "Whatsoever my aunt Surtees oweth me, upon condition that she forgive me, I do forgive her heartfully, that she be not troubled by my wife. And thus our Lord God send us a joyful resurrection, in the favour of our Lord God. Amen. I do give unto every one of my daughters for a token one angel, and to my cousin Margaret Hudson of Wodstonhous, 6*s.* 8*d.*; to every of my three aunts, 6*s.* 8*d.* And thus God send us a good end in Christ Jesus. Amen." The will was signed on the 3rd May 1582. It is followed by:—"Jesus, 1582. And failing of my two sons and their children lawfully begotten, then my lands to come equally unto my three daughters, and to the heirs of their bodies," etc., failing them to Ralph, Robert, and Ann Surtees and their heirs, and failing them, to the next of kin. "And so I make my supervisors of this my last will and testament, my well-beloved in Christ Jesus, Mr. Robert Barker, alderman, my son-in-law, my cousin John Watson, and my cousin Robert Wilkinson. I give unto my sister Isabel Harding, 10*s.* I desire of God that my supervisors will be a help, in taking of pains, to see my wife and children in good agreement, for that I have put all unto the discretion of my wife, for the better help of her and her children, and for good agreement amongst them. And here I do end, beseeching God, of his great mercy and goodness, for his dear son, Jesus Christ, his sake, to make us all partakers of his heavenly kingdom for evermore. Amen." Yet, in the same year, he makes another ending:—"Item, all such legacies as I have given unto my three daughters before, I do give them it in full and whole payment of all and every part of their filial portions of my goods. And so God bless us all, and keep us in his hands for ever. Amen." The first item in the inventory of testator's effects is "one Bybell, 10*s.*"

*November 13.*

Christopher Wilson, one of the Newcastle sergeants-at-mace—officers who performed duties allied to those which are now discharged by the police—makes his will, desiring to be buried on the south side of Allhallows' church. Leaves his wife Anne their

dwelling-house for life, with succession to his sons Mark and William; to Mark his signet of silver; to William his "bowed Jeamis of silver;" to his son-in-law, Richard Rawe, a gown laid with black lamb; to his daughter Catherine, a coat cloth; to his son Mark, a gown lined with black coney; to Elizabeth, Mark's wife, 6s. 8d.; to his son William, a cloak of broadcloth; to James, his son's son, a cassock; to William Rawe, his daughter's son, a jerkin and cut-out doublet of canvas; to Barbara Rawe, his daughter's child, and Robert and Richard, sons of Richard Rawe, each 5s.; to Roger Rawe, alderman, for a token, half a French crown; to Francis Comminge, the swordbearer, for a token, 12d.; to every sergeant at the mace, 6d.; to his brother, Richard Wilson, a gabardine with silver keepers; to his son's daughters, Anne and Catherine, equally, 2s.; to Elizabeth, daughter of William Wilson, a coat cloth of freize. Residue to his wife Anne, the executrix. Witnesses—Cuthbert Patteson, weaver; Edward Delaval, gentleman; Edward Tynmouth; Roger Batson, and others. Proved 23rd February, 1586.

*November 16.*

"John Mackbray, preacher, and some time curate," is the entry by which the keeper of the register of burials at St. Nicholas' church records the interment of the clergyman who, for fifteen years, had held the principal cure of souls in Newcastle. Vicar Mackbray, or Magbray, as his name is more commonly written, was "a gentleman of Galloway," writes M'Crie in his notes to the *Life of John Knox*, "who fled to England about 1538." On this side the border the refugee from Galloway entered with spirit into the religious controversies of the time, and was presented to the living of Shoreditch. Machyn, recording the burial at Stepney in 1552 of Sir Anthony Winkfield, knight, adds, "At the communion did preach the vicar of Shoreditch, a Scot." After the death of Edward VI., Magbray, to avoid the Marian persecution, retired to Frankfort, preached to the English congregation there for a time, and then became pastor of a flock in lower Germany, where he wrote an account of the formation and progress of his church. The accession of Elizabeth brought him back to London, and in 1559 Machyn makes a note of his preaching at St. Paul's:—"The 3rd September did preach at Paul's one Makebray, a Scot." Strype has a similar entry:—"One Makebray, a Scot, an eminent exile in Queen Mary's days, preached at St. Paul's Cross in 1559." Next we hear of him at Carlisle. Lord Scrope writes to Cecil from that city, 13th July 1564:—"A chaplain of the bishop of Carlisle, a Scotsman, named Mawbraye, and two of the prebendaries of the same church, preached several days to great audiences, who

liked their sermons and doctrines." It was in the year following (1565) that he obtained, as vicar of Billingham, near Stockton, his first preferment in the North of England. Three years later he was appointed to the vicarage of Newcastle, in succession to William Salkeld. Neither living was too well endowed, and he was permitted to hold them both. It was soon found, however, that Newcastle received the greater part of his care. Neglect of duty at Billingham was charged against him, and in 1577 he resigned his preferment there. In the ensuing year he is named among the preachers selected by the bishop of Durham to officiate from Michaelmas 1578 to Michaelmas following, his appointments being at Newcastle in the general chapter after Christmas, and at Bishop Auckland, Morpeth, Tynemouth, Gateshead, Benton, Earsdon, Newburn, and Norton. The rest of his life was passed in the work of his Newcastle vicarage. On the date which heads this paragraph he was buried within the walls which had so often echoed with his fervent ministrations. His wife, Agnes, survived a few months longer, and on the 8th May 1586, was laid beside him.

To Vicar Magbray's preaching gifts the records of the time bear sufficient testimony. Of his doctrinal tendencies, the learned vicar Jackson, one of his successors at St. Nicholas', speaks slightly. Dr. Jackson did not believe in the services called "prophesyings," of which Knox and other reformers had been promoters, and he laments in one of his books that "since the liberty of prophesying was taken up—which came but lately into the northern parts (unless it were in the towns of Newcastle and Berwick, wherein Knox, Mackbray, and Udal had sown their tares)—all things have gone so cross and backward in our church, that I cannot call the history of these forty years or more to mind, or express my observations upon it, but with a bleeding heart." Nevertheless, there were in Newcastle townsmen who appreciated Vicar Magbray, and did not regard his doctrines as tares, or any other unprofitable crop. His name appears in several wills of the period as maker, legatee or witness. An admirer in the country, Humphrey Hancock, of Ponteland, dictating his will on the 15th May 1579, left a piece of gold of the value of 10s. to pay for a funeral sermon, which he specially desired might be preached by "Maister John Magbrey, vicar of Newcastle, or else that Godly and learned man, Maister Francis Bunny, parson of Riton, upon the text, 'Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord,' or else to entreat of the resurrection."

---

The earls of Angus and Mar, and other Scottish lords who had been

banished, came over the border, and after staying awhile at Berwick, removed to Newcastle, where they were entertained by the English government, until it was found prudent to transport them further south. Meanwhile dissensions in Scotland respecting episcopacy and presbyterianism caused the flight of three ministers to Newcastle—James Lowson and two others. Here they made common cause with the banished lords, and (excepting Lowson, who died in England) returned to Scotland in their train the following year. Their restoration led eventually to the establishment by law of the presbyterian form of church government in Scotland.

## 1585.

27 and 28 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Henry Mitford, Mayor, and Lionel Maddison, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Robert Barker.**

Arms : Sable, a bat displayed argent, charged with a mullet of the field ; on a chief gules, three cinquefoils or.

**Sheriff—George Whitfield.**

Arms : Or, two bends engrailed sable.



NE of the principal local events of this year was the death of Henry Percy, earl of Northumberland, a prisoner in the Tower of London. He was found dead in bed, with pistol wounds on his body.

A coroner's jury brought in a verdict of suicide ; but in a report of the proceedings of Elizabeth's councillors, held two days after his death, wherein he is accused of having had his hand in the rebellion of 1569, it appears that "the well-affected seemed to conceive that he had been murdered of policy, or set purpose." So perished the eighth of the earls of Northumberland. The first fell at Bramham Moor ; the second at St. Alban's ; the third at Towton ; the fourth in a popular commotion at Cock-lodge, in Yorkshire ; the fifth and sixth died in their beds ; the seventh was beheaded at York ; the eighth perished in the Tower ; while Dudley,

who acquired the title of Northumberland on the death of Sir Thomas Percy as a traitor, himself also died on the block.

*March 15.*

Henry Ewbank, M.A., was presented to the mastership of the Virgin Mary Hospital by the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, in place of Ralph Pattinson. Ewbank held the office till the 18th October 1615, when, through a dispute with his patrons, he resigned.

*April 15.*

Will of Ralph Richardson, of "Scuttes-house," in the county palatine, late of Newcastle, merchant. To Henry Riddell, his share in coal-mines at St. Edmund's, Gateshead; Peter Riddell the elder and younger, William the younger, Thomas and Mary Riddell, bequests of horses and money; to the poor of Newcastle, 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, "whereof to Isabel Carlell, one of the poor people," 13*s.* 4*d.* Residue to William Riddell, ex-mayor of Newcastle (his master or partner), executor.

*May 16.*

Lord Francis Russell, writing to Walsingham from Tynemouth, desires that every vessel, coming in or going from that haven, may be ordered to strike sails, so that a better search may be made. He expresses fear that great evil is wrought in the harbour, because if the wind serves, ships come in and go up to Newcastle in one tide, and so depart, and cannot be properly searched by his officers.

*August 10.*

Richard Holdsworth, clerk, presented to the vicarage of Newcastle, vacant, from November, by the death of John Magbray.

*August 31.*

Among the numerous persons arrested at this time under suspicion of harbouring or aiding Romish priests, or of being papal emissaries, were George Errington of Hurst Castle, a relative of the Walwick Grange family, and Robert Hethfield, of Newcastle, and on the date above written Edward Barker sends a report of their examination to Walsingham. An influential burgess of Newcastle is also under surveillance—John Carr, a postmaster in the town, whose name appears frequently in the parish registers and other documents of the time. Carr was suspected, among other things, of harbouring John Boast, "a notable papist," whose movements gave the government considerable anxiety. The Lord President in the North, it is recommended, should "bear an eye towards him."

Barker in his report informs Walsingham that "Hethfield in his

examination seemeth very sorrowful, and with tears and kneeling promised Sir Owen Hopton and me all amendment and reformation, whereof it may please your honor to consider as you in wisdom shall think best. He remaineth a close prisoner in the Counter. I have not more wherewith to trouble your honour at this present, but only to desire you in your next letters to my Lord President of York to desire his lordship to bear an eye towards John Carr, the postmaster of Newcastle, for I find by all former examinations that he is the host to all disguised priests and evil-disposed persons."

The examination of Errington is as follows :—" 1. Being demanded how many letters he had to convey over with him, he saith he had nine, whereof he had five of Robert Hethfield and four of Johnson. 2. Being demanded whether Robert Hethfield were acquainted with his journey into France, he saith he was acquainted therewith the evening before examine took water at Sandgate, at which time he saith nobody was with him but the boy whom he was to carry over. 3. Being demanded what money he had from any to carry over, he saith he had only 4*l*. and six French crowns from Johnson, which was to be delivered to one Brown in Rouen. 4. Being demanded and required to tell the truth, where he received the boy, and what persons came with him, he saith that he received the boy in the street at Newcastle, and that nobody came with the boy. Being afterwards put in mind that the boy was brought him to Neville's Cross by his elder brother, and there met with him and Miles White, he confesseth that indeed he received the boy there, and that he and Miles White rode with the boy to the water's side, about one mile and a-half from Newcastle, where the Frenchman lay and stayed for them. 5. Being again demanded what money he had about him at the time of his apprehension, he saith he had in all about 23*l*., whereof 8*l*. was the boy's, 5*l*. 10*s*. came from Johnson, and the rest was his own. 6. Being demanded whether he can be contented to go to the church, and to conform himself, like a good subject, in matters of religion, in case her majesty would vouchsafe to pardon his former offences against the laws, he saith that he could pray for and serve her highness with his body and life, but as for going to the church, his conscience, as he saith, will not permit him. 7. Being demanded whether he be reconciled to the Pope, he saith that he is a Catholic, and so fully resolved, and further answer he cannot make, as he saith. 8. Being demanded whether he knoweth Nicholson, he saith no, otherwise than by the boy naming him. Being demanded what intelligence he hath had with the authors of any libels or seditious books, he saith that about Lent last, in a place at Newcastle, which he remembereth not, and in

company which he knoweth not, he heard one Richardson say that one was taken at Scarborough with books against my lord of Leicester."

Hethfield is described as a merchant of Newcastle, and his statements under examination were:—1. "That he was never in France but only twice, nor ever in any other town of that kingdom but only Newhaven, Dieppe, and Rouen, and that he is bound by the Lord President of York not to cross the seas, because he had been intermeddler for the conveying over of one Hawfield, who was lately executed for treason. 2. That he hath for his conscience, as he saith, abstained from church these twelve months. 3. That he was never made acquainted with any of George Errington's journeys beyond the seas but only this last, when the boy went with him. 4. That he delivered unto George Errington, at his last going to sea, only two letters, the one from Garthe to Browne of Rouen, the other from himself to Valentine Taylor, a priest in Rouen, uncle to this examinee. 5. That he never knew of George Errington's going to sea, but even as he was going on board. 6. That he is not acquainted with any fugitive or English priest remaining beyond the seas, but only with his uncle Taylor, and one Woodward. 7. That he knoweth no priest in England but one Hartlie, but he knoweth not where he may be found, for he saw him not, as he saith, since Christmas twelve-month. 8. That he hath not intermeddled with the affairs of any papist remaining beyond the seas."

*October 11.*

The will and inventory of William Grey of Newcastle, miller, who, with his wife and the greater part of his children, died of the plague, supply interesting details of clothing, and the cost of nursing during the visitation. Testator desires to be buried at St. John's, and, after leaving 2s. 6d. each to the Spital almshouses, and the almshouse near his dwelling, divides his personal belongings among his relations and friends—Jane Stobert, Jane Grey (his brother's wife), John Rogerson, Mark Rogerson, Agnes Pearson, William Purdus's wife, Christobel, Dorothy, John, and Humphrey Gray, William Reesley, Henry Fenkell, Christobel Fletcher, Thomas Spurre, and Nicholas and Richard Hall. To "Sir" Cuthbert [Ewbank], curate of Allhallows, 6s. 8d. Gives his daughter, Isabel Grey, and all his lands, to his brother, John Grey, during her minority, and if she die, the lands to go to John, whom he makes executor. Testator's apparel comprised: 2 gowns and 2 broadcloth jackets, 17s. 4d.; a broadcloth jerkin, leather jerkin, and a pair of long hose, 8s. 4d.; another leather jerkin, 1s.; 2 linen shirts, 5s. 4d.; dagger, sword, and girdle, 1s. 10d.; a

white russet cloak, 2s. ; pair of leather breeches and a jerkin, 4s. ; a cape, 6d. ; 2 pair of short hose, 8d. His wife's consisted of a gown, 10s. ; a kirtle, petticoat, pair of new sleeves, 2 kerchiefs, and 3 rayles, 15s. 8d. ; a gilted ring, 2 taches, a heart of silver, 3 silver rings, a whistle, a piece of silver enamelled, and a violet frock, 5s. ; a red hat and a cape, 2s. His son Robert had a blue jacket, blue jerkin, worsted jerkin, and russet jerkin, 7s. ; pair of russet breeches, pair of white breeches, pair of knit hose, and a pair of kersey hose, 2s. 8d. ; a cape, a hat, and 3 straken shirts, 4s. 4d. ; a prayer book, 3s. 8d. Margaret, his daughter, had a stammell petticoat and a broad-cloth safeguard, 20s. ; a petticoat of housewife cloth, and a safeguard, 11s. ; an upper body of durance, pair of new black hose, and a new apron of durance, laid with lace, 7s. 2d. ; a felt hat, 3 kerchiefs, 7 patletts, 15s. 8d. ; 5 pair of sleeves, 2 linen aprons, a cross cloth, a kye, and a silk belt, 11s. [Mary and Alice Grey's apparel was of a similar character.]

Disbursements:—To Agnes Lavarocke, cleansing the house, 7 weeks, 21s. ; her meat and drink, 7 weeks, 17s. 6d. ; her meat and drink one week "after she came forth of the said house," 2s. 6d. ; Margaret Purvis, 14 days helping to cleanse the house, 7s. ; her meat and drink, 14 days, 5s. ; coals, candles, and soap, 7 weeks, 7s. ; brume and frankincense, 10d. ; carrying water to the said house, 5 weeks, 5s. ; testator's own meat and drink, "6 weeks in a tower of the walls," 15s. ; his daughter Alice, her meat and drink, 3 weeks, 6s. ; his daughter Isabel, her meat and drink 10 weeks, 20s. ; Agnes Pearson for keeping of them 9 weeks, 12s. ; Margaret Wilson, 14 days helping them, 2s. ; her meat and drink, 14 days, 5s. ; coals, candles, and soap, 8 weeks, 10s. 8d. ; carrying water the said 8 weeks, 8s. Funeral expenses, etc., of the testator, his wife, Robert, Mary, and Alice Grey, his children, 5*l.* 17s. 6d.

*November 15.*

Robert Lambe of Newcastle, merchant, buried in St. Nicholas'. He was the owner of the barque *Lambe*, valued, with her tackle, at 160*l.* His interest as a burgess in the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham is thus expressed:—"In the hands of Mr. Henry Tennant, merchant, for a part of the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham, as appeareth by a note under his hand, 33*l.* 6s. 8d. ; the lease of the coal-mines of Gateshead, taken of the queen's majesty, 13*l.* 6s. 8d." Deceased's widow was laid beside him on the 7th April 1587, and Henry Tennant followed on the 22nd of August. Mrs. Lambe bequeathed to her son-in-law, Richard Adams, and her daughter Isabel, his wife, a fourth part of the coal-mines and pits in



Gateshead, on lands formerly belonging to the chantry of the Virgin in Gateshead, and to the monastery of Nesham; to her son, Thomas Hall, a gold ring and another quarter of the coal-mines; to her son, William Lambe, and Janet, her daughter, the other half of the coal-mines, and her part of coal-mines in Gateshead and Whickham which she had by grant from Henry Tennant, merchant; to William, his father's gold ring and a bill staff. Mentions her mother, Isabel Ilderton, and leaves her son William to the tuition of her daughter Janet.

*December 31.*

The registers of burials both at St. Nicholas', Newcastle, and St. Paul's, Jarrow, record the interment of alderman Richard Hodgson, three times mayor of Newcastle. Deceased, founder of the Hodgsons of Hebburn, was a great grandson of William Hodgson, sheriff of Newcastle in 1475. His wife, Isabel, was a daughter of alderman James Lawson, and widow of Gerard Fenwick. A stout adherent of the old religion, he was the "rank papist" of whom Sadler wrote at the time of the rebellion of the earls:—"On Sunday last the protestants and papists within Newcastle made a fray, but Mr. Hodshon, a rank papist, was put forth of the town, and the matter pacified, praised be God." Deceased was one of the "grand lessees" of Gateshead and Whickham. One of his brothers, Robert, a doctor of physic, was buried at Durham in 1576; another, William, married a daughter of Sir Christopher Hildyard, and lived at the Manor House, Lanchester, while a third, James, was a merchant in Newcastle.

In his will, dated 1st March 1582, deceased bequeaths his soul "to Almighty God and to all the blessed company of heaven." [Some zealous protestant has run his pen through the last eight words.] Gives to his son, Lancelot Hodgson, 200*l.*; his daughter Elizabeth [wife of Nicholas Hedley of Lintz], 40 marks, and to her and her husband the lease of the Stobe Close. To Isabel his wife, for her life, his dwelling-house; after her death to his son Robert. To his son, William Hodgson, "the house before my door, wherein my brother, Robert Hodgson, did dwell, called my brother Robert's chamber, with all the shops and cellars belonging to the same;" also the house, shops, and cellars at the Raile [Cale?] Cross, bought of John Baxter. To his son Richard all sums of money from two tenements on the Sandhill, sold to John Carr and Ralph Cock, merchants. To his sons, William and Richard Hodgson, his lease of Bywell Dam, with his part of the mills and fishings; his part of the lease of Ovingham Dam, with the mills and fishings, and his lease of

Cross Moor and Benwell, his wife to have the commodity of one-half the last-named lease, and if any profit can be had of Benwell his wife and sons shall suffer James Bartram to have a quarter of a pit there. To his son Lancelot, his interest in the lease of Gateshead and Whickham. To his wife, for life, the occupation of his farmhold in Elswick, and his leases of the Field Houses and Thorney Close, with remainder to Robert. Other bequests to his brother William and his children; his sister, Dorothy Willy, and her children (including Catherine, wife of William Sotheran, and Elizabeth, wife of James Bertram); to Clement Ogle, and his wife and children; William Selby, alderman, and his wife and children; William and Peter Riddell; Ellinor Lawes; John Sayer, father and son, of Worsall; Benedict Chertseye; Thomas Tempest's wife; brother-in-law Henry Lawson of Nesham, and Ralph Lawson of Brugh, with their wives and children; William Lawson of Thorp Bulmer; nephews Robert and Owinge Hodgson; sister-in-law Barbara Scrivener and her children; his servants, hinds, keelmen, and colliers. To the poor of Newcastle, 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* To his son, Robert Hodgson, as much plate and household stuff as shall come to 100*l.* "if my ships continue either sold, or remain in my hands without any shipwreck." Residue to his wife, and son William, executors.



THE NAG'S HEAD INN, FACING THE SANDHILL, NEWCASTLE, 1823.

1586.

28 and 29 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Robert Barker, Mayor, and George Whitfield, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Henry Chapman.**

Arms as in 1581.

**Sheriff—Robert Dudley.**

Arms : Or, a lion rampant double-queued vert, charged with a crescent of the field.



PARLIAMENT was ordered to meet on the 15th October. The members elected in Newcastle were two aldermen—

**Henry Anderson and Edward Lewin.**

By this parliament a sentence pronounced against Mary Queen of Scots for alleged participation in a conspiracy against Queen Elizabeth was confirmed, and both houses addressed the throne, praying that the sentence might be executed.

*January 14.*

Administration of the goods of Robert Heley, merchant, Newcastle, who died in December, granted to Anne Hall, Margaret Tempest, Catherine Wilkinson, Elizabeth Tempest, and Barbara Tomlinson, his sisters. Deceased was a son of George Heley, sheriff of Newcastle in 1562.

*January 20.*

A quarrel on the Sandhill about a yard-stick, during St. Luke's fair, induced William Paice to call Margery Anderson a naughty name ; for which outrage upon her feelings and the public morals she this day summoned him to answer at Durham. William Wilkinson, of Bradley, yeoman, testified that being on the Sandhill, buying cloth, he borrowed a yard wand of Margery's servant to measure with, and while so engaged William Paice came up, and, testing the wand on his arm, said it was not a lawful yard wand ; whereupon he would

have carried the witness before the mayor. After some speeches between them, Margery Anderson came and demanded the wand, asking Paice why he meddled with it. Paice repeated that it was not a lawful yard wand. She asked him what authority he had to take her wand and find fault therewith more than all others thereby. "And so they, multiplying words, amongst other words the said Paice called the said Margery, naughty, proud w——, whereupon the said Margery took witnesses." And that is all we know about it.

*January 25.*

Buried, "under the thorn tree in St. Nicholas' churchyard" it is to be hoped, (for there, as his will expresses it, he wished to be interred,) Thomas Key or Kay, principal curate of St. Nicholas'. He signed the parchment, now crumbling to dust in the archives at Durham, on the 8th April 1584, bequeathing his small substance chiefly to the Anderson family, and the church officers. To St. Nicholas' he gave 40s., and to the town [the poor] a like sum, to be distributed by his "right worshipful master Mr. Henry Anderson." To each of Anderson's children he left 10s.; to Anderson's brother Bertram, 6s. 8d.; to each serving man and woman in Henry Anderson's house, 3s. 4d.; to his loving mistress, Mrs. Anderson, 10s.; to the two daughters of . . . Brandling, knight, deceased, named . . . , as yet unmarried, 10s.; to Thomas Pearson, parish clerk of St. Nicholas', 3s. 4d.; to John Wallas, singing master, and to the under clerk of St. Nicholas', 20s.; to Janet Moor, widow, his best gown. Executor—Henry Anderson, with 40s. for his pains.

The family of Anderson in Newcastle received other legacies besides those of the poor curate. In the will [dated 15th April] of Mary Thornell, daughter of the bailiff of Darlington, are bequests to "the worshipful Mr. Henry Anderson, esquire, and my good mistress his bedfellow, for a token of remembrance, to either of them, one angel; to Bertram Anderson, one English crown; to Henry and Thomas Anderson, one French crown a-piece;" to Mrs. Barbara Anderson, "my best gold cawell, rowells and ribbons;" to the poor "in the street wherein my master dwelleth," 10s.

*June 18.*

Probate granted to the will of Ralph Cole of Newcastle, merchant adventurer, son of James Cole of Gateshead, deceased. Mentions his base-begotten son, Robert Cole, his mother Jane, widow, and his brother Nicholas' children—James, Ralph, and Jane Cole. Gives his brother Richard his share of the ship *Robert Bonaventure*, "now departed upon her voyage into the realm of France." To his brother

Nicholas a house in Pilgrim Street, occupied by Marcus Antonio, an Italian. To his brother Thomas a house in Gateshead. Tokens to his late master, Robert Lamb, and Mr. George Still of Newcastle, "now deputy of the worshipful company of merchant adventurers, resident in Middleburgh." His effects were valued at 445*l.*, and include a lease of a house by the Quayside, "that Clement Anderson is in," 60*l.*; 6 pictures, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; his own picture, 10*s.*; all his printed books, 1*l.*; two gilted French books, 2*s.* 6*d.*; "a thing to hang a clocke upon," 1*s.*; a banded chest, with books and other things, 13*s.* 4*d.*—items that indicate a taste for literature and the arts. Among debts owing to him is 2*l.* 8*s.*, due from "the company of the town of Newcastle, for money toward the purchase of Gateshead."

*July 16.*

What took place during the closing hours of the life of Giles Storie, of Newcastle, is detailed in a cause respecting his will, heard this day at Durham. David Dods of Newcastle, labourer, stated that he and Luke Barnforth and others were with Storie just before his death, and seeing his wife Elizabeth weeping, Luke asked him what he did to his wife there that did mourn so. And Storie answered, "What shall I say to her, man? I give her this house so long as she liveth; and it and all that ever I have to come to George Storie after her decease." Then Luke said, "Ye have another son; what do ye to him?" He answered, "God's malison light on him, for he hath beggared me, and would not follow my counsel: I shall rive him out of the earth that ever giveth him one groat of my gear." Within an hour after Giles died. Luke Bradforth gave similar evidence, adding, that on the wife mentioning 19*l.* which she brought with her, testator said, "I give thee this house for thy life, and that is better, and after thy death I give it to her son, George Storie." Thomas Rand, weaver, Newcastle, deposed that being constable in the street where Giles dwelt, he ordered him to shut his door up, for fear of the plague, and that in conversation afterwards, speaking of Ralph Storie, his son, testator did bid hang him, he should never have any that was his, "but all the lands and goods I have, I'll give to my son, George Storie."

*August 6.*

John Watson, merchant and alderman of Newcastle, sheriff in 1567, and mayor in 1574, buried in St. Nicholas' church. His will is not to be found, but the inventory, dated October 6th, shows that he had a shop on the Sandhill and a residence at Bedlington. The value of his personal property was 680*l.* 10*s.* 4*d.*

*November 18.*

Dating his letter from Newcastle, the earl of Huntingdon writes to Walsingham in a desponding tone. This country, he thinks, was never in such bad terms since he knew it as now, and there is "a wonderful expectation still that the greatest mischief which the papists mostly thirst for, should come to pass, and cannot be avoided." Nevertheless, "there was a great assembly here yesterday [the queen's accession] both at sermon and communion, of the bishopric, of Northumberland, and of this town; many of the best calling in all the three places communicated, and some that have of late received seminary priests made not dainty to come to the communion."

*November 22.*

A feud between the Selbys and the Collingwoods had a fatal result on this date. The county gentry had been in Newcastle to celebrate the queen's accession, and to attend the lord president of the North. Near Morpeth, Sir Cuthbert Collingwood, his wife, daughter, and two sons, Robert Clavering, sheriff, his brother William, and eight others, returning to their homes, were met by William, son of Sir John Selby, with a dozen others, and a fray began. Sir Cuthbert was shot, though not mortally, and William Clavering was killed. Selby fled; four of his associates were tried at the December assizes at Newcastle, and against three of them a verdict of manslaughter was returned; the other was liberated.

*December 29.*

Will of Matthew White of Redheugh, gentleman. Desires to be buried in Gateshead church, and bequeaths to his wife Anne (daughter of John Lambton) his house in Gateshead for life, and then to his son, Nicholas White. To his son, Roger White, his house in the Westgate, Newcastle. To his wife, her thirds, another third to his children, Roger, Matthew, Nicholas, Anthony, Nathaniel, Margaret, Katherine, and Susan White, and Anne Brantingham; residue to his wife. To his son Jacob, a bay nag. In the inventory appears five shillings' worth of books—viz., a common prayer, a testament, "with certain other books, as Calvin's commentaries upon the psalms."

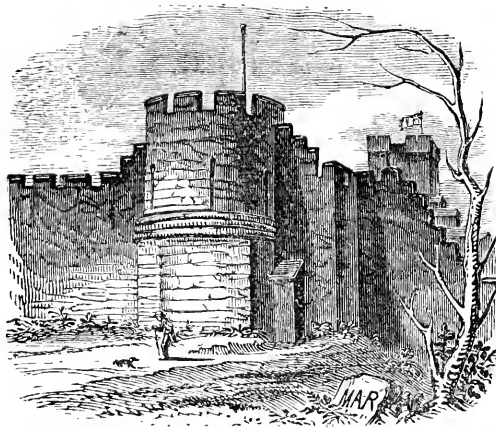
---

The compiler of the Adamson MS. enters opposite the year 1586 the item, "Clock on the Sand Hill was set up." Dr. Ellison's MSS., quoted by Brand, contain the same entry. The place where it was "set up" was the town court or Guildhall. Leland, forty years earlier, crossing Tyne bridge, and "turning on the right hand to the quay,"

saw "a chapel of the town with a Mason Dieu, with a water gate and a square hall place for the town." Gray, writing additions to his *Chorographia* during the Commonwealth, puts in a couple of lines about this clock or its successor :—"In this Sandhill standeth the town-court or Guild-hall, where is held three guilds every year by the mayor and burgesses to offer up their grievances, where the mayor keepeth his court every Monday, and the sheriff hath his county court upon Wednesday and Friday." Then come the added lines—"Above the gate into this court is a clock-house, which speaks to us the hours of the day, chimes at five and eleven of the clock."

---

Camden, whose *Britannia* was published this year, describes Newcastle as "the eye of the north, the hearth that warmeth the south part of this kingdom with fire—an Egypt to all the shires in the north (in time of famine) for bread. All quarters of the country comes with money in their purses to buy corn to feed their families this summer."



THE WHITE FRIAR TOWER, NEWCASTLE, SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

1587.

29 and 30 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Barnes.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Henry Chapman, Mayor, and Robert Dudley, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Edward Lewin.**

Arms : Argent, a bend bretessè gules ; over all a portcullis in chief azure.

**Sheriff—Robert Eden.**

Arms : Azure, three helmets or ; in chief a crescent argent.



**A**MONG the leading events of this year were the death of bishop Barnes, the execution of Mary Queen of Scots, and the puritan crusade against persecution. Here, in the North, were great fears of a Spanish invasion ; for it was reported that the king of Spain was rapidly completing a great naval armament, which might be expected to arrive at any time upon the coast—perhaps at Tynemouth.

*February 7.*

Mark Shafto, alderman, Robert Dudley, sheriff of Newcastle, Nicholas Tempest and Thomas Bates, gentlemen, were appointed to take evidence in an action brought by Henry Tonge and Isabella his wife, against William Selby, respecting the working of coals on the south side of the Tyne. The witnesses were mostly colliers, keelmen, etc., and their evidence is technical and of no public interest.

*February 25.*

The mayor, sheriff, and aldermen of Newcastle write to Walsingham about the detention of eighteen ships which had left the Tyne for French destinations :—

“Right honourable. Pleaseth it the same to be advertised, for as much as we are credibly given to understand that eighteen of our ships laden with coals and other merchandise, which lately sailed into



France, as to Newhaven and other places hereabouts, are there now stayed, for what cause, we cannot certainly learn ; but by the commandment (as we are advertised by a letter from one of the masters of the said ships, from Newhaven) of one duke Joie, a duke in France. These said ships departed hence towards France before the intelligence that we had, from the Lord Chamberlain, for their stay here to be made. The names of which said ships, with their burdens and masters of every one of them, we do most humbly send to your honour in the schedule herein enclosed, with also the said letter from one of the said masters, dated at Newcastle the 21st of this present February. Wherefore we most humbly do beseech your honour that you would vouchsafe to move the right honourables, the lords of her majesty's most honourable privy council, that we may have their honourable furtherance and help for the release of the said ships, men, and goods, so soon as to their honourable approved wisdom shall be thought expedient. And that it would please your honour to give us intelligence by your letter by post, of their honours' pleasure therein, and what course we are best to take, touching the same, for that they are of the best ships and mariners that do belong to this town, and also the greatest part of our shipping. And so we commit your honour to the tuition of Almighty God." Signed by Henry Chapman, mayor; Robert Anderson, William Jenison, Henry Anderson, Mark Shafto, Roger Rawe, and Henry Mitford, aldermen; Robert Dudley, sheriff.

*April 26.*

A writer, who gives but an initial, sends Walsingham secret information about papists in the North. His communication is curious:—"I have passed by direction from those in the North to divers others nearer home ; amongst the rest, there is one Mr. Wharton, a kinsman of the Lord Wharton's, whom you will find a man of no small action ; he is now coming with me to London, and lodgeth with myself. The cause of his coming is to hear what is done by the state, and what matters are presently in hand, whereof he seeketh to be informed by all possible means, partly by his own endeavours, consequently by mine, and lastly by one Geary, servant to Sir James Crofts, with whom he is knit in extraordinary friendship, and hath so handled the matter that by Geary's means he is become Mr. Controller's man, under colour whereof he taketh occasion to haunt the court at his pleasure ; for the present he relieth himself firmly upon me, having received assurance from divers in the north that I am a known Ca. [Catholic?] employed, that I was the earl of Westmoreland's page, and have (not long since) been troubled for my conscience, whereupon he

is wonderfully desirous that I should go to France and learn what resolution the earl carryeth, for he saith that he will but once set foot in England, he shall be assured of friends from Trent to Tyne between this and Whitsuntide. John Gastell, of whom I wrote in my last, will be with me in London about that expedition. In the meantime I desire to know your pleasure how I shall entertain Wharton. . . . This man, John Taylor of Newcastle, John Gastell of Brancepeth, William Lawson of South Shields, Uswen Mydfourth of Ryall, and Brandling the mariner, whom Lawson harboureth secretly in his house, are the only men that bear and bring all advertisements through those parts of England and Scotland, to and from the traitorous papists, on this side and beyond the seas. . . . I sent your honour in my last letters a catalogue of the earl of Westmoreland's friends in the north parts, whom Wharton can name without book."

*June 4.*

Clement Colmore, LL.D., rector of Gateshead, presented by Henry Anderson and William Selby, lessees of Gateshead and Whickham, patrons for that turn, to the mastership of St. Edmund's hospital, vacant by the death of John Woodfal.

*June 6.*

Important additions were made on this date to the ordinances of the tailors' company of Newcastle. No brother was to take more than one apprentice at a time, and the lad must have served five years before the brother could have another. If the apprentice died within five years, another might be taken. If the brother took an apprentice within the five years, and kept the elder one, he was fined 40s. Scandal and canvassing were forbidden. "There shall no unusual talk be used in our hall, nor without the hall" by any brother, nor in any alehouse, within the town or without. No brother was to entreat another "for any leckesions towards the choosing of the first four, or towards the choosing of the main, nor yet for any fines that is found by the twelve, shall not be resetted without our hall at no place whatever," under penalty of 3s. 4d. unforgiven. Pawning or illegal disposing of materials was to be punished by a fine of 20s. for the first, and 30s. for the second offence, and for a third default the offender was to lose his privilege of the fellowship. Divers and sundry lewd persons, free of the fellowship, who offend their brethren, "whereby if good order and means were not used there should be great abuse and bloodshed," are warned that if any of them, being presented by the stewards, refuse to lay down their gage to be tried, they shall pay for a first denial to be tried, 6s. 8d.; a second, 13s. 4d.; and a third,

40s. If the offender "depart the hall without leave" upon the first charge he is to pay 20s., and neither he nor his servants are to have any benefit of the house till the fine be paid.

*June 28.*

William Jenison, alderman of Newcastle, made his will, and dying a few days afterwards, was buried (2nd July) in St. Nicholas' church. He was the second of three brothers, sons of Robert Jenison of Yokeflete, Yorkshire, all of whom founded families of position in Northumberland and Durham. His elder brother, Thomas, established the Low Walworth Jenisons, his younger brother, Ralph, the Elswick branch, and himself the Jenisons of Hurworth and Nesham. He married Barbara, second daughter of Ralph Carr, and rose to high office in Newcastle—sheriff, mayor, and M.P. The pedigree, published in Surtees's *History of Durham*, assigns to him a son and a daughter. The son is described as William Jenison of Newcastle, merchant and alderman, living in 1615, who married—first, in 1588, Anne, daughter of William Claxton of Wynyard, by whom he had two daughters; and secondly, Mary, daughter of Sir John Widdrington, by whom he had a son, Henry Jenison of Wynyard. In the will no mention is made of William the son, nor indeed of any relative but his wife and his daughter Isabel, who was married to George Simpson of Newcastle, draper. Thus:—"To my son-in-law, George Simpson, draper, and Beile, his wife, all that tenement, etc., lying in a street called the Side, in Newcastle, wherein he now dwelleth, during their lives natural, and after to go to their son, William Simpson, and for default of such, to Barbara Simpson, their daughter. I make Barbara, my wife, sole executor. Witnesses—George Anderson, Ralph Tailboys, Peter Maddison, Lionel Maddison, Oswald Chapman." Nothing beyond this and the inventory can be found at Durham, and the disposition of the remainder of his vast property must be left to conjecture. He had a furnished house in Newcastle, another at Thorpe, and another at Haswell; corn and cattle at Benwell, Woodcroft, Walworth, Norton, Woodham, Thorpe, Haswell, and Eden; a warehouse in the Close; a share in the "grand lease," valued at 1000*l.*; leases of coal-mines at Cross Moor, Fitburn Moor, Cocken, Newbiggin, and Hollinside; coals lying wrought at thirteen pits on the south side of the Tyne; a salt-pan at Jarrow; three keels, two lighters, etc.—the total value of his property being appraised at 4259*l.* 1*s.* 10*d.* The furnishings of his house in Newcastle indicate luxury, ease, and good cheer—valuable plate and pewter, tapestry, silk, and linen, including as many as 123 table napkins; while music is represented by a pair of

virginals ; literature by a Bible, four chronicles, and four other great books ; domestic comfort by a clock, a bird-cage, a looking-glass, ten feather-beds, and thirty-eight pairs of sheets ; and hospitality by salt-fish and stock-fish, a hogshead of claret, and two rundlets of sack. In "his habit as he lived" he must have presented a right worshipful appearance, for his wardrobe was well stocked with costly articles of apparel, including five fine cloth gowns, faced with marterons and velvet, valued at 32*l.* ; three grogram gowns, 8*l.* ; a velvet jacket, 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* ; a black damask jacket, 53*s.* 4*d.*, and five other jackets ; two black leather jerkins, 33*s.* 4*d.* ; two satin doublets, 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, and five other doublets ; three pairs of long breeches, 20*s.* ; and two pairs of round breeches, 6*s.* 8*d.*

*September 6.*

Death made serious gaps in the local family of Carr this autumn. The widow and two sons of William Carr, formerly mayor and M.P., died within a month. John, one of the sons, was buried 6th September, his mother on the 9th, and Edward his brother on the 3rd October. Edward died unmarried ; John left a widow [Catherine Ellison] and children. John's will makes his widow executrix, gives her their dwelling-house, an annual rent of 10*s.* from Ralph Cox's house, for life, and all his other houses in Newcastle and Gateshead for six years ; then to go to his sons James and William. Gives his son Ralph, at his majority, 20*l.* and the dwelling-house, and Cox's house rent after his mother's death. His daughter Isabel is to have 40*l.*, and her sisters Margaret and Jane 30*l.* when they are eighteen or married. Leaves his brother Edward his best gown, guarded with velvet, and 10*l.*, and makes bequests to his sisters and servants. Among his effects are "a great Bible book, 20*s.*, and a ship named the *Chanswell*." Edward's will appoints his sister Catherine (John's widow) executor. He gives her son William a house in Middle Street, held by Thomas Edone, cordiner ; her second son, James, a rent of 10*s.* from a house occupied by Rowland Hedley, 6*s.* from the house of Jasper Faralles, in the Westgate, and his best black cloth gown, guarded with lace ; to Ralph, her eldest son, the gown guarded with velvet which John left him, and other apparel ; to Jane, her youngest daughter, the 10*l.* which John left him ; also bequests to the rest of John's family, to Margaret Blunt, Alsce, Anne, and Gracy Carr, Margery Pattison, Ralph Hebborn, his brother Robert Eden and wife, sister Catherine's maids, Eleanor Lylle, and his nurse. "I clearly acquit Barbara Ellison [John's wife's sister ?] of all things whatsoever betwixt her and me." [But see vol. ii.-440.]

*September 27.*

In the will of Edward Collingwood, of All Saints', Newcastle, yeoman, are bequests to his master, James Middleton, and his wife; his brother, William Collingwood, his wife, and their son John; his brother, Ralph Rand, his wife, and their sons, Robert, Christopher, and Thomas; his sister, Alison Wilkinson; and the children he helped to christen—Robert Rand, Edward Barker, and Ralph Rooker. Residue to his wife Elizabeth. Witnesses—Thomas Colson, yeoman; John Jackson, scrivener.

*October 24.*

From a note of ships belonging to Newcastle, furnished to the Crown on this date, and preserved at the Record Office, we learn the size of a portion of the mercantile fleet of the port, and the number of men employed therein. The vessels enumerated are described as "being at this present time there, in the river":—

NAME.	OWNER.	MASTER.	MEN.	TONS.
<i>Jonas</i> . . .	John Mitchelson	Henry Mitchelson	10	110
<i>Mary Fortune</i> . . .	Henry Temple	Martin Errington	9	100
<i>Elline</i> . . .	Roger Nicolson	Robert Nicolson	9	80
<i>Mayflowre</i> . . .	" "	James Nicolson	10	100
<i>Grace of God</i> . . .	Christopher Applebie	Cuthbert Alston	6	50
<i>Prince Gift</i> . . .	Thomas Browne	Robert Wilkinson	6	50
<i>Thomas</i> . . .	Robert Pearson	Andrew Bewick	12	110
<i>Hopewell</i> . . .	Leonard Harle	Michael Johns	4	45
<i>Robert</i> . . .	Lionel Maddison	William Harrison	9	80
<i>Chancewell</i> . . .	Robert Johnson	Edward Johnson	11	110
<i>John Baptist</i> . . .	Richard Kell	George Corbrick (laid-up)		80
<i>Mary Ann</i> . . .	Richard Harrison	Master and owner	9	100
<i>Roger and Katherin</i> . . .	Roger Rawe	" "	(laid-up)	180
<i>Mary Grace</i> . . .	Roger Rawe, jun.	" "	12	110
<i>Gift of God</i> . . .	John Sheil	" "	8	60
<i>Ellinor</i> . . .	Widow Blunt	" "	(laid-up)	50
<i>Grace of God</i> . . .	Christopher Errington	" "	—	90
<i>Mayflowre</i> . . .	" "	" "	—	55

*November 4.*

John Clopton, the receiver named in the letter of October 2, reports to lord Burghley, that in pursuance of instructions dated October 4, he delivered 200*l.* to the mayor of Newcastle with help of friends, for the lord chamberlain to pay the soldiers levied for the borders; and when at Newcastle on the twenty-second for the audit, it was still in his hands. On the 3rd December Edward Bradell sends to Burghley, acknowledging receipt of instructions to pay the mayor of Newcastle 85*8l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* for the queen's service upon the

borders. The same day Clopton himself writes :—"I sent to my brother Bradell, and went myself to Newcastle, and there, by virtue of my lord of Huntingdon's letter to Mr. Anderson, delivered him 97*l.* 10*s.* for the coat and conduct money of the 300 soldiers who entered Newcastle on the 19th and 20th November, and also paid the mayor 658*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, and Bradell has sent 200*l.*, which is also paid him." There is also a letter from Edward Lewin, the mayor, to Burghley, bearing the same date, in which he states, that "before your letter came I had received at divers times from Mr. Clopton 856*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.* [*sic*], and paid over 202*l.* to lord Scrope and captain Knap, and 97*l.* 10*s.* to captains Bellasis, Bestow, and Ellerker, for coat and conduct money ; the rest I have ready to pay as the lord chamberlain shall appoint. Neither I nor the sheriff have any money to pay her majesty, and sir Francis Walsingham has the custom-house in farm ; it would do him a pleasure to have it allowed there, and his deputies to deliver it to her ; I know not the sum." Again, on the 6th December Clopton sends his figures :—"I have already certified you that the 300 soldiers entered Newcastle on the 19th and 20th November ; that I was there on the 16th before they arrived, and paid Mr. Anderson of Newcastle for coat and conduct money, 97*l.* 10*s.*, and also told the mayor that Bradell and I were to pay him 858*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, and left him 80*l.* towards it, which was all I could then spare. That on the 24th I sent the mayor as much as made up 558*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, and Bradell having sent me, 30th November, 200*l.*, I forwarded that, with another 100*l.*, which made up 858*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, so that all was with the mayor before any was due to the soldiers." Within twenty-four hours, the mayor informs Burghley that he has received from Clopton 100*l.*, and from Bradell 200*l.*, which made up 858*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, to pay to such person as the lord chamberlain shall authorise. On the 12th Clopton, at Sledwick, sends another letter to Burghley, stating that he finds slackness in the payment of money, but has of the bishop's rent and his own charge 400*l.*, and hopes within six days to make it up 600*l.*, and send it to Newcastle, to be left with the mayor until further directions. The day after Christmas another letter goes from Clopton to Burghley :—"When you required the time of the entry of the soldiers into pay, as also how much I had paid for them, you took it to be only 1058*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, with the 200*l.* received from Bradell ; but I also paid 97*l.* 10*s.* to Mr. Anderson for coat and conduct money, and 480*l.* more to the mayor, and there is still 200*l.* at Durham, which shall also be sent to him. The first 200 soldiers entered Newcastle on 6th October ; 100 were appointed to Carlisle, and the remainder to Harbottle. The second 300 entered Newcastle on 19th and 20th November, and were

appointed to the borders, from which time, I conceive, they entered into pay. I understand from the mayor that by virtue of the lord chamberlain's warrant, he has paid to captain Ellerker's company 105*l.* 18*s.* 8*d.* for a month's pay, ending the 19th instant, and the like for captain Bellasis's company, they being of the 300 that came last. Thus, the money being all got together, and left ready at Newcastle, which, I hope, will be done by 20th January, I intend to set towards London."

*November 5.*

Buried in St. Nicholas' church, George Whitfield, sheriff of Newcastle in 1585. In his will, dated 27th October, he gives the poor 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* ; to his wife [Isabel, daughter of William Selby], 500*l.*, their dwelling-house for life, and then to his son William; also rent of houses in Berwick and the Side, Newcastle, and all profit on coals from pits leased of Henry Anderson, and William Selby, his father-in-law, till his son Henry comes of age, and after that a third of the coal profits, she paying his daughters 40*l.* a-piece on their marriage. To his four children, Henry, William, Dorothy, and Barbara, 1000*l.* in equal shares. To his mother, Janet Butler, 4*l.* a-year for life; also a quit rent of 16*s.* from the house she occupied in Pilgrim Street, and after her death to his sister Topliff and her son Thomas. Forgives his brother Nicholas a debt, and leaves tokens, etc., to his sister Topliff and her four children; sisters Margaret Fisher and Rebecca Ringall; brother Butler and his wife and daughter Alice; uncle George Selby and daughters; father-in-law William Selby and his wife and children; cousin John Fenwick of Wallington; Francis Hall; Michael Milborne and Elizabeth his wife; Robert Whitfield of Durham and wife; Robert Wilkinson, John Baxter, and Mrs. Barker. Residue to wife.

---

During bishop Barnes's episcopate a list was compiled of church livings within the province of York, with their values and the names of the patrons. Tyneside livings appear as follows—the figures in brackets, by a later penman, show the reputed values in the middle of the seventeenth century:—"Archdeaconry of Northumberland, 36*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* [50*l.*]; patron, the bishop of Durham. Vic. Tynemouth, 30*l.* [24*l.* 19*s.* 4*d.*]; the Queen. Vic. St. Nicholas' in Newcastle, 50*l.* [100*l.*]; bishop of Carlisle. Vic. Newburn, 16*l.* [30*l.*]; bishop of Carlisle. Hospital of West Spital, 30*l.*; ditto, of Mary Magdalene, 15*l.*; Mr. of Bridge House, 10*l.*; mayor and burgesses of Newcastle. Hospital of the Maison Dieu, 7*l.*; lord Lumley. Trinities in Gateshead Church, 6*l.* 3*s.* 10*d.*; St. Mary's in Gateshead Church, 6*l.*; St. John Baptist and St. John Evangelist there, 4*l.* 11*s.* "Churches

and chapels without incumbents and served by stipendiary priests:—  
 Parish Churches—Allhallows, St. John's, St. Andrew's, Newcastle;  
 Wallsend, Cramlington; Chapels—North Gosforth, South Gosforth,  
 Earsdon, Milborne, Dissington."

1588.

30 and 31 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—The See vacant.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Edward Lewin, Mayor, and Robert Eden, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Roger Nicholson.**

Arms as in 1583.

**Sheriff—George Farnaby.**

Arms : Paly of six argent and gules ; on a fess sable, three annulets or.



WO aldermen were elected to represent Newcastle in the parliament which met in November—namely,

**Henry Anderson and Henry Mitford.**

Henry Anderson's quarters in London, according to the State Papers, were at "The Rose in Holborn."

Year of the Spanish Armada. A supposed souvenir of that formidable fleet hangs outside the Trinity House buildings in the Broad Chare, Newcastle; it is an old anchor, nearly eaten through with rust, which is said to have belonged to one of the vessels of the Spanish navy wrecked along the north-east coast of England, within the jurisdiction of the Trinity Board. The burgesses of Newcastle were in a state of alarm about the projected invasion, but the earl of Huntingdon took such precautionary measures as reassured the timid and encouraged the brave. Dean Mathew preached before him on Sunday, August 4, when the Spaniards were expected, taking for his text 2 Chron. xx.-20, "Believe in the Lord your God, so shall ye be established; believe his prophets, so shall ye prosper."



*January 5.*

Date of a letter from the mayor, sheriff, and eight aldermen of Newcastle to lord Burghley. The earl of Huntingdon wants satisfaction for "20 lasts of rye, delivered at Newcastle from a Dutchman last year, and sold here at the highest price that rye then fetched. The ship was driven into our port by weather, and forced to cast some of the rye into the sea, to save the ship and men. The captain wanted her unloaded, as the ship had sprung a leak, and as the corn was lost, and could not be carried further, he was the more willing to sell it. He knew the amount it fetched, and might have then had the money, but fearing enemies at sea, he would only accept sufficient to discharge the freight, customs, etc., and a testimonial from the earl of Huntingdon as to how the ship put into our haven, which was given him in Latin, a copy whereof, as also of the account of the rye received, and of what he left in our town chamber, we enclose. The sum left here by him was 195*l.* 18*s.* 2*d.*, which, with 12*l.* for 30 bolls of rye which Mr. Delaval, keeper of Tynemouth castle, took up at Shields as his provision, makes 207*l.* 18*s.* 2*d.*, which is ready here to be paid to such person as you may appoint by warrant to receive it."

*January 12.*

John Clopton and the mayor of Newcastle are still busy with their accounts. Both write to lord Burghley on this date. Clopton reports:—"I have been to Newcastle, and left 1200*l.* with the mayor for payment of the soldiers, and 150*l.* more in hand, which he requires me to pay for him and his brethren in London, which, with 400*l.* he will receive from my brother Bradell, and some more from my own charge next week, will make up the 2000*l.* required. I talked with him touching his payments, and perceive that the former sum of 858*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* would not serve by 200*l.* to make up this month's pay, ending 6th January, for the first 200 soldiers, and for the 300 ending the 20th, but that he must begin with this last sum of 1200*l.* left with him." The mayor reports that he has received altogether from Mr. Clopton 1200*l.*, "which is ready to be employed as you shall appoint. The 858*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* I have paid, with some overplus, to captains Bellasis, etc., who are lying here for the defence of the borders, and I have their acquittances. We have here 195*l.* 18*s.* 2*d.*, and 12*l.* of Mr. Delaval's for 30 bolls of rye that he took for the castle's provisions, making in the whole 207*l.* 18*s.* 2*d.* This was reserved for rye, sold here of strangers, as mentioned in my former letter, and if it please her majesty to pay it to those that claim it of right, it shall be done, upon your warrant."

*March 3.*

Nuncupative will of George Heley, Newcastle, merchant, son of George Heley, sheriff in 1562. To be buried beside his father in St. Nicholas' church. Gives 40s. to the poor of Newcastle; 10s. each to his sister Anne Hall and her husband, and his sister Tomlinson and her children; to his other sisters, Margaret and Elizabeth Tempest, and Catherine Wilkinson, he "will not give so much as a token to any of them." Gives his brother, William Heley, 10*l.*, the lease of Anbell tithe, all his corn there, and his "farmet" which Mr. Wiclif doth serve for. To Henry Townson and William Warmouth, 5*l.* each, praying them and Ellice, wife of William Swinburne, to bear witness to his words.

*August 4.*

By this date George Dent, merchant, Robert Dent, his son and heir, and George Barker, all of Newcastle, are to pay under bond to Richard Johnson of Newcastle, tanner, 10*l.*, at the dwelling-house of George Cock, cordiner, in a street called the Iron Market. The Iron Market was at the west end of St. Nicholas' church. "Towards the lower end of the Groat Market," writes Brand, "is a wide communication with the middle street, where a market is held every Saturday for wool. The continuation of this street beyond the east end of Denton Chare was the ancient Iron Market." A deed poll of 1536 (contributed by Mr. Hetherington Nixon of Newcastle, too late for insertion in its proper place) transfers a house in the Iron Market, belonging to the chantries of St. Catherine and the Virgin Mary in St. Nicholas' church:—

"To all the faithful in Christ to whom this present writing shall come. George Taillor of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, barber, health in the Lord everlasting. Whereas John Goldsbrough, late perpetual chaplain of the chantry at the altar of St. Catherine in the church of St. Nicholas in the town of Newcastle aforesaid, with the consent and will of Richard Harding, esquire, the true patron of the aforesaid chantry, transferred, conceded, and to fee farm let to me, the aforesaid George Taillor, all that tenement, with the appurtenances, situate in the said town in the street called the Iron Market, between the tenements of Matilde Robinson, now in the tenure of Henry Cooke, painter, on the south, and a tenement of William Johnson, now in the tenure of Matthew Stephenson, on the north, and extending from the aforesaid street on the east unto the common gutter on the west, to have, etc., to me, the aforesaid George, paying the chief lord of the fee, etc., and rendering annually to John Goldsbrough and his successors, chaplains of the said chantry,

13s. 4d. ; John Lawes, chaplain of the said chantry, annually, 6s. 2d. ; and the chaplain of the chantry at the altar of Blessed Mary the Virgin in the said church, 6d., as by an indenture made the 20th June, in the 15th Henry VII. (1500), more fully appears. Know ye that I, the aforesaid George Taillor, by virtue of the premises, and in consideration of sums of money by John Blenkinsop, of the same town of Newcastle, paid, do give and grant, and by this present writing have confirmed to the aforesaid John Blenkinsop and his heirs, all that tenement, etc., to have and to hold, etc."

1589.

31 and 32 ELIZABETH.

Bishop of Durham—Matthew Hutton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Roger Nicholson, Mayor, and George Farnaby, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—William Selby.

Arms : Barry of ten or and sable ; in chief a crescent of the last.

Sheriff—John Gibson.

Arms : Azure, three storks rising argent ; in chief a mullet or.



AFTER a vacancy of nearly two years, the see of Durham was given to Matthew Hutton, dean of York. He was consecrated on the 27th July, and occupied the episcopal chair for five years.

*March.*

Richard Holdsworth, vicar of Newcastle, commenced a suit at Durham against Roger Boston, administrator or receiver of the effects of John Magbray, late vicar, for dilapidations at the vicarage. The result of the action does not appear, but the depositions of the witnesses are interesting. First came Michael Frisell, curate of North Gosforth, aged sixty-eight years, and stated that about the

17th November 1584, John Magbray died, having been vicar fifteen years. After his death Roger Boston took possession of his goods, nineteen bushels of wheat and a mare, all which witness thought worth 18*l.*, a silver salt worth 5*l.* or more, a silk gromgram gown, and a cassock worth 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* The next witness, Cuthbert Murray of Newcastle, slater, aged sixty, deposed that he and Richard Burne viewed the vicarage-house, and saw the same decayed—viz., the brew-house and a back-house adjoining; repairs would amount to 50*s.* Burne and he, being slaters, repaired the hall, charging 37*s.* 8*d.* Witness also repaired the old house by the coal-hole, at a cost of 22*s.* 7*d.* Richard Burne, aged fifty, followed, and confirmed Murray's evidence, adding some details of the repairs "with slates, laths, lattwood, great nails, single tacketts, and lime." Roger Richeson of Newcastle, aged thirty, stated that he and Humphrey Barthrum saw the decay in the vicarage, especially the carpenter work. The great chamber was repaired at the charge of Mr. Holdsworth, to the sum of 3*l.* 12*s.* 2*d.*; the chamber next the great chamber at a cost of 27*s.* 4*d.*; also the hay barn, the wright-work of which amounted to 4*s.* 6*d.* Cuthbert Ewbank, curate of St. Nicholas', aged forty, testified that immediately after Magbray's death Boston took goods, which, one with another, he thought were worth 40*l.*, and a silk gromgram gown and a cassock worth 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*

*March 28.*

An ordinary of the company of joiners of Newcastle separated them from the house carpenters, and constituted them a fellowship of themselves with perpetual succession. It enjoined them also to elect two wardens, who might sue and be sued in the courts of Newcastle, make laws, etc., and that whenever the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff of Newcastle commanded any general play to be set forth, or martial exercise to be performed, they should appear, and perform such parts in them as should be respectively assigned them, on pain of forfeiting 2*s.* 6*d.* for every time they were absent. That apprentices should serve for seven years, five of which must clapse before a second apprentice could be taken; that no Scot should be taken apprentice or ever admitted into the fellowship. It further ordered the appointment of two triers of work, as provided in the joint ordinary of the house carpenters and joiners before the separation. Brand sees in this, and in the ordinaries of the millers, house carpenters, and masons, dated 1578, 1579, and 1581 respectively, a decline of the Corpus Christi plays, which he thinks were not now performed regularly, but only, in the language of the ordinaries, "whenever commanded" by the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff.

August 21.

In the list of the officers and men who were shipped for the Low Countries this day occur "Captain Morgan's band, in the *Roger and Catherine* of Newcastle, fifty; captain Champernon's, in the same vessel, sixty-five."

August 30.

Queen Elizabeth granted a new charter, free of charge, to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle. It appears in Brand, ii.-596, in all the fulness of law latin; but the following are the leading provisions of the document:—Whereas the town of Newcastle, by virtue of a charter of Henry VI., has enjoyed divers liberties concerning admiral jurisdiction, and the mayor and burgesses have humbly supplicated the queen to strengthen and enrich their authority in matters of admiralty with greater privileges, and create them, now called by various names, into one enduring name of incorporation. Therefore, her majesty ordains that Newcastle shall for ever be a free town, and the burgesses, etc., shall be one body corporate, by the name of "The mayor and burgesses of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, in the county of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne," with perpetual succession, power to hold and assign lands, etc., to have a common seal, and to enjoy all the customs and liberties heretofore had by charter, letters patent, etc., rendering to the crown the ancient fee farm of 100*l.*, payable annually at Michaelmas. Power is given them to make laws for the good rule of the town, and of merchants, etc., resident therein, and for declaring the manner in which they and their officers and apprentices, etc., shall conduct themselves, and, for the maintenance of such laws, to inflict punishments, as imprisonment, etc., also to levy fines and impose penalties, and to collect and retain such fines, penalties, etc.; provided always that such laws, etc., be not contrary to the laws of the realm. The town is to extend to such bounds, etc., as from time beyond the memory of man runneth not to the contrary, and in the river Tyne from the Sparhawk in the sea to the Hedwin Streams. The mayor and burgesses may make such perambulations for recognising the boundaries of the town as they were accustomed, and displace, pull down, etc., walls, hedges, and other enclosures as they shall see fit.

"And whereas there is within our town of Newcastle, but situate in the county of Northumberland beyond the liberties of the town, a certain old and ruinous castle, by reason of which many and divers wicked persons there remaining, who within the said town would by no means be allowed to avoid punishment, do nevertheless, fleeing into the aforesaid castle, frequently evade merited

punishment. And whereas the mayor and other officers of the town have no liberty or authority to attach, arrest, or apprehend such malefactors as to the said castle, or the enclosure, precinct, ambit, or circuit thereof make flight or evasion; and the said old castle, and the enclosure, etc., hath no further use than for a prison or common gaol for our county of Northumberland, and for the common hall, called the Moot Hall, or hall of sessions of the said county. Know ye, therefore, that we give and grant to the mayor and burgesses, that they and their successors for ever shall have full liberty and authority to enter the enclosure and the houses, etc. (except our gaol there, vulgarly called the Dungeon), and within such enclosure, houses, etc., to exercise the same authority, liberties, etc., in arresting, correcting, and punishing all such malefactors, and committing them to the gaol of the town, as the mayor and burgesses have previously exercised or enjoyed."

When by death, forfeiture, or other means, the office of high admiral of England becomes vacant [Lord Howard of Effingham resigned it in February 1605-6], the town is to be free from the control of that officer, and the mayor and burgesses are to exercise admiralty jurisdiction within their town and its liberties. A court of admiralty of record is to be created, to be held every Monday, before the mayor, recorder, and aldermen, or three or more of them, of whom the mayor or recorder shall be one, for hearing and determining pleas, suits, etc., arising or happening within the town and port, where one of the parties is resident within the town, according to the laws and customs of the admiralty of England. The mayor, recorder, and aldermen, three or more, etc., are to be justices of the crown, and keep the peace within the town and port in admiralty matters. They may have sergeants of arrest, juries, inquisitions, warrants, and other necessary things as in any court of admiralty in England; also the appointment of judges, registrars, or other officers, to treat, record, enrol, etc., the causes and business of the court, and may remove and expel them, and appoint others in their places, as they see fit. They are to have cognisance and decision of wreck of the sea, great or little, happening within the town and port, death by drowning, and sight of dead bodies, also the keeping and conservation of the statutes of sea wreck, and the office of coroner enacted by 3 and 4 Edward I.; cognisance of such maimings happening in the same town, etc., as to admiralty jurisdiction belong, with power to punish delinquents, and to hear and determine pleas, suits, etc., according to the laws of England; to receive acknowledgments for admiralty causes, and to record and enrol them, and to relax, cancel, diminish, and qualify and demand execution, according to the custom of the court of admiralty of

England. All fines, forfeitures, etc., imposed in the said court are given to the mayor and burgesses for their own proper use, and in amelioration and support of the town and port, without rendering any account, or making any payment to the crown. They are to receive, also, waifs, wrecks of the sea, flotsam, jetsam, things driven ashore, treasure found, felons *de se*, deodands, and other casualties upon and by the seashore, and freshwaters and places overflowed or left dry within the flow and ebb of the tide, within the town and port and their liberties, as to the admiralty of England belong. Also all manner of royal fishes, sturgeons, whales, porpoises, dolphins, etc., within the town and port, etc.

The mayor, recorder, aldermen, etc., are to be justices at the gaol of the town, and deliver prisoners there, the coroner of the town making a return of juries, inquisitions, etc., when and as often as the gaol is delivered of the prisoners in the same, according to the form and custom of those who occupied the office beforetime. And the mayor, recorder, etc., shall have power to erect a gallows within the liberties of the town, to hang felons, murderers, and other malefactors adjudged according to the laws of England; and to seize, arrest, and commit to the town gaol, felons, thieves, and other malefactors that shall come within the town and port, and keep them in safe custody till by due process of law they be delivered. Power is given them, at the same time, to give and grant, etc., lands, tenements, messuages, reversions, services, etc., and all redemptions and hereditaments that are not held of the crown *in capite* or by military service, without the special license of the crown, or of the lords from whom such lands, etc., are held (provided that the said lands, etc., do not exceed an annual value of 200 marks), and notwithstanding the statute of mortmain, etc.

*September 20.*

Bartram Cowghram, curate of St. Andrew's church, buried. Very little is known of the humble pastors who did duty among the parishioners of Newcastle during the first half-century after the Reformation. They were not learned men, and they filled no notable place in the public life, such as it was, of the town. Cowghram may have been an exemplary pastor, but he lacked one thing that was needful—a knowledge of Latin and of the Scriptures. On the 1st February 1578 [*ante*, vol. ii., 500-507], when Chancellor Swift held a visitation of the clergy in St. Nicholas' church, Cowghram, with the churchwardens, parish clerk, and schoolmaster attended, and had his license to preach and administer the offices of his church revoked. At this visitation the clergy, as a proof of their progress in

learning, etc., were ordered to attend again in July, and give an account of St. Matthew's gospel—in Latin, if capable, in English, if otherwise. When July arrived, sixteen of the clergy, four of them Newcastle curates, had not completed their tasks, and among them was Bartram Cowghram. The following year Cowghram is reported as present at the January visitation, and the inference is that he had passed a satisfactory examination, and that his pulpit had been restored to him. His subsequent career is unknown, but he appears to have remained at St. Andrew's till his death.

*December 10.*

In a matrimonial cause from Newcastle, heard at Durham, between Jane Stephenson and Edmund Redhead, of Newcastle, evidence was given by Leonard Shafto, merchant, aged 48; Thomas Hodgson, 22; and Michael Greenwell, 32—all of Newcastle. The promise to marry was made in "the upper chamber of the hall house or fire-room" in the house of Robert Collingwood, pewterer.

A severe visitation of the plague occurred this year. It began in the summer, but was most fatal in the autumn. Oswald Chaitor, parish clerk of St. John's, notes in the register of burials on the 8th June, "1 child and 1 woman, died in the plague"; and on the 4th July, "A poor man buried. The first [man] which died of the plague." Such was the terror of the time that William Selby, the mayor elect, declined to act, and Roger Nicholson, the retiring mayor, continued for awhile to discharge the duties of the office. Hundreds of townspeople retired to towers and platforms of the wall, fields at the Barras Bridge, and meadows round St. Ann's chapel. Trade was at a standstill. All classes of the community were attacked; among the victims were the curates of St. John's and St. Andrew's, some of the children of the vicar and curate of St. Nicholas', the gravedigger of St. John's, and the poor town fool. The observant parish clerk above quoted has preserved some useful statistics of the progress of the malady. At the end of August he writes in his register of burials:—

Died in the month of August [in St. John's] 22 persons, whereof 9 was children, 6 men, and 7 women. In the months before, 10 persons—4 children, 5 women, and 1 man.

During September the pestilence made rapid strides, and he adds:—

Died in the plague in St. John's parish in the month September one hundred and 3 persons, 38 children, 27 men and 38 women.

In October the plague was at its height, and the following record is made:—



Died in the month of October in the plague (Mr. William Selby chosen to be mayor, but came not then, Mr. Roger Nicholson continuing in the place), buried in St. John's one hundred twenty eight, whereof threescore and 3 was children, 32 young men and maids, 33 of married folks.

By the end of November the tide had turned, and the number of burials at St. John's decreased to 60 :—

Died in this month of November 1589 in the plague (Mr. William Selby, mayor, and Mr. John Gibson, sheriff), buried in St. John's, 28 children, 18 women, and 14 men, which is in all threescore persons, save one of them, which was buried at St. Nicholas', which was by name Angus Foster.

Finally he sums up the mortality by pestilence in all the parishes of the town during the six months from June to Christmas :—

Died in this month, December (Mr. William Selby, mayor, and John Gibson, sheriff), 11 persons in the plague, so that in all which hath died before this day, being the first of January, in this town, it is counted by all the records in number to be in all 1727 persons ; whereof 3 hundred and 40 persons in St. John's, 5 hundred and 9 persons at the chapel, 4 hundred at Allhallows, 4 hundred at St. Andrew's, and one hundred and 3 persons at St. Nicholas', and . . . . . [75 somewhere else].

---

While the plague was raging in Newcastle, lord Huntingdon sent hither John Udale, a puritan minister, who preached, very probably, in St. Nicholas' church. Towards the close of the year Udale was summoned to London and tried for being the reputed author of a book entitled the *Demonstration of Discipline*, in which, by attacking the order of bishops, he was said to have defamed the queen through her servants. He was examined at Lord Cobham's house in Blackfriars, 13th January 1590. The opening paragraphs of the inquiry explain his position in Newcastle :—

*Question* : "How long have you been at Newcastle? *Answer* : About a year, if it please you lordship.

"Why went you from Kingston upon Thames?—Because I was silenced there, and was called to Newcastle.

"What calling had you thither?—The people made means to my lord of Huntingdon, who sent me thither.

"Had you the allowance of the bishop of that diocese?—There was none at that time.

"Then you should have gone to the Archbishop of York?—There was no Archbishop of York neither."

Udale was tried at Croydon, sentenced to death, and died in prison. Lieutenant-Colonel John Fenwick, in his bitter epistle, *Christ Ruling*, etc. (1643), upbraids Newcastle for its treatment of the puritans, and especially mourns over the fate of Udale. "Newcastle,

famous for thy mocking and misusing of Christ's messengers and ill entertainment of his servants ever since the Reformation; witness that famous Knox, great reformer of Scotland, his sermons preached there; witness learned Udale, thy faithful monitor, whose innocent blood cries yet from the ground, whom, for writing against the prelates, thou prosecuted as a traitor to bonds, imprisonment, and sentence of death, under which he died before execution." In the *Life of Ambrose Barnes* Udale is described as "another Benaiah, a lively, strong man."

## 1590.

32 and 33 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Matthew Hutton.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—***William Selby, Mayor, and John Gibson, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—***Mayor—Robert Atkinson.**

Arms : Gules, on a chief dancette argent, three mullets sable; in fess a crescent or.

**Sheriff—Ralph Jenison.**

Arms : As in 1581.



OURNE and Brand enter the name of William Riddell as mayor. The Carr and Adamson MSS. have Robert Atkinson. Under date December 20th, 1590, St. Nicholas' register contains the name of "Robert Atkinson, mayor," as sponsor at a baptism. The Carr MS. is once more correct and the historians are wrong.

*February 6.*

A question of family relationship formed the subject of inquiry at Durham on this date. Margaret Thompson had administered to the goods of Isabella Smith of Newcastle, widow, deceased, her half-sister, and sustained her right to do so by the evidence of Richard Gibson of Newcastle, merchant, aged fifty. Gibson deposed that about sixty years before, as he had heard, James Shafto, widower, of High Callerton,

married Anne Cooke, witness's aunt. Witness was frequently at their house, and heard that Shafto's first wife was the widow of James Rawe, by whom she had two children—Robert and Isabella Rawe. Isabella Rawe married Thomas Smith of Newcastle, and was the Isabella Smith whose goods were in question. James Shafto had by widow Rawe two children—Margaret and Isabel (or Bella) Shafto. Margaret Shafto married Richard Thompson, "whose widow she now is," and therefore was the half-sister of Isabella Smith, to whose goods she had administered. Richard Browne of Sandgate, Newcastle, keelman, born at Callerton, Jasper Shafto of Itchwick, husbandman, and Humphrey Shafto of Newcastle, boatman, gave corroborative evidence, and the administration was confirmed.

*May 8.*

In another case at Durham, an incident of the plague in Newcastle was related. Agnes Taylor, being smitten with the disorder, and shut up in her house in Denton Chare, made a will through the window to Cuthbert Ewbank, curate of St. Nicholas', Oswald Chaitor, parish clerk of St. John's, and others. Her last wishes were committed to paper by the clergyman, and the court heard the following story respecting it:—On the Monday after Lammas day, between eight and nine in the forenoon, Ewbank (who said he was forty-six years of age) was coming from St Nicholas', when Barbara Whitfield met him in the east end of Denton Chare, and desired him to go to her sister, Agnes Taylor, then sick of the plague. He went to the door of Taylor's house, at the west end of the Chare, and the said Agnes looked forth at the window and desired him to make her will, which he did accordingly. Agnes gave all her goods to her two sisters and her two children, and if any of them should die of the visitation, their part was to go to the survivors. This evidence was confirmed by Cuthbert Murray, slater, a neighbour; but Oswald Chaitor deposed that after "Sir" Cuthbert had made the will, Agnes said he had written that which was not her mind, and therefore told witness that she would give her sisters a frock and a kirtle, "whether they would," and all the rest of her goods to her children. The judgment of the court does not appear in the record.

*August 4.*

Another of the wealthy merchants of Newcastle, Robert Barker, alderman, and twice mayor, was this day buried in St. Nicholas' church. During his first mayoralty he lost his third wife, Ellinor, and shortly afterwards was united to Margaret, daughter of John Hudson, the pious merchant. Four sons and five daughters survived him. Ellinor married George Liddell, nephew of Thomas,

founder of the house of Ravensworth ; Elizabeth became the wife of Henry Maddison of Saltwellside, mayor in 1623 ; Susan married Cuthbert Bewicke.

Alderman Barker made his will on the 2nd December 1588, and supplemented it on the 2nd August this year. To the poor of Newcastle he left the handsome sum of 10*l.* ; gave to his son John 60*l.* and his keels, also all his coal leases, with remainders to his sons Abraham, Robert, and Isaac ; to his daughter Ellinor, 50*l.* ; to his eight youngest children, John, Elizabeth, Abraham, Susan, Jane, Robert, Isaac, and Sarah, their portions ; all his goods and chattels to be equally divided amongst them (legacies herein named excepted). To John, his dwelling-house, the waste standing before it, a house in Grindon Chare called "Collingwood," a new house in Shipman's Chare, and the waste belonging to it. To his son Abraham, a house in the Close, in the tenure of John March ; to his son Robert, a house on the Quayside, held by Cuthbert Wimprey, beer brewer ; to vicar Holdsworth, 3*l.* John March is to have the portion and education of his children, John and Elizabeth, during minority ; his cousin, Robert Atkinson, merchant, in like manner to have his son Abraham. To Robert Emerson (sister's son), Susan, wife of John Selby, merchant, and James Bartram, 40*s.* each. His son John to give to the other children after they marry five chalders every year of coals from the mines, they fetching the same from the staiths.

Additions to the will, August 2 :—George Liddell to have the portion and tuition of his daughter Jane ; John March to have Issac and Sara. Bequests to his wife's sisters—Anne Clarkson, Margery Swinburne, and Dorothy Hodgson and their children, his mother Hudson, William Dickenson, Richard Emmerson (his sister's son,) his servants, and his nurse. Forgives debts of John Jackson, George Emmerson, Richard Watson, and George Liddell. Gives his daughter, Ellinor Liddell, 20*l.*, besides the 50*l.* in the former will. Attached is a memorandum, that before his death, being reminded that his last wife, Margaret Hudson, requested him to be good to his four youngest daughters, and give them his napery and all her linen and woollen, testator gave his said four daughters all the said goods.

The inventory of deceased's personal property is long and the contents valuable. His plate, including a stone jug covered with silver, a taster, a whistle, and a toothpick, was worth 94*l.* 12*s.* 11*d.* Merchandise in Shipman's Chare, in "Collingwood" Grindon Chare, and the cellars and lofts at home, were valued at 884*l.* 5*s.* 6*d.* His share in the "grand lease" of Gateshead and Whickham was one-twelfth ; besides which he held a fourth of Cross Moor colliery, and owned three keels. Debts owing him, 700*l.* 8*s.* 7*d.*, 10*l.* of which was due

from the town, "lent in Mr. Lewin's year." His own debts, 130*l.* 19*s.* 4*d.*

At the end of the inventory we are made acquainted with an unusual habit in a merchant. John March found in the house of deceased more than 1600*l.* stowed away—namely "in a purse in his desk, in money, 18*l.* 2*s.*; more in gold, 4*l.*; more in two chests and in sixteen purses, in money and gold, 1594*l.* 14*s.*"

*October 2.*

Indulgence in bad language brought Alice Carr before Dr. Colmore at Durham on this date. Agnes, wife of Lawrence Pattison, of Newcastle, aged twenty-two, deposed, that being in Luke Hayning's house she saw Alice Carr, Catherine Wilkinson, Widow Humphrey, and Anne Gainsby sitting betwixt Widow Humphrey's doors, and saw Luke Hayning go forth of his own house, and heard him say to Catherine Wilkinson, "Much good do it you, Mrs. Carr, with your scabby neeves." Alice Carr answered, "That witch, your wife, hath sent you out to say that." Hayning's wife heard her, and came to the door, saying, "Marry, I thank you for that; that was it I looked for." Then Alice Carr called Elizabeth Hayning "Arrant witch, common slut, and curtailed knave." Some other choice epithets followed, which it is not necessary to quote. Alice Carr was ordered to purge herself of the offence in All Saints' church.

---

The "grand lease" of the manors of Gateshead and Whickham, which seems to have begun and continued, if it did not end, in what would now-a-days be considered "jobbery," was beginning to cause disturbance. When queen Elizabeth acquired it from the bishop of Durham, an advance in the price of coals was made; when Leicester passed it over to Thomas Sutton the price was further raised to 6*s.* a chaldron; when Sutton transferred it to the burgesses, the latter increased the price to 7*s.*, and afterwards to 8*s.* a chaldron, and this year they added another shilling, making the cost of coals 9*s.* a chaldron. Thereupon the lord mayor of London complained to lord treasurer Burghley, and in his complaint we obtain the first clear account of the dissatisfaction that prevailed in the town respecting the apportionment of the lease among the townspeople. His lordship informed Burghley that the society of free hosts, or hostmen, in Newcastle, to whom the grand lease was first assigned for the use of the town, consisted of about sixty persons, and that these sixty had made over the lease to about eighteen or twenty persons, by whom all other collieries were engrossed—namely, Stella, the bishop's colliery, Ravensworth colliery, Newburn colliery, and Mr. Gascoigne's mine—and on

behalf of the citizens of London he requested that all the collieries might be opened and wrought, and that the price of coals should not exceed 7s. a chaldron.

Richardson reprints from *Baker's Collections* "The answers of Henry Mitford and Henry Chapman, aldermen and coalowners in the town of Newcastle, to the information exhibited to the right honourable the lords of her majesty's privy council by the lord mayor and aldermen of the city of London, concerning the excessive prices of coals enhanced at Newcastle aforesaid, and other abuses in the said colliery practised, the particulars whereof, with the answers, ensueth." No date is attached to this document, and whether it is a reply to the foregoing complaints or an answer to further murmurings from the citizens of the metropolis, cannot now be ascertained. Internal evidence points to the conclusion that the paper relates to some other representation which the lord mayor had made to the council, for while five special objections are quoted and replied to, the particular grievance about the hostmen is not mentioned. [See February 26, 1603.] It is to be noted, however, that Henry Mitford died in 1596.

*1st Objection.*—"That the prices of coals are excessively enhanced at Newcastle. *Answer.*—To which is answered that for the space of these seven years last past, a chalder of coals, Newcastle measure, hath not been raised in price above 2s., which is 16d. in a London chalder. And for further enhancing of the excessive prices proceedeth not from Newcastle, but caused by the carriers of the said coals from Newcastle, and other means of us unknown. The reasons moving those of Newcastle to raise their former 16d. in a chalder of coals, London measure, are as followeth :—First, whereas heretofore coals have been carried from certain grounds out of which they are had and wrought for 3d. or 4d. the fother, the said coalowners are constrained now, for the like carriage in quantity, and from the same places, to pay 12d. for every fother. Again, whereas heretofore the charge of working a pit weekly did not exceed the sum of four marks, now the charge of the like work amounteth weekly between 4*l.* and 5*l.*, the causes whereof are these : First, that the said carriers of coals buy the cattle necessary thereunto at a dearer rate than heretofore ; that they being for the most part poor men, taking such grounds as they feed the cattle on for these uses in farm of the gentlemen of the country adjoining, are now enforced to pay more rent than heretofore. Again, those poor men who work the coals under the ground, having no other means to sustain the necessities of themselves and families than their own labours, are now compelled to pay 10s. for the grass of a cow during the summer season, which heretofore they were accustomed to hire for 3s. 4d. ; the which, with the dearth of other victuals,

is the cause they cannot sustain their lives with the allowance of the former wages, and so enforced to raise the same more than heretofore accustomed.

*2nd Objection.*—"That three or four of the richer sort of the said coalowners, having a lease of certain coal mines from the bishop of Durham, out of which there hath been wrought heretofore and brought to the city of London great quantity of coals, which the said coalowners do now forbear to work, using only other pits of their own in other places, whereof less quantities and a worse coal ariseth. *Answer.*—To this is answered that there are not only three or four, but above thirty, that are interested and parties to the lease which we think there is meant; whereof some be widows and orphans, and of those some not having more than 144 part, which they hold, not by lease from the bishop immediately, as is alleged, but by demise from the queen's majesty; and to that which is said, that they work less quantity of coals in the said mines than heretofore, the contrary thereof shall be sufficiently proved, if your honours desire therein to be satisfied. Nor, if that surmise were admitted, will it be found any sufficient cause for the excessive prices, since the mines amount not in quantity to the fifth part of the collieries wrought about Newcastle. And as to that alleged of forbearing to work those good mines of the bishop's, and working pits of their own, whereof a worse sort of coal ariseth. We answer, that all those other mines about the town of Newcastle are either had from her majesty, for which they pay a yearly rent, or are of the inheritance of divers gentlemen thereabout inhabiting, not only enjoyed by the pretended bishop's farmers as aforesaid, but used by the said gentlemen and sundry others to the most commodity.

*3rd Objection.*—"That great quantities of the best coals are transported to Rouen and beyond the seas, whereby the prices of sea coals grow greater. *Answer.*—To this is answered that strangers, as Frenchmen and Dutchmen, are laden most commonly of the baser coals than they that are brought to London; nor is there ten ships in the year of them which are laden of the best coals.

*4th Objection.*—"That the said three or four of the richer sort do hire coal wains that bring the coals to the water from the rest. *Answer.*—It is true that such as pay best are soonest served, without regard of better or worse ability.

*5th Objection.*—"That greater quantity of coals might be wrought than there are, for the speedy dispatch of those that fetch them. *Answer.*—To this is answered, that there are now, for the last three or four years, more coals wrought than could be gotten carried to the water, by reason of the unseasonableness of the years; the time of

such carriage, for the most part, being only between May-day and the feast of St. Michael, during the summer season, to the great disadvantage of those that work the said coals.

“These are the answers which the said Henry Mitford and Henry Chapman, for ourselves and the others, coalowners of Newcastle, humbly present unto your honours’ consideration, referring ourselves therein to your honourable table whether the lord mayor and aldermen of the city of London have just cause to complain of abuses practised in collieries at Newcastle, as they do pretend.”

---

Since 1576 we have had no account of payments made by the corporation—the books and papers having been burnt or otherwise destroyed. Alderman Hornby’s selections commence again with Michaelmas 1590, between which date and Christmas the following disbursements are recorded:—

“Paid to John Hardcastle for painting the banners which were set up at the New Gate in the fair time 8s For our yards of harden for making the said banners, 20d.

“Paid for the relief of a poor sick wench in the Alms-house of the Nether Dean Bridge, 8d.

“Paid to Mr. Claxton for the tenths and subsidies due to the queen’s majesty out of the Shod Friars, 6s. 4d. (6s. 8d.; quittance, 4d.)

“Paid for 65 men’s dinners at Whickham, this week, on the court day, holden there by Mr. William Selby and Mr. Henry Anderson, for the town, and for wine. . . ; for boat hire to the magistrates to Whickham, 18d. ; to the minstrels at Whickham, in reward, 3s. 10d. ; in relief to the poor at Whickham, 6d.

“Paid to Henry Claxton, merchant, which was borrowed of him (in the year Mr. Edward Lewins, mayor,) for the town’s use, for the setting forth of the four ships of war, 40s.

“Paid for four [six?] yards and half-a-quarter of broad cloth for the sword-bearer’s livery, at 13s. 4d. per yard, 4*l.* 1s. 8d.”







*TENTH DECADE—1591–1600.*



**1591.**

33 and 34 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Matthew Hutton.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Robert Atkinson, Mayor, and Ralph Jenison, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—George Farnaby.**

Arms : As in 1588.

**Sheriff—William Greenwell.**

The Carr MS. contains a blank shield facing the name of this sheriff.



**A**LTHOUGH the fires of Smithfield were not relighted, the gallows had become a national institution, and men were put to death for their religion all the same. A native of the bishopric, who had been educated at Rome and Rheims, and sent as priest upon the English mission, was hung, bowelled, and quartered in London. Ships arriving in the Tyne were carefully watched, and all persons known or suspected to be Catholics were placed under surveillance.

In Father Grene's MSS., quoted by Foley in the *Jesuit Records*, occur the following entries, written at York:—1590. "The 18th of April, Sir George Williams, a seminary priest, taken at Newcastle, and from thence brought to Durham and returned back again, and not well liked of;" with a subsequent entry that "he made an escape out of prison and so got away." 1591. "Mr. Roger Ashton, gentleman, and Mr. Oliver Cotton, gentleman, born in Lancashire, and Mr. Robert Musgrave, gentleman, born in the North, attempted to take ship at Shields, or thereabout, near Newcastle, was by a contrary wind, after certain days' sailing, brought back again to Shields, and there apprehended on the 27th February, and brought back to Durham, and there committed. About the 2nd March after was Mrs. Ursula Taylor, a maid, taken for harbouring them, and committed to Newcastle gaol close prisoner, as the rest were." Cotton was sent to London and released on bond; Musgrave was liberated on bail before the year was out; Ursula Taylor was detained till December 1594, and then released.

*January 22.*

One of the early interments in St Nicholas' this year was that of alderman Roger Nicholson, sheriff of Newcastle in 1583, and mayor in 1588. His wife, who predeceased him, was Agnes, daughter of Oswald Chapman (sheriff in 1545 and mayor in 1558). Six daughters survived the alderman, and all of them made "good" marriages. Francis Anderson (sheriff 1595, mayor 1601 and 1612), ancestor of the Andersons of Jesmond and Bradley, married Barbara; Bertram Anderson took Anne to wife; James Clavering (sheriff in 1599 and mayor in 1607 and 1618) was united to Grace; Thomasine married Emmanuel Heckstetter of Keswick; and Jane, after the death of her husband, — Shafto, became the wife of Daniel Heckstetter, the successful worker of a famous copper mine on the banks of Derwent-water; while Ellinor was united to Christopher Mitford.

On a tombstone in St. Nicholas' was at one time the following inscription:—"Here under lyeth in arane [a rawe?] the corps of Roger Nicholson, marchant adventurer, and somtyme maior of this towne with Annes his wife and their children. Depted the 22nd of January 1591 . . . . . which is our . . . . . shall appear, then shall we also appear . . . . . him in glory. Christ is. . . . ."

Deceased made his will on the 2nd December 1590. He desires to be buried in his wife's grave, and distributes his extensive wealth in the following manner:—

To his daughter, Jane Heckstetter, 300 marks, her husband giving

bond if she die without issue to pay 100 marks to her son, John Shafto. To his daughters, Anne Anderson, 300 marks, and to Thomasine, 400 marks and his house by the Long Stairs. To John Shafto, Jane's son, a close in Gateshead, and a house near Gateshead church stile, with remainder to the children of his mother Jane. John Shafto's portion, viz., 200*l.*, to be paid to his mother within four years of testator's death, and the executors to pay during those four years 10*l.* a-year towards John's finding. To Roger, son of Francis Anderson, his house in Gateshead, with remainder to Roger's brother Henry. To Henry, son of Bertram Anderson, a house in Gateshead, held by John Farbridge, glover, and another house with two cottages, lately held by John Clerk, quarryman. To his daughter, Ellinor Mitford, his dwelling-house, with the wainscot, brewing leads, etc., and a house and orchard at the Close Gate, with remainders to his surviving daughters, subject to legacies. Bequests to four children of Francis Anderson, two children of James Clavering, Francis Nicholson, Roger, son of Thomas Nicholson, Mark, son of Thomas Shafto, the poor of Newcastle, etc. To his daughter, Barbara Anderson, and her husband, his best nest of goblets, double gilt, with covering; after their death, to Roger, their son. To his daughter Jane, his gold chain, with the brooch of gold upon it; to Francis Anderson, his best signet; to James Clavering, his second; and to Christopher Mitford, his third signet; to Daniel Heckstetter and Bertram Anderson, each three double ducats. All his rings not bequeathed to be divided amongst his daughters Grace, Ellinor, Anne, and Thomasine. Residue to his executors—Barbara, Grace, and Ellinor, equally. Concerning his part of the lease of the coal-mines in Whickham and Gateshead, he wills that if any of his executors alienate her part of the same to any person, except only to one or two of his executors, she shall lose her part of the lease for ever. Forgives his brother James 11*l.* of 26*l.* odd owing him for a shop and tackle. If an adventure which he has made to Bordeaux and Rochelle, or 400*l.* and above, should miscarry, in part or wholly, the loss or damage to be equally borne, as well on behalf of his children's legacies and portions as on the part of his executors. If his daughter Thomasine follow not, concerning her marriage, the advice of his supervisor, and his sons, Francis Anderson and James Clavering, she shall have but 300 of the 400 marks above bequeathed. Supervisor—Richard Holdsworth, vicar of Newcastle, with 10*l.* for a token. Witnesses—Richard Holdsworth, George Still, Matthew Chapman, Ralph Cocke.

*March 8.*

John March of Redworth, nephew of Alderman Barker, survived

his uncle but a few months. Dying on this date, he was buried in his parish church of Heighington, where a monumental slab preserves his memory. In his will are several clauses relating to Newcastle. He gives their goods and portions, and 100*l.* of his own, to John, Abraham, Elizabeth, Isaac, and Sarah Barker, desiring Robert Atkinson and George Farnaby of Newcastle to have their tuition, etc., during their minorities; while to Susan and Jane, other children of his uncle, he leaves twenty marks a-piece. Forgives the debt of George Emmerson of the East Gate, Newcastle, and leaves a rose noble each to George Liddell and his wife and George Farnaby. Out of the sale of the fine of Whessoe, the town chamber of Newcastle is to receive 100*l.*, and pay the interest—10*l.*—half to the poor of Newcastle, and the other half to the poor of Heighington. Richard Stott and George Liddell, both of Newcastle, are to have a loan of 100*l.* each without interest. Gives to Christopher Raine, vicar Holdsworth, and Mr. Bamford, 20*s.* each. Residue to his nephew, John March, and the five children of his uncle first above-named. Executors—Robert Atkinson and George Farnaby, with a gift of 20*l.* a-piece. Testator's goods, etc., were valued at 2030*l.* 9*s.* 10*d.* A few days before his death he rendered an account of his dealings under the will of his uncle Barker. He had received 708*l.* 12*s.* of Barker's debts, and perhaps more; if more, then "the receipt thereof will appear . . . by my own handwriting set down in mine uncle Barker's debt book, lying in his hall at Newcastle in a dresser there, the key whereof is in a pulke in the parlour. The specialities for all his other debts do remain with his books, in his new house at Newcastle." He had paid out of his uncle's goods to Robert Atkinson, part of Robert and Susan Barker's portions, 200*l.*; to George Liddell, for Jane Barker's portion, 300*l.*; in legacies, 163*l.*; in debts, 130*l.* 19*s.* 6*d.*, etc. A note of money that was his uncle's, lent gratis, includes the names of Henry Anderson, 100*l.*; Henry Midforth, 100*l.*; Ralph Lawson, 50*l.*; Nicholas Hedley, 50*l.*; Mr. Riddell, 20*l.*; Anthony Welbury, 20*l.*; Mr. Farnaby, 60*l.*

*April 8.*

Buried at St. Nicholas' church, Christopher Morpeth, son of Richard Morpeth, merchant. Christopher died without issue; his brother Robert founded the family of Morpeth of Stillington, in the county of Durham. Robert is named in the will of Christopher Moiser, of Newcastle, glover, in 1571, as receiving forgiveness for "all the money he owes for two buckskins, and for fur to his wedding gloves." Christopher Morpeth's name occurs in the wills of Bertram Anderson and Isabella Franklin.

The town being engaged in serious business concerning the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham, ran up a heavy lawyer's bill. John Baxter, lawyer, received for his charges to and from London at Michaelmas term, "concerning the town's suits in law," sixty-six days at 8s.—28*l.* 8s.; and for payment of lawyer's fees, 42*l.* 10s. 3d. There was also paid "to Mr. Baxter, the lawyer's man, for writing the copy of the lease of Gateshead and Whickham, and writing the special verdict betwixt the town and Mr. Kingsmote, and his other draught of the same in another form, containing eighty-nine sheets of paper, 36s. 8d. To a post that brought letters to Mr. Mayor from London, from Mr. Anderson and Mr. Chapman, 1s. To William Jackson for his charges to London about the town's business, and for payment of lawyer's fees from the 29th October until the 10th December, being forty-two days, 4s. a-day—8*l.* 8s., and for law fees and other charges, 10*l.* 18s. 7d., as followeth: For post-horses for his . . . carrying home, 17s. 4d.; to Mr. Hickes, to make inquiry what the dean of York had done, either with the queen or his lord and master, 20s.; to Mr. Godfraie, Mr. Harris, and Mr. Vaughanne, for drawing, writing, and perusing the book for the court, and the questions in paper, 4*l.* 10s.; paid for a dinner and a supper, and other charges when the book was perused, 19s. 3d.; for the presentment book, 7s. 4d.; to Mr. Spencer and his men for seeking the records in Morrison's office for 500 years, how the dead street was answered, and for copies of some part of the original, 22s.—19*l.* 6s. 7d.; to Mr. Hancock for his advice how we should proceed as touching the dead street, 10s."

Ancient customs are illustrated by payments to John Hardcastle, for making 137 badges and for canvas to make them upon, for the poor folk which shall be allowed to go in the town to ask alms, 18s. 6d.; to George Fuster, surgeon, for letting John Lawson, fool, blood, 8d.; for two cast of counters, when the twenty-four did cast over the month's account, 12d.; for keeping Hogmagog this year, 6s. 8d.

Some "noblemen of Persia" came through the town on their way to Scotland, and the local magnates gave them 6*l.*, and paid for a guide and four horses, which conducted them to Bothal. The same sum was given to a "nobleman of Mouldavye," who came from Scotland. Six post horses brought him from Bothal, and sent him to Durham, at the expense of the town. Gifts were made to two of the churches—40s. to St. Andrew's for "the maintenance of it," and 26s. 8d. to All Hallows, "for to make a new pew for Mr. Mayor and his brethren to sit in."

One of the boxes in the town chamber was out of order, and Thomas Robison, joiner, received 20d. "for putting in a new foreside of wainscot of the chest called Adam." Two rings and two loops, costing 6d., were fitted to "Adam" at the same time, and a cover was provided, consisting of  $1\frac{1}{4}$  yard of broad napped grene, at an expense of 6s. 3d.

## 1592.

34 and 35 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Matthew Hutton.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**George Farnaby, Mayor, and William Greenwell, Sheriff.**

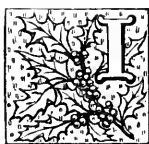
*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Roger Rawe.**

Arms : Gules, on a cross argent five torteaux.

**Sheriff—Thomas Liddell.**

Arms : Argent, a fret and a chief gules ; on the last three leopard's heads or.



IN the municipal accounts of Newcastle for this year occur, for the first time, the painful details of an execution on account of religion. An unfortunate priest, whose name is not given, was caught, examined no doubt by the commission for recusants and seminary priests, and being convicted, was hung upon the town moor with accustomed barbarity :—"Paid to a Frenchman which did take forth the seminary priest's bowels after he was hanged, 20s. ; for coals which made the fire at the execution of the seminary priest, 6d., and for a wright's axe, which headed the seminary, 4s. 6d.—5s. ; for a hand axe and a cutting knife, which did rip and quarter the seminary priest, 14d., and for a horse which trailed him from off the sledge to the gallows, 12d.—2s. 2d. ; for four iron stanchels, with hooks on them, for the hanging of the seminary's four quarters on the four gates, 3s. 8d. ; for one iron wedge for riving wood to make the fire on the moor, 18d. ; and for a shovel to the fire, 2s. ; to a mason for two days' work, setting the stanchels of the gates fast, 10d. a-day, 20d. ;

for carrying the four quarters of the seminary priest from gate to gate, and other charges, 2s. ; for fire and coals for melting the lead to set the iron stanchels of the gate fast, 8d."

A short time before the execution the local authorities were hunting up another victim. The municipal records do not state that he was a seminary priest, and the use of a sleuth-hound, "to make enquiry" for him, would suggest that he was a murderer, did we not know that dogs were used for the pursuit of political offenders, burglars, thieves, and murderers alike. Whatsoever his offence may have been, he was a person whom the council at York were very anxious to catch, and the corporation of Newcastle paid the following items in scouring the country after him :—"Bartram Gofston's charges at Shields, two times making search for James Watson—one time with George Liddell, and the second time with George Still, 7s. 6d. ; paid for the charges of three horses two days, and riding to Darneton and Shields to make enquiry for James Watson, commanded by Mr. Mayor, 6s. 6d. ; paid for a sleuth-hound and a man which led him, to go make enquiry for James Watson, 5s. ; paid for the charges of three men, one sent to Alnwick, the two to Stockton, and the three to Seaton Delaval, with my Lord President's letters to make search for Watson, 5s."

*March 9.*

Robert Lewin of Newcastle, gentleman, conveys to Anthony Felton of the same place, gentleman, a tenement in Newcastle in Overden Brigg, abutting between a tenement held by George Richardson on the east, a tenement in the tenure of George Baker, cordiner, on the west, and from the Overden Brigg on the south to the wall of the orchard of Anthony Felton on the north. Among the witnesses are Garethe Woodrington and John Murray, minister of St. John's.

*March 30.*

Grant to Anthony Felton of the office of customer in the port of Newcastle.

*April 13.*

Christopher Chaytor of Butterby, in his will of this date, bequeathed to the poor in the parish of St. Andrew's, Newcastle, "where I was born," 40s., and directed that half a debt of 31*l.*, due to him from lady Hilton, should be bestowed by his executor on the most poor, needy, and impotent folk in Durham, Newcastle, and other places. Testator was the son of John Chaytor of Newcastle, merchant, had originally been in the service of the duke of Somerset, and holding under the crown the surveyor-generalship of the north,

became a wealthy man. He married Elizabeth, daughter of William Clervaux, and bought the Butterby property from lord Lumley. "He bore many legal offices under the crown and bishop palatine," writes Mr. Longstaffe; "and at the age of ninety-eight, full of riches and honour, seems to have broken his neck by tumbling through the roof of his house at Butterby." A monument, bearing a curious Latin inscription, was erected to his memory in St. Oswald's church, Durham.

*May 11.*

Henry Robinson, of All Saints' parish, Newcastle, keelman, or rather keelowner, left considerable property in his will dated as above—houses, keels, and, strange to say, books. He bequeathed to the poor people within Sandgate ward, 5s.; to Mr. Ralph Jenison, "the half of my 'kevere lightener,' whereof James Bell hath the other half, in consideration that he shall pay for my mortuary, and stand a good friend and master unto my wife;" to Christopher, son of James Bell, a service book with the *Sick Man's Salve*, and *Short's Brief Chronicles*; to his servant, Ellinor Urpeth, a brass pot, a pan, two platters, and "my old red petticoat, to be to her a waistcoat;" to his cousin, Cuthbert Musgrave, a frieze jacket; to Catherine, his wife, all his houses in Sandgate during the leases, and if she die before the leases expire, Ralph Jenison is to have the four slated houses, and James Bell the two thatched ones. Residue, including a clinker-built lighter, to his wife, the sole executrix.

*July.*

In the Record Office is a book containing a copious account of the capture of a French ship, the *Holy Ghost*, and the depositions of witnesses respecting the vessel and her cargo. Her owners obtained an order from the court of admiralty for her restoration, and during the proceedings there, one Christopher Denant, of Newcastle, was examined, who deposed that he saw the vessel at Milford, and saw Captain Thynne, one of those who captured her, receive part of the cargo—fish and oil—ashore. Most of the fish was sold by proclamation, but he took 1000 fish, and seven tuns of oil, with some cables and anchors, to Bristol, which were seized by the mayor of that city, by virtue of an admiralty commission and letters of assistance from the council, brought by a servant of the French ambassador, etc.

*November 18.*

Royal commission to George Bowes, Ralph Lambton, and Nicholas Tempest, esquires, Percival Bell, gentleman, and another, respecting a tax of one penny a chaldron on coals, levied by the corporation of



Newcastle, and said to be due to the crown. The commissioners were to obtain evidence on the following points :—" 1. Do you know or have credibly heard that there was paid or satisfied a penny for every chaldron of coals shipped within the port of Newcastle-upon-Tyne to be sold for maintenance of bread, wine, and wax to be spent at masses said in the said town of Newcastle at any time or times within five years before the fourth day of November in the first year of the reign of king Edward VI.? 2. Did the chamberlains of the said town or any other officer or officers of the said town receive and take the said penny for the use aforesaid? 3. Do you know that the mayor and commonalty of Newcastle do now pay or cause to be paid and found the bread and wine in every parish in the said town, and how long have they done so? 4. What other material matter or thing do you know or have heard touching the premises, and to prove her majesty's title to have a penny for every chaldron of coals shipped within the port of Newcastle-upon-Tyne to be sold as aforesaid?"

The inquiry was held in January 1593, when the following witnesses were examined :— . . . of Thorpe Bowmer, esquire ; aged seventy-six. He could not answer either of the questions. He came to the town in the . . . and twentieth year of Henry VIII., and served for seven years as an apprentice. Had heard it reported, by the chamberlains of the town, that the bread, wine, and wax spent at the masses in the said town were provided at the charges of the town chamber. John Jackson, of Newcastle, aged seventy-seven, made a similar deposition. Henry Temple, aged seventy-eight, knew that the bread, wine, and wax were provided at the cost of the town chamber, for that he, divers times within five years before the 4th November, 1 Ed. VI., did fetch wax candles from the said town chamber, and wafers out of the town, by the appointment of the chamberlains then being. Further, that since the 1 Elizabeth every communicant within the town of Newcastle, being householders, have paid pence a-piece, and every servant, or other communicant, ½d. a-piece for the finding of bread and wine ; since which time there hath been no contribution forth of the town chamber for the same.

In the Exchequer Rolls under date the 15th May (1593) occurs this entry :—" Whereas by an order in this court the 12th day of February last past, reciting that where Thomas Egerton, esquire, her Majesty's attorney-general, in Michaelmas term last, had exhibited into this court one information of intrusion against the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, George Dent, and divers others of the same town, for intruding into the queen's possession of an annual rent, in taking a penny for every chaldron of coals shipped out of the same

town; whereunto the defendant had appeared, and upon debating of the matter by the counsel of both sides, it was ordered that the defendants should, before the second return of this term, put in their plea to the said information, such one as they would stand unto at their peril. Now, forasmuch as the said defendants have put in the general issue unto the said information without the lease and licence of this court, it is therefore ordered this day, upon the motion of Mr. Serjeant Owen, on the behalf of her Majesty, that the defendants shall have delay till Tuesday next to show cause why an injunction should not be awarded against them for the avoiding them from the possession of the premises."

It was probably in connection with the preliminary inquiries leading to this commission that George Farnaby, and his colleagues on the aldermanic bench, wrote to the lord treasurer a letter, of which Richardson prints a fragment:—"The inhabitants would be disabled to pay unto her majesty the yearly fee farm reserved unto her highness, and unable to maintain our bridge and walls, now in great ruin and decay, and also great loss and hindrance unto her majesty's customs." Signed by George Farnaby, mayor; William Selby, Henry Anderson, Mark Shafto, Roger Rawe, William Riddell, Henry Chapman, Robert Atkinson, and William Greenwell, the sheriff. No further trace of the proceedings can be found in the rolls of the exchequer or other of the national archives.

*December 16.*

Administration of the goods of Robert Mitford, merchant, of Newcastle, granted to his wife Jane and his children, Christopher and Jane Mitford, and Henry Anderson. Deceased was a son of Christopher Mitford, and, dying intestate, was buried in St. Nicholas' on the 4th of this month. His goods, appraised by William Greenwell, George Still, Lionel Greenwell, and Bertram Anderson, were valued at 50*l.* 6*s.* 3*d.*, among which is the coal lease of Elswick, left him by his father, 50*l.* A list of his desperate or irrecoverable debts includes one of 34*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, due from "old Mr. Robert Anderson the alderman;" 6*l.* 18*s.* from Robert Wilkinson, merchant; from Ralph Rawe, 2*l.*; and Richard Brandling, 46*s.* 4*d.*

---

Toby Mathew, dean of Durham, was not satisfied with the progress of persecution in the North. He had arrived in Newcastle to take part in the commission against seminary priests, and nobody came before him. So he sat down with three others in the "high castle," and wrote to the lord warden, Sir John Forster:—"Being here

in hope to execute her majesty's service, according to the commission against seminary priests, recusants, and disobedient persons, we find not only no appearance of any offender before us, but no return of the last precept directed to the sheriff; nor himself, nor any minister present, according to their bounden duty—a kind of dealing strange, and without example in any part of this realm. If it should pass uncontrolled it were better the commission were referred to council than either purposely or negligently abused, and made utterly void. We acquaint you with this manner of dealing, and signify that, as we are treated with contempt, we do not purpose to hold any meeting here, but refer the whole proceeding to you, and such as you may call to you; they will yield more obedience to your higher place. We are ashamed to see a course taken so repugnant to her majesty's pleasure."

---

The corporation of Newcastle maintained their reputation for generosity towards distinguished visitors, by presents of wine and sugar. Thus they paid for five gallons and a quart of sack, at 3s. a-gallon, 15s. 9d; and for 14¼ pounds of sugar at 16d. per pound, 19s.; sent as a present to "my lord ambassador, as he came travelling through this town to Scotland, called my lord Burra." Wine also was sent to the president of the council, and 18d. was paid to a cooper for seeing that the cask was tight. Bishop Hutton came to the town, and the corporation gave him 20 pounds of sugar in 2 loaves at 18d. a-pound, 6 pottles of sack, 10 pottles of claret wine, 9 pottles of white wine, and a pottle of Rhenish wine—58s. 4d. Nor did municipal generosity stop there. The corporation gave John Coulson, surgeon, "for his accustomed fee for helping to cure the maimed poor folk—granted by Mr. Mayor, 40s.;" to Augustus Spencer, "a scholar, travelling to Durham, to speak with my lord of Durham, 10s.;" and to my lord admiral's man "that came to seek for a penny of every chalder of coals that should have been laid aboard of any ship in this town, in reward, 3l." A banquet to the judges cost them 3l. 16s. 10d.; and they paid "to William Dickens, in part of payment of 12l. for gilding the queen's arms, and the town's at the Bridge end, 40s.;" and to Robert Hedley, wright, "for six days' work in the town's storehouse on the bridge, making rails to hang armour on, at 10d. a-day, 5s."



1593.

35 and 36 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Matthew Hutton.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Roger Rawe, Mayor, and Thomas Liddell, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Lionel Maddison.****Sheriff—William Jenison.**

Arms : The Mayor's as in 1584, the Sheriff's as in 1581.

**Henry Anderson and Henry Mitford**

Were re-elected members for Newcastle of the parliament which the queen summoned to meet on the 19th February.



T the mayor-choosing this year a dispute occurred which involved an appeal to the lord president of the North, at York. The town paid for "the charges of divers men which were upon the election at Michaelmas last, and could not agree of it with others, and was at York to try the same"—namely, Mr. Henry Anderson, 4*l.*; Mr. William Selby, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Mark Shafto, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Robert Dudley, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Henry Mitford, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Edward Lewen, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Henry Chapman, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Robert Atkinson, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Ralph Jenison, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. John Gibson, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. Robert Eden, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Mr. William Greenwell, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; Matthew Chapman, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; George Still, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; James Bartram, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; William Helie, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Thomas Dodds, skinner, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Cuthbert Nicholson, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; George Rochester, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Mr. Colverly, 3*l.* 4*s.*; Mr. Christopher Lewen, 3*l.*; Mark Blunt, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; George Dawson, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Edward Hall, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Richard Kell, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Thomas Riches, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; James Bilton, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; Steven Potts, 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*

"Paid to Robert Heslop for mending a musket, the lock being broken, which was in shooting when my lord president came, 2*s.* Paid for drink to the gunners that night, 3*s.* 4*d.*"

In August the corporation gave the lord president a hogshead of claret, bought of John Selby, merchant, costing 7*l.*

Disputes notwithstanding, the election day was marked by the usual festivities. The retiring mayor, Roger Rawe, entertained the electors with wine at their own expense, costing the considerable sum of 12s. ; the town also paid for geese, "given at dinner," 36s. 8d. ; for "peres" to Mr. Mayor and his brethren, 10s. ; and for herbs and "rushes which strawed the chapel," 2s. Then in October, when the lord president had smoothed matters over, the local treasury "paid for ale to the West Spittle when Mr. Mayor and other officers took their oaths, 16d. ; and paid for a glass for Mr. Mayor to drink in, 4d."

*January 5.*

Inquisition held at Newcastle before Thomas Calverley, Thomas Hylton, Henry Anderson, esquire, Robert Dudley, Anthony Felton, Matthew Johnson, Henry Anderson, and Timothy Draper, by virtue of a commission to them directed, by the oaths of Robert Eden, apothecary ; John Gray, draper ; John Gray, tailor ; Leonard Diggles, yeoman ; George Barker, cordiner ; Thomas Dalton, tanner ; Cuthbert Nicholson, blacksmith ; Richard Kyrkus, . . . ; Richard Johnson, tanner ; George Rochester, saddler ; Thomas Wygham, yeoman ; John Smith, yeoman ; Robert Errington, master and mariner ; Thomas Tucker, master and mariner ; William Eden, master and mariner ; and Ralph Rawe, master and mariner ; who testify :—

"That the merchants of the town of Newcastle have always, time out of mind, whereof the memory of man is not to the contrary, until Michaelmas gone a twelvemonth, or thereabout, used to have allowed unto them by the customers and other officers of the said port, for all cloths by them shipped, for the [use] of the said port of the said town of Newcastle into foreign parts, eight northern . . . single northern D . . . or plains for a pan [pannus] or cloth, and four northern double D . . . for a pan or cloth. And that for every such pan or cloth they paid unto the said customers, and other officers, by and during all the time of their memories, until the said Michaelmas gone a twelvemonth, six shillings and eightpence, and no more, for all customs, subsidies, and other duties due unto her majesty, or her predecessors, for the same. And the said jurors upon their oaths further say, that for the continuance of the said ancient rates and allowances made to them, the custom and subsidy of the cloths there shipped might be proportionate unto the custom and subsidy of the wools which the said merchants of Newcastle are to pay by [virtue of] several letters patent granted from her majesty and her predecessors, the marquis of Winchester, then lord treasurer of England, did direct his letters unto the customs and other officers of the said port, under his hand and

seal, bearing date the 14th of December 1560. The tenor whereof followeth in these words:—‘After my hearty commendations. Whereas by the records of the queen’s court of exchequer upon search there had, it appeareth that time out of mind there hath been allowed in your port of Newcastle, to every merchant shipping there, any D . . . or straits, eight pieces of the same for a cloth, and now of late the merchants of the said port complain themselves to be otherwise used at your hands ; at whose complaint, and upon the sight of the said books, and other considerations, it is ordered by me, and sir Richard Sackevill, and sir Walter Myldmay, that there shall be allowed by the customers of the said port for the time being, to every merchant shipping such kind of cloth . . . eight dozen or straits for a cloth, as heretofore it hath been used with order, I will and require you to cause to be observed. And thus fare you well.’ Which letter is enrolled in an old register pertaining to the fellowship of the said merchants, shewed unto the said jury, at the time of this inquisition ; by which usage, reason, and warranty the said jurors say that the said rates and allowances were had and made unto the said merchants as aforesaid, and further, the said jurors upon their oaths say that the said merchants of Newcastle have always, for the time whereof the memory of man is not to the contrary, always used to have allowed unto them, by the customs or other officer of the said port of Newcastle, a favourable pull or piece in every draught of wool by them or any of them . . .” [The remainder (2 lines) illegible.] The witnesses, all of Newcastle, were Henry Mitforde, esquire, aged 50 ; seven merchants—viz., Ralph Jenison, aged 56 ; Edward Bartram, aged 66 ; William Huntlic, aged 48 ; John Jackson, aged 77 ; Anthony Eland, aged 66 ; John Gibson, aged 62 ; and George Still, aged 60 ; four aldermen—viz., William Selbie, aged 66 ; Robert Atkinson, aged 62 ; George Farnabie, aged 57 ; and Mark Shafto, aged 58 ; and Henry Temple, shipwright, aged 76.

Following up this inquisition, Roger Rawe, the mayor, and ten aldermen and ex-sheriffs of Newcastle, write to Lord Burghley on the 20th May, stating that the merchants have of late been much hindered by the new demand of customs upon their cloth and wool. The advancement that may grow to her majesty thereby is not so much as the loss that may come to their town and poor country. If laid upon the merchants, it will reduce the place and country adjoining to great poverty. They therefore request his aid in this their suit. Thank him for committing the hearing of their cause to men of advised consideration, whose opinions would have been returned to him ere now had they not gone into the country after the parliament. Have entreated Sanderson to deal for them. Beg respite of payment of

100*l.* charged on Mr. Dudley, one of the customers, above their old rates, until her majesty's pleasure is further known, when they shall be ready to make payment, according to their duty.

*January 22.*

"Mr. Robert Atkinson [the sheriff of 1580?] married his maide, Isabell Rilley." Such is the obtrusive entry by which the writer of the marriage register of St. Nicholas' notes an alliance which, mayhap, did not accord with his ideas of social propriety. [See October 6, 1596.]

*April 8.*

Buried at St. Nicholas church, Thomas Bowes of Newcastle, merchant. By his wife Annise he had twelve surviving children, eleven of them under age. His will, proved September 28, is short and simple. He gives his wife and son Robert each a rose noble for a token; his son George a gold ring with a toadstone [loadstone?], and Thomas, his youngest son, a signet of gold for tokens; to all his children, 20*l.* a-piece, "and if my goods will not amount so far, then it is my will that my houses in Gateshead, my house, with my two shops, and a backside, or waste, which I bought of William Lamb, shall be sold, for the full accomplishment thereof." Residue to his wife and Thomas his son, executors.

*April 9.*

Mark Shafto, merchant and alderman (sheriff of Newcastle in 1573, and mayor in 1578), who lived in the Side, and had a mill in the Painter Heugh, died this day, and on the morrow was buried among his kindred in St. Nicholas'. Deceased was one of the five sons of Mark Shafto, mayor in 1548, and married Elizabeth, widow of one of the Marleys of Newcastle, by whom he left no surviving issue. His will is dated 8th November 1592, and a codicil bears date the day of his death. After expressing his desire to be buried in St. Nicholas', "as near as may be to the sepulchre of my late father," he gives five marks to the poor, and disposes of his property as follows:—To Elizabeth, his wife, for life, their dwelling-house in the Side, and a tenement and close called Overgarthe, in the Friar Chare; after her death the dwelling-house to remain to William Marley, and the tenement and close unto Helinor [wife's daughter], wife of Ralph Carr, of Cocken, for her life; and afterwards to William, heir of Ralph Carr, unless his wife shall will them otherwise. To Mark Shafto, his nephew, his messuage, etc., in the Cloth Market, "together with

my mill, standing in a certain place called the Painter Heughe," with successive remainders to Launcelot, Edward, Christopher, Robert, and John Shafto, his nephews. To Robert, all his coals upon any pit or staith, and his interest in the coal pit at Hollinbush; paying all testator's debts and receiving all debts due to him. Also his interest in certain keels, paying thereout 100*l.* to his widow. To the children of Isabel Shafto, deceased, to Anne, widow of Ninian Shafto, his brother, and her children, 10*s.* each. To Barbara, daughter of Ralph Carr, 10*l.* Residue to his wife, the executrix. Supervisors, with a bequest of 10*s.* each—William Riddell, John Gibson, and William Greenwell, merchants. Witnesses—the above, with John Baxter, Charles Shafto, William Bonner, John Clibborn, and others.

*May.*

The corporation "paid for a hogshhead of claret wine to serve to the churches against Easter for their communements—viz., St. Nicholas', 12 gallons; Allhallows, 20 gallons; St. John's, 15 gallons; St. Andrew's, 10 gallons—57 gallons in all, 7*l.*, and for four gallons to the churches over and besides the hogshhead to the four churches, the sum of 10*s.* 8*d.*"

*June 10.*

An order of the fellowship of tailors in Newcastle, issued on their general meeting day, Plough Monday, enacts that every brother's son, whose father being free, hereafter shall be free of the company, shall be admitted by patrimony, without service of years (if he be a master of occupation) by payment of 15*s.* unto the use of the said company; provided always that if his father owed the company money for fines, or otherwise, the son should pay the arrearages, with all other duties, before he be admitted. If the said brother's son or sons which requireth to be free, cannot work at the said occupation of a tailor, then he shall pay for his freedom 40*s.*, and have no benefit of the box, "neither keep any man to work of the said occupation except he be a free brother of the said fellowship, which in nowise shall be hurtful or damnifiable to the said fellowship, and also he shall lay good bond (not free of the said fellowship by evident writing) for the keeping of these our orders, as is aforesaid specified and contained, with truth unfeigned."

The company found it easier to make by-laws, and enter orders in their books, than to secure obedience to their regulations when so made and entered. At a general meeting, a year or two later, they pledged themselves, forty-two of them signing the book, to try and secure better observance of their rules in future:—"All good orders



hereafter made, or hereafter to be made, which is ordered and set down in this book, for the keeping of the said company in brotherly love, and the maintaining of good order, and heretofore made, or hereafter to be made, by the consent and assent of all the most part of the said company and fellowship, never to be broken from this time forward, but all the aforesaid orders is to be executed and kept with faith unfeigned, and never to be broken. In witness whereof most part of the company and fellowship hath set to their hands and marks, the day and year abovesaid, being one of our general meeting days, called the Plough Day." Signed—Thomas Atkinson (with a pair of scissors pointing upwards between the Christian name and surname); John Lorke (with a pair of scissors pointing downwards in a similar position), and forty others.

*July 8.*

The queen having asked the earl of Huntingdon to certify how two sums of 5000*l.* and 6000*l.* paid to him had been expended, that nobleman writes from York to lord Burghley at some length. "The first sum," he alleges, "is a mistake, as I never received it; but at the time stated I received a commission of lieutenancy from council to go to Newcastle and levy a certain number of horse and foot to be sent to the borders, the leading whereof was committed to the lord chamberlain, whom her majesty sent down from court to Berwick for that purpose. I think those raised were 2500 foot and 300 or 500 horse, and treasure was sent down for the pay of these soldiers, but I cannot say how much. When her majesty commanded the men to be discharged I received 500*l.* from the treasurer at Berwick, which he was directed to pay me, and I think the chamberlain had the like, but until I received authority from secretary Walsingham and the treasurer I did not touch a penny of it, but used what I carried from town with me, and afterwards borrowed in Newcastle when my own was spent. For the 6000*l.* said to have been sent to me in August 1588, I remember that Sir William Reed brought 6000*l.* in gold to Newcastle, and the council and secretary Walsingham's letters to me mentioned that sum. Sir William Reed only paid me 5960*l.*, and stayed 40*l.* for portage; I sent 300*l.* to Mr. Bowes, at Berwick, to be paid to the king of Scots, as commanded; 100*l.* to lord Scrope; and 860*l.* I left at Newcastle with Mr. Anderson, for victuals, etc., provided there by the mayor for her majesty's service, in that troublesome and dangerous time, whereof I have a book signed by the mayor and his brethren. For the other 2000*l.* I am in the mercy of her majesty, yet I spent 600*l.* of it in that service, after all my own was consumed. For the 1400*l.* which remained I am loth to write the truth; I pray

your favour until I may give full satisfaction for my whole debt yet unpaid, and I hope sometime next term to say that to you which you will not mislike." In another letter, dated the 15th, Huntingdon, still at York, tells Burghley that he has heard from the mayor and others of Newcastle that earl Bothwell lately came secretly to their town, and as he may do the like again, they ask whether they should stay him or let him depart, as they hear he is in displeasure with the king his master. "I answered that if such proclamation was made at Carlisle and Northumberland as I was informed—viz., that no man should reset the earl, upon pain of his majesty's high displeasure—then I wished the mayor to warn the inhabitants to beware how they did anything contrary to the proclamation. Pray direct what I shall further do, if they or any other should send to me for the like occasion."

*August.*

"Paide for two purses of lether which should have bene cutt in the Towne-Chamber, and was not, by a Frenchman, 8d." It was a custom in Newcastle, as stated by Bourne, that a master of a ship who threw ballast into too shallow water at sea, if convicted, must pay a fine of 5*l.*; which sum was put into a purse, and the offender was required to cut the purse, by way of acknowledgment that he was no better than those "cut-purses" who ripped a man's money from his girdle. By a special order of the court at Whitehall this ancient custom was to be "renewed and put in due execution;" from which we may learn that it had fallen into disuse. Gardiner says the offender was "to pay a fine of five pounds, or else to cut the purse which hangs up in the town-chamber with sand and money in it, and so much as is therein he must pay, or is sent to prison, and there to lye till he doth pay it."—[J. C.] To this entry may be added one dated April, this year, wherein appears a payment of 16*d.* for "the relief of a poore childe in the Towre of the Bridge, which cutt a purse; for his meet five daies, commanded,"—cut a purse with felonious intent, it is to be presumed.

*September 9.*

Mrs. Ursula Brandling, buried in St. Nicholas' on this date, was the daughter of William Buckton of Buckton, in Yorkshire, and had been twice married, first to George Collingwood of Eslington, and secondly to Henry Brandling, sheriff of Newcastle in 1566, and mayor in 1568 and 1576, who died, as previously recorded, in May 1578. By both marriages she had issue; her son by the first being Sir Cuthbert Collingwood, knight. In her will she bequeathed to her

son, Richard Brandling (who inherited considerable property in Newcastle from his father), various implements of husbandry, corn, etc., at Wardley ; to her son, William Brandling, 40*l*.; to her grandson, Trevanion Collingwood, her draught oxen, corn, etc., at Weetslade ; to her son, Sir Cuthbert, a nest of gilded bowls, being three bowls and a cover, in remembrance of her, together with the residue of her effects, after payment of various small legacies to grandchildren and relations. On the 13th November Richard Brandling of Newcastle, being, by report of the bishop of Durham, guilty of multiplied contumacies in not paying the amount awarded by Dr. Colmore in a case of subtraction of tithes, wherein Jane Mitford of Newcastle was plaintiff—namely, 3*l*. 6*s*. 8*d*., the costs of the suit, and two shillings and eightpence tithe—and defying alike the church and the royal authority, the queen ordered the bishop to arrest him and hold him in custody till he should purge his contempt and make satisfaction.

*October 24.*

A letter of this date from one Anthony Atkinson, written apparently to Cecil, contains information about the movements of priests in the northern counties. The writer names John Carr, postmaster of Newcastle, as having, in July 1592, received and harboured John Bost and other priests, and sent the former to the Water-house, and to Charles Hedworth's at East Brandon. About the same time the corporation of Newcastle paid to William Jackson "for taking pains, being clerk to the commission for the recusant and seminary priests, granted by Mr. Mayor and the twenty-four yearly this three years, 3*l*. 6*s*. 8*d*." and for "a papist which stood of the pillory for abusing our majesty by slanderous words, 4*d*." In the previous month is an entry of payment by the corporation to Mr. George Selby's two men, "for their pains taken in apprehending Edward Waterson for a seminary priest, who was lately executed, 20*s*., and more for watching Robert Chamber, who was taken by a commission for my lord warden, 2*s*." "William" Waterson is the name of a priest, the expenses of whose execution are charged in January following.

While the corporation were in trouble respecting the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham, they adopted the fine old English plan of sending presents to persons in authority. The municipal accounts for October contain an entry of payment to Francis Anderson, merchant, receiver for Henry Anderson, alderman, "for two 'tens' of coals bestowed at London about the town's affairs, at the parliament time, 6*l*. 15*s*." They had, shortly before, borne the cost, 26*s*., of "six barrels of salmon, bought of Sanders Clughe, carriageman, which

should have been sent to London to the burgesses for the town, and by misfortune came not."

*November 1.*

James Carr, merchant, sheriff in 1579, one of the sons of Ralph Carr and Isabella, his wife (who afterwards married John Hilton and John Franklin), was interred in St. Nicholas' this day, having in his will, dated December 7, 1592, expressed a desire to be buried "as nigh unto my mother, Mrs. Isabella Franklin, as may be." He inherited from her "the house on the east side of the Lort Burn," which she purchased of William Dent, and marrying Alice, widow of Edmund Parkinson, succeeded the year after his mother's death to the shrievalty. He bequeathed to his daughter, Barbara Mitford, wife of Henry Mitford, alderman, his silver cup, with the silver cover parcel gilt, and a cypress chest; to her husband, "my mace that hangeth in the hall, and my best counter." Residue to his wife, the executrix. Supervisors—Henry Mitford, son-in-law, and Oswald Mitford, brother-in-law.

*November 17.*

The thirty-fifth anniversary of the queen's accession was celebrated in Newcastle with accustomed festivity. "For joy of our majesty's happy reign" they spent 12s. 2d. upon a bonfire, which was composed of "300 wood," costing 5s.; eleven tar barrels, 3s. 8d.; and a chaldron of coals, 1s. 6d.; carriage, labour, and nails making up the remaining 2s. Mr. Mayor and his brethren had their usual banquet in the Penthouse, comprising 6lb. sugar almond comfits, 10s.; 4lb. "seny-mond" comfits, 6s.; 2lb. "vilett" comfits, 4s.; sugar-loaf, weighing 7lb. 2oz., 10s. 10d.; "clarid" wine, sack, and sugar, 19s.; apples, 2s.; cakes, 3s. 4d., and candles to light up the feast, 14d.; the whole costing 56s. 4d. The bells of the four parish churches were rung, and the ringers received 6s. 10d. for their trouble. Music was not wanting, nor artillery, a sum of 5s. being disbursed among the gunners, and Will. Lassles and Ro. Askew, who played "the drum and flute," for their pains.

---

In addition to the items of expenditure already enumerated, the town paid for articles supplied to John Lawson, the fool—viz., a new knife, 4d.; a belt, 4d.; 2 leather skins, 2 pockets, and a dozen leather points, 2s. 2d.

"Paid to Mr. Marmaduke Thirlekell, for the half year's rent for the 'nowtardshipp' of this town due at Candlemas last past, 26s. 8d.; to

John Murra, usher of the high school, for his quarter, 16s. 8d. ; to James Redhead, for going aboard of a ship for searching a man that died, for fear of the plague, 12d. ; to John Carr, postmaster, for keeping horses by-post, 2s. 8d. ; to Mr. Dent, granted by Mr. Roger Rawe, mayor, and the twenty-four, for keeping the by-book of the rent of Gateshead and Whickham in Mr. Farnaby's year, being unpaid then, 5*l.* ; to Mr. Christopher Shafto, lawyer, in part of payment of his charges to London concerning the suit of my lord Lumley for a penny for every chalder of coals which should have been laid aboard any ship, 8*l.* ; to John Lion, deputy for Mr. Claxton, for the tenths and subsidies due to queen's majesty out of the Shod Friars, 5s. 11d.

"Paid for a new gate for the Blind Chare, in Sidgate, which goes up to the Castle Field, 6s. ; to Sandrs. Cheisman, in part of payment of 22*l.* 3s. 4d., for the building of a sufficient pant in Sandgate, and for 'heede' of stone at the St. Ellin well, letten to him in the 'greete' by the chamberlains, 40s. ; for 2 band ropes, one to the common bell, and another to the 8 o'clock bell, 3s. 4d. a-piece—6s. 8d.

"Paid to Mr. John Oldam, at London, for 61 yards of broadcloth for the serjeants and William Jackson's livery, at 8s. 8d. per yard, 26*l.* 8s. 8d. ; more paid for 16 $\frac{3}{4}$  yards for the waits, the 'plumer,' and the 'paver,' at 7s. 6d. per yard, 6*l.* 5s. 7d. ; more paid for carriage, canvas, cords, and certificate, 2*l.* 15s. Total, 35*l.* 9s. 2d.

"The sum of all the whole receivings and payments for this year, beginning at Michaelmas 1592, and ending at Michaelmas 1593, as doth appear by the books and indentures of the same, is 2434*l.* 8s. 11d."

In the Exchequer Rolls (Trinity term) this year is an entry of a complaint by Robert Dent against Thomas Stoker, *alias* Stokoe, for forcibly entering and ejecting him from a messuage and garden with appurtenances, situate near the Castle in Newcastle, between the queen's street called the Castle Mote on the east, and certain tenements belonging to Thomas Stoker on the west, and the queen's street called Bayllygate on the south, and gardens in the occupation of Thomas Stoker on the north, demised to the said Robert by one George Dent, 5th November, 27 Elizabeth, for 21 years.

1594.

36 and 37 ELIZABETH.

Bishop of Durham—Matthew Hutton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Lionel Maddison, Mayor, and William Jenison, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Henry Anderson.

Arms : Gules, three oak trees argent, acorned or.

Sheriff—George Selby.

Arms : Barry of ten, or and sable.



ANOTHER act "to retain the queen's majesty's subjects in their due obedience" was passed. It ordained that any person refusing to attend church and receive the sacrament, or who should be present at conventicles, etc., under pretence of religion, should be imprisoned for three months, and if he refused to conform, should abjure the realm, or be adjudged a felon. Those who harboured such persons were to be fined 10*l.* a month. Popish recusants were not without licence to move five miles from their place of abode under penalty of forfeiting their lands, goods, etc.

*January 7.*

The corporation "paid to William Sever, sergeant, which headed William Waterson, the seminary priest, for his pains, 20*s.*; to two labourers for making a room for the making of the fire, 12*d.*; for an apron to the leech, 6*d.*; for a spade, 6*d.*; for one pound of tow, 4*d.*; for coals, 6*d.*; for two 'girdes to a water sea,' 2*d.*; for a boy going of an errand, 2*d.*; three labourers for carrying home of the gear, 3*d.*; for a horse which drew the sled to the gallows and back again, 18*d.*; one labourer for hanging up the three quarters and head of the priest, 9*d.*; for two halters, 2*d.*; for carrying the gear a-field, 12*d.*; for John Partus' pains taken, 12*d.*; William Sever for his arles [earnest-money] for quartering the priest, 12*d.*; Sandrs. Cheisman's man for putting the pinnacle for hanging the priest's head on the bridge, 6*s.*; for straw, candle, drink, and string which bound the seminary's arms before he

was executed, 9d.; for a cat-band and a staple for the door that the priest burnt in prison, 6d.; for drink which John Letherington, the prisoner, had before he executed the priest, 2d." In February they wound up the ghastly affair by paying a shilling for a horse and traces used in drawing the condemned man to the gallows.

During the summer other executions of priests took place in the northern counties. John Bost, a native of Penrith, was hung and embowelled alive at Dryburn; George Swalwell was butchered at his birthplace, Darlington; John Ingram was done to death at Gateshead. Ingram, like Bost, was a zealous and intrepid Jesuit. He came upon the English mission soon after he had received orders, and laboured chiefly in Northumberland. Being apprehended and sent up to London, he was cruelly tortured, not only with the rack, but with another instrument as well, called "Younge's Fiddle," and sent down to the North to die. From York to the Tyne he had for his companion John Carr, postmaster in Newcastle. Carr had been in prison at York for harbouring Bost and other Catholics, and fully expected to be arraigned with Ingram, and condemned to death. Fortunately for him the authorities took a lenient view of his offence. He was reprieved, and Ingram condemned. Over Ingram's execution the authorities in Newcastle kept watch, for the town was to receive his quarters. Accordingly, in the accounts of corporate expenditure for August the cost of managing this horrible affair appears:—"John Ingram, a seminary, four nights, 4d.; his bedding, 8d., lying in Newgate till he was tried upon; eleven watchmen two nights, the 21st and 22nd of July, 4d. a piece, 7s. 4d.; for seven days after four watchmen a night comes to 10s. 8d.; for four men more in the night, 2s. 8d.; for eight bow-strings, 8d.—37s. 8d. Paid for charges at the execution of the seminary priest in Gateshead, John Ingram, 2s. 6d. Paid for bringing his quarters off the gibbets, 18d., and for a pannier which brought his quarters to the town, 4d.—22d."

The wife of Nicholas Tempest was committed to the common gaol at Durham for recusancy, and her case was taken up by her kinsman, lord Eure, who certified that the husband, Nicholas Tempest, was a truly religious man, "frequenting divine service, sermons, and communicath, accompanying me therein at Newcastle the last coronation day of our sovereign; likewise his children, which are many, are brought up in the like profession of religion which he professeth; his servants likewise so affected, and laboureth with his wife with all his possible means to the same purpose to my knowledge, neither doth she persuade child or friend to her religion, neither doth she entertain seminary or offensive person to the state, only blinded in her devotion, a sickly woman in body, having many young children."

*January 28.*

Deed of feoffment, with livery and seisin endorsed, from George Dent and Robert Dent, his son and heir-apparent, to Francis Anderson and Bertram Anderson the elder, of a coal staith, without the Close Gate, abutting on the coal staith of Thomas Liddell, merchant, on the east, upon waste ground belonging to the town on the west, and extending from the highway leading to the Forth on the north to low water mark of the Tyne on the south.

*April.*

A series of curious entries are made in the February and April accounts of the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle. In February there is "paid for the board wages of a boy which was cut for the stone, 4s.; paid for a 'straiking short' [strait jacket to hold him down?] and for sewing it, 16d." Then in April—"Paid for the relief of the boy which was cut for the stone, 2s. 6d.; paid and given him to spend at his departing out of the town, 4d." So, with all their whippings and scourgings and "comprehending of vagrom men," our ancestors were not destitute of compassion when a real case of affliction occurred within their jurisdiction. Indeed, the very next item shows that the authorities tolerated begging in the town, though no doubt the privileged beggar was a native, or a well-known and well-conducted resident:—"Paid for working 9lb. of Danske iron in a great 'boule' for the blind man Sandiatte [in Sandgate?], 4d.; for nails, 2d.; and hanging, 4d.—10d." The meaning of which appears to be that the town put the blind man an iron bowl against the wall at the Sand Gate to receive alms in money, meal, meat, etc. Still further in the same direction the corporation travelled, giving "a woman 'sargint' in part payment of 5s. for healing one Anne Greensworlle of a disease, com: [commanded] 2s. 10d."

*May 4.*

Inquisition taken at Durham as to colleges, hospitals, etc., in the bishopric, before Toby Matthew, dean; Thomas Calverley, esquire, chancellor; Clement Colmore, John Pilkington, and others. The commissioners found that there were four hospitals in the diocese—Sherburn, Greatham, Gateshead, and Barnard Castle—and concerning Gateshead hospital they reported:—

"The same hospital standeth at the upper end of Gateshead, and is commonly called and known by the name of the hospital or free chapel of St. Edmund, king and martyr. The masters and governors thereof are and have been clergymen and spiritual persons, and is said to have been founded by one of the bishops of Durham,



but in what time, or by which of the said bishops, or by what name of foundation or incorporation, or whether there hath been any change from the first foundation, they cannot find.

“The poor of the hospital or free chapel of St. Edmund, nigh Gateshead, are, and have been, indifferently of both kinds, as men and women. But whether sick or whole, lepers or wayfaring, so they be poor, needy, and indigent, is not respected.

“There belongeth to the same a demesne lying at the said hospital, and a parcel of ground called Shotley Bridge, all which amount to no more than the value of 10*l.* of ancient rent, whereof 13*s.* yearly is assigned for the relief of every poor brother and sister there, and the residue to the maintenance of the said master, and reparations of houses belonging unto them. As for other rents, revenues, sums of money, leases, goods, and chattels, there is none, and therefore no allowance at all, either for diet to the said brethren and sisters, or to the said master, or for mending of bridges or highways, or for exhibitions to scholars or the like. The revenues and profits whereof have for these ten years last past been taken up by Mr. Richard Hodgson and Mr. William Riddell of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, merchant, and their assigns, by virtue of a lease to them made by John Wodfall, clerk, late master of the same hospital or free chapel, and the brethren and sisters then of the same, who have employed the same quarterly (as hath been accustomed) to the maintenance and relief of the said master and brethren and sisters. The state, property, possession, and occupation of which premises, by virtue of the aforesaid lease, doth as yet remain in the hands of the aforesaid Richard Hodgson and William Riddell, or their assigns.

“The poor people of the hospital of St. Edmund’s are, and have been, admitted and placed at the discretion of the master thereof for the time being, and by them removed, corrected, and punished. But whether they ought so to have been, or by what rules and ordinances they should be chosen, placed, and governed, by reason of the loss of the evidences and writings belonging the same, they cannot find.

“There be three poor persons maintained and relieved in or about the said hospital or free chapel of St. Edmund’s, whose names and ages are as follows:—John Dunning, about the age of 70 years, Robert Pawling, about the age of 76 years, and Alice Pickering, about the age of 56 years, who are daily and continually resident and abiding in and about the said hospital, having no allowance nor reversion of any alms-room in any other college, hospital, or house for the poor.

“The said bishops are, and for a long time have been taken and reputed to be visitors of the hospital of St. Edmund’s, and have

accordingly visited the same in the ordinary visitations, which is commonly each third year.

“John Wodfall, clerk, late master of St. Edmund’s hospital aforesaid, about seven years ago was put in trust with the keeping and custody of the charters, deeds, evidences, and writings, both of the erection and foundation of the lands, revenues, and possessions of the said hospital or free chapel, who deceased about the said time in London, or thereabout, where he then had his abode, since which time what became of the said charters, deeds, and evidences, cannot be known.”

*May 26.*

Two men, a Dutchman and a Frenchman, escaping from the service of Mary Queen of Scots with valuable jewels belonging to her majesty, were apprehended at Shields, and on this date Thomas Power, lieutenant of Tynemouth castle, reports the case to the earl of Northumberland :—“I have taken within your charge of Tynemouth [another account names Seaton Delaval] a Dutchman and a Frenchman, the former being goldsmith and the latter footman to the Queen of Scots, who have stolen and run away from her with goldsmith’s work, and some neckchains and bracelets of ragged pearl. [1 chain of pearl, valued at 60 crowns ; 2 bracelets of pearl and gold ; a gold and diamond brooch ; 4 diamond rings, and one gold ; 1 black bone heart, set in gold, with a pearl hanging therefrom ; 2 double pearl rings for a gown, and some large and small shells and aigletts of gold, for setting forth the body of a gown ; total value, 805 crowns.] Lord Bothwell, being then in this country, and living at Newcastle, and having intelligence of it out of Scotland, secretly laid in wait for them ; and when they came to North Shields, for a passage either to Denmark, France, or Flanders, he seized them, rifled them of the jewels, sent them away with two of his men, and would have horsed them for Scotland, but the town, having notice of his intent, the bailiff sent me word, and would not suffer him to take any men away out of that liberty without their goodwill. . . . I have got most of them (the jewels) into my hands, but he detains the rest.” In a letter of the 29th Lionel Maddison, mayor of Newcastle, replying to Sir Robert Cecil about the jewels, admits that Bothwell was lately in Newcastle, and adds :—“I have inquired who lodged the earl here, and find that at his last being in this town he was lodged in the house of John Carr [the postmaster], a common inn. Carr being in prison at York, I have committed his wife to prison till her majesty’s pleasure is known. I find that the earl has heretofore lodged at William Selby’s house, but did not lodge there at

his last coming. The earl left on the 14th inst., and I cannot learn that he has lodged in any other houses in this town save these two."

After five weeks' detention in Tynemouth castle, the thieves were taken to the borders, delivered to the Scottish warden on a Tuesday, and hanged at Edinburgh on the Friday following—"such expedition does the king make now-a-days of justice."

*June 21.*

The queen granted to the town of Newcastle an exemplification of the charter dated 30th August 1589, with some trifling additions, unnecessary to be recorded, for the great charter of 1600 superseded them all.

*July 8.*

A number of youths from various parts of the country, headed by a Newcastle man, tried to fly the kingdom, contrary to the act which made it penal for any of the queen's subjects to leave the realm without her license. They proceeded to Ireland, the usual route, but were apprehended and sent over to Chester. The leader of the band is described as "Bartholomew Wyckham, naming himself to be their tutor, and taking charge of them; son to Clement Wyckham, a merchant of Newcastle-upon-Tyne." On the above-noted date the mayor of Chester wrote to the privy council that he had sent the youths to London under competent guard. That is the last we hear of them.

*July 8.*

Humphrey Gray, master of Newcastle grammar school, buried at St. Nicholas'. In his will, proved 4th August, he gives to his son, Robert Gray, his best gown and his books, the great bible excepted, which is to be given to Mr. William Riddle. Gives to his daughter, Dorothy Gray, the residue of his goods. Makes his children, Robert and Dorothy, executors, and Mr. William Riddle and Mr. William Jenison, supervisors. Testator desires to place his son with some notary of his own mind. Requires his supervisors to bestow on William Symson, Roland Tempest, Ralph Carr, William Jackson, Thomas Carre, to either, a book. Gives to his dear friend, Mr. William Jenison, a book for a token, such as he should choose. Wills that all his books and goods be appraised.

*September.*

Prince Henry of Scotland had been christened at Stirling on the 29th August. Divers countries were represented at the ceremony. England and France, Denmark, and the United Provinces, had

invitations. Two of the strangers, representatives of the "Low Country," stayed in Newcastle, and were hospitably received and entertained by the mayor and his brethren. Here are the October entries of the town chamberlains arising out of the festive occasion, in the quaint spelling of the corporate penman:—

"Paide the belman for going to geve warninge to the burgesses to meete Mr. Maior, three times, and for the drum geving warninge to muster to mette the Staites of the Low Country cam fro Skotland, 8d.

"Paide for repairinge and mendynge armor which was broken when the States of Flanders fro Skottlande to receve them—viz., for a new briche and mending the stocke of a musquett, 18d.; for a callever stocke 'pearde' and plaited with iron, 8d.; for a callever sight, and a new skowrer, 16d.; for a new stocke and a breiche of a callever, 3s.; for 22 skowrers and sticks that was lost, 7s. 4d.; for four new hookes and nales lost of the musket flapes, 2s.; myselfe reparinge the same armor, four daies, 4s.; for my two men, three daies, 4s.; a b'ende of leth., 4s.; his men to drinke, 12s.; for nales, 4d.—29s. 2d.

"Paide for a banquet to the Staites in Mr. Maior's, for good chere, some suger and comfettes—viz., For manshets, 10s.; a kaise of mutton, 6s.; a side of veale, 3s.; suitt to baiken meate, 2s.; a swan, 10s.; four gease, 4s. 8d.; three piggs, 4s.; ten calpons, 15s.; six hens, 3s.; a turke cock to baike, 5s.; six couple of connyes, 4s. 6d.; eight quilles, 3s. 4d.; wilde fowle, 10s.; a cagge of sturgeon, 12s.; freshe fishe, 4s.; salte fishe, 2s.; flowre to baike with all, 5s.; butter, 4s.; a lb. of peper and other spices, 10s. 4d.; eggs, 1s. 8d.; milke, 1s. 4d.; fruite, 3s. 4d.; a barrle of London beare, 12s.; for Thomas Hinde his cook paines, 5s.; the waits playinge musicke, 10s. Some, 7l. 6s. 2d.

"For 21 gallons secke att Fo. Selbies 2l. 16s.; for 23 gallons and a pottle of clarid wine, 2l. 7s.; for three quartes of musketyne, 2s. 6d.; for two suger loves, weide 25lb., 1s. 6d. per lb., 1l. 17s. 8d.; for march-paines, 1l. 3s. 6d.; 6lb. colliander comfettes, 8s.; senymond comfettes, 4lb., 8s.; orringe comfettes, 3lb., 6s.; clove comfettes, 3lb., 6s.; ginger comfettes, 2lb., 4s.; rose comfettes, 2lb., 4s.; vilett comfettes, 2lb., 4s.; notmeg comfettes, 2lb., 4s.; muske comfettes, 2lb., 4s.; allmond comfettes, 4lb., 6s. 8d.; 3lb. of marmylaide, 7s.; 2lb. of dried suckett [liquorice], 6s. 8d.; 3lb. of biskett breade, 5s. 2d.; of banquetting conceites, 5s.; quarter pounce of bisketts, fyne, 5d.; quarter pounce of carrawaies, 5d.; 6lb. of Spanche suckett, 4s.; 2lb. of preservd quinces, 10s.; 2lb. of preservd cherris, 6s. 8d.; 2lb. of preservd damson, 6s.; 2lb. of preservd plumes, 6s.; 2lb. of preservd barbaries, 3s. 4d.; 2¼lb. of perfumes, 16s. 7d.—31l. 9s. 4d.

"Paide for good chere to the Staites men, and for wyne and suger

and those that came withe theme at dynner and supper, 2*l.* 12*s.*; and for horse meate to their horses, 12*s.* Sum is, at John Carr's, 3*l.* 2*s.*

"Paide for six yardes and a quarter of searsnett of corde to Ro. Fenwicke which carried the auncient before the Staites, 5*s.* 4*d.* per iearde, 1*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* For 35*lb.* of powder which was shott when they cam, 3*l.* 6*s.* 10*d.*

"Paid to Ro. Askewe for playinge with his fife before the drume, 1*s.* 4*d.*"

Thus, from the accounts of the corporate chamberlains, we may revive the furbishing up of the town weapons in the armour on Tyne Bridge; the proclamations of the bellman and the drummer, perambulating the streets within the walls; the firing of powder and fluttering of the flag as the strangers entered within the gates; Askewe and Fenwick proudly blowing the fife and bearing the banner; and everybody convivial, both within and without the banqueting hall; all this excitement arising out of the christening of the Scottish prince in 1594, whose untimely death in 1612 threw the court and kingdom into mourning, made way for the future accession of Prince Charles, and changed the fortunes of England. [J. C.]

---

Presents to noblemen passing through the town, and expenses of attending them, appear more frequently than usual in the accounts of this year. Thus:—"Paid for 2 gallons of sack, 2 gallons and a quart of claret wine, 11*s.* 3*d.*; and a sugar-loaf, weighs 8*lbs.* and a quarter, at 18*d.* per *lb.*, 12*s.* 4*d.*; sent in a present to my lord ambassador, as he came travelling through this town to Scotland, called my lord Zouch, 23*s.* 7*d.*; paid for 400 oysters to my lord president, 2*s.* 8*d.*, and for carriage, 2*d.*—in all, 2*s.* 10*d.*; carrying 2 letters to my lord warden, 2*s.*; paid to 7 watchmen for watching my lord of Essex coach when he came from Scotland, 1 night, 2*s.* 4*d.*, and Mr. Rawes' man 3*lb.* of powder which was unpaid for when he went with him to Morpeth, 14*d.*—3*s.* 6*d.*; paid for four sugar-loaves, weighed 27 $\frac{3}{4}$ *lb.*, 41*s.* 8*d.*; 5 gallons and a bottle of claret, 11*s.*; 4 gallons sack, 10*s.* 8*d.*—total, 3*l.* 3*s.* 8*d.*—in a present to the earl of Essex as he went to Scotland; paid and spent of my lord Wharton's men by the officers, 3*s.*; for 3*lb.* of powder to the officers which went with my lord to Morpeth, 3*s.* 6*d.*; paid for Christopher Appelby's pains going to meet the earl, 18*d.*; paid for a horse hire to Mr. Mayor's man to meet my lord, 12*d.*; paid for 3 sugar-loaves, weighed 30 $\frac{1}{4}$ *lb.*, 18*d.* per *lb.*, 2*l.* 5*s.* 10*d.*; for claret wine and sack sent in a present, 49*s.*, to

the earl of Essex and my lord Wharton, as they came from Scotland, 4*l.* 14*s.* 10*d.*; paid for 3 horses' hire which my lord ambassador had with him to Alnwick, at his going to Scotland, 4 days, 12*s.*; paid to Thomas Nicholson, smith, for riding post with my lord ambassador as second guide to Durham, homeward, 6*s.* 6*d.*" The corporation paid also 53*s.* 4*d.* to 7 officers called sergeants, that they should take no rewards of noblemen which came into the town.

In addition to the foregoing festivities, various little entertainments were paid for out of the local treasury:—"Pears, wine, sugar, and bullis, to Mr. Selby, with his daughter and other aldermen in the town chamber, 13*s.* 4*d.*; 3 pottles, a quart of muscadine, 5*s.* 10*d.*; a gallon of sack, 2*s.* 8*d.*; 3 pottles white wine and claret, 3*s.*; 3 dozen manchets, 3*s.*; pears and plums, 7*s.*; to the auditors the first day of their sittings, 21*s.* 6*d.*; paid for a tierce of Gascoigne wine, which was drunken forth at the audit dinner, commanded by Mr. Mayor to pay for it, 53*s.* 4*d.*; paid to the waits for playing music at the audit dinner, 5*s.*; paid for sack, sugar, burnt wine, and pears, to Mr. Mayor, his brethren, and the twenty-four, in the Penthouse, two times, 46*s.* 8*d.*; to Thomas Dalton for two table napkins which were lost at Michaelmas last in the West Spital at dinner, 2*s.* 8*d.*"

The conservancy of the river is represented by a payment of 2*s.* 6*d.* a-week to William Gray for looking after those who cast ballast or other rubbish above bridge or below, or in Gateshead.

Fee farm, salaries, etc., were paid as follows:—"Paid to our qucen's majesty for the fee farm of this town, due at Michaelmas last past, the sum of 100*l.*; to Mr. Henry [Lionel] Maddison, mayor, for his fee this year, 100*l.*; Mr. William Jennison, sheriff, for his fee this year, 30*l.*; Mr. James Bamford, preacher, for his quarter, 10*l.*"

Miscellaneous payments:—"For four feet of new glass and five feet of old glass, to the window of the long penthouse, 3*s.* 11*d.*; for a chest of glass for mending the glass windows in St. Nicholas' church so far as the steeple reacheth, 32*s.* 9*d.*; for rushes and mint up to the town court, 4*d.*; to the clerk of St. Nicholas' church for knelling on guild-day, 5*s.*; for letting forth colliers at Pilgrim Street Gate and Newgate early in the morning to work, 2*s.* per piece each, 4*s.*; to the under clerk of St. Nicholas' church tolling the six o'clock bell for scholars in the morning, 3*s.* 4*d.*; to Mr. Tucker [Thomas Tucker, master of the Trinity House, probably], Mr. Roger Rawe, Mr. John Johnson, Mr. Thomas Bell, for pains which their company took in hauling their ships off when my lord president and judges came, 5*s.* per piece, 20*s.*; to John Chaitor, merchant, for to have trained young men in the town in the art of soldiery, for his pains taken, 10*l.*; for a pair of hose and shoes to Thomas Dodds, a natural, 2*s.* 8*d.*; for

four papers to four folk which was set on the pillory, 16d. ; Ro. Musgrave for taking pains to set them up, 8d. ; for an iron stalk to Bartram Goften's mace, 4d. ; 248 pikes bought for the town's use, longer and shorter, 11*l.* 8s 4d. ; for a new-coloured hat to William Dent of the Wallknoll, 3s. 4d. ; for a yard of bleached harden to William Dent his jirkin, 6d. ; for a pound of red wax to the mayor for sealing letters in court, 2s. ; for keeping and avoiding gravel from bridge at Kale Cross, 12d. ; for mending of the silver piece in the cha., 18d."

## 1595.

37 and 38 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Henry Anderson, Mayor, and George Selby, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—William Riddell.**

Arms : Gules, a lion rampant within a bordure indented argent.

**Sheriff—Francis Anderson.**

Arms : As in 1594.



TOBY MATHEW, dean of Durham, was this year elected to the episcopal chair, upon the translation of Matthew Hutton to the archbishopric of York.

*February 6.*

Marmaduke Thirkeld of Estropp, county of York, for the advancement of his natural daughter Dorothy, gives to William Hilton, knight, Michael Constable, and Ralph Hilton, esquires (the Hiltons being brothers of his wife, Elizabeth Hilton), his office of keeper of beasts, called the nowtership of Newcastle, with all commodities, profits, etc., thereto belonging ; and all his lands, etc., in the fields and territories of the town of Jesmond, with his coal pits, to the use of himself for life, with remainder to Dorothy and her issue. Thirkeld was the representative of the Carlials. In the corporation accounts for March 1596

is an entry, "paid to Mr. Errington, of the Manor, gent., for the use of Mr. Marmaduke Thirlekell's heir, for the nowterdshipp of this town, due at Candlemas last past, 26s. 8d."

*February 17.*

In the old church of All Saints', Newcastle, was a stone to the memory of John Gibson, who died on the above-written date. John Gibson was a native of Haughton, who, after serving his time and obtaining his freedom of the merchants' company in Newcastle, gathered round him a flourishing business and acquired considerable property. He was in partnership with Robert Shafto, and in 1589 occupied the shrievalty of Newcastle. A week before he died he made his will, leaving most of his property to William Greenwell, husband of his daughter Anne, who was following him in the honours of the municipality, and as it turned out, in the path to the grave, for he was buried within the twelvemonth.

A summary of Gibson's will appears in one of the Surtees Society's volumes ; but the following is a fuller transcription :—Testator leaves to the poor of Haughton 10*l.* ; to the poor of Newcastle, 3*l.* 6s. 8d., and to the repair of All Saints', 13s. 4d. To his wife Jane, for life, he gives their dwelling-house and furniture, a little house behind it, and a new house on the south side of Paynter Heugh, "wherein Eppye Lawson dwells ;" after his wife's death, to William Greenwell, with remainder to Anne Greenwell, granddaughter. To William and Anne Greenwell his farmhold in Kibblesworth, and at their deaths, to their son Robert ; also the lease of his farmhold in Lamesley, and another in Kibblesworth ; the lease of his tithes of Wylam, held of her majesty ; the lease, from William Lamb, of the great close without Sandgate, Newcastle ; all his part of the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham, together with his part of the leases of Acksheals, Pealeflattes, and Jacksleaz, trusting they would dispose unto their children according to the trust he had commanded. To John, son of William and Anne Greenwell, a loft and two cellars in Plummer Chare, after his wife's death ; also his best silver salt with a cover, being double-gilt. To Robert Gibson, his son, his quarter of a lease of coals at Black-burn, his part of two coal leases at Benwell, and a lease he had of Percival Harbottle of Ravensworth. To his sister, Alice Wilson, five water chalders of coals for three years and 10s. for life ; the coal to be delivered to her from the new quay, Newcastle. To Greenwell and his wife, his almshouse of the Nether Dean Bridge, for life, and then to their son William ; the poor in the said houses to have for twenty years two land chalders of coals. Various bequests of money and plate to his son Robert ; son-in-law, William Greenwell ; daughters Ann



and Jane ; Edward, Christopher, and Robert Lewin ; Thomas Dodds, skinner ; John Greenwell, and George Still. Residue to his son Robert and daughter Greenwell, executors, who are to pay Jane, his widow, 30*l.* a-year. Supervisors—George Farnaby and Richard Holdsworth.

*May 24.*

The old house of the Austin Friars, now used as the queen's storehouse, had again fallen into a state of dilapidation. The mayor ordered a survey to be made, and obtained the following certificates from competent tradesmen of the nature and cost of necessary repairs, which he handed to the queen's customer in Newcastle (Henry Sanderson), for transmission to the privy council :—

"We, Alexander Chesman and George Tomlinson, masons, do find the storehouse of her majesty's said house called the Manors greatly decayed, part fallen down, and to be repaired in divers needful places with speed ; so that the amending and repairing the same, and of all charges thereunto for the mason to be done, by our judgment will cost 150*l.*

"We, Richard Holden and Nicholas Athy, carpenters, do find the timber of the said storehouse, and for other great roofs, containing ninety-two yards in length, being the great roof, and nine yards in breadth, and another house of twenty-three yards in length, with other timber work, and carpentry, greatly decayed, and very needful forthwith to be amended, as in our judgment the same in amending thereof and workmanship will cost at the least 200*l.*

"We, Lancelott Bowmer and George Wallys, plumbers, do find the leads of the said storehouse and the said roofs—namely, three great roofs to be covered and newly cast, containing ninety-two yards, and in breadth nine yards, and another house of twenty-three yards in length and four in breadth, and also the leads and gutters of sundry other houses, the which stand in great need to be repaired ; the charge will be in our judgment at the least 200*l.*

"We, Peter Wilkinson and Robert Wilkinson, slaters, do find the slates of all the houses of her majesty called the Manors, part of the storehouse, and divers other places, so ruinous, that the charge of slate, lime, and workmanship will cost at the least 100*l.*

"We, John Hardcastle and Martin Brookhorne, glaziers, having viewed the glass windows of the storehouse, hall, chambers, and other places, do find all of them broken, the leads decayed, so that the needful places thereof being repaired, will cost in glass, lead, and workmanship at least 60*l.*

"We, Matthew Pynder and Thomas Errington, smiths, having viewed all iron bars of the glass windows, casements, locks, hinges,

and clasps for masonry needful to be repaired, do estimate that the charges thereof will be at the least 60*l*.

"I, John Johnson, plasterer, having viewed all the ceilings and plastering work needful to be done, as well in ceiling as about flowers, walls, and other convenient places, do find the same broken, wasted, and spoiled in most places, repairing whereof with stuff and workmanship will cost for needful places only, at the least, 30*l*.—sum total, 800*l*.

"Signed—H. Anderson, H. Saunderson."

On the 10th July the privy council ordered the work to be proceeded with, and passed 200*l*. as an instalment of the cost.

#### *December 11.*

Francis Anderson, merchant, Newcastle, received from the queen's patentee a licence to have the sole brewing of ale and beer, for making beer, vinegar, beerager, and aleger, within the town of Newcastle and its liberties.

---

The corporation paid at Michaelmas 100*l*. to the retiring mayor, Henry Anderson, and 30*l*. to the outgoing sheriff, George Selby, for their fees or salaries. They also paid for the annual feast, 14*l*. 4*s*. 11*d*., made up as follows:—"18 stone 3 lb. of beef, at 18*d*. a stone, 27*s*. 6*d*.; 10 geese, 14*s*.; a peck of oats, which fed these geese, 14*d*.; a stone and 2 lb. of butter, 8*s*. 1*d*.; a cask of suet, 21*d*.; salt, 12*d*.; a fother of coals, 2*s*.; bread to grate, 4*d*.; drink to the spit turners, 4*d*.; eggs, 4*d*.; paper, 2*d*.; verges and vinegar, 4*d*.; mustard, 12*d*.; onions, 4*d*.; three quarters of pepper, 2*s*. 6*d*.; 3 pecks of flour to bake venison, 7*s*.; 4 dozen manchets, 4*s*.; 3 dozen loaves of bread, 3*s*.; 20 gallons of beer, . . .; 6 gallons of ale, 3*s*.; 20¼ lb. of sugar, 34*s*.; 13 gallons of cold sack, 45*s*.; 3 pottles of burnt sack, 7*s*. 6*d*.; 25 pottles of claret wine, 29*s*. 2*d*.; 8 stone pots to drink in, 2*s*. 8*d*.; for turning the spits, 2*s*.; Aumerie, for his pains dressing the dinner to Mr. Mayor, his brethren, with the four-and-twenty, and auditors together, 20*s*.; spent by the chamberlains at that time, 46*s*. 8*d*., and 13*s*. after dinner; total—14*l*. 4*s*. 11*d*." The dinner was apparently given in the Guildhall, for a payment is made "forighting the merchants' hall and the court against the feast, 6*d*."

Mr. Selby and other aldermen spent 12*s*. 4*d*. in entertaining the archbishop of York in the autumn with sack, sugar, Rhenish wine, pears, carraways biscuit, and biscuit sugar-bread.

In connection with church matters the town paid for three gallons and three quarts of claret wine extraordinary, to serve the communicants at St. Nicholas' church, on Easterday, "which the

hogshead would not draw to," 7s. 6d.; for three stall-rooms, which was bought of the churchwardens of St. Nicholas' church for Mr. Ogle, schoolmaster, 6s.; and for three yards of tawney velvet to be cushions in St. Nicholas', to serve the mayor and his brethren, 3*l*. 6s.; to Mr. Morehouse, preacher, 10*l*.

Crimes and punishments involved several payments:—"For two old spur ryalls given to the judges of the assizes, yearly accustomed, 15s. 6d. a-piece, 31s.; banquet to the judges in the Penthouse at Lammas, 4*l*. 7s. 2d.; Rhenish wine, claret, sugar, and cherries to Mr. Mayor and his brethren in the court two several times, and also ale, 8s. 6d.; 4 halters, 4d.; 8 bowstrings, 8d.; carrying the ladder home and a-field, 8d.; 2 men watching Newgate prison 3 nights, 2s.; drink to the prisoners before they were hanged, 6d. Charge of burying Dorothy Ogle, which died in the Newgate:—for a sheet to wind her in, 2s. 6d.; winding her, 4d.; bearing her to the church, 4d.; bread and drink when they came to the church, 4d.; making the grave, 2d.; and to 'Sir' Thomas Maslet [of St. Andrew's] for his pains taken, 4s. 8d." A sleuth-hound was again employed to track a criminal, and the town paid to Hall of Chester [le-street], who followed with his bitch—a woman being killed in the town—13s. 4d., and also a dog "which came from Denton to follow and did not, for his pains, 6s. 8d."

In connection with the detection of seminary priests the chamberlains made disbursements, but the authorities do not appear to have secured the right men. They were charged 2s. 4d. for seven meals of meat to a suspected priest in Newgate, "which Mr. Sanderson caused to be taken," 8d. for his bed three nights, and for pots of ale besides, and 5s. 8d. for the expenses incurred by Bartram Gofton, taking the suspect to Durham to be examined by the bishop. And after all they had to pay "the same suspected priest in reward, 3s. 4d." So also with "a Polonian physician lying in Newgate, suspect upon religion, given in reward, commanded by Mr. Mayor, 40s."

"Paid for three shirt bands to John Lawson the fool, 22d.; two yards of harden to be Allon the fool a shirt and sewing, 2s."

Coronation day was again kept with bonfires and bell-ringing:—"Paid for ringing St. Nicholas' church bells, 2s. 6d.; Allhallows', 20d.; St. John's, 16d.; Saint Andrew's, 16d.; the 17th November, for joy of our majesty's reign, 6s. 10d.; paid for seventeen tar barrels, 9s. 2d.; for three alder spars, 16d.; nails for nailing the barrels, 12d.; one wright building the fire, 8d.; to four labourers helping to build the fire, 16d.; for candle that same night, 12d.—sum, 14s. 6d."

Sundry payments during the year include:—"Given to an embroiderer which want his nose, being in Newgate, for to avoid the

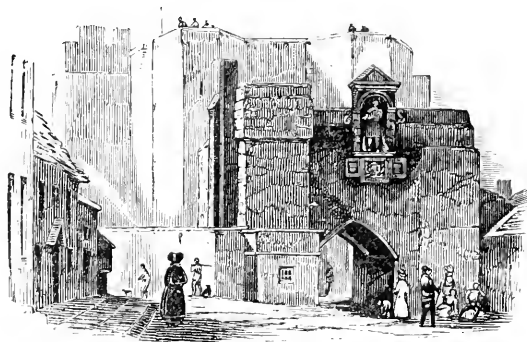
town with his wife and child, 12s. 4d.; Ro. Heslopp, armourer, in full payment of 26s. 6d. for fitting eighty-six Scotch staves with iron heads and nails to them, 13s. 4d.; five new sponges for the town's great ordinance, and two days' helping to get them set into the weigh-house, 3s. 4d."

---

John Hutton was appointed rector of Gateshead in succession to Dr. Colmore.

---

In the *Life of Sir Henry Wotton* is a letter from that able diplomatist to lord Zouch, written at Vienna this year, containing a remarkable account of a native of Newcastle:—"There is a certain northern man in this town, born at Newcastle, who hath served the king of Denmark, Suecia, and Poland, travelled the seventeen provinces, Muscovia, Liefland, and France, been taken prisoner in Spain, cousened by another Englishman in Italy of all his money and apparel; lives now by sweetening of gloves; shall marry with a concubine of the Jesuits, as some say, but as I hear more probably, with a common courtesan, upon condition if he can be made burger of Vienna. He hath lately given up a supplication to the archduke to be entertained in service, and received as a round answer that touches our whole nation, that the Dutch can get no service in England, and the English are like to find the like here; but if he want money to bring him home, or buy him some honest apparel for the honour of his queen, he shall have so much given him. This answer was sent him yesterday by one of the duke's servants. His name is Andrew Miller, of a very low stature, a great drunkard, full of words and lies, not able to keep his own dishonesties close, which he tells with a pride—red faced. If he comes unto your honour, you may know him by this description."



NEWGATE PRISON, NEWCASTLE, FROM THE NORTH, IN 1754.

1596.

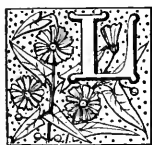
38 and 39 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***William Riddell, Mayor, and Francis Anderson, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Ralph Jenison.**

Arms : Azure, a bend or, between two swans argent.

The mayor died in May, and was succeeded by **Henry Chapman.****Sheriff—Adrian Hedworth.**

Arms : Argent, an inescutcheon sable, within an orle of ten pierced cinquefoils gules.



**L**ORD HUNTINGDON, lord president of the council at York, came to Newcastle, and stayed with the mayor, William Riddell, who, in the following year, received from the corporation a gratuity of 50*l.* in consideration of the charges imposed upon him as lord Huntingdon's host.

*January 19.*

Bishop Mathew incorporated, by deed bearing this date, the drapers, tailors, mercers, hardwaremen, coopers, and chandlers of Gateshead. The document creates the following persons and their successors a "body politic, community, and fellowship perpetual"—namely, Robert Charley, Nicholas Brestoo, John Spaine, Raphe Bankes, Raynold Spaine, George Smithe, John Lemmen, John Sotheren, Henry Young, Thomas Saborne, Peter Dobson, Francis Maddison, George Johnstone, George Buckham, Robert Stafforde, William Watson, George Wharey, Barnard Harrison, William Welland, John Wilson, John Todd, John Browne, Robert Foster, John Storie, William Storie, and Ralph Jorden.

Every year for ever they may choose three provident and expert members, who have for three years traded and lived in the town, to be wardens of the fellowship, and the fellowship is to have perpetual

succession, and a common seal ; may make honest ordinances for the government of the fellowship, and of all persons using the trades aforesaid within the town, so that they be conformable to the laws of the realm and receive the approval of the bishop.

The first ordinances made in terms of the charter and approved by the bishop, briefly put, run as follows:—The company yearly to assemble on the 2nd November, and elect three of the fellowship to be wardens, and one to be clerk for a year, and set down such orders concerning the said trades as shall be thought necessary. All persons exercising any of these trades in the town must obey such orders, etc. Any person exercising any of the trades in the town who has not served seven years as apprentice shall forfeit for every month 40s. ; half to the bishop and the other to the wardens. Any subject that has served an apprenticeship out of the town who shall occupy any of the trades within the town, before paying to the wardens and the bishop 5*l.* each for an agreement, and before being admitted by the wardens, shall forfeit 5*l.* a month. Any member taking an apprentice for less than seven years forfeits 5*l.* Any foreigner trading before he is examined and allowed, to pay 6*l.* 13s. 4d. a month. Any member detaining another's apprentice shall be fined 5*l.* Members seeking dishonestly to deprive another of his customers, or his work, or who, by brawling or quarrelling, abuse any of the community, or without reasonable excuse is absent from the assemblies of the fellowship, shall be fined at the discretion of the brotherhood. If he refuse to obey, he shall be put out of the community until his reformation and amendment. The wardens are to receive the fines, pay the bishop his share, defray the expenses of the society, and account for the residue to their successors. The clerk is to keep books of account, etc. A chest, containing the charter of incorporation, seal, book of orders, and money, is to be kept by the elder warden ; two keys of the same to be held by the second and third wardens.

Shortly afterwards the bishop granted a similar charter to the cordwainers of Gateshead—Nicholas Frind, Thomas Cole, Peter Frind, Edward Day, Robert Cockson, John Milborne, William Parker, William Potts, Roger Pearson, Anthony Allaine, John Frind, Robert Newlands, William Reneicke, Henry Yonge, and John Thornton. Two men, of three years' residence, etc., were to be chosen to act as searchers, to govern the community, and with the general consent of the fellowship, and, subject to the bishop's approval, to punish offenders. A common seal was to be provided, to be called the "Seal of the searchers and commonalty of cordwainers in Gateside."

Ordinances approved by the bishop were, in a condensed form, these :—

The fellowship to meet on each 29th December, and elect two searchers and a clerk for a year, and set down such orders as shall be thought necessary. All such orders, when approved by the bishop, the craft shall be tied to obey. Any person trading, etc., who has not served seven years as apprentice, to forfeit 40s. a month—half to the bishop and half to the fellowship. And alien or other that has served as apprentice setting up in the town without paying 50s. to the searchers and 50s. to the bishop for a certificate, and being admitted, to forfeit 5*l.* for each month of offence—to be divided as before. A member taking an apprentice for less than seven years, to forfeit 5*l.*—divided as before. An alien or other not apprenticed in the town, occupying trade there before the bishop has examined and allowed him, shall forfeit 6*l.* 13s. 4d. a-month. If any unlawfully keep a member's servant from his master he shall forfeit 5*l.* None of the fellowship may exercise the trades of tanner or turner at the same time as those of shoemaker or cordwainer, under penalty of 40s. None of the society may make boots, shoes, "start upps," slippers, or "pantables" of English leather well curried, other than "dyres," calves or goats' skins dressed like Spanish leather, but of leather well tanned, well twisted, and the stitches well drawn with hand leathers, without mixing of neats' leather and calves' leather in the over-leather. None of the society between the 30th September and the 20th April may make any shoes, boots, etc., meet for any person to wear exceeding the age of four years, wherein shall be any dry English leather other than calves' or goats' skins ; nor exhibit for sale any shoes, etc., upon Sunday, before morning service be ended ; nor put into shoes, etc., leather made of sheep, bull, or horse skins, or into the upper leather of any shoes, or into the nether part of any boots (the inner sole and heels excepted) any part of the hide from which the sole leather is cut, upon pain of 3s. 4d. for every pair so made. The seachers shall every three weeks make diligent search, etc. Any searcher not executing his office shall forfeit 40s. Members refusing the searchers entry into their premises, to forfeit 5*l.* No person shall ship, nor sell to be shipped, any boots, etc., upon pain to forfeit the same or the value of them. A member seeking to get another's customers or work, or with slanderous words abusing any, or refusing to attend the assemblies, shall pay such fines as the society shall impose. And if he will not obey he shall be no longer member of the society until his amendment. None of the society shall take as apprentice or journeyman, or set on work, any Scottish man, without the assent of the searchers, upon pain of 20d. a-day. The searchers

shall levy and receive the fines, paying over the bishop's share within one month, and the rest shall disburse from time to time, and the residue at the year's end. The clerk shall register in a book all the proceedings, and deliver the same to his successor. A chest shall be kept by the first searcher, containing the charter, seal, and book of orders and money ; the chest to have two keys, one in the custody of the elder and the other in that of the younger of the searchers.

*January 23.*

Writing from York about the musters in the North, Joseph Ferne, deputy secretary, informs lord Burghley that Newcastle promised to furnish and train, for the defence of the town, 500 men, 20 calivers, 100 muskets, and 200 corslets, and that good store of pikes, belts, and powder has been provided there.

*April.*

One Bridges writes to the privy council pointing out a source of danger in which Newcastle is interested :—"There are in the realm 200 Newcastle coal-hoys, without a piece of ordnance, which the enemy might easily seize and arm, and sail up the Thames, spoiling all from Lee to London, and firing the ships between Limehouse and London Bridge, and 40,000 to 50,000 men could hardly prevail against 10,000 ; then they could ensconce themselves on the low ground by the river. The Spaniards might by politic means draw the queen's navy far from our coasts, and in their absence work this danger by those hoys, for the queen's ships cannot follow them on account of their draught. Six, eight, or ten of these hoys should be armed, to conduct the others, the expense to be met by a tax of 2s. a chaldron on coals, for which the Newcastle coalmasters exact from 4s. to 9s. ; the rather as they of Newcastle pay no subsidies nor fifteenths."

*April.*

"Paid for carrying a woman through the town for scolding, with branks, 4d.," is an item in the accounts of the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle for April this year. The branks, an iron engine in the form of a crown, covered the head, but left the face exposed, having a tongue of iron, which went into the mouth, and constrained silence from the most violent brawler. The branks of Newcastle are still preserved, and engravings of the machine appear in the volumes of Ralph Gardiner, Sykes, and Richardson, and various publications of later date.

*May 16.*

Buried in St. Nicholas' church, alderman Henry Mitford, sheriff



of Newcastle in 1582, mayor in 1584, and M.P. in 1588 and 1593. He married Barbara, daughter of Edmund Parkinson of Hulam and Newcastle, merchant. Parkinson died in 1573, and his widow, Alice, married James Carr, who left her a second time a widow in 1593. Barbara Mitford followed her husband to the tomb within three days of his interment, and before the month was out her mother, Alice Carr, was making her will, and preparing to be laid beside her two husbands, her daughter, and her son-in-law, in the same temple of silence and reconciliation.

Alice Carr's will, dated May 31 this year, has been preserved. She desires to be buried in St. Nicholas' church, near her first husband, Edmund Parkinson. Bequeaths to Barbara Mitford, her granddaughter, one silver pot with a cover, parcel gilt; to her daughter, Jane Gascoigne, a steep-lead, "the standing pulke in the hall," a painted chest and a steel chest; to Anne Mitford, a great coffer, standing on a frame, in Christopher Mitford's chamber, with set work; to Henry Mitford, son of Barbara, a desk. "Where I have seven silver spoons in pawn to John Lyons, I will that they be loosed, and I give one of them, being a pope spoon, gilted, to my daughter, Jane Gascoigne; the other six to Anne, Alice, Barbara, Elizabeth, and Mary Mitford—to each one, and the other to Barbara, daughter of Thomas Liddell." Executor — Jane Gascoigne. Supervisors — Matthew Chapman and John Lyons.

The death of alderman Mitford forms the subject of one of a couple of curious entries which Sir Cuthbert Sharp, in his *Chronicon Mirabile*, has extracted from the Hesleden register of burials as follows:—

1. "The xvii. daie of Maie 1595, at xii. of ye cloke at noone, being lowe water, Mrs. Barbarie Metford died, & was buried the xviii. daie of May, at ix. of the cloke in ye morninge. Mr. Holsworth maid the sermon."

2. "The xi. daie of Maie, 1596, at vi. of ye cloke in the morninge, being ful water, Mr. Henrie Mitford, of Hoolam, died at Newcastle, & was buried the xvi. daie, beinge sondaie, at eaveninge prayer. The hired preacher maid the sermon."

The brief pause between death and burial—the one at noon, the other early in the ensuing morning—may be referred to the presence of plague in Newcastle. The first-named preacher was the vicar, Richard Holdsworth, who, as we see on the next page, died four months after Henry Mitford.

The time-honoured faith, associating the tidal wave with death as a "passing bell," finds expression in the records of the parochial penman; although, perhaps, not very consistently, for in the one case

it is "full" water, and in the other "low." Many are the poetic imaginations that have mingled in the human heart with ebbing life. Readers of Sir Walter Scott will remember the death-bed scene of the gipsy in *Guy Mannering* :—

"Haste thee, haste thee, to be gone ;  
Earth flits fast, and time draws on ;  
Gasp thy gasp, and groan thy groan,  
Day is near the breaking."

"I must open the door," says Meg Merrilees ; and, rising, she faced towards the door of the apartment, observing heedfully not to turn back her head ; and, withdrawing a bolt or two, she lifted the latch, saying—

"Open lock, end strife,  
Come death, and pass life."

The door must not be closed, but neither was it to be thrown wide open. "To leave the door ajar was the plan adopted by the old crones who understood the mysteries of deathbeds and lykewakes." [J. C.]

*June 6.*

Alderman Roger Rawe (sheriff of Newcastle in 1574, and mayor in 1579 and 1592), buried in St. Nicholas' church, where, in Bourne's time, his tombstone was to be seen, inscribed, "twice mayor of this town." His name occurs in Bernard Gilpin's will, and in other testamentary documents of the period, but his own will, if he made one, is not forthcoming. His first wife, Katherine, died during his second mayoralty. His second wife, Dorothy, became, on the 9th October 1598, the first of the three wives of Timothy Draper, one of her majesty's customers in Newcastle. There were two Roger Rawes, occupying prominent positions in Newcastle, contemporaneously. The other Roger was a master mariner, and may have been the father of the alderman. Several persons of the name of Rawe occur in the local registers of burials about this time :—James Rawe, and the wife of Christopher Rawe, in 1595 ; the alderman, and Ralph the sword-bearer, in 1596 ; Matthew (son of James) of Friarside, in 1597 ; widow Rawe, wife of Roger, master and mariner, in 1599 ; and Dorothy Draper, widow of the alderman, in 1601.

*September 5.*

The vicar of Newcastle, Richard Holdsworth, was buried to-day within his church of St. Nicholas. His youngest son Richard, born in Newcastle in 1590, and educated by the vicar's son-in-law, the Rev. William Pearson, afternoon lecturer at St. Nicholas', rose to

eminence in the church, becoming successively rector of St. Peter the Poor, London, professor of divinity at Gresham College, prebendary of Lincoln, archdeacon of Huntingdon, master of Emanuel College and D.D. During the civil wars he was sent to the Tower, and is said to have died through grief at king Charles' misfortunes.

Vicar Holdsworth in his will, made on the 28th of August, gives directions for his interment in the quire of St. Nicholas', and bequeaths a messuage in Pilgrim Street, occupied by Robert Delaval, of Seaton Delaval, to his wife Elizabeth for her life, with remainder to his sons John, Henry, and Richard. To Mr. Morton (his successor at St. Nicholas'?), a book called *Clemens Alexsandrianus*; to Mr. Morehouse, a book called *Chrisostum in epistolas*. To his sister Johanna, 3*l.* and his worst black gown; to Abraham Robinson, 40*s.*; to his cousin, William Holdsworth, a student in Cambridge, 40*s.*; to his brother, John Holdsworth, his wife, and two sons, to each of them, a George on horseback, being 5*s.*; to Susanna, his brother's daughter, 5*s.*; to the poor, 10*s.*; to his six children, John, Henry, Richard, Elizabeth, Rachell, and Mary, half his goods; residue to his wife Elizabeth. Witnesses—William Blaxton, Richard Smith, Oswald Chaitor, Abraham Robinson, and John Cliborne.

The living of St. Nicholas' was given to William Morton, S.T.P., vicar of Long Newton, who held it till July 1620.

*October 3.*

Ralph Rawe, sword-bearer, buried at St. Nicholas'. In his will he is described as a merchant—that is to say, he was a member of the merchants' company. He owned a house in the Meal Market, where he lived, and this he bequeathed to Judith, his wife, on condition of her paying 20*l.* to his sister, Agnes Vincent; failing this, Agnes was to have the property.

*October 6.*

On this day Robert Atkinson (sheriff of Newcastle in 1580, and mayor in 1590) was interred at St. Nicholas' church, and on the fifteenth administration was granted to his wife Isabel. He was related to alderman Robert Barker, and was entrusted with the care of some of his children. The inventory of his effects exhibits him as a man of extensive business connections. His house was large, and he had cellars in Chapman Chare, Grindon Chare, and the Side, and a loft in Pilgrim Street. There were leases of meadow ground in Ryton haughs, two salt-pans at Shields, a house on the Quayside "from Richard Harregatte," a farm at Whitburn, and half

a pan lighter. He owned a quarter of a fishing boat called the *Mary Forton* of Shields, a quarter of the *New John*, and a sixth of the barque *Chancewell* of Newcastle. Plate and pewter figure largely in the list, and his wardrobe was unusually extensive. The merchandise in which he dealt consisted chiefly of timber, iron, lead, corn, hemp, rope, canvas, skins, and glass. Altogether his effects were valued at 964*l.* 17*s.* 3*d.* Like his relative, alderman Barker, he had a large sum of money in hand—amounting to 2200*l.* The widow must have given him a sumptuous funeral, for the cost of it was 144*l.* 5*s.* 5*d.* His library consisted of a book called *Peter Martyr*, another book called the *Book of Martyrs*, one large bible, and two smaller bibles.

*October.*

The corporation paid to William Bome this October, or the October before, for the date is somewhat doubtful, in consideration of a hawser which was spoiled in hauling up the common bell of St. Nicholas' church to the steeple, 20*s.* In a paper upon the bells of St. Nicholas', contributed to the *Archæologia Eliana* by Mr. John Ventress, the common bell is thus described:—"There appears always to have been one bell more exclusively devoted to municipal purposes, called the common, great, or thief and reiver bell. The last name was applied to it in consequence of its taking the place of (or accompanying) the curfew, or eight o'clock bell, on the occasion of each of the fairs of the town, at which, by a custom, widely dispersed, none but the greatest malefactors were liable to arrest. Another special use of this bell, from which the name of common bell seems to be derived, was that of its being tolled to convene the burgesses and other business. On the great annual election, it begins, says Brand, 'at nine o'clock in the morning, and with little or no intermission continues to toll till three o'clock, when they begin to elect the mayor, etc.' Its beginning so early was, doubtless, intended to call together the several companies to their respective meeting-houses, in order to choose the former and latter electors, etc. A popular notion prevails that it is for the old mayor's dying, as they call his going out of office—the tolling, as it were, of his passing bell. The great bell was also tolled at twelve o'clock at noon of Pancake or Shrove Tuesday, when a general holiday for the rest of the day commenced." This bell lasted only a few years, and has been recast several times.

---

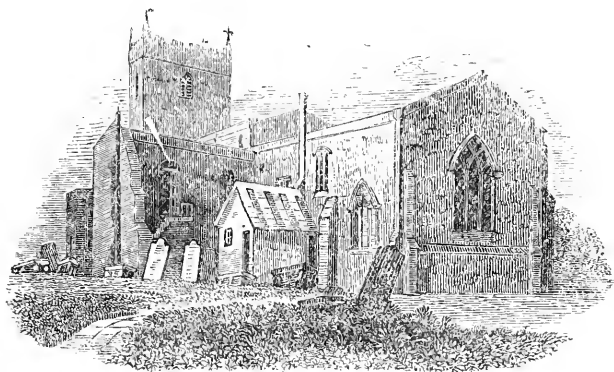
Somebody broke into the town chamber of Newcastle this autumn, and the officials again employed a sleuth-hound to follow the track of the offender. Bartram Gofton was sent to Chester [le-Street] to bring

the bitch and her owner once more to Newcastle. The dog from Denton was also engaged to assist the bitch from Chester, and the town paid for their services in following "the scent and trod of those which broke the town chamber door," 20s. for the bitch and 2s. to the owner, and 10s. to him of Denton for the dog, besides which payments, 12d. was disbursed for a horse hire going to Denton to fetch the dog. Scourging a boy about the town, and a rod to scourge him with, cost the corporation 6d.

---

Other accounts of the corporation of Newcastle showed that the town paid 10*l.* each to Mr. Richard Holdsworth, preacher, and Mr. James Bamford, preacher, for their quarters; to John Morra [curate of St. John's], usher of the high school, 16*s.* 8*d.*; to Mr. Ross, for keeping a French school to teach freemen's children in the town only, 20*s.* (Our corporate ancestors spent only small sums on food for the mind, but they liberally provided food for the body, especially for their own.) Further they paid dame Clarke for keeping Allon, the fool; gave John Lawson, fool, 12*d.* towards mending his sore leg, and gave Thomas Dodds, fool, a petticoat; paid for twelve yards of red russet to be clothes for Lawson and Allon, fools, against Easter, and for a pair of shoes for George Spence, fool.

Miscellaneous payments were made as follows:—"To old Mrs. Blunt, in reward, in respect of need, what she would have had for the loss of a piece of ordnance which the town borrowed of her, and was lost a dozen years or more since, 6*l.*; a lb. of pepper, and a bag, for the rent of the conduit without Westgate, to Mr. Thomas Hilton, due at Michaelmas last, 4*s.*"



ST. ANDREW'S CHURCH, NEWCASTLE, 18TH CENTURY.

1597.

39 and 40 ELIZABETH.

Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

**Ralph Jenison and Henry Chapman, Mayors, and Adrian Hedworth, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—***Mayor—Thomas Liddell.**

Arms : As in 1592.

**Sheriff—William Huntley.**

Arms : Gules, on a bend argent, three — vert ; in sinister chief a crescent sable.



ON the authority of the Randall MSS., Brand states that in the parliament summoned to meet at Westminster in October, and dissolved in the following February, Henry Mitford was one of the representatives of Newcastle, but he queries the accuracy of the record, and no confirmation of it appears in the parliamentary returns. In the accounts of the corporation is an entry which shows that Henry Chapman was a representative of the borough in this parliament:—  
 “Paid Mr. Henry Chapman, alderman, at his journey to London to the parliament taken the 14th of October '97, elected burgess for the town, 30*l*.”

*January 20.*

William Greenwell of Newcastle, merchant (sheriff in 1591), who married Anne, daughter of John Gibson, and benefited largely by bequests from his father-in-law, was on this day buried at St. Nicholas' church. In his will, dated the 13th January, he gives his wife their dwelling-house, for life, and then to his son William ; gives her also his plate for life (she to distribute it among his four children), and all such leases as his father-in-law gave them ; paying unto their mother Gibson 30*l*. a-year during her life. To his son Robert, a farmhold in Kibblesworth ; to his son William, his part of the “grand lease,” with his shares of Axwell, Peal Flat, Jacke'sleazes, coals on the north side, his part of the rectory of Mitford, and Welton's land. Bequests are made to relatives and friends, amongst others, to

Margaret Greenwell, his mother, Jane, his daughter, and William, John, and Robert, sons ; sister Janet Colson ; sister Margaret Tood and her children that she had by Richard Rawling ; his partner, Robert Shafto ; brother Thomas of London, and cousin William. Executors—his wife and children. Supervisors—William Morton, vicar ; George Farnaby, merchant and alderman. The value of testator's property, after allowing for desperate debts, amounted to 2730*l.* 6*s.* 9*d.*

*February.*

The corporation sent a present to the bishop of Durham, suitable for cold weather. In the municipal books is an entry that they paid for "four pottles sack and two quart, for three pottles of white wine, and four pottles and a quart of claret wine, for a present to the bishop of Durham, 17*s.* 6*d.* ; for 11*lb.* of sugar which went with the wine, 18*d.* per pound, 16*s.* 6*d.*"

*February 9.*

Among the State Papers is a recommendation to lord Burghley from three aldermen, presumably of London, in favour of the appointment of Richard Pitts, one of the company of merchant adventurers, as customer in one of her majesty's ports. The document is endorsed "Newcastle," and Pitts received an appointment here, for in the following year we find him in office, quarrelling with Henry Sander-son about some linen which had been seized in the river.

*May 16.*

On Whit Monday the mayor elected at Michaelmas, alderman Ralph Jenison, was removed from his place of honour by death, and the next day was interred in the family vault in St. Nicholas'. By his marriage with Margaret, daughter of Cuthbert Hunter and relict of Andrew Bewicke, deceased had four sons, the youngest of whom was Robert Jenison, D.D., vicar of Newcastle ; while from his eldest son William descended Sir Ralph Jenison of Elswick, William Jenison, town clerk of Newcastle, and Ralph, M.P. for Northumberland, and master of the buckhounds to George II. Over the mayor's remains in the choir of St. Nicholas' was a stone, in Bourne's time, bearing a Latin inscription extolling the deceased as a prudent, peaceful, pious, large-hearted man, whose aspirations were heavenward.

*May 23.*

Date of a warrant to strike a tally on the customs collectors of the port of London for 245*l.*, for John Fyc of Ipswich, and John Holbron of Newcastle, as the queen's special reward towards their

building of four new ships, of 980 tons altogether, to be taken from the customs on wares brought by the said ships.

*June 13.*

John Carr, postmaster, Newcastle, whose name has occurred in several paragraphs relating to the harbouring of seminary priests, finding that suspicions against him were gathering strength, and that he was likely to be seriously involved by them, sued for pardon, and on this date obtained it.

*July 16.*

Repairs at the Manor, or queen's storehouse, of which we had a note on page 97, were resumed. To the 200*l.* granted in 1595 the privy council now added 218*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.*; "but 24*l.* may be deducted for three fotheres of lead left on board from last year's work." This sum was to be devoted to "roofing the great hall, 81 feet by 21 feet, which is to be employed as a storehouse for armour, and repairing the floor in the arrow-house."

*November 4.*

Henry Riddle of Newcastle, merchant, by his nuncupative will, desires to be buried in the great church at Elvinge, and gives to Mr. Morton of Newcastle, preacher, three angels, and to Mr. Smathwaite of Newcastle, preacher, one French crown. Mentions Charles Horsley of the same town, his father's apprentice, and Elizabeth Liddell [Thomas Liddell's daughter], whom he meant to be his wife, etc.

*November 7.*

The painstaking recorder of baptisms at St. Nicholas' church makes an entry in the register of the christening of "Alice, being daughter to a mad woman, called Anne Hall, being oftentimes refused for lack of sureties: notwithstanding, at Mr. Mayor and Mr. Vicar's request, one Alice Good, wife of George Good, sailor, widow Anderson, and Thomas Wigham, became sureties."

---

Serious disputes amongst the aldermen and burgesses of Newcastle respecting the grand lease of Gateshead and Wickham, and other matters concerning the government of the town, culminated this year. Both parties appealed to the privy council, the complainants desiring a commission to inquire into municipal abuses, and the accused protesting that the charges made against them were unfounded, that the motives of the malcontents, acting, as they allege, under the inspiration of Henry Sanderson, the queen's customer, were base, and that the dispute should be investigated at York or in the Star Chamber. The



documents subjoined, although presenting chiefly one side of the quarrel, enable us to judge of the nature of the controversy and to estimate its intensity.

First comes a document preserved among the Lansdowne MSS. (No. 81, folio 41), endorsed "Non Grand Lessees, being men very sufficient," and headed "Mr. Henry Sanderson's account of the factions," etc.:—

1. "Lionell Maddison, alderman, a very good townsman; he husbanded the town's treasure in such sort, by appointing but a single surveyor, that he did many extraordinary things for the common good of the town, as augmenting the town's armour greatly, etc., and yet left 680*l.* in money in the town chamber when he went out of his mayoralty. He proved the town's interest in the grand lease, and sought to have the same restored, both parties giving their promise to abide the lord president's order therein, if Serjeant Savell did not end the same, who promised that the complainants should be satisfied; but his promise is forgotten, and nothing done. I will not say he swayeth with them that bear the purse, but I am sure his coming to the town is chargeable, and doth little good amongst us. My lord president wished that he might be removed, so good liking had his lordship of his carriage there, although at the first he wished him to the place.

2. "Robert Dudley, alderman, soundly affected to the state, and without all suspicion of any affection to popery; a good townsman, but because he intended reformation of abuses, and that he would prosecute the town's interest in the grand lease, which Mr. Maddison had begun, he hath been three times put from the mayoralty, though, by course and ancient usage, he ought to have been called thereunto.

3. "Adrian Hedworth, sheriff, a man of great obscurity, because of his simpleness called to that office, because they may rule him as they will; whereas they were purposed to make Nicholas Tempest sheriff, and, no doubt, had so done, if the council at York had not written that they should not make choice of any whose wife was a recusant.

4. "Edward Lewen, lately an alderman of seven years' continuance, zealous in religion. At the time of the Spanish invasion he was mayor, and was most ready and forward in her majesty's service; hath apprehended sundry seminary priests, and done other good services to her majesty and the state; a principal seeker of the reformation of the town desired, wearied and wronged by the grand lessees, and never at rest till he had given over his aldermanship.

5. "Christopher Lewen, an ancient sheriff, the most sufficient and

wise man of that town, soundly affected to religion and the state, a well-willer to reformation of the town desired, not called to be alderman, but his junior sheriffs preferred before him. The late lord president thought so well of him, as, at his last being at Newcastle, set him down in his note of remembrance to put him in the commission of peace at his coming up to London.

6. "Robert Eden, for his honesty and sound affection to religion, twice sheriff; four of his junior sheriffs, being grand lessees, called to be aldermen, and he left out. He hath not been of the common council for some years; never since demand was made that the grand lease should be made over to the town absolutely; his hindrance by his second sheriffwick will not be considered, notwithstanding the lord president wrote earnestly in his behalf; as is said in my schedule, the reason is, he favoureth reformation of the town desired.

7. "Mr. Boroughes, placed schoolmaster by Mr. Maddison at the commendation of the late archbishop of York, the late lord president, the bishop of Durham, and the preachers of the town, was by Mr. Anderson in his mayoralty discharged; no other cause, in truth, can be imagined but that he is thought to be a favourite of Mr. Maddison, and reformation of the town desired. He was by Mr. Anderson, his authority, pulled out of the school, but yet his right was such, and the rather furthered by your lordship's letters, that he was restored by the council at York, which, notwithstanding, there being hope conveyed that the town's causes should be removed from York, he is again lately discharged without any cause alleged.

8. "John Chater, a free burgess, servant to the late earl of Huntingdon, a lover of religion, and one that hath taken great pains for discovery of seminaries, fugitives, and such like, was appointed by his lord and master to train the burgesses of our town in arms, according to a motion made by his lordship, in which office he was confirmed by the mayor and guild, and twenty marks by year allowed for the same by the mayor and council of this town, which stipend, as also 4s. by the week given him by Mr. Maddison, for having an eye to landing-places for the apprehending of seminaries and other fugitives, was taken from him by Mr. Anderson, and the 4s. continued to one who married Mr. Chapman's sister, being a man of no desert; no other cause can be imagined than against Mr. Boroughes.

"There be many other honest and very sufficient men that are not called to office, because they mislike the faction and abuses of the grand leases, whom to name were too long, for if authority did once begin to countenance reformation of the town desired, many hundreds would show themselves in open guild.—Henry Sanderson."

On the 31st May, Robert Dudley, and fourteen other aldermen and

burgesses, on behalf of themselves and many more, write to the lord treasurer :—"We understand that the late mayor, and other of the aldermen, combined with Mr. Anderson, have written to you that Mr. Sanderson has procured divers people of the town of mean quality, and therefore the sooner seduced into error, being such as contribute little or nothing to the charges of the town, to subscribe his petitions, informations, etc. The truth is this :—Mr. Anderson, seeming to bewail the waste of the town treasure, and the making George Farnaby alderman and mayor out of time, by persons, some of whom have been imprisoned for disaffection to religion and the state, and the great wrong done to the town by the grand leases, with privity of Mr. Holdsworth and Mr. Bamford, preachers in the town, persuaded many of us and other free burgesses to join him to seek reformation of these abuses. Ralph Jenison and Mr. Anderson fell from the cause, and both have since been made mayors. All the rest, with many other substantial burgesses, continue to seek the intended reformation. They say that Mr. Sanderson led us into error, but it was we who entreated Mr. Sanderson to solicit this cause for reformation of abuses. They accuse Sanderson of driving us to great charges, but the greatest charge lies upon him. We have contributed, and shall further, to support the expenses ; but the contrary party, against a recent order of the council of York, spend the town's money to defend their abuses. Reformation is so much desired, that the burgesses and commons have made motion in open guild that allowance might be made if it were obtained. They say that we contribute little or nothing to the maintenance of the town, but the least contributor amongst us paid more than Mr. Anderson, and some other aldermen, towards setting forth three ships and a pinnace, the year of the Spanish invasion, or the ship for Cadiz last year. We fear there are recusants and those ill-affected to religion in the town, but we refer you thereon to Mr. Sanderson, by whom we have written to council. We pray your and their favour to this decaying corporation."

The mayor and sheriff and seven aldermen reply on the 20th August, addressing their letter to Michael Hickes, secretary to the lord treasurer :—"If your long experienced, upright carriage had not given us hope in our troubles, we would not have ventured to have solicited your worship in this our great incumbrances ; so many have been heretofore, and yet be, the strifes begun and continued by our busy malcontent enemy, Henry Sanderson, that we are become not only to others, but especially to ourselves, an insupportable trouble everywhere. We have been, and yet be, disgraced as the men who only deserve evil amongst men ; our places, persons, actions in private,

our chamber in public, being made a byword everywhere. We have sent Mr. John Baxter of our town council, and Mr. William Jackson, town clerk, to importune your worship, that as much as you can do herein you would help us in our just and equal suit, for which we shall ever not only acknowledge ourselves highly indebted, but thoroughly bound to render both thanks and dutiful respect whatever way we can. Our hope is built on God and a just cause, together with your worship's favour, which we trust will not fail us, so heartily take our leave. Your very loving friends, the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff of Newcastle—H. Chapman, William Selby, H. Anderson, William Riddell, G. Farnabie, Thomas Lyddell, W. Jenison, George Selby, T. Anderson, Adryan Hedworth."

On the 17th September "our busy malcontent enemy," Henry Sanderson himself, writes to the lord treasurer:—"Mr. Chapman, mayor, and his adherents, still labouring to avoid trial of our town's cause, procured a petition to the council to save charges by having our complaint heard before the council at York, assisted by the judges, or in the Star Chamber, instead of by commissioners to be sent there. I am persuaded that neither this pretence nor the multitude of signatures they have procured will lead the council to change the course taken after deliberate consideration. It is not hard for those who bear sway to procure many subscribers. Part of our complaint is that they have wasted much money in seeking the removal of our cause from York, and the judges have not time to consider so large a complaint. They would weary us while paying themselves out of the town chamber. They granted 20*l.* for charges to William Jenison, lately made alderman, who was sent for to York, and suspended for misdemeanor, during his sheriffwick. Mr. Selby and Anderson pretend we compel them in defence to waste the town's stock. Many excuse their signing the petition by saying they were summoned before the mayor, on pain of 40*s.*, and urged on their oath to the mayor to sign, and few had the petition read to them. They were told that the archbishop of York, bishop of Durham, and their trains, would remain twenty days in the town, and put it to 1000*l.* expense. There has been a hot contention because some of the magistrates—when two Dutch and one English ship came in laden with corn—to drive away strangers, brought down corn from their lofts and sold it at 12*s.* the boll, when the strangers asked 13*s.*, and so brought it down to 9*s.* and 8*s.*, and told the strangers they would weary them away, if they lost 500*l.* by it; but when the strangers were gone they raised the price again to 13*s.* Mr. Baxter, and Jackson, our new town clerk, have been five or six weeks in London on these causes. God send them as they deserve. The plague

increases in Newcastle, so that the commissioners cannot yet come thither."

Sanderson encloses a document, dated September 15th, from Lionel Maddison and Robert Dudley to lord Burghley :—"Hearing that by reason of the progress the council does not sit to hear suitors, we write to tell you that Mr. Chapman, now mayor, and that faction—storming against the letter of council to the council at York for a commission to be sent hither to determine the controversies amongst us—have procured a petition alleging that but fifteen base and turbulent people complain of their abuses. They care not what they write, to avoid examination of our complaint. Truly only fifteen subscribed our supplication to save charges by trial of our cause here, but we moved only those few whom we knew to be forward, and of such reason and conscience in these proceedings that no exception could be taken against them; whilst they procured their more numerous subscribers by threats of disfranchisement. But many of the common council repent setting their hands to they knew not what. They cannot think that only the subscribers favour our complaint, because in sundry guilds the commons have urged for the grand lease to be made over absolutely to the town. When Mr. Anderson was mayor, even his own audit would not allow his accounts; a second audit, appointed by the council at York, noted hundreds misspent in his mayoralty; and in guild the commons were content that if we proved our complaint, our charges should be repaid from the town chamber. We think that the imputation of baseness, from those whose proceedings are supported by chamberlains that neglect their occupations to live on their shares in the town stock, and from common council that work at the wheel-barrow, could only have been to prevent that objection from us. As to turbulency, we deserve to be branded with it if our complaints are unjust; but as Ahab and his father's house troubled all Israel, so Mr. Chapman, the chief counsellor of the grand leases, and his complices, are perturbors of this commonwealth. We beg that the defendants' procured and enforced petition may not prevail."

Then follows a list of charges against the dominant party :—

1. "The inhabitants of her majesty's town of Newcastle do complain that William Selby and Henry Anderson, aldermen, have not set over to the mayor and burgesses the lease of the manor of Gate-side and Wickham, according to the trust reposed in them, but to private men, of whom some are recusants, and divers others notoriously suspected to be popishly and evil affected.

2. "That William Selby and Henry Anderson have set over the coal-mines in the said manor to private men, and partly to their own

private use, by lease, with such unreasonable conditions as are not usual, and that for more years than the mayor, aldermen, and burgesses in guild gave authority.

3. "That the said William Selby, Henry Anderson, Henry Chapman, Thomas Liddell, Nicholas Tempest, and other their co-partners, who have coals there, do encroach and work away the town's mines, to the value of 2000*l.* or thereabout, paying no rent to the town for the same, which is the cause that the grand leases do not work so many pits as formerly have been wrought, whereby the town's rents are greatly diminished, and (as may be feared) the principal lease endangered.

4. "That the grand leases do engross all the coal-mines in the manor aforesaid, refusing to renew the leases of any ancient tenants once expired at any rate, though they be free burgesses, and such as have spent much of their substance in winning those mines, to the overthrow of the said tenants and prejudice of the inhabitants of the town and her majesty's subjects elsewhere that traffic for coal.

5. "That whereas the town paid 5500*l.* for the grand lease, the grand lessees for 2000*l.* paid to the town have a lease for 60 years of all the coal-mines, worth 1600*l.* per annum, and have lost to the town for the laying out of 3500*l.*, but 30*l.* some year, some year 40*l.*, some year 60*l.*; and when it hath most, little above 80*l.* per annum; and that which is worse, they do impose such charges upon the town, by reason of those unreasonable conditions, which they have tied the town unto, as the town loseth yearly, and is impoverished by the said grand lease.

6. "The grand lessees strive by complotting, procuring elections, and otherwise, to prefer themselves and their favourers, though unworthy, and keep back non-grand lessees, and such as favour reformation of our town, be they ever so worthy; for William Jenison was made sheriff against the late lord president's advice, but after suspended by the said lord president and council; notwithstanding, they have made him alderman since the death of the said late lord president, contrary to his lordship's express direction, that the said Jenison should not be called to further place of authority till her majesty's pleasure were further known. Ralph Carr is their solicitor, William Simpson was made an elector, Mr. Baxter (by credible report enforced to leave Gray's Inn, for his backwardness in religion) is retained of their council for law matters, and others of like note preferred; base fellows, that drive the wheel-barrow for day wages, and work at the bridge for 4*d.* a tide, made of the common council, and such as have been sheriffs and other substantial burgesses left out. The first three

were presented as reasoners against religion established, and otherwise to be charged with misdemeanour and undutiful behaviour to her majesty, and are notoriously suspected to be yet popishly affected. Of late three grand lessees are made aldermen, and other their ancients, being no grand lessees, being neglected; junior sheriffs, grand lessees, preferred in election before their ancients, being no grand lessees; William Simpson and other favourers made electors, alderman, and sheriffs, [those who are] no grand lessees left out. An alderman, no grand lessee, put beside the mayoralty two years together, contrary to their usual course, and Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Riddell who married his sister, grand lessees, were chosen mayors, notwithstanding they have been in that office before, but the said alderman never.

7. "The eighth day after Mr. Anderson entered into the mayoralty there was a motion made in open guild that 400*l.* or 500*l.* of that money which was left by Mr. Maddison, in the town chamber, might be bestowed in corn for provision of the burgesses, there being then some likelihood of dearth; but two days before, one William Jackson, by private direction of Mr. Anderson, had taken out of the town chamber 300*l.* of that money, without the knowledge or consent of any of the aldermen, unless it were Henry Chapman, by reason whereof that motion would not be heard, but the poor burgesses were pinched thereby with scarcity and high price of corn the winter following.

8. "Whereas Mr. Lionel Maddison, his predecessor, did at the going out of his mayoralty, deliver to two of the chamberlains 100*l.* to be kept for the payment of the fee farm of our town, due to her majesty, the said Mr. Anderson, within few days after his entry into the mayoralty, caused the same to be delivered to the said Jackson.

9. "Notwithstanding, the said 100*l.* left by Mr. Maddison, as aforesaid, Mr. Anderson moved the aldermen that 100*l.* might be taken up to London to pay the fee farm. The aldermen consented, and 200*l.* was taken up by the said Jackson, and interest paid by the town, and yet the fee farm was unpaid. Besides this, he neither paid, nor left money to pay, the fee farm due in his own year.

10. "About 200*l.* is brought to account as spent in a suit about coals, and Jackson's expenses, which, when the auditors for that year demanded how the same was defrayed, Mr. Anderson answered it was enough for them to see that the general sums agreed, without inquiring after the particulars; whereby, and such like matters, our town's treasure is consumed in maintaining private suits, to particular men's profit, but nothing concerning the public estate of our town, so that we are made very unable to perform any good service to her majesty, as of late hath been seen.

11. "Mr. Anderson hath given in, by his reckoning, 100*l.* paid for a statute merchant, and no such statute is procured.

12. "Whereas the late lord president and council at York, for especial cause them moving, gave advice that no grand lessee should be chosen mayor or sheriff till the matter then in question before the said lord president and council, concerning the grand lease between the mayor and burgesses and grand lessees, were determined; contrarily, Mr. Anderson, and other grand lessees, did so complete the election that he was chosen mayor, and George Selby, sheriff, a grand lessee, for which contemptuous and disorderly proceeding being called to York, he spent wastefully in that one journey sixty and odd pounds of the town's money.

13. "Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Riddell, his brother-in-law, succeeding him in the mayoralty, might easily make their receipts and payments agree, when they left the town in debt about 1500*l.*, over and besides which sum of 1500*l.* they had the disposing of above 7300*l.* in their two mayoralties, of the town's stock and money, and nothing of account done in either of their years, save the mending of a piece of one of the pillars of the bridge, and the setting out of one ship for coals. The one was offered to be set out for 800*l.*—the other to be done for 300*l.* But as the matter was husbanded, the town paid very nearly twice as much, and yet no provision of corn.

14. "The said Henry Anderson being wilfully bent to displace Mr. Burroughes, schoolmaster [master of the grammar school], lawfully placed by his predecessor, Lionel Maddison, and commended and licensed by the reverend father Matthew, the then bishop of Durham (as was proved, and a decree thereof made by the lord archbishop, his grace of York and the council), brought in an account as spent of the town's money in that suit, one hundred and odd pounds, and in sundry other sinister accounts there was wastefully consumed and unnecessarily spent, in the said Henry Anderson's year, about three hundred and threescore pounds.

15. "That the auditor chosen in Mr. Anderson's year to receive and audit his accounts, finding it so unreasonable, and far out of order, did reject the same, and would not allow thereof.

16. "That our river doth daily decay, and is likely to become unnavigable, by casting and using of ballast disorderly for the private gain of coalowners and their servants, if timely order be not taken, which aforetime hath been severely punished, and would be now also prevented, but that the grand lessees, who are chiefly to be touched herewith, are magistrates and bear the sway.

17. "The partial and disorderly proceeding in course of justice, as well in the mayor and sheriff's courts, as otherwise, is very grievous,



and greatly hurtful to many ; for that action that doth hold for one man will not be suffered to hold for another, as may appear by their court books ; and sometimes the party principal is suffered to take his voluntary oath to swear his matter true, and thereby the defendant is condemned, though it be ever so false, with many other such like abuses, which disorder groweth by the diversity of the aldermen's opinions in their friends' causes, because there is neither recorder, nor other good lawyer, to judge uprightly, or to give advice therein, but one William Jackson (the other day a common sergeant-at-mace of small education), who hath lately bought the town clerk's office, chiefly by the means of Mr. Anderson and the grand lessees, for that he is the principal broker for them in all their matters, and therefore doth what he lists, extorting new fees upon the poor burgesses, whereof complaint hath been made in open guild, and one Mr. Lewin, a very efficient man (deemed by the late lord president and council worthy of a better place) wearied and wrong from the same. The said lord president wished reformation with removal of some whose doings he much disliked.

18. "That some of the grand lessees, aldermen : to wit, Henry Anderson, Thomas Lyddell, George Selbie, and others, have bought corn brought in by strangers, raised the price, and sold the same immediately (out of the same ships that brought it in) for a higher rate to the burgesses and others, her majesty's poor subjects. Also Thomas Lyddell bought of Mr. Atkinson, alderman and merchant of the same town, about . . . quarters of corn, and at the same time lofted his own corn in great quantity (if not some part of the said corn bought of Mr. Atkinson), and kept the same a long time from the people and market, till it was sold for 24s. the bowl, which was but at 8s. 6d. the bowl when it was taken up.

19. "The richer grand lessees constrain divers of their petty partners, which have no store of private coal, to sell them their parts by working and leading by starts, yet with excessive charges, so that much is laid out, but returns with little and unseasonable profit, that they may not be importuned duly to work so many common pits as have been wrought and have been desired, to the increase of the town's rent, benefit of the said petty partners, and good of the commonwealth. The reason is, their own parts of the common pits, which be of the best coals, be small, in comparison of their private and worst coal. And, therefore, they keep the said aldermen from being mayor, ancient sheriffs from being aldermen, and substantial burgesses from being sheriffs and of the council, for they be no grand lessees, and can in no wise bear the grand leases to be made over to the town absolutely, notwithstanding a new charter was procured for that

purpose. It hath been urged in two guilds; two aldermen were sent by the authority of the latter guild in Mr. Maddison's year, to learn whether the town were capable thereof, and it being found so, the grand lease was promised to have been made over accordingly by the advice of Mr. Savile, our recorder. By which dealings not only our town is defrauded, but the commonwealth ruined also with price and mixture of coal.

20. "There is no provision of corn for relief of the burgesses, contrary to an order formerly made in Mr. Lewin's mayoralty, neither treasure reserved in the town chamber, notwithstanding the plentiful benefits which it hath pleased God and her majesty yearly to bestow upon the said town, but the town brought in great debt, and was forced to borrow of the burgesses, of whom many were so poor that the most part could lend but 20s., 10s., 8s., 5s., 4s., 3s., 2s., and some 16d. by 4d. a-week, sundry of whom laid their clothes and covering of their beds to pawn, and that to the setting out of one ship, whereas, heretofore, one alderman hath set out two, and the burgesses have been able to entertain with meat and lodging ten thousand soldiers, but now scarce able to find themselves bread.

21. "By our charter there are three guild days appointed to be held every year, where the grievances of the burgesses should be heard, and things amiss reformed. But the matter is so handled that the mayor never cometh on those days till it be about eleven o'clock, and is gone again by twelve, and sometimes sooner, if anything be moved that may bring reformation or discover their doings, etc.

22. "Many matters and grievances besides these, as well in our complaint exhibited at York, as also by private men whom it particularly concerneth, will be shewed when they shall have fit place of hearing.

"Complainants—Robert Dudley, Lionel Madyson, Henry Sander-son, Edward Geary, John Barkar. Defendants—Thomas Ryddell, Henry Chapman, Henry Anderson, William Selby, William Jenyson."

From the municipal records we learn that in connection with this and other matters the town clerk went to London, and made presents to various persons. He was absent forty-four days altogether, for which he received 7s. 6d. a-day :—"Paid Mr. William Jackson, town clerk, for his charges to London, to the earl of Essex, to the lord treasurer, touching Mr. Rumford, as also into Yorkshire; to Mr. Recorder for his advice touching the office of the water sergeant, challenged by the lord admiral, and about the business of this corporation, in which business is disbursed as follows:—viz., paid to the earl of Essex for his first year's annuity, granted by this corporation, 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; more for change of money into gold, 2*s.*; for a

velvet purse, 10s.; given to his secretary, 2*l.*; given to my lord treasurer's secretary, 1*l.* 10s.; paid by direction of Mr. Mayor for counsel and advice in sundry causes belonging to this town, 3*l.* 4s. 4d.; for his horses and his own charges for forty-four days, at 7s. 6d., 16*l.* 10s.; paid for boat in reparing to the court, 20s. Total, 30*l.* 19s. 8d., whereof the town hath paid, 20*l.*"

---

The brethren of the Trinity House agreed to sue Thomas Dickson, rope-maker, Sandgate, because he did "unreverently, and without discretion, slander the whole brethren and fellowship of this house in the open court of this town of Newcastle."

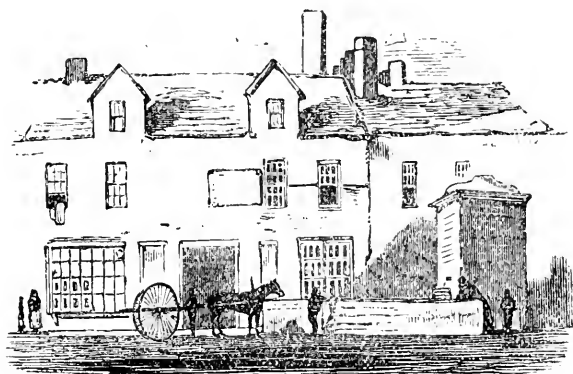
---

Another severe visitation of plague occurred in England. So grievous was it in the North that the assizes of Northumberland and Durham could not be held. "Great plague and pestilence in Newcastle, Durham, Darlington, Gateshead, Whickham [and many other places]. It continued all this year at Newcastle." So writes the compiler of the Mickleton MSS. The parish clerk of Penrith notes in his register, "a sore plague in Newcastle, Durham, and Darlington," and the accounts of Newcastle corporation abound with entries relating to it. Among the latter are sums of 7s. 4d. for burying seven, 3s. for burying nine, and 6s. 8d. for burying sixteen poor folk which died in the street; payments of 3*l.* 13s. 4d. for the relief of the sick folk a-field and within town, and for hay, and one to carry them water, with other necessities, and 6*l.* 13s. 4d. for a further supply of victuals to them. St. Ann's chapel, without Sandgate, was adopted as a place of refuge; also the hospital of St. Mary Magdalene, at the Barras Bridge, and the land belonging thereto at the Spital Tongues, as appears by payments of 8s. 1d. "for drink and bread to St. Ann's chapel this week," and 33s. 3d. for bread and drink and carrying water to "the sick man's house, and Spittle-tongues." Ships were closely watched, the town gates guarded, and men sent round "to cause all new comers into the town lately to avoid." The bishop of Carlisle died, the bishop of Durham shut himself up in his manor-house of Stockton, and fear and terror prevailed throughout the country. At the election of mayor and sheriff of Newcastle on Michaelmas Monday, writes Richardson, "rushes were spread thickly about the floors of the hospital, and the sweet-scented herbs, as might be imagined, more lavishly strewn than was wont. The ceremonies ended, the burgesses, not to be balked of their accustomed feast of geese, made it to proceed without interruption, there being burnt

during the whole time certain perfumes whose vapours, penetrating every nook and corner of the place, lulled the festive crew into a belief of temporary security."

Miscellaneous payments out of the town treasury include 13s. paid for five yards odd of red russet, "to make John Buteland the bellman a jacket and a pair of breeches;" 4*l.* given "in reward to a scholar of Cambridge, being a kinsman of Mr. Richard Holdsworth, preacher."

Dr. James, dean of Durham, writing to lord Burghley this year, laments both the spiritual and temporal condition of the northern counties. In May he tells the minister that his district contains many recusants, men and women of good place, who are almost all ignorant and obstinate, and not only do not come to church, but when prayers are offered for her majesty's safety and protection from all her enemies, the Pope and Spaniard, "they have denied to say Amen." They are married by old mass priests; their children are not christened in the churches; their wives do not go to church to return thanks for deliverance; their children are educated in secret, "and with their nurses' milk they suck dislike and disloyalty." In the bishopric within twenty years five hundred ploughs have been laid idle, the poor are multiplied, and if corn were not imported at great cost from foreign countries, even from the queen's enemies, many thousands who might have it growing at their own doors would perish for bread. Five hundred horses are some days at Newcastle, though it and Gateshead are dangerously infected; yet without this help no man can express the misery that would ensue. Later on the dean repeats his statement about the decay of tillage, and the fetching of corn from Newcastle, "whereby the plague is spread in the northern counties," adding, "thus the money goes, and the people can neither pay their landlords, nor store their ground."



THE BLACK HORSE INN, NEWCASTLE. 15TH CENTURY.

1598.

40 and 41 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—***Thomas Liddell, Mayor, and William Huntley, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—***Mayor—George Farnaby.**

Arms : As in 1588.

**Sheriff—William Warmouth.**

Arms : Or, between two lions rampant azure, a bend of the same charged with three pierced mullets of six points of the field.

*February 14.*

URTHER information respecting the great municipal controversy in Newcastle is afforded by a letter and enclosure which Henry Sanderson, the queen's customer, forwards on this date to lord Burghley :—" I send you a letter from the bishop of Durham's receiver.

I also send that part of our grievances which were exhibited to the council of York, and some to the lord keeper, without any great denial by the defendants. We have ready written the misdemeanours of the defendants, some of which Mr. Selby has, with tears, desired may be concealed. Jenison might do the same, if his stomach would let him, for we have pregnant presumptions that when he was sheriff, by his means, and help of Thomas Carr, the hand of Lambton, the seminary priest, was cut off from the quarter that was set up, and carried away. If commissioners be not indifferently appointed, the good cause will be darkened over much. Chapman has excepted against our diocesan, and they purpose to get out Mr. Purefoy, because they two are of great authority and experience in our town and country affairs." The enclosure is from Comyn to Sanderson :—" I told Mr Anderson that I was glad he and his associates had excepted against my lord [the bishop of Durham] as commissioner, in that he should not be troubled, but I thought it a dishonour for him to be discarded by their untrue suggestions. He said Mr. Selby and Mr. Jenison had concluded to have my lord a commissioner; and

he knows not how it was altered. I think Mr. Chapman contrived the change. I write this, not that my lord desires to be in the commission, but to show Mr. Chapman's forwardness to alter the former course taken in this cause."

Later in the year (September 16) Dr. James, dean of Durham, in a letter to Cecil, refers to the troubles in Newcastle :—"The mayor of Newcastle and his brethren and the plaintiffs not agreeing on any indifferent man for delivery of the return of the commissioners (though the plaintiffs both cause and complain of the delay), I send my servant for our discharge who were the commissioners, that the questions may be honourably heard and ended. In such a port as Newcastle, faction should be buried, and the queen's service and good of the town and country sought. Besides complaints of misgovernment and misspending of the town's money, there is such malice that men who, with their wives and families, frequent church, and receive the sacrament, are traduced as dangerous and unfit for government."

*February 25.*

Under date February 25, 1596, the Carr MS. has the following :—"The eclipse of the sun at ten o'clock in the forenoon, fearful to all people's sight to behold, and was called the dark Saturday before Shrovetide." In this instance the compiler has made a slip. Saturday before Shrovetide, 1596, or 1597, according to modern reckoning, was on the 5th of February, not the 25th. Sir Cuthbert Sharp, in the *Chronicon Mirabile*, corrects the error. "Dark Saturday was 25th February 1597"—i.e., February 25th, 1598, historical time.

*March 20.*

One of the common impositions of public penance for an equally common offence is recorded. The curate and churchwardens of St. Andrew's in Newcastle certify that the following order from the consistory court of Durham has been fulfilled :—"To the curate of St. Andrew's in Newcastle-upon-Tyne. Durham, March 1597. Penance enjoined unto your parishioner, Thomas Stott. He must stand on Sunday next in your parish church and so Sunday then next following, and there in the time of divine service shall publicly make confession of his sins as followeth: Whereas I, dear friends, forgetting my duty to almighty God, my Maker and Redeemer, and by the instigation of the devil, committed the detestable sin of fornication. Whereas I most justly have deserved God's heavy wrath and indignation against myself, except his mercy do surmount my deserving. But trusting he will be merciful unto me, and forgive me this and all other my offences, which here before you all I do confess, and am

most heartily sorry for the same, never intending to do the like offence again, I most humbly desire you all to join with me in that heavenly prayer which our Saviour Christ hath taught us, saying, Our Father, which art," etc.

*May 24.*

Among Sir Cuthbert Sharp's MSS. is a fragment relating to a cause between Isaac Barker and alderman George Farnaby, who, after the death of John March, became his guardian :—" Thomas Pearson of Newcastle, yeoman, aged thirty-two, sayeth :—That this examine's father, Thomas Pearson, deceased, was chief parish clerk of St. Nicholas', Newcastle, eighteen years or thereabouts, and died in or about August 1586 [buried 8th September], during the most part of which eighteen years his father of his knowledge did keep the register book of the said church, now exhibited unto this court, and did write into the same all christenings, burials, and marriages, which book this examine did keep eight or nine years more after his said father's death, and did write into the same all christenings, etc. In which said book is written by examine's father the day of the baptising of Isaac Barker in these words :—June 25, 1585, Isaac Barker, son of Mr. Robert Barker, alderman and merchant, baptised. Sureties—Robert Barker, alderman and merchant ; George Liddell, merchant ; and Mrs. Fortune Anderson, wife of Mr. Henry Anderson, alderman and merchant."

*June 22.*

Raids on the borders led to the appointment of a commission representing both kingdoms for the redress of grievances and the punishment of offenders. The commissioners found several persons on both sides guilty, and arranged that they should be delivered as pledges till satisfaction was made. Thirteen Scottish pledges were accordingly sent by Sir Robert Kerr, warden of the middle marches on the Scottish side, for conveyance to York. They were to be received at Alnwick by Mr. William Fenwick, who was to hand them over at Gateshead to the officers of the bishopric, and they, in turn, were to conduct them to Croft bridge, and commit them to the custody of the sheriff of Yorkshire. The delivery from the Northumberland authorities to those of Durham was effected "at the blue stone upon Tyne bridge."

*July 5.*

Commission to alderman Farnaby, William Bonner, and John Barker, merchants, and another, to examine witnesses in a cause between Richard Pitts, collector of customs in Newcastle, and Ralph

Downes, servant to Henry Sanderson, gentleman, searcher in the port, respecting a seizure of linen cloth at Shields. The witnesses were to testify what they knew about the alleged landing of two small trusses of Scotch linen in the previous August, and conveyance of the same to the house of Thomas Musgrave, merchant and mariner at North Shields, without payment of customs; whether Pitts and Downes went to Shields in a wherry, and entered together or separate into Musgrave's house and demanded the trusses; if Musgrave's wife refused to produce the linen till Pitts promised to hold her harmless; whether Downes went into the house before Pitts and made a seizure of the linen, setting the broad arrow head upon the same, using words to whose use he seized them, and what words he uttered; by whose orders the linen was carried to the wherry and who carried it thither; whether on the way to Newcastle any question or controversy arose between Pitts and Downes as to who should have the custody of the goods, and if not, at whose house the linen was left and delivered. The witnesses produced on behalf of Pitts were:—Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Musgrave, aged 50; William Potts, Gateshead, cordiner, 32; Thomas Docgett, yeoman, 30; William Wansworthe, 32; and Ralph Arthur, waterman, 35, all of Newcastle. Witnesses cited on behalf of Downes were:—Mrs. Musgrave and Ralph Arthur, above-named; Richard Bartlett, yeoman, servant to Ambrose Dudley, aged 36; Dudley Swann, yeoman, 27; and John Chaitor, merchant, 48, all of Newcastle.

Among the Exchequer decrees and orders at Michaelmas term is the subjoined entry concerning this controversy. (The suit dragged on for some time, with a renewed local inquiry and fresh evidence, but its ultimate fate is not traceable. Pitts died in May 1606.) “Whereas a commission hath been heretofore awarded in a matter in controversy touching a seizure of linen cloth, and which commission hath been returned into this court this present term; now forasmuch as the court was informed that the controversy for the moiety of the said seizures is between the said Pitts and Sanderson, and not between the said Pitts and Downes, as is pretended by the said commission, and the question is, whether the said Sanderson ought to have the moiety alone, or the moiety to be divided between Pitts and Sanderson. And for that also it is alleged that the said Sanderson sent to the said Pitts to know the time of the executing of the said commission, and that the said Pitts refused to send him word thereof, it is therefore ordered by the court that upon an affidavit to be made that the said Sanderson did so send, and that Pitts so refused, that a new commission at the charge of Sanderson shall be directed to the commissioners formerly named by the said Pitts, and to two others as



should be named by Sanderson, giving them authority to examine witnesses upon such interrogatories as either party should produce before them, returnable next Hilary term, and in the meantime no publication of the depositions returned this term. Provided nevertheless that if the said Pitts shall examine any more witnesses by virtue of this commission, then to bear half the charges of the same, and provided also that the said Pitts shall have fourteen days, warning of the day and place."

*October 6.*

"The return and certificate indented of us, George Farnaby, mayor of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and William Selby, esquire, commissioners of our sovereign lady Elizabeth, by the grace of God, etc., appointed by her highness' commission . . . dated the 13th of July, in the fortieth year of her most noble reign, for the first payment of a subsidy to her highness, granted by act of parliament, in the thirty-ninth year of her reign, to be levied upon all strangers born inhabiting within the . . . town of Newcastle, the names of which strangers, and the sum of their substance, and the money for the first payment aforesaid due to our said sovereign lady the queen, is as immediately followeth:—Masye Briggs, a Scot, assessed at nil; payeth by the poll—8d. (The rest are described in the same way, and each contributes 8d.) John Osbourne, Kathren Osbourne, Sanders Osbourne, Mathew George, Isabel George, James Browen, John Browne, Hector Cranforth, John Hodgshon, Thomas Pattyson, William Hopkirck, Robert Foresyde, William Carr, Cuthbert Browne, William Bullena. Sum total—10s. 8d. We, her majesty's commissioners aforesaid, have appointed Anthony Felton of London, gentleman, to be chief collector, and to make account for the same in her grace's honourable court of Exchequer at Westminster, according to such order as in the same act of parliament is limited. In testimony of the premises, we, her grace's commissioners aforesaid, to this certificate indented have put our names and seals, the 6th of October, in the fortieth year of the reign, etc. G. Farnaby, mayor, William Selby."

*October.*

One of the sources of the water supply to Newcastle at this period was a spring on the high ground north of Pandon, near the Sallyport. In the corporation books for the month of October is an entry of a pound of pepper, and a bag costing 5s. 4d., for Ralph Lawson, of Brough, being the "rent of the Wallknoll close, whereon the town's conduits stand." Gray's MS. emendations of the *Chorographia* contain

a paragraph about the excellence of the arrangements for bringing water to the town fifty years later:—"This town is sufficiently provided for all things that belongeth the life of man, both by sea and land, and the elements of fire and water; the latter out of an aqueduct into the town by pipes, which serves all quarters and streets of town abundantly. Every street hath his cistern or pant. The conduits are . . . by pipes of lead, which descend from a spring, called Conduit Head, not far without the walls."

*November 12.*

William Hodgson of Lanchester, son of James Hodgson of Newcastle, and brother of Richard Hodgson, bequeathed to his niece, Catherine Sotheran, and her husband William, of Newcastle, a French crown, and to each of their four children, 10s., and ordered an annuity of 12*l.* payable to Mary, wife of Thomas Dickam of Gateshead, to be paid out of his lease of the deanery of Lanchester. Testator was a devout adherent of the old religion, who had been engaged in the rebellion of the earls; "a perilous fellow" is bishop Mathew's description of him in a letter to lord Burghley written in May this year.

---

Robert Brandling, junior, complained in the Exchequer against John Selby for forcibly entering and ejecting him from his farm—viz., one messuage called "the warehouse" in Newcastle, in a street there called the Sandhill, demised to the plaintiff by one Robert Brandling for seven years.

---

Alderman Hornby's extracts from the municipal account books for this year relate chiefly to hospitality. Lord Willoughby came through the town, and the corporation saluted him with gunpowder, paying 10s. to Robert Heslop, armourer, and three others, for "their pains in shooting the guns off." They also sent his lordship a present of wine and sugar—namely, a gallon of sack, 3*s.* 4*d.*; three pottles of Rhenish wine, 6*s.*; three of white wine, 4*s.*; six pottles of claret, 8*s.*; two sugar loaves, at 2*s.* a lb., 2*l.* 1*s.* 2*d.*—total, 3*l.* 2*s.* 6*d.*

The plague, although prevalent in and about the town, did not prevent the judges coming on this occasion. The corporation paid "a man's charges, four days, for the providing of venison for the judges, 20*s.*; for horse hire, four days, 5*s.* 4*d.*—25*s.* 4*d.*; and Christopher Appelby, sergeant, for his own charges, seven days, and his horse meat, 10*s.* 8*d.*; for horse hire, seven days, 9*s.* 4*d.*; providing venison for the judges, commanded by Mr. Mayor to pay, 20*s.*"

They also paid "to John Carr [the postmaster], for the charges of two noblemen's sons travelling into Scotland from France—viz., paid for their supper on Saturday at night and the banquet after supper, 40s. Paid for wine and sugar from their coming to their going away, 42s.; for their men's diet in their chamber, 20s.; for the noblemen's breakfasts in the morning before their going, 10s.; for their horses' meat, 5s.; for washing and starching of their bands, shirts, and linen, . . . hose, 6s. 8d. Sum paid to John Carr for their charges one day and two nights is 5*l.* 18s. 8d."

Further expenditure was made in presents:—"For four gallons and three quarts of sack, 19s.; for Rhenish wine, 6s.; paid for seven pottles of claret wine, 16d. per pottle, 9s. 4d.; for two loaves of sugar weighing 18½ lb., 2s. per lb., 37s. Sum total paid for wine and sugar sent as a present to the two noblemen is 3*l.* 11s. 4d." Besides which there are payments for "a banquet to the two noblemen at Mr. Mayor's house, 36s. 10d."

Another item in the accounts is the payment of his quarterage to "Mr. Pearson, preacher of God's word"—*i.e.*, the Rev. William Pearson, afternoon lecturer at St. Nicholas'. On the 13th of May in the following year Mr. Pearson was married at St. John's church to Elizabeth, daughter of Vicar Holdsworth, deceased, and, as recorded in 1596, undertook the charge of educating Richard Holdsworth, the vicar's son.



HEAD OF MIDDLE STREET, NEWCASTLE, IN 1797.

1599.

41 and 42 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***George Farnaby, Mayor, and William Warmouth, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—William Jenison.**

Arms : As in 1596.

**Sheriff—James Clavering.**

Arms : Quarterly or and gules, a bend sable.



LAGUE lingered about the town and suburbs, and the corporation appear to have appointed an officer, known in after years as the town's physician, to attend upon the sick poor. In the municipal accounts for April occurs the item, "paid to Robert Smith, physician, for one quarter fee, due at Candlemas last, 5<sup>l</sup>." A surgeon was in receipt of a fee seven years earlier for similar services. On page 75 we find John Coulson, surgeon, obtaining, by grant of the mayor, 40s., "his accustomed fee for helping to cure the maimed poor folk." The foregoing is, however, the first recorded instance of a "physician" acting in an official character under the corporation of Newcastle.

*February 8.*

Henry Sanderson, of the customs, was the loser in a suit brought against him by Ralph Downes, Roger Lawes, and others, which commenced during the bitter controversies relating to the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham. The plaintiff was Thomas Carr, and in the autumn of 1597 a commission had been appointed, consisting of Thomas Chaytor, George Freville, and Gerard Salvin, esquires, and Robert Robson, gentleman, who were to sit at Durham, and interrogate witnesses on behalf of the plaintiff. In the Record Office is a list of thirty-eight interrogatories to be administered to each of the following persons, all of them living in Newcastle :—Richard Bartlet, gentleman, aged 38; Robert Chapman, merchant, 22; William Birnage, Frenchman, 32; George Johnson, merchant, 40; Gawen

Hindmers, chandler, 37; George Lyddell, merchant, 47. No account has been preserved of any interrogatories put on behalf of defendants. On the date placed at the head of this paragraph, the court of Exchequer ordered and decreed "that Henry Sanderson shall pay into her majesty's receipt of this exchequer, to her highness' use, 100 marks, for a fine of his misdemeanour and offences; also, that he shall take his corporal oath before the barons for the true exercising of his office hereafter, and shall also put in sufficient sureties for such, if he have not already done so."

*March 5.*

In the old book of the goldsmiths, plumbers, glaziers, pewterers, and painters of Newcastle, under this date, is an invoice of the apparel belonging to the mystery play of that company—"The Three Kings of Cologne," as follows:—"Bye beards to the kings, three, and for the messenger, one, with their head hairs. Three cups, three sceptres, and three crowns. One star and two crowns. Box with our ordinary and our play-book."

*June 4.*

Will of Hugh Hucheson, of Newcastle, yeoman. Desires to be buried in All Saints' churchyard, as near his son Henry as might be. Small bequests to his son Henry Hucheson's seven children—Hugh, Thomas, Mark, Bessie, Robert, Jerrard, and Henry; to Catherine Bilton, his daughter-in-law; Margaret Swalwell, and Francis Scott, fuller.

*September 8.*

Another stage, perhaps the final one, in the controversy about the grand lease of the manors of Gateshead and Whickham appears to have been reached on this date, when, according to Brand, quoting a record communicated to him by John Davidson, clerk of the peace for Northumberland, Henry Chapman, George Farnaby, William Hodgson, George Selby, Lionel Maddison, Ralph Jenison, and Nicholas Hedley assigned their right and title to these manors, to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle. Among these seven persons are one of the complainants, Lionel Maddison, and one of the defendants, Henry Chapman, whose names are appended to the twenty-two articles printed on pages 117-122. Queen Elizabeth's charter of the following year confirms the assignment, substituting the name of William Riddell for that of Ralph Jenison.

*November 24.*

A special commission issued this day for the suppression of schism, comprised the names of the mayor for the time being of Newcastle-

upon-Tyne, Henry Chapman and Henry Anderson, aldermen of Newcastle, William Morton, preacher in that town, and John Hutton, parson of Gateshead.

*December 6.*

George Briggs of Newcastle, fishmonger, desires in his will of this date to be buried in All Saints' church. Gives his wife, Mazie Briggs, his mansion near the Keyside, and all his tenements adjoining thereto, provided that when a year's rent shall be paid by his tenants one-half of it shall be distributed to every one of the same tenants, and the other half amongst his household servants, whom his wife thought might be in most necessitous circumstances, or their deserts might require. After the payment of his debts, the poor of the parish of All Saints', according to the discretion of his wife and one of the churchwardens of the said parish, to receive the sum of 20*l.* Residue to his wife. His effects were appraised at 353*l.* 5*s.* A person bearing his name was sheriff in 1570.

---

Gray, in the *Chorographia*, describing the Spital, or Virgin Mary hospital, adds:—"In which place is made of late a famous grammar school, writing school, and houses within the Spittle for the masters. Protos Archididascalos, or the first head-schoolmaster, was that reverend master, Robart Fowberry, a learned and painfull man to indoctrinate youth in Greek and Latin." Bourne, writing on the same subject, names "1559" as the date of the removal of the school from St. Nicholas' churchyard to the Spital. Before then, he tells us, it was held in "that house which is on the north side of the church, over that place where the privy now is, where it had been from the time of its institution." And he proceeds to suggest that at this time the town of Newcastle commenced to make the master of the grammar school master of the Virgin Mary hospital. Then quoting Gray as above, that the first master was Robert Fowberry, he continues:—"To be sure he was the first master after the removing of the school to the West Spittle; for, undoubtedly, there were masters before that, as the school was so much earlier founded. And accordingly [in the Milbank MS.], 'tis said that when Mr. Burras gave over the free school in St. Nicholas' churchyard, the mayor and twenty-four more sent for Mr. Fowberry to Hull, and he came and first taught in the writing school, until the chapel of St. Mary's hospital was made into a school-house." Bourne's "1559" probably means 1599. Francis Burrows was head-master at this latter period, as we have seen on page 120, and the pew-books of St. Nicholas' contain a memorandum about letting a stall to him in 1598.

1600.

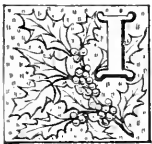
42 and 43 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***William Jenison, Mayor, and James Clavering, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—George Selby.**

Arms : As in 1594, with a crescent sable in chief.

**Sheriff—Robert Anderson.**

Arms : Vert, three stags couchant attired or.

*January 11.*

INQUISITION taken in Newcastle before Dean James, Dr. Colmore, William Jenison, the mayor, George Farnaby, Henry Chapman, Henry Anderson, and George Lightfoot, touching certain charitable bequests to the poor of All Saints' parish. Evidence was given by Robert Brandling, Robert Ellison, and John Selby, merchants; Lancelot Hall, yeoman; John Clibborne, scrivener; Henry Anthony, notary; John Colson and Thomas Handley, barber-surgeons; Edward Barde and William Michelson, masters and mariners; Cuthbert Wympreye, baker; Michael Hutton, cooper; Thomas Gilbert, chapman; Alexander Liderdaile, butcher; Lancelot Bowmer, plumber; and Edward Howbourne, smith. It was found that one Thomas Smith of Newcastle, shipwright, by his will, dated 22nd December 1585, left to Isabel his wife, and the poor of All Saints', in equal shares during the life of his wife, and after her death to the poor entirely, certain rents from property—viz., 23s. 4d. from four tenements in Allhallowgate, occupied by Anthony Simpson, goldsmith; Christopher Nicholson and John Smith, cordwainers; and George Nicholson, cutler; 20s. from a tenement on the Quayside, held by John Poole, butcher; and rents from houses in Sandgate occupied as follows :—Thomas Nicholson, master and mariner, 16s.; John Dickson, miller, 3s. 4d.; Richard Curry, shipwright, 10s.; Richard Beadham, mariner, 6s. 6d.; Hugh Wallace, 10s.; James

Wallace, 4s.; and Richard Harrison, mariner, 6s. 8d. Testator died about the 25th February 1586, and his widow about the 16th September 1589; the rents were distributed according to the will till four years before the inquiry, when William Swaddell, glover, and his wife Ellinor, cousin, and next heir to testator, detained them, the arrears amounting to 19*l.* 15*s.* 4*d.* It was also found that alderman William Dent, and William his son, by deed dated 19th November 1579, gave to Thomas Smith, Christopher Ellins, Thomas Crome, and Cuthbert Wympreye, churchwardens of All Saints', for the use of the poor, four burgages and a little garden in Pilgrim Street, occupied by widows Esplee, Boide, Barker, and Brigham; since which time the churchwardens had received the profits, etc., "till of very late some bate is made of the assurance and continuance thereof." After hearing this evidence the commissioners gave the churchwardens, John Watson, William Smith, George Dawson, and John More, an order that Swaddell and his wife, and William Dent and his son should, when required by the churchwardens, make due estate and assurance in law to the poor of All Saints' of the rents bequeathed by Thomas Smith, and the four burgages and garden situate in Pilgrim Street.

*February 11.*

Commission to Lionel Maddison, Robert Dudley, Thomas Riddell, esquires, and Thomas Surtees, gentleman, to examine witnesses in a cause between the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, plaintiffs, and John Moore, Oswald Chaytor, Matthew Ellison, and another. The sittings were to be held in St. Nicholas' church, and the evidence to be sent to the Exchequer by Easter. Witnesses named on behalf of the mayor and burgesses were George Dent, merchant, clerk of the town chamber of Newcastle, aged 64; Thomas Liddell, merchant and alderman, 50; Francis Burrell, merchant, 38; Richard Sipann, 41; and Leonard Carr, 21, servant to George Dent, clerk of the town chamber of Newcastle. Result of the inquiry unknown; but the fragment is interesting from the names and ages of the witnesses who were to be examined.

*March 22.*

Queen Elizabeth granted to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle a new charter, which confirmed previous grants, fixed anew the number of the governing body and the manner of electing it, re-established local courts, with liberties of toll and taxation, reconstituted the grammar school, and incorporated the fraternity of hostmen. The document is known as the "Great Charter of Elizabeth," and the obtaining of it cost the town 63*l.* 10*s.* Brand (ii.-605) publishes the



Latin text of the charter ; translations of it appear in Collier's *Essay on Charters*, Brown's *Customs and Franchises of the Freemen of Newcastle*, and summaries of the contents are in Ralph Gardiner's *England's Grievance*, the *Newcastle Freeman's Pocket Companion*, and Mackenzie's *History of Newcastle*.

Stripped of abundant verbiage, the document enacts that, Whereas the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne is an ancient town and county of itself, and the mayor and burgesses have enjoyed divers rights, jurisdictions, as well by prescription as by means of divers charters, grants, and confirmations, and have suffered greatly upon account of divers differences, strifes, and contentions, which have arisen by reason of the defects of some of the charters, therefore the queen grants to them and their successors, that they only shall have all the customs, liberties, immunities, etc., which were granted to their predecessors, rendering the ancient fee farm of 100*l.*, at Michaelmas. The mayor, ten aldermen, the sheriff, and twenty-four of the more discreet and honest burgesses in the town (which twenty-four shall be elected yearly, in the accustomed place, by the twenty-four electors of the mayor and other officers within five days after the election and oath taken by the mayor), in all thirty-six, shall be the common council of the town ; the major part of whom (whereof the mayor and six aldermen to be seven) or the mayor and the greater part of the burgesses (whereof the mayor to be one), shall have power in the name of the body corporate, to make laws, etc., for the good government of the town, and as often as they shall make such laws, may ordain such punishments, penalties, and imprisonments of delinquents, contrary to such laws as may be necessary for keeping the said laws, and levy and retain fines for the use of the town, so that the same laws be not repugnant to the laws of England.

Every Michaelmas Monday two of each of the twelve companies shall select the then mayor, and three that have been aldermen, which four shall select seven other aldermen and the then sheriff, in all twelve, which twelve shall choose other twelve resident burgesses, and these twenty-four shall be the electors for one year, and shall elect for one year a mayor, sheriff, two coroners, a clerk of the chamber to administer oaths to mariners, eight chamberlains, a sword-bearer, eight sergeants-at-mace, and a recorder. If an elector die or be displaced during his term of office, the survivors shall elect another burgess to fill his place ; if the elector so dying, etc., be an alderman, they shall appoint another burgess to be alderman for life. All officers of the town ineligible by any election made by the electors, but admitted by grant of the mayor and burgesses, under their common seal, shall be appointed in the same manner as heretofore. A mayor

or alderman elected and refusing to serve, may be fined not exceeding 200 marks, and in default be committed to the town prison till the fine be paid. If the sheriff refuse to serve, he may be fined not exceeding 100 marks, and in default suffer a like imprisonment. If the mayor, sheriff, or any of the common council, or any officer or minister of the town (the recorder excepted) die, or is displaced, the electors shall appoint a burgess to succeed him for the remainder of his term of office. If the recorder die, another fit person, although not a burgess, may be elected for the remainder of the year. Where the suffrages are equal the mayor shall have a casting vote. The successor to the mayor or sheriff dying or being displaced shall be, in the mayoralty, the senior alderman, in the shrievalty, the senior burgess who has served the office of sheriff.

William Jenison, the elder, shall be the first mayor under the charter, and hold office until Michaelmas, and after that date to be an alderman during good behaviour. John Saville, one of the barons of the Exchequer, shall be recorder. William Selby, Henry Anderson, William Riddell, Henry Chapman, George Farnaby, Lionel Maddison, Thomas Liddell, Robert Dudley, George Selby, and Francis Anderson shall be aldermen during good behaviour. James Clavering to be sheriff till Michaelmas. The common council shall consist of the above-named (except the recorder), and George Brigg, Adrian Hedworth, William Huntley, William Warmouth, John Watson, Lionel Greenwell, George Clarkson, Henry Fallowfield, Thomas Swan, Peter Forster, Richard Kirkhouse, Alexander Litherdale, George Lambert, Christopher Prierman, Thomas Dagg, William Pacock, Richard Rowmayne, Thomas Shevill, Robert Todd, James Bilton, Thomas Bates, John Rand, Robert Kell, and George Lilburn. Matthew Chapman and Rowland Tempest shall be coroners. George Dent shall be clerk of the chamber. Francis Burrell, Robert Ellison, Henry Maddison, William Heley, Cuthbert Wymprey, George Hodgson, Thomas Davison, and John Slater shall be chamberlains. George Still shall be sword-bearer. George Selby, Gawen Hindmers, Bartram Goften, Roger Young, Thomas Raw, Thomas Gray, William Bellingham, and Hugh Mason shall be sergeants-at-mace.

The mayor and burgesses may have a Court of Record, in the Guildhall, before the mayor, every Monday throughout the year, except on certain feast days, as accustomed. Also another court before the sheriff, every Wednesday and Friday, except on the feast days named. And in these courts shall have pleas of debts, covenants, trespasses, etc., and pleas of court of piepowder, etc., and in all suits may attach the defendants in their lands and goods, and commit them to their prison, called Newgate.

The mayor, ten aldermen, and recorder shall be keepers of the peace within the town, with power to chastise and punish malefactors.

They, or any three of them, the mayor to be one, shall be justices to inquire upon oath concerning all murders, felonies, forestallings, regratings, etc., so that the guardians of the peace in Northumberland and Durham need not have jurisdiction there.

They may also impose fines, penalties, taxes, customs, etc., to be kept in their common chamber, and expended for the public use, and may use all the means they can to levy and gather the same.

The mayor, recorder, and aldermen, or five or more of them, the mayor to be one, shall be justices for gaol-deliveries, and the coroners of the town shall deliver all juries, inquisitions, etc., and make return of them to, and execute the precepts of, the mayor, etc., in such manner as any sheriff of England was accustomed to do. The mayor, recorder, and aldermen may erect a gallows within the liberties of the town, to hang felons, murderers, etc., and may take and arrest what felons, thieves, and malefactors soever are found within the town and port, and bring them to prison there.

William Riddell, Henry Chapman, George Farnaby, Lionel Maddison, George Selby, William Hodgson, and Nicholas Hedley, and other subjects assigned to hold the farms of the manors and lordships of Gateshead and Whickham, may grant and assign the same to the mayor and burgesses, etc., for the residue of the years then to come.

The mayor and burgesses, etc., are released from all manner of penalties and sums of money forfeited to the crown by virtue of the Act (9, Henry V.) for the admeasurement of keels, the Act (21, Henry VIII.), concerning the port and harbour of Newcastle, and the Act (1 Elizabeth) concerning the discharge of merchandise. The mayor and burgesses and the hostmen may, at accustomed hours, and upon payment of customs and subsidies, ship or unship pit coals, grindstones, rubstones, and whetstones, at and near Newcastle, etc., unless such ship, vessel, etc., be of such capacity, or for any other reasonable cause, that it cannot conveniently arrive at Newcastle, and then the mayor, burgesses, and hostmen may load and unload such ship with coals and stones in any place between Sparhawk and Newcastle, being distant, by estimation, not above seven miles. Ships of such capacity that they cannot fitly sail to the town of Newcastle may be charged and discharged of coals and stones so nigh Newcastle as conveniently can be done without fraud, deceit, or oppression, and this under pain of 100s. to be forfeited to the crown for every ship. And that the mayor and burgesses, etc., may serve the crown with more commendable service, and furnish mariners more cheerfully for naval warfare, as they have

done in times past, and forasmuch as the town of Newcastle hath been the bulwark of the neighbouring parts, fighting against rebels in times past, and the inhabitants have behaved themselves dutifully in resisting and opposing such rebels, the mayor and burgesses, etc., shall have all goods and chattels of felons, fugitives convicted and attainted, goods and chattels outlawed, and of those who stand mute, etc., within the town of Newcastle and its liberties.

And whereas the town of Newcastle is a mart or market of great note, and filled with a multitude of merchants dwelling there, and others, as well natives as others resorting there, and exercising their trade, and it is necessary to establish a certain order within the town for securing and recovering debts, etc., according to the statute of Acton Burnell, the mayor, and a clerk appointed for the purpose, shall take recognisances according to that statute, and the statute 1 Edward I., concerning merchandise, and such clerk shall be called the clerk of the crown, to take, make, and enrol recognisances of debts according to those statutes. William Jackson, gentleman, shall be the first clerk for that purpose, and shall hold office for life, and after his death his successor shall be appointed by the mayor and burgesses, etc., during pleasure.

There shall be a seal of two pieces for sealing the said recognisances; the mayor to have the custody of the greater, and the clerk to have custody of the lesser piece; so that if merchants or any other shall make their debtors come before the mayor and clerk of recognisances, and before them acknowledge the debt and day of payment, then the recognisance enrolled by the clerk may be good and valid in law. The mayor and clerk are to have such emoluments as any other mayor and clerk of recognisances in England lawfully receiveth.

The mayor and burgesses and the inhabitants shall be quit and discharged of tolls, passage, poundage, murage, chimnage, pannage, lastage, stallage, carriage, picage, tronage, hidage, and wharfage, for their goods and merchandises, as well by land as sea, in fairs as in markets, and all secular customs, over the queen's lands, on this side and beyond the seas, etc.

The mayor, burgesses, etc., shall have for their public use all such tolls, and other customs, profits, and advantages, in fairs and markets, holden within the town, by themselves or their officers to be levied, gathered, and expended to and for the use of the said mayor and burgesses, as they or any of their predecessors rightfully had aforetime, and no man to distrust them or their officers therein.

No merchant, stranger from the liberty of the town, may sell any merchandises within the town (except victuals), and except in markets and fairs, to be holden within the town and limits thereof, to any

merchant stranger, nor such merchant stranger may buy any merchandises (except as before excepted) of any merchant stranger within the same town and liberty thereof, other than in gross, upon pain and forfeiture of their merchandises, for the benefit of the town.

The mayor and burgesses, etc., may have, hold, and exercise all such liberties, customs, franchises, privileges, etc., and all other the premises, etc., and may fully, freely, peaceably, and quietly use and enjoy the same without hindrance, molestation, etc. They are also pardoned and released from all manner of actions, suits, and impeachments by writ *de quo warranto* to be brought or executed against them by reason of any franchise, privilege, immunity, or jurisdiction that, within the town, the mayor and burgesses and their predecessors have heretofore had, used, or usurped.

All persons henceforth appointed and admitted to be burgesses of the town, shall be admitted and appointed by the mayor and burgesses, or the major part of them, whereof the mayor to be one; or by the mayor and common council, or the major part of them, whereof the mayor and six aldermen to be seven.

Moreover, the queen, often revolving in her mind of what great interest it may be to the English commonwealth, over which the great and good God presides, to have youth well educated and instructed from their tender years in the rudiments, doctrines, and good morals of the true Christian religion, grants that there shall be erected within the town a free grammar school, to be a body corporate by the name of "The Master and Scholars of the Free Grammar School of Queen Elizabeth in Newcastle-upon-Tyne," with perpetual succession, capable of purchasing lands, tenements, etc., in fee-simple, or for terms of years, not exceeding a yearly value of 40*l.*, and not holden of the queen in chief, nor by knights' service, etc., with power to grant, demise, etc., lands, tenements, etc., to plead and be impleaded, etc., in all courts, etc., as other liege subjects. Also to have a common seal, which they may break and change at pleasure. The mayor and burgesses, etc., to appoint an honest, learned, and discreet man to be master, and another person, of a like description, to be usher in the school during pleasure. And if the master and usher die, or leave, they may choose other persons of like qualifications in their place.

And whereas the town is an ancient town, and the mayor and burgesses, time out of mind of man, have had a certain guild or fraternity, commonly called the hostmen, for the loading and better disposing of sea-coals and pit-coals, grindstones, rubstones, and whetstones, in and upon the river and port of Tyne, which guild or fraternity is not granted or established by letters patent; whereupon

the mayor and burgesses have humbly supplicated the queen, that, in supply of the said defects, she would vouchsafe to create the said guild into a body corporate and politic, etc. The queen therefore ordains, appoints, and grants that William Jenison the elder, William Selby, Henry Anderson, William Riddell, Henry Chapman, George Farnaby, Lionel Maddison, Thomas Liddell, Robert Dudley, George Selby, Francis Anderson, George Briggs, Adrian Hedworth, William Huntley, Nicholas Tempest, William Hodgson, George Dent, Robert Anderson, Francis Liddell, Edward Bartram, Christopher Elmer, John Watson, John Barker, Rowland Tempest, Anthony Morpeth, Nicholas Ponder, Robert Shafto, Christopher Mitford, Matthew Chapman, Henry Maddison, Robert Dent, William Simpson, Bertram Anderson the elder, Isaac Anderson, Robert Gibson, Thomas Bowmer, Percival Ayre, Edward Hall, John Greenwell, Thomas Hall, William Jenison the younger, Henry Lawe, Edward Crome, Timothy Draper, William Bonner, John Rand, John Stranwich, and William Jackson, being brethren of the fraternity, and all others hereafter admitted into the fraternity, shall be a body corporate, etc., with continual succession, capable of possessing lands, etc., and to assign the same, to plead and be impleaded, etc., in all courts, etc., like other liege subjects of the realm, with a common seal, and power to break and alter it at their pleasure. The fraternity shall choose yearly of their number, on the 4th January, a governor and two stewards for one year. William Jenison the elder shall be the first governor, and Francis Anderson and John Barker the first stewards. The governor, stewards, and brethren shall have full power of meeting in their guild-hall, or any convenient place in the town, and to make, ordain, and establish such laws, ordinances, etc., as shall seem to them to be good, salutary, useful, honest, and necessary for the good rule and government of the fraternity, and for manifesting by what means and order the brotherhood, their servants and apprentices, shall behave, demean, and carry themselves in their offices and affairs. And as often as they shall make such laws, etc., they may also impose such penalties, etc., upon delinquents as shall seem necessary, and the said penalties they may retain for the use of the fraternity.

Further, they may have power, at their pleasure, to choose other inhabitants and burgesses to be brethren of the fraternity; an oath being first taken by every person so chosen, for preserving the ordinances and statutes. They shall have and enjoy all such liberties, privileges, etc., concerning the loading and unloading of stone, coals, pit coals, grindstones, rubstones, whetstones, and the loading and unloading of any ships, keels, or vessels, pit-coals and stones, within the river and harbour of Tyne, between Newcastle and the Sparhawk,

as the fraternity have at any time used and accustomed ; notwithstanding the statute 21, Henry VIII., entitled "An Act concerning Newcastle," or any other act, ordinance, proclamation, or restriction to the contrary.

Brand notes the first occurrence of the word "fit" in connection with the vending of coals, *e.g.*, "none shall 'fitt' any keel or keels of any other brother without the consent of the owner thereof"—a clause which occurs in an order of the fraternity, dated 20th January 1600-1.

*April 8.*

The story of the incorporation of the hostmen's company by clauses in the great charter, is thus told by Ralph Gardiner :—"Queen Elizabeth requires the great arrear of 2d. per chaldron, which was granted to king Henry V. as custom by the parliament, as appears by that statute, chapter the tenth, ninth year, which was neglected to be paid unto the crown by the mayor and burgesses for many years together, insomuch as they were not able to pay the same, but humbly beseeched those arrears may be forgiven, by reason of their inability ; and to grant them a charter to incorporate a new fraternity, or brotherhood, to be called free hostmen, for the selling and vending of all coals to shipping ; and in consideration thereof they would pay to her majesty, and her successors, 12d. for every chalder exported from thenceforth to the free people of this nation. The queen conceiving that 12d. upon every chalder would be better for the future, and well paid, would rise to a greater revenue than the 2d. so long in arrear could endamage, which was granted, upon condition specified in that grant, remaining in the exchequer, with many seals to it ; that they should sell all coals to masters of ships." Gardner's statement is corroborated to some extent by the fact that on the 3rd January, before the charter was sealed, the queen appoints as commissioners for measuring keels in accordance with the act of 9 Henry V., the mayor of Newcastle, the collectors of custom and subsidy ; the farmer of the imposition of 5s. per chaldron on coals exported beyond the seas ; "the collector of the shilling per chaldron granted to her by the hostmen ;" eight merchants, four masters and mariners, and five yeomen, in all twenty five persons. The hostmen themselves attribute their grant of 12d. a chaldron to more honourable motives, as appears in the subjoined copy of the grant itself :—

"To all Christian people to whom this present writing shall come, the governor and stewards and brethren of the fellowship of the hostmen of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, in the county of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, send greeting in our Lord God everlasting. Whereas it hath always pleased the queen's most

excellent majesty, of her gracious and princely inclination, from time to time most graciously to affect and tender the good estate of the said town of Newcastle, and the inhabitants thereof; and of late of her further grace, for the general profit and commodity of the same town, by her highness' letters patent, bearing date at Westminster, the two-and-twentieth day of March, in this present two-and-fortieth year of her majesty's reign, it hath pleased her highness graciously to confirm and grant as well unto us, the said governor and stewards and brethren of the fellowship of the hostmen of Newcastle aforesaid, and our successors, as also to the mayor and burgesses of the same town and their successors, divers and sundry immunities and privileges, with confirmation of the ancient liberties of the said town, and with dispensation of sundry statutes, and release of the forfeitures specified in the said statutes, principally for and concerning the loading and unloading of sea coal and stone within the river of Tyne, as in and by the said letters patent more fully it doth and may appear. Now know ye, therefore, that we, the said governor and stewards and brethren of the fellowship of the hostmen aforesaid, with the consent, good liking, and approbation of the mayor and burgesses of the same town for the time being, in regard of these gracious and most princely favours and benignities, being desirous to our uttermost powers to show ourselves thankful for the same, and not being ignorant of the great, unsupportable, and excessive charge which her highness hath of late sustained, and likely to be at, in and for the defence of this realm, and her highness' poor subjects, against the malice and force of the enemies of this realm, have given and granted, and by these presents for us and our successors do in all humility give and grant unto her most excellent majesty, her heirs and successors, to the use of her majesty, her heirs and successors for ever, for each and every, and for such and so many chaldron and chaldrons of sea coal, stone coal, or pit coal, of the water measure of Newcastle-upon-Tyne aforesaid, as at any time or times hereafter shall be sold, shipped, carried, or vented by any person or persons whatsoever, forth or out of the haven or river of Tyne, belonging to the foresaid town of Newcastle, to be spent within this realm, and not transported beyond the seas, the several sum of 12d. of lawful money of England, to be paid by us and our successors unto our said sovereign lady, her heirs and successors, before any ship or other vessel, wherein any such coals shall be laden, shall at any time or times hereafter be cleared or discharged forth of her majesty's custom house in the said town of Newcastle. Coals sold and carried from the said port of Newcastle to Hartlepool to be employed and spent in and about such salt pans as now be within Hartlepool aforesaid, and appertaining to the



right honourable the lord Lumley, his heirs or assigns, or any of the burgesses of the said town of Newcastle only excepted. And further, we, the said governor and stewards and brethren of the fellowship of the hostmen aforesaid, do, by these presents, for us and our successors, covenant, promise, and grant, to and with our said sovereign lady the queen's majesty, her heirs and successors from time to time, well and truly to yield and pay unto our said sovereign lady the queen's majesty, her heirs and successors, or to such of the officers, farmers, or assigns of our said sovereign lady, her heirs and successors, as by the grant, commandment, or direction of her highness, her heirs and successors, shall from time to time be authorised or appointed to take, collect, or receive the same, the said sum of 12d. of lawful English money, for each and every, and for such and so many, chaldron and chaldrons of the said sea coals, stone coals, and pit coals, as at any time or times hereafter shall be sold, shipped, carried, or vented forth as is aforesaid, to be spent within this realm of England, and not transported beyond the seas (except only as before in these presents is excepted), without any concealment, diminution, or other indirect means or practice whatsoever."

*July 8.*

John Rand, one of the hostmen named in the Great Charter, lived across the water, and on this date the fraternity commanded him to return to Newcastle:—"John Rand, a brother, ordered to leave Gateshead and live in Newcastle, or forfeit 10*l.*;" then follows in brackets, "which order he hath broken."

*October.*

The corporation continued their occasional gifts to bands of itinerant performers, who entertained the townspeople in the merchants' court upon the Sandhill. During this month the town was treated to the comedy of Terence "before master mayor and his brethren," and while the comedy was proceeding thieves were busy in the ante-room of the court with a bit of real life. They carried off a blue coat belonging to one of the attendant sergeants-at-mace, a cap, a pair of embroidered hangers, and a pair of double silk slippers, part of the outfit of the comedians, which the mayor had to replace at a cost of 36*s.* 4*d.*

*December 13.*

Alderman Henry Anderson obtained from the corporation of Newcastle a lease for twenty-one years of St. Lawrence, with the ballast shores east and west of the Ouseburn, etc.

---

A dispute about tithes—Elizabeth Dalton, widow, against Peter Delaval—heard before the court at Durham this year, provides some interesting facts respecting the town of Elswick. Cuthbert Carr of Benwell, gentleman, aged 60 years, witness for the plaintiff, deposed that for fifty-seven years he had lived in St. Nicholas, St. John's, and St. Andrew's parishes in Newcastle, and during all that time had known the town of Elswick and the lands, etc., belonging to it. Knew that the said town, lands, etc., were holden of king Edward VI., and queen Mary, and now by her majesty, by copy of court roll according to the manor of Tynemouth. And that the said town is in all ancient records he hath seen called by the names of Elstwick and Elsewick and Elswick, as appears by two copies of court roll, bearing date the 16th January, 22 Henry VIII. and 19th January, 22 Henry VIII. Knows a town in Northumberland, five or six miles from Elswick, called by the name of Achewick, nigh to the towns of Dalton, North and South Dissington, commonly called by the name of four towns. William Errington of Benwell, yeoman, aged 56, stated that he had known Elswick for fifty years, and never knew it called by any other name, and not Eastwick or Achewick. Had seen sundry accounts and old records well kept in her majesty's courts of augmentation, in which it appears that the said town hath been anciently called Astwick, sometimes Elstwick or Alstwick, and usually Elswick, and hath heard divers old men who knew it by that name, and that the corn and grain within the territories of Elswick, by the space of many years before the dissolution of the monastery of Tynemouth, as also ever since, had been counted part of the monastery of Tynemouth, as did Henry Anderson, to whom parts of the land were demised for twenty-one years, both to him and his father and also other tenants by grants from her majesty. Ralph Delaval of Tynemouth, gentleman, aged 46, witness for Peter Delaval, proved that the tithe corn and grain of Elswick, otherwise called sometimes Elstwick, belonged to the late dissolved monastery of Tynemouth. He had had in his keeping the letters patent granted under the great seal of England to John Carvil, gentleman, of the tithe corn, and had seen the assignment by John Carvil to Peter Delaval.

---

Among local cases presented at the archidiaconal visitations this year are the following:—19 *June*.—James Henderson and Ann Friende of Gateshead, “for that they come not to the church, neither received the holy communion at Easter last, and they stand

excommunicate." Also John Helcote, Richard Whilie, Gawin Bell, Lawrence Thomson, Thomas Lynesley, and Thomas Storie, "drinking in time of divine service, and they stand excommunicate." *2nd October.*—James Harrison and Thomas Andrewe, "for that they profane the Lord's Sabbath, and give evil example by grinding and carrying corn to and from the mill on the Sabbath days usually." These also were excommunicated and ordered by the court to pay 12d. each to the poor of Gateshead, and not again to offend. Sabbath-breaking appears to have been somewhat prevalent among the Gateshead millers, for at the same court one Ralph Waister was cited for the like offence. On promising to discontinue the practice he was discharged.



THE FLESH MARKET, NEWCASTLE, IN 1772.



## SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

~~~~~  
*FIRST DECADE—1601-1610.*  
 ~~~~~

1601.

43 and 44 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**George Selby, Mayor, and Robert Anderson, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Francis Anderson.**

Arms : Gules, three oak trees argent (?) acorned or.

**Sheriff—Thomas Riddell.**

Arms : Gules, a lion rampant within a bordure indented argent.



PARLIAMENT met at Westminster in October, and was dissolved in December. Newcastle was represented by

**William Jenison and George Selby, Aldermen.**

In this session was passed the celebrated act for the relief, ordering, and employment of the poor.

*February 3.*

At a court of the hostmen's company of Newcastle, a comprehensive order, based upon the charter obtained the previous year, was

issued. One of the regulations comprised in it prohibits the brethren from going or sending to the "sheels," or ballast shores, or within any part of the Tyne or without the walls of Newcastle, to talk or speak with the owner, master, or purser of any ship, hoy, or other vessel, to learn whose host he is, "thereby to procure him to be his host, or to withdraw him from his old host by any kind of means." Maunds, or panniers holding two or three pecks a-piece, are mentioned, and a note is made of the tendency, common then and since, to diminish the bulk of recognised weights and measures. Time out of mind it had been usual that "all coal wains did usually carry and bring eight bolls of coal to all the staiths upon the river of Tyne," but of late several had brought only, or scarce, seven bolls. The fraternity, therefore, ordered that all wains should be measured and marked, and appointed four persons to measure, gauge, and mark them.

Commenting upon this order of the hostmen, the late Tom John Taylor, in a paper read at a meeting in Newcastle of the Archaeological Institute [August 1852], describes the various denominations of measure and weight for the sale of coals which have been used in the Newcastle coal-field :—"The original chaldron was 2000 lbs. weight. Seven and a half bolls of coal are equal to very nearly 2000 lbs. weight per modern custom house admeasurement. And we thus perceive how the keels were said, so early as 1421, to carry twenty-two or twenty-three chaldrons ; twenty-three chaldrons of 2000 lbs. weight each being equal to nearly eight modern Newcastle chaldrons of fifty-three cwts. each. If from the London chaldron a right proportion is deducted for heaped measure we shall have left almost exactly 2000 lbs. weight, as above. The coal boll has been raised upon a measure equal, probably, to that of corn ; it was as much as a man could conveniently carry ; for in weights and in measures of capacity we can trace the same kind of reference to some standard constituting an animal effort, as we do in the lineal dimensions of feet, hands, etc. When 'barrows' were brought into use the quantity conveyed increased, and along with it the boll also increased. In some old grants this measure is specified as the 'bowle or barrowe.' By statute 30 Car. II., c. 8, the boll tub of Newcastle is declared to contain 22 gallons and a pottle ( $22\frac{1}{2}$  gallons) Winchester measure ; it was 27 inches in diameter, and there were 21 bolls heaped measure to each chaldron. By the same Act the contents of each wain is to be seven bolls, and each cart three bolls and one bushel heaped measure, and three wains or six carts to be a chaldron. The keel load long continued to be the principal standard of measure . . . It is manifest that the keel and the ten were at this period synonymous, and that the keel carried ten of those chaldrons, the size of which is afterwards

particularly specified in the Act of 30 Car. II., which constituted the then Newcastle chaldron. It is also clear that the keel-load consists of ten score of the bolls of that period, twenty-one to a score. And we are thus enabled to trace the origin of that singular denomination of quantity and weight, the modern *ten*, which continues to be generally used in calculating the rents of coal mines in the North of England. After the introduction of railways in the middle of the seventeenth century, the *ten* is referred sometimes to the fother or waine, and sometimes to the waggon. . . . The present ten appears to have become fixed towards the middle of the last century. In 1755, in an estimate to work the Brunton colliery in the Whorlton seam, by John Watson, the ten is stated as '22 waggons of 20 bolls each,' being 440 bolls. In 1756, in an estimate to work Hartley colliery, the ten is made to consist of '10 score of 18-peck corves,' which is equal to 450 bolls. The enlarged capacity of the ten is capable of explanation on the ground that as mining facilities increased, the 'bowle, or barrowe,' was replaced by vessels of larger content; the 16-peck corf, for example, was generally employed in drawing coals during the last century, and as the 16-peck corf contains 2 bolls, 10 score of those corves are equal to 420 bolls, which is still a common size of the ten."

*September 21.*

Baptised at St. Nicholas' church, "William Gray, sonne of Cuthbert Gray, merchant. Sureties—Mr. William Huntley, merchant and alderman; William Gray, draper; and the wife of Robert Ellison, merchant, or in her place Margaret Gray, widow, being grandmother." Such is the entry of the baptism of the first historian of Newcastle—the author of the *Chorographia*. Cuthbert Gray, the father, was a son of John and Margaret Gray—the said John being probably the "John Gray, draper," whose name occurs so frequently in testamentary documents of the time, and whose interment took place in St. Nicholas' on the 17th January 1596. Cuthbert married, 9th December 1600, Elizabeth, daughter of William Huntley, sheriff of Newcastle in 1597, and William Gray was their first-born.

*December 12.*

At a visitation held this day in Newcastle, William Atlanson and the churchwardens of St. John's were presented, "for that Atlanson doth not wear his surplice because the same is rent, and the commandments are often left unread and the litany on the Sabbath days." Michael Baite was presented for teaching a school without license. John Selby, John Clibborne, and others, churchwardens of All Saints', were presented, "for that they have not made their account, and the

chancel is not repaired." The wife of Michael Salkeld was presented for "not receiving the holy communion these four years last," and was pronounced contumacious, but at a visitation on the 11th March following it is recorded that she had received the sacrament.

## 1602.

44 and 45 ELIZABETH.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Francis Anderson, Mayor, and Thomas Riddell, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Robert Dudley.**

Arms : As in 1586, without the crescent.

**Sheriff—Francis Burrell.**

Arms : Argent, a saltire gules, between four leaves vert ; on a chief azure, a lion's head erased between two battle-axes erect or.



R. THOMAS RIDDELL, the sheriff, was admitted a member of the hostmen's company on the 4th January, paying 10*l.*, and on the 29th March Peter Riddell, son of alderman William Riddell, deceased, was admitted, paying 33*s.* 4*d.*

*January 17.*

Buried at St. Andrew's, Thomas Maslet, curate of that church. For twenty years he had performed clerical duty upon Tyneside—first as one of the curates of St. Hilda's, South Shields, in which capacity he appeared (without license) at a chancellor's visitation in 1578. The following year he was presented for not paying some dues, apparently to the bishop, and opposite his name in the record of the court is the significant remark—*nil habet*. A few months later he came to St. Andrew's, and for a short time had the curacies of North and South Gosforth. In 1582 his name appears among those of the curates at St. John's.

*February 24.*

George Farnaby, sheriff in 1588, and mayor in 1591 and 1598, merchant adventurer and alderman, buried at St. Nicholas' church. By his will, dated the previous October, he bequeathed 40s. to the poor at the hour of his death, and yearly for seven years; the like to the poor of Cunsley [Coniscliffe]; to Mr. Rookesby the elder of Marske; Mr. Morton, vicar of Newcastle; and alderman Henry Chapman, each 10s. for tokens; to John Butler, Newcastle, merchant, 20*l.* in full of all claims; to John, son of the above, 10*l.*, and to Elizabeth, the daughter of John, 5*l.*; to Robert Beckwith, merchant, of Newcastle, and Margaret, his wife, 50*l.*; to Elizabeth Cowling, of Richmondshire, 10s. for life; to George Farnaby, his servant, 5*l.*, to be paid to him at the expiration of his year's apprenticeship. Residue to Ralph Atkinson of Newcastle, merchant, and his wife Elizabeth. Supervisors—Vicar Morton and Mr. Henry Chapman.

*December 6.*

Date of the will of Thomas Wigham, ycoman [parish clerk of St. Nicholas', buried at St. Andrew's, January 6, 160 $\frac{2}{3}$ ?]. Directs that his body be interred in St. Andrew's church, in the Trinity porch, near the blue stone. Gives his dwelling-house in St. Andrew's to his wife Margaret for her life; then to his son Robert, remainder to his son Thomas, and Ralph Rowmane his (testator's) daughter's son, with remainder to Margaret Rowmane, his daughter's daughter, with remainder to the right heirs of Thomas. Gives nine tenements which he purchased of Henry Anderson, esquire, unto the said Robert, and his heir's male, with remainder to Ralph Rowmane, his daughter's son, and Thomas Rowmane. [One of the houses is described as being in Pampden, in the occupation of Dorothy Bonner.] Gives to either of his brothers, Bertram and Henry Wigham, 40s. Appoints his widow executrix, and vicar Morton, archdeacon of Northumberland, one of the supervisors.—In 1623, July 17, Margaret, "late wife of Thomas Wigham," made her will, leaving her dwelling-house to Edward, son of her son Thomas, and his heir's male, and failing such issue, then to descend as directed in her husband's will, provided that Margaret, daughter of her son, Thomas Wigham, should have the rents.





1603.

45 ELIZABETH. 1 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Robert Dudley, Mayor, and Francis Burrell, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—William Warmouth.**

Arms : As in 1598.

**Sheriff—Matthew Chapman.**

Arms : Per chevron argent and gules ; in dexter chief a crescent azure.



T the February visitation in St. Nicholas' church, Newcastle, John Dalton and Stephen Reavely were presented, for that upon Easter day last, having received the holy communion in St. Andrew's church, they went into the vestry and drank a whole bottle of wine, and being reproved therefor by the curate, "the said John Dalton called him 'skirvie knave?'" The records at Durham, from which this presentment is extracted, do not state what punishment was awarded to sons of Belial whose bibulous propensities were displayed in a manner so original.

*February 14.*

Wages of seamen engaged in the London coal trade were fixed by the master and brethren of the Trinity House of Newcastle at 13s. 4d. per voyage.

*February 26.*

In the books of the hostmen's company is an order of this date for regulating the vend of coals, so that while preventing over-production by restricting the output, each member of the fraternity might have his fair share of trade. The price was at the same time fixed. Best coals were not to exceed 10s.; seconds, 9s.; and "mean coals," 8s. a chaldron. During the first quarter William Selby was to vend 600 tens and find 5 keels; George Selby, 150 tens, 1 keel; Barbara and Peter Riddell, 700 tens, 4 or 6 keels; William Hodgson, 450 tens, 5 keels; Robert Anderson, 300 tens, 2½ keels; Isaac Anderson,

150 tens,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  keels. Second quarter—Henry Chapman, 900 tens, 9 keels ; Henry Anderson, 200 tens, 1 keel ; Matthew Chapman, 400 tens, 4 keels ; Nicholas and Rowland Tempest, 250 tens,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  keels ; Francis Anderson, 300 tens, 2 keels ; Bertram Anderson, 100 tens, 1 keel ; John Strangwiche, 150 tens, 2 keels. Third quarter—Lionel and Henry Maddison, 700 tens, 9 keels ; John Barker, 550 tens, 5 keels ; Robert Shafto, 260 tens,  $2\frac{1}{2}$  keels ; Ralph Atkinson, 420 tens, 4 keels ; Thomas Hall, 300 tens, 3 keels. Fourth quarter—Thomas and Francis Liddell, 500 tens,  $5\frac{1}{2}$  keels ; William Bonner, 400 tens, 4 keels ; William Jenison, junior, 400 tens, 5 keels ; Timothy Draper, 420 tens, 5 keels ; Margaret Gray, widow, 180 tens,  $1\frac{1}{2}$  keels ; Edward and Thomas Crome, 300 tens, and find 2 keels. These figures show 24 firms of hostmen, or coal-fitters engaged in the trade, 9080 tens, or 190,600 tons of coals, equal to 3665 tons a-week, to be vended, and 85 keels to be employed in carrying it from the staiths to the shipping places. Monopoly and restriction naturally encouraged envy and discontent. Old grievances were revived. Consumers complained of short weight, bad quality, and high price ; the townspeople grumbled at the exclusiveness of the hostmen's company in declining to admit qualified persons to their freedom. In a decree of the council of the north, issued on the 21st December, it was provided that every free burgess, if he desired it, should be admitted to the hostmen's company on payment of 53s. 4d., the cost of admitting a hostman's son or apprentice being 33s. 4d. By this decree the townspeople were pacified, but the grievances of the public were not so easily disposed of. The citizens of London, becoming dependent upon Newcastle coal for fuel, expressed strong dissatisfaction, and the hostmen were again called upon to defend their proceedings. In reply to a formal complaint from the lord mayor and aldermen, similar to that recorded on page 61, the hostmen made answer (19th July) as follows :—

“First, for raising of the prices of coal. The use of sea coals in London and all other coast towns through the kingdom is so increased above the quantity that formerly it was, and the number of the ships employed for the carriage of the same are so likewise increased, and especially this year, both in number and burthen, that the coal works which the last year and formerly were wrought, and were sufficient for the furnishing of the kingdom with that commodity, is not now able to supply that want by a very great proportion (although the same hath been greatly supplied at Sunderland, near Newcastle), which doth appear to be true ; for that in the end of the last year all men were aground at their pits, and had very few or no coals upon their staiths at the waterside. Whereupon they, seeing the necessity of a greater quantity of coals likely to be vented this

year than formerly hath been, did provide to sink new pits and set on more works, but further distant from the waterside, and deeper sinking to lower mines, for the furnishing of which works there was a greater number of workmen and labourers required by many. Whereupon ensued that both the labourers for sinking of pits and for working coals under the ground, and the drawers above ground, being very scant, and working and drawing them at deeper pits and shafts, had their wages much increased, a fourth penny at the least, which, added to the charges in sinking the pits, water, charges in winning new mines, the charge of timber, deals, and corving, whereof there is great scant, and yet of necessity must be used in great quantity both for propping, upholding the mines, timbering of shafts, and drawing of coals, with many other necessary incidents for coal workers, as ropes, iron, and other things, with the present dearth of victuals, all which daily increase in price more and more, and so likely to continue, hath made the coals dearer to the coal-owners in the point of working only, in some places 5s., and other places 6s. in a ten of coals ; besides divers of the greatest coal-owners have been by extremity of water this year put from their work, and lost the same wholly, having in some one work lost 600*l.* or 700*l.*, and divers others in former years by such means quite overthrown in their estates.

“Secondly, the price of coals is here increased by reason of the carriage, which we shall make justly appear upon examination, that hithertowards since Candlemas last the price of carriage, especially in Darwen [Derwent], where the greatest quantity and best coals are, for the most part of the coals there led hath, and yet doth cost dearer by 2s. in the chalders for leading only, and in other places a higher proportion than was given the last year, the reasons whereof are apparent :—First, the scant of coals left of the last year’s work, and the sharpness of the winter being such as little or no winter carriage could be had, and the great want of hay and fodder, and the death of many cattle and horse, was so great, that we were enforced to give greater prices, as afore is mentioned, in regard that we knew the carriage could not be performed so cheap as the last year it was, which, if we had not done, the ships must of necessity have lain here much longer unladen, as the masters of the ships themselves can testify. And further, whereas by this time we expected the prices for loading of coals should have fallen to a lower rate, we find that by dearth of cattle, the unseasonableness of the year, the raising of the price of pasture gates, with all the grounds lying conveniently for that purpose is not able to supply, there is no likelihood that the price of carriage of coals can so fall, as coals may be afforded here at less price than

now they are, neither is it in the reach of our understanding to devise to lessen the present price that coals are now sold for here at Newcastle, which we are the rather induced to think for that all the carriages that we can possibly provide in regard that the greatest quantity of coals are now wrought at farther pits than they were last year, and are every year likely to be further off, the nearer mines being most of them wholly wasted, will not be able in future times to ground the pits, and for the present the most of all our coals at our near pits are already led and carried at such unreasonable rates as hath been to our very great loss, notwithstanding our raising 12d. in a chalder of coals, Newcastle usual measure. Secondly, the rent of wayleaves and staithrooms is of late so far 'inharisted' by the freeholders, through whose grounds we must of necessity pass with our carriages, above the rate we formerly held the same, that the price of coals is thereby the rather occasioned to be raised.

"Thirdly, we offer unto your lordships' honourable and grave consideration whether it is possible, the premises considered, that sea coals be such a commodity as can be continually afforded at one settled price, as it should seem the said mayor and aldermen of London would have; all commodities being uncertain of price, according to the difference of times and occasions. And further, that it would please your lordships to conceive that the price raised there, notwithstanding all these former causes, is but at the most 8d. in one London chalder, which we hope your honours will not think unreasonable, the times and occasions being weighed.

"And for the other point of the complaint of the lord mayor and aldermen of London, charging us that such shipmasters and coasters as fetch coals from hence are now constrained to stay here three weeks and a month sometimes, and more, before they can be suffered to take in their loading, unless they will accept of a portion of coals called pan coals, whereby they cannot make so many returns, nor bring such a great quantity of coals to London as they formerly used, and that by this occasion the time of the year is so far spent, that without great difficulty the city cannot be provided sufficiently of coals for the poor. To this we answer that the complainants are mistaken, as we think, in the point of ready despatch and many returns, for that we find by our books, and we think it will likewise appear in his majesty's custom-house, that there hath been more coals shipped forth of this river for London and the coast in this year since Shrovetide last, at which time the frost broke first up, until the 4th June instant, than was the last year in the same time by a great proportion. But if it be true that we are informed, the occasion of so few returns (if any fault be) proceedeth rather from the strict course

held by the lord mayor of London in restraining shipmasters to sell their coals to the readiest chapman as formerly they have used. Neither have we constrained any shipmasters to stay here three weeks or month before they could be suffered to take in their loading, nor have we enforced any man to take any other sort of coals than themselves well knew and were willing to accept of for their more speedy despatch, it being not possible to furnish them of a sufficient number of the best sort of coals at that time, nor scarce yet; of which general imputations we humbly entreat your lordships to acquit us, the premises considered, except particularly we may be charged, when we make no doubt but every of us, for his own particular, can and will discharge himself," etc.

*March 24.*

Queen Elizabeth died at three o'clock in the morning at Richmond-on-Thames. Sir Robert Carey of Widdrington, an enterprising courtier, who, as warden of the middle marches, had been at Richmond on business, stole out of the palace soon after his royal mistress had breathed her last, and rode away at a breakneck pace to James VI. of Scotland. Saddle horses for riding post were at that time established on the great highway from London to Edinburgh, and Sir Robert sped through the country with such expedition that he was able to draw the bridle at his own door, three hundred miles from London, on the second night of his journey. Next day, Saturday, while riding along between Widdrington and Norham, his horse fell, and the bruises he received hindered his progress. It was late at night when he arrived in Edinburgh, so late indeed that the king had gone to bed. But as news of a crown was of more importance than slumber, his majesty was speedily aroused, received the visitor, and heard the welcome news. Carey's daring ride enabled him to offer the first salutation to the future monarch of the two kingdoms. It is not known whether the flying courtier in his passage through Newcastle acquainted the authorities with his errand, but when he left Widdrington he arranged that king James should be proclaimed that same day at Morpeth, Alnwick, and Berwick, and proclamation was made accordingly. The news soon spread, and the citizens of Newcastle, in whose streets no English monarch had been seen for a hundred and fifty years, prepared to receive their sovereign.

During the week official notification of the queen's death, and of his proclamation in London as her successor, reached king James, and on Tuesday, 5th April, he left Edinburgh to take possession of the English crown. That night he lay at Dunglass, and the next day

entered Berwick, knighting William Selby, the gentleman porter of that town, who presented him with the keys. Entering Northumberland on the 8th, he was received by the sheriff, Nicholas Forster, and escorted to Widdrington, at which place he was "nobly entertained by Sir Robert Carey," to whom he had begun to show his gratitude by admitting him, while at Edinburgh, to be one of the gentlemen of his chamber.

On Saturday, the 9th of April [Mr. Clephan here takes up the story], James, travelling on horseback, left Widdrington Castle for Newcastle; and on his arrival on the same day, he was conducted, according to Stow, "to a knight's house, where hee was richely entertained, and remained there three dayes." Brand, who quotes this statement of the chronicler, himself adds (ii.-450):—"The king was entertained at the house of Sir George Selby, who was probably knighted on that occasion." Let us hear, however, what another authority has to say on the subject. Nichols, in his *Progresses and Processions of King James the First* (i.-69), borrows an account of his visit to Newcastle from "The True Narrative of the Entertainment of his Royall Majestie, from the time of his departure from Edenbrough till his receiving at London, with all or the most speciall occurrences; together with the names of those Gentlemen whom His Majestie honoured with Knighthood. (At London, printed by Thomas Creede for Thomas Millington, 1603.)" "When," the author narrates, "His Majestie drewe neare to Newcastle, the Mayor, Aldermen, Counsell, and the best Commoners of the same, besides numbers of other people, in joyfull manner met him. The Mayor, presenting him with the sword and keyes, with humble dutie and submission, which His Highness graciously accepting, he returned them againe; giving also to His Majestie, in token of their love and heartie loyaltie, a purse full of gold, His Majestie giving them full power and authority under him, as they lately held in her Majestie's name, ratifying all their customs and priviledges that they were possessed of, and had a long time held. And so passing on, he was conducted to the Mayor's house, where he was richly entertained, and remained there three days. Upon Sunday, being the 10th of April, His Majestie went to the church, before whom the Bishop of Durham [Toby Matthew] preached. And that day (as it is his most Christianlike custome) being spent in devotion, he rested till Munday, which he bestowed in viewing the towne, the manner and beautie of the bridge and keye, being one of the best in the north parts. Besides, he released all prisoners except those that lay for treason, murther, and Papistrie, giving great summes of money for the release of many that were imprisoned for debt, who heartily praised God, and blessed His Majestie for their unexpected libertie.

So joyfull were the townesmen of Newcastle of His Majestie there being, that they thankfully bare all charge of his household during the time of his abode with them, being from Saturday till Wednesday morning. All things were in such plentie, and so delicate for varietie, that it gave great contentment to His Majestie ; and on the townesmen's part there was nothing but willingnesse appeared, save onely at His Highnesse departure ; but there was no remedie. He hath yet many of his people by his presence to comfort, and forward no doubt he will, as he thence did, giving thanks to them for theyr loyall and heartie affection. And on the bridge, before he came at Gateside, he made Mr. Robert Dudley, Mayor of Newcastle, a Knight."

This is the narrative of a writer whose book was published in the same year in which James made his journey from the Scottish to the English metropolis ; and the corresponding passage of Stow (or his continuator) has the appearance of being an abridgment of it. But while the one makes the mayor the king's host, and, giving his worship's name, informs us that he was knighted on Tyne Bridge, the other is silent as to the accolade, and states that James was "conducted to a knight's house." How the alteration came to be made, we cannot say and will not conjecture. We may, however, observe, that the substituted words do not amount to a contradiction. They simply anticipate the honour conferred on the chief magistrate ; and we think we may safely conclude that the king was Mr. Dudley's guest, and transformed him into "Sir Robert" at parting. [J. C.]

The Brockett MSS. in the castle, Newcastle, contain a tradition that James, hearing the shouts of the people in the streets of Newcastle, and seeing their wild demonstrations of joy, said to those who attended him, "By ma saul, they are enough to spoil a gude king !"

*April 16.*

Abraham Barker and William Riddell admitted to the freedom of the hostmen's company, paying 33s. 4d. each. The company paid to Mr. Henry Chapman, alderman, and Mr. Peter Riddell, 4*l.* 18s. 4d., "for their charges before, in one journey to York about the company's business."

*November 10.*

In amendment of the sumptuary by-laws of 1554, which through changes of fashion had become obsolete, the company of merchant adventurers of Newcastle issued a new decree for the government of turbulent youth held under bond of apprenticeship. Young men learning to become merchants within the sound of St. Nicholas' bells

were forbidden to "dance, dice, mum, or use any musick by nyght or by day, in the streetes. Their apparell of cloth to be under ten shillings a yard, or of fustian, of or under three shillings per yard. They are not to weare any velvat or lace on their apparell, neither any silk garters, silk or velvat girdles, silke points, worsted or Jersey stockings, shoe strings of silke, pumpes, pantofles, or corke shoes, hats lyned with velvat, nor double cypress hat-bands, or silke strings, nor clokes and daggers; neither any ruffled bands, but falling bands, plaine without laice, stiche, or any kind of sowed work; neither shall they weare their haire longe, nor locks at their ears, like ruffians." A special gaol was provided in the West Gate for the punishment of the disobedient and refractory, to which a gaoler, with a salary of 40s. per annum, was appointed.

*December 21.*

The question of municipal government in Newcastle, which, as we have seen, had already given rise to great contention, and had been referred to the council of the north, was settled for a time by a decree which the council issued from York on this date. Henceforward the governing body was to be elected in the following manner:—The twelve mysteries (drapers, mercers, skimmers, tailors, corn-merchants or boothmen, bakers, tanners, cordwainers, saddlers, butchers, smiths, and fullers) were to appoint two men from each company, making twenty-four, who were to choose four persons—the mayor for the time being and three aldermen, who had been mayors, and for want of them, common burgesses. The four so selected were to elect eight others—namely, seven aldermen and one that had been sheriff, or, in need, more that had been sheriff, or in default, common burgesses. Thus twelve members of the electoral body were appointed, and their first duty was to elect twelve colleagues. For this purpose the twelve mysteries were each to present one member, and from them the twelve were to choose six. Thus eighteen members were obtained. Then the by-trades [mariners, weavers, barber-surgeons (with chandlers), shipwrights, cutlers, house-carpenters, masons, glovers, joiners, millers, curriers (with felt-makers and armourers), colliers (with carriagesmen), plumbers (with painters, and glaziers), and slaters], fourteen companies in all [next year the coopers' company made fifteen], were to present one each, and the fourteen so chosen selected twelve free burgesses at their discretion, which twelve were to be presented to the eighteen already appointed. From these twelve, six were to be selected by the eighteen, and thus a body called the "twenty-four electors" was properly constituted. By these twenty-four electors the mayor (who must be an alderman), the sheriff, two



coroners, a clerk of the chamber, eight chamberlains, a sword-bearer, eight serjeants-at-mace, and the recorder were to be appointed, and any vacancy among the ten aldermen filled up. As soon as they had fixed the mayor and the other officers in their places, they, with the mayor, sheriff, and ten aldermen, were to elect twenty-four burgesses to form the common council. Further, the twelve mysteries were to select two members each, making twenty-four, to be auditors, and to receive and audit the chamberlains' accounts of revenue, etc., receiving 13s. 4d. a-day, to be equally divided amongst them, whenever they were engaged in their public functions. The mayor, recorder, and aldermen were to be justices, and hold gaol deliveries, with power to erect a gallows, etc.; and the town, with all its liberties, etc., was to be held on payment of the ancient fee farm of 100*l.* at Michaelmas. The decree contained also a clause regulating admissions to the hostmen's company.

Three months after the decree was promulgated king James embodied it in a charter. A full translation of this document appears in Brown's *Customs and Franchises of the Freemen of Newcastle*. (Newcastle: Angus, 1823.) It confirmed the mode of electing officers set forth in the York decree, with the difference that the by-trades should send fifteen persons to choose the twelve burgesses, and gave power to hold gaol deliveries, erect a gallows, and so on—as in the great charter of Elizabeth.



THE HIGH CRANE, NEAR THE GUILDHALL, NEWCASTLE, 18TH CENTURY.

1604.

1 and 2 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

William Warmouth, Mayor, and Matthew Chapman, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Thomas Riddell.

Arms : Gules, a lion rampant within a bordure indented argent.

Sheriff—Peter Riddell.

Arms : The same as the mayor's, with a crescent sable in the dexter chief.



ING JAMES' first parliament was summoned to meet at Westminster, 19th March. It lasted till February 1611. The burgesses of Newcastle elected

George Selby and Henry Chapman.

The king confirmed to the merchants' company of Newcastle, upon payment of 4*l.* into the hanaper, all the charters of his predecessors, and to the mayor and burgesses the conservancy of the river Tyne. Exports from Newcastle by the merchants' company at this time consisted chiefly of wool, skins of lambs, sheep, foxes, and coneys, white leather, cottons, long cloths, kerseys, Coventry cloths, lead ore, black lead, and manufactured lead.

*January 17.*

Admitted to the freedom of the hostmen's company—Hugh Selby, merchant; Robert Matfen, late apprentice and servant to Henry Chapman, alderman; John Matfen, son of Matthew Matfen, deceased. On 22nd August Mr. James Clavering, merchant, was admitted.

*April 17.*

" Dame Whittingham, murdered by her husband," forms a line in the register of burials at All Saints'. " Sir Timothy Whittingham, son of Dean Whittingham," writes Sir Cuthbert Sharp in the *Chronicon Mirabile*, "is reputed to have slain three wives, and the tradition

certainly derives some accession of strength from the foregoing singular entry. Sir Timothy lived long after this fact, if fact it be, extremely respected; and was appointed provost-marshal to the levies in the county of Durham, being recommended by the bishop as an ancient knight and a severe justice." Surtees (*History of Durham*, ii.—326) says:—"There are more ways to break a woman's heart than one, and the expression must be taken, I presume, *cum grano salis*." In his pedigree of the Whittinghams, Surtees assigns to Sir Timothy only one wife—Elizabeth, daughter of Bryan Ascough of Osgodby, Lincolnshire, who brought him six sons and two daughters, and died in 1614. The "murdered" lady, from her interment in All Saints' church, would appear to have been a member of some Newcastle family.

*April 23.*

A bill explaining the statute enacted in 21 Henry VIII., concerning Newcastle coal [see vol. ii., 117] was read a first time in the House of Commons. On the 30th May it came up for a second reading, and was rejected.

*November 12.*

The privy council write to the hostmen of Newcastle to prevent the loading of ships by bulk instead of by the measured keel, and to enforce payment of the duty of 12d. a chaldron:—"After our hearty commendations, Whereas you, the mayor, stewards, and brethren of the fellowship of the hostmen, have, under your town seal of your corporation, granted upon good consideration unto the late queen, deceased, of worthy memory, and her successors for ever, the payment of 12d. of each and every chaldron of coals as after the said grant should be transported, carried, or conveyed forth of the river of Tyne, to be spent within this realm; the which sum you, the governor, stewards, and brethren of the hostmen should, by your covenant, so to be truly answered and paid to his majesty's farmer, Sir Thomas Bludder, knight, who is authorised to receive the same. Notwithstanding, as we are informed, you, the governor and stewards, do so neglect your authority, granted by charter for the better government of your company, and the particular hostmen through your neglect and sufferance compacting with the masters to load them by the bulk, and not by any just and true measured keel, after the measured chaldron necessarily to be used. And also in suffering your keelmen, and others who are not of your company and fellowship of hostmen, to convey coals which have been purloined from yourselves aboard on ships down into the river, as well by night as by day, not only to the defrauding of his majesty's said farmers, but

also in time to come to the hindrance of his majesty's inheritance in this behalf, if present redress be not had therein. These are, therefore, to will and require you, as you tend his majesty's service, and as you will answer at your peril, that you call to court according to your authority, and enjoin and compel reformation of the said abuses, and to take such present order as the said farmer's deputies shall have no further cause to complain of this and such your indirect proceedings, which usually have been and are committed among you, as appeareth by many short entries of ships this summer."

In consequence of this letter new orders were made by the hostmen in February following; against these also complaints were made to the privy council. A manuscript memorial of 1605, quoted by T. J. Taylor in his paper read before the British Association at Newcastle in 1852, thus describes the machinery of one of the hostmen's regulations:—"The hostmen that deal in coal have appointed eight clerks, and every clerk hath his quarter where he shall sell and [s] tow [so] many, and none of his fellows may sell until he hath [sold] all his quantity, both good and bad, at a set price. And that none other shall buy or break their price [that no] coalowner is to sell any but to themselves, and to [this end] they themselves do give more than the coalowner would [sell for] to a stranger, for that now no coalowner is a seller to any merchant that would buy, but serveth as a storer to their eight clerks." The smaller owners are described as persons not much superior to labourers, men who have coals but no keels, and consequently "have no means to sell their coals for want of means to lade them." Thomas Liddell and William Jenison, aldermen, are represented as the principal actors in these orders, or regulations.

In consequence of these complaints, the Privy Council commanded that the regulations should be set aside, and they were withdrawn 27th July 1605. Brand states that he had seen an original letter of thanks from the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff of Newcastle, dated 20th August 1605, to the earl of Northumberland, acknowledging his lordship's last kind respects and countenance towards their brethren, Mr. Liddell and Mr. Jennison, and their proceedings in their common cause touching the order of uttering and sale of their coals.

---

About this time the afternoon lecture in St. Nicholas' church was established, and William Pearson, or Peirson, one of the curates, was the first occupant of the post. He was married at St. John's, 13th May 1599, to Elizabeth Holdsworth, possibly a daughter of Vicar Holdsworth, and he held the lectureship till the 9th December 1639, when he resigned, and, as appears by the books of the corporation [the

corporation were the founders and patrons of the lectureship], he was succeeded by John Bewick, master of arts. A manuscript of Dr. Hunter's, written soon after the civil wars, and quoted in the Randall MSS., explains the terms of Pearson's appointment, and the position of the corporation in regard to clerical preferment in the town :—

“ It appears that Pierson, lecturer of this church [St. Nicholas'] about the year 1606, was paid quarterly a salary out of the town of Newcastle, and likewise for several years after during his continuance. The salaries were not one and the same, but added and increased as the town thought fit. Upon this first settlement they had those salaries out of the town for preaching in the forenoon, and the parish did contribute for their preaching in the afternoons. Some time after the town made an addition to the former salaries, and gave them an allowance for preaching both forenoon and afternoon ; upon which augmentation the parishes gave no further contribution. In this state have the lectureships continued ever since, with an alteration still of salaries, more or less as there was occasion, and at the will and pleasure of the patrons. And when any vacancy happened in any of the churches of the town, the mayor, aldermen, and common council of Newcastle from time to time have chosen another in such room and stead ; and the bishop of Durham for the time being did always hitherto allow and approve of, by licence, such person so chosen, being duly qualified.”

---

The plague, which was seldom absent for more than a few months at a time, broke out with increased violence in the autumn of 1603, and continued during great part of this year. The register of All Saints' church, Newcastle, contains entries of a hundred burials to which the word plague or pest is attached, and the other church registers in the town have many similar cases. At Gateshead church so numerous were the burials that the clerk found it difficult to keep the register correctly, and the entries are confused and uncertain. One of the early acts of the new parliament was to pass a bill (1 James I., cap. 31) “ for the charitable relief and ordering of persons infected with the plague.”

---

In Michaelmas Term a commission was issued from the Exchequer to collect evidence in a cause, “ Ambrose Dudley *v.* Richard Pitts,” as to the customership and deputy-customership of Newcastle, default in payment of accounts, repair of the custom house, and the usage equally to divide and account for receipts. Richard Bartlett, James

Conyers, Pallas Hall, James Rawlings, and William Wansworth of Newcastle, yeomen, and John Rand of Gateshead, yeoman, depose as to the expenses of Pitts when soliciting the lord treasurer about the repairing of the custom house down to the time when John Rand was deputy-customer, and respecting a payment of 66*l.* 14*s.* 6*d.* to the defendant which should have been received by the complainant.

## 1605.

2 and 3 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Toby Mathew.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Thomas Riddell, Mayor, and Peter Riddell, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Lionel Maddison.**

**Sheriff—Henry Maddison.**

Arms of both mayor and sheriff the same as in 1593.



IN the books of the hostmen's company are entries of 3*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* paid "for a hogshead of claret wine that was given by Mr. Thomas Riddell, by the appointment of Mr. Governors of the company," and the following admissions :—4th January, Robert Bewick and Samuel Rawling ; 5th February, Ralph Cole, butcher ; 12th August, Charles, son of Mr. William Selby, alderman.

### *January 6.*

The Nuns' Moor, granted at the dissolution to John Broxholme, and conveyed by him to Robert Brandling of Newcastle, was, on this date, by deed of feoffment, with livery and seisin endorsed, settled upon Robert Brandling of Felling for life, and afterwards on his son, Richard Brandling, for life. In the same deed is included "a house on the Sandhill, called the Custom House." Later in the year (October 1) the house of the Augustines in Newcastle, with lands, etc., were granted in fee farm to George Hume, earl of Dunbar.

*March 29.*

Among the State Papers is a docket of this date :—" A letter to the mayor of Newcastle in the behalf of Sir William Constable, knight, to be the first officer in the office that shall be erected in that town for the measuring of coals by such measures as the laws of this realm do require, and for his fee to have 4d. upon every chaldron of coal as is used in London."

*June 1.*

Portions of the manors of Byker and Heaton were conveyed by Sir Ralph Lawson, Elizabeth, his wife, and Roger Lawson, his son and heir-apparent, to trustees on behalf of Dorothy, wife of Roger Lawson, in recompense of her jointure—the manor of Burne Hall—which had been sold. The property so conveyed is described as "one moiety of the manor of Heaton, and so much of the manor of Byker as is situate on the east side of one water, called or known by the name of the Ewes Burne, excepting to Sir Ralph and his heirs the coal and coal-mines," etc.

*June 18.*

At a visitation in St. Nicholas' church, Henry Roxbie and his wife Agnes, Christopher Todd's wife, Barbary Fenwick, widow, and John Middleton were presented "for that they have not been known to communicate since the death of the late queen." Middleton confessed that he had communicated at Easter. The others were cited to appear.

*July 30.*

The mayor of Newcastle (who was also bailiff of Gateshead, and lived in the family mansion adjoining the old chapel of St. Edmund, on the south side of the water) disputed the claims of the burgesses of Gateshead to pasturage upon the hospital lands, then in his possession. On this date he wrote them a vigorous letter, a copy of which is preserved among the MSS. industriously collected by Sir Cuthbert Sharp, and now deposited in the Dean and Chapter library at Durham. They appear to have made two requests to him, one that he should allow them free eatage over Bensham lands, to the exclusion of the freeholders, and if this were not possible, that he should give them a third of it. Here is his not too courteous reply :—

"To the first, touching the sole and free eatage of Bensham to the burgesses of Gateshead, and to exclude myself and other freeholders from the same, my answer is, I cannot by law exclude the freeholders, sithence they have had enter common thereupon so long, and for myself, I will not relinquish my title therein, although, in my

courtesy, I have forborne to put my cattle thither, and perhaps would have done so longer, if my tenants' horses had [not?] been impounded. And as touching my promise, wherewith you seem to charge me with, I would free Bensham of all freeholders, and of myself, I deny that ever I made any promise so absolute, but only that I promised to do what I could by law ; and now, being resolved, that by law I cannot discharge the freeholders, I hold my promise fully performed. As touching myself, I always said I would never be stinted, but if in courtesy I did forbear, it should only be upon my courtesy, and not otherwise. This, I am sure, is all the promise that ever I made, and here I will so depose, and so I think will all the honest men in Gateshead that hear me also. To the second demand, wherein you require that you may have a third only, as they shall fall from time to time, my answer is, I neither can nor will thereunto, unless I be by law compellable so to do ; and if I should yield thereunto, I will then say, as bailiff of Gateshead, and prove it by twelve (at least) of the honestest burgesses in Gateshead, that you should be in worse case, if the gentlemen and poorer sort of Gateshead, than now are, and therefore I think it best, sithence you may enjoy that you have, as you have done these forty-four years, that you hold yourselves, otherwise I must defend myself as God and the law shall give me leave and liberty. And this much in answer of your demands, which I did not think you had expected in writing, because (as I think) I made so reasonable an answer by word of mouth to them who deliver me your demands. Now (my masters), over and besides this, my answer unto these your demands, you must give me leave to tell you, that I little expected so uncourteous, or (to give it a term more fitting your conditions) so churlish dealing, as both in word and deed I have found at your hands ; for I did say unto them who brought me your requests in writing, that if it pleased them to take counsel and advice, I would do the like, and when both knew our own strength or weakness, then if I did more than you expected, Gateshead should be more beholden unto me, or otherwise, if that should not like them, I would be content that either they should be plaintiffs against me, or I against them, to try the matter in the easiest way that could be advised by law, which I think they that go into the matter will not deny. But now, sithence I see my courtesy is abused, with the malice and pride of some (whom I esteem as base) who seek but their own private, without public good to prevail so far of in my former promises, and stand now to you as you do to me, ready and able to do one good turn for another, and so on the contrary, and though I be loth to upbraid in that former courtesies, yet let me tell you, that all of you in general, and the best of you in particular, have received favours by my means,



which you have ever evilly requited. And thus, for this time, I commit you to God, letting you know that the bailiff of Gateshead must have stroke amongst you. Your friend, if you use him as a friend, Thomas Riddell."

The dispute was referred to the arbitration of Sir Ralph Lawson, who, on the 21st October, published his award as follows:—"The said burgesses and commonalty of Gateshead shall from henceforth, forever, have hold and enjoy the pasturage and eatage of the said closes or parcels of ground following:—One close or pasture called the Stony Flat, another close or parcel of ground called the Windmill Hill, the Whinny Close and Thistle Close as they lie on either side of Bensham. Excepting to the said Thomas Riddell, his heirs, etc., the mines and way-leave, water-leave and heap-room, the said Thomas Riddell, etc., paying from Martinmas next forever to the said burgesses and commonalty, etc., 13s. 4d. yearly for every coal-pit that shall be in working during the time of the working or loading of the same. Also, if the said Thomas Riddell, etc., shall dig or work any pit in his own grounds, being not those which are above expressed, and have needful occasion to have way-leave through any of the said four closes, then the said Thomas Riddell, etc., shall pay for way-leave for every such pit 13s. 4d. yearly to the said burgesses, etc., so long as he or they shall work or load the same. Also, that where there hath been great spoil of ground in two of the said four closes by the coal-pit or pits there, the said burgesses, etc., shall have and hold to them and their successors, Bensham aforesaid, for term of four years from Martinmas next freely, without any let or interruption of the said Thomas Riddell, etc., or of any other person or persons by his or their title, means, or procurement. Saving that it shall be lawful for the said Thomas Riddell, etc., to have and hold the coal-mine there, with way-leave, water-leave, and heap-room; to have and work the same, paying therefor 13s. 4d. yearly to the said burgesses, etc., for every coal-pit during the time of working or loading the same. Excepting, also, to the said Thomas Riddell, etc., four horse-geats, or pasturage for four horses, geldings, or mares—two of them for the Lower Team mill, and two for the Upper Team Bridge mill, for the use of the same two mills only, in Bensham aforesaid, and not elsewhere; haining [excluding cattle] and forbearing the eatage of the grass at all times when the said burgesses, etc., shall eatage forbear. Also, that the said Thomas Riddell shall have four kine-geats to go and depasture in the said four closes and Bensham, with the kine of the said burgesses, etc.—two for the bailiwick, so long as he shall be bailiff, and two as burgess, or commoner of Gateshead, according to the custom there used. Also, that the said Thomas Riddell, his heirs,

etc., shall at his and their proper costs and charges uphold, repair, and make all such gates as he or they shall use by the working, having, conveying his or their coals, and not only keep the same with locks and keys at all times convenient, so as no hurt come to the said burgesses and commoners by default thereof, but also shall so work the mines as he leave standers for the upholding of the grounds thereof according to order. Also, that after the end of twenty-one years, Bensham shall rest in common between the said Thomas Riddell, etc., and the said burgesses, etc., as the same now and formerly hath been used at any time. The award to be submitted for ratification by the king's council in the North."

*August 6.*

"The right worshipful Mr. Henry Anderson, esquire, of the age of 60 years, was buried here in the quire." From this record in the register of burials at Pitlington, which escaped the observation of Surtees when compiling the Anderson pedigree, we learn that alderman Henry Anderson, sheriff of Newcastle in 1571, mayor in 1575, 1583, and 1594, and representative of the town in the parliaments of 1584, 1586, 1588, and 1592, was interred at Pitlington, and not, as the register of St. Nicholas' indicates, in Newcastle. Deceased was son and heir of Bertram Anderson of Newcastle, sheriff, mayor, and M.P., who died in 1571. [See vol. ii., 447.] He married, first, Isabella, daughter and co-heiress of Christopher Morland of Pitlington, by whom he had Barbara, wife of Sir William Gascoigne of Ravensworth, Alice, wife of John Gower, Elizabeth, wife of Isaac Anderson of Newcastle, and Isabel, wife of Sir Thomas Liddell, Bart; secondly, Fortune, daughter of Sir Cuthbert Collingwood of Eslington, who gave birth to Sir Henry Anderson, afterwards M.P. for Newcastle [expelled by the Long Parliament in 1643 for deserting to the army], and seven other sons and a daughter.

*October 24.*

Sir Robert Cotton, the antiquary, coming on a visit to the North, arranged with his friend, Peter Riddell, sheriff of Newcastle, for the conveyance of Roman antiquities, collected by lord William Howard and others, from the Tyne to the Thames. On the date above cited, Riddell, released from the cares of office, wrote the following epistle to Sir Robert:—"Honourable knight.—Since your departure I have expected still when the burden of your stones should be laid upon my care; but as I did all this time, so I do still wait, expecting the same; but it should seem some of those you trusted in Northumber-

land for this business are in some degree North Britons, a great part whereof are, in show, at your service, but in trial nothing, so the stones are not yet heard of here at Newcastle; wherefore, if you think it so fit, it were in my opinion fit you should write to them that should send them hither, otherwise your messenger's power and mine, which is but subordinate, will not in haste turn to effect to your pleasure. If they do come I shall do my part of your business; and for this messenger I assure you he hath been very willing to do your service in this employment, but it must be another time when he must have them to carry; if he come hither again you cannot have a better carrier. Thus, assuring you my love is engaged unto you for the requital of much kindness, I rest, yours so far as my power may do you service, Peter Riddell. Postscript.—I did intend to have requited this kindness of your brother's with an answer, but the messenger's haste, mine own shame, and my insufficiency that I cannot return answer in his own language, which is his prayer, are causes why I do entreat you to take the burden of my commends to him, my friend and loving brother, when we lived together."

---

Brand (vol. ii.—22) publishes figures relating to the salt trade of the Tyne "about A.D. 1605," which he "extracted from original letters to the then earl of Northumberland, and now remaining in the archives of that illustrious family," as follows:—"In the two counties of Durham and Northumberland there were then 153 salt-pans which, casting at the rate of fifty weighs a-piece, made in the year 7653 weighs of salt; 430 salters were employed in them, besides 120 keelmen for the carriage of coals, and besides the cadgers and wain-men, where coals are not carried by water." Brand explains that a weigh of salt sold at that time for 20s. and 22s., and a salt-pan would burn 16 tens of coals per annum, every ten worth 53s. 4d.

---

A portion of the old castle of Newcastle was let this year to the incorporated company of tailors. In their books appears a payment of 10s. for the rent of it to Giles Wallis [the gaoler] due at Martinmas. The following year they gave a gratuity to the prisoners. No entry of rent occurs between 1609 and 1616, but in the latter year we find these items:—"Spent when we went to take possession of the house in the castle, 8d. Received in part payment of the rent of the castle, 5s. Paid for the rent of castle, 1*l.* 16s. 8d. Spent at the payment of castle rent, 3s. 4d. Paid for the rent of the castle, 10s. Given the prisoners [in] the castle at the request of John Leek, 6d."

The county prison in the castle yielded an unusual number of victims about this time. In St. Nicholas' register of burials, August 13, 1604, "six prisoners" are entered. They may have died of the plague, but at St. John's we find in 1605, May 12, "Alexander Davison, a prisoner hanged in the high castle, buried;" August 10, "Anthony Storoo, executed;" November 14, "Renold Charlton, Henry Dods, Arthur Robson, Arche Rogers, executed in the castle;" 1606, January 25, John Hall, Arche Armstrong, Thomas Armstrong, ———, Cuthbert Charlton, William Charlton, executed in the castle." Prisoners at the town prison in the New Gate were usually buried at St. Andrew's.

---

Among the Exchequer depositions for this year is one relating to a messuage in "the Bearmarket, otherwise Bigmarket Street, in the town of Newcastle, lately belonging to the chantry of St. Thomas, in the church of St. John, in the town—whether it is in the county of Northumberland or in the town of Newcastle—and whether queen Elizabeth did by letters patent, dated 12th August 1600, demise the same to Robert Andrews." There are the usual lists of interrogatories to be administered to witnesses on behalf of Cuthbert Chaytor, complainant, and Thomas Fenwicke, Thomas Nicholson, and Agnes Newton, defendants, respectively. For complainant, Anthony Nicholson, of Newcastle, cordwainer, aged 28, deposed to having seen the lease by which the messuage was demised to Robert Andrews; the complainant being tenant thereof at that time, and for many years previously. John Lyons, his majesty's receiver, aged 43; Oswald Chaytor, weaver, aged 48; Roger Chaytor, weaver, aged 21, all of Newcastle, deposed the same as Nicholson. On behalf of defendants, Elizabeth Mylner, of Newcastle, widow, aged 80, deposed that the said messuage formerly belonged to William Wyssse, who died thereof possessed; and that the said William, on the marriage of Jennet, his daughter and heiress, with Edward Newtone, gave over all his interest in it to them, Edward Newtone enjoying the same for his life (about forty years). Her evidence was corroborated by Margaret Wreighte, widow, aged 80; James Gibson, locksmith; Jaine Nicholsons, aged 40; Jaine Middleton, widow, aged 60; Francis Leighton, scrivener, aged 30; Cuthbert Bewicke, merchant, aged 33—all of Newcastle; and William Fenwick, of Whitchester, gentleman, of the age of 36.



1606.

3 and 4 JAMES I.

**Bishops of Durham—Toby Mathew and William James.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Lionel Maddison, Mayor, and Henry Maddison, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Sir George Selby, knight.**

Arms : Barry of ten or and sable.

**Sheriff—Hugh Selby.**

Arms : Same as the mayor's ; over the first two pieces an annulet counterchanged



ISHOP MATHEW was translated to the see of York, 26th July, and on 5th August, William James, dean of Durham, was raised to the bishopric. A record of bishop Mathew's last two visitations in Newcastle has been preserved. At the first of them, held in St. Nicholas' church, 18th March, this year, the churchwardens of St. Andrew's were presented for that the church and chancel had been allowed to fall into decay, and they were ordered to put the sacred edifice into a proper state of repair. The churchwardens of St. John's also were presented for allowing their churchyard to be "abused with horses and swine." Mr. Denton, curate of the chapel upon the bridge, presented Robert Jones for teaching to write without a license, and Alexander Leighton, curate of Gosforth, was charged with a similar offence. John Anderson was presented for receiving a woman into his house who was in a certain interesting condition, and thirty-five townspeople who had been "slack in coming to church" were ordered to be more attentive to their duties in that respect. Amongst other personal charges and presentments were these :— Charles Selby and Dorothy Anderson, for being married "by whom or where we know not ;" they were ordered to appear and confess. William Harbott, "a common drunkard and swearer," Elizabeth Coxon, "a reputed and common scold," and Richard Smith, Robert Thompson, William Durham, and Thomas Rutledge, for unloading and casting coals out of their keels in time of morning prayer, were cited to appear and defend themselves. At the last of the visitations,

held 8th July, the office of judge was promoted against Henry Anderson for gross impropriety with Barbara Dinning and Alicia Simson. Anderson was tried in the consistory court, held in the Galilee of Durham Cathedral, and on the 4th November was ordered to purge himself of his offence by standing in St. Andrew's church two days in succession during the Advent services, clad in a linen sheet, and bearing in his right hand a lighted wax candle. He was also ordered to stand in like manner in Newcastle market on the Tuesday next after the passing of his sentence.

*January 18.*

A new charter granted by the king to the Trinity House of Newcastle bears this date. Brand prints it in full (vol. ii-696), and it occupies six of his large pages. The essential parts of the document are these:—The brethren are to be reconstituted a body corporate and politic by the name of "Master, Pilots, and Seamen of the Trinity House of Newcastle-upon-Tyne," with power to acquire lands, etc., and dispose of the same, to plead and be impleaded, answer and be answered, defend and be defended. The first master under the new charter is to be Martin Errington; the elder brethren—Edward Beard, Robert Chambers, Richard Rawe, John Johnson, William Mitcheson, John Howburne, Bartram Simpson, Edward Browne, Thomas Lindsey, William Mawe, Reginald Gibson, Robert Nicholson; and the younger brethren are declared to be William Stephenson, William Hindmers, Henry Knowells, Lionel Armstrong, William Maitland, William Watkinson, John Baxter, John Robson, Robert Rawe, John Pattenson, William Cooke, Henry and John Cleborne. Two of the elder brethren—Robert Chambers and Robert Nicholson—are to be elder wardens, and two of the younger brethren—William Maitland and William Watkinson—are to be younger wardens, with Edward Pearson and John Pattenson as their assistants. The fraternity are to meet annually in the Trinity House, and elect, by a majority of voices, both of elder and younger brethren, twelve members of the company, who shall have power to remove the master, wardens, and assistants, and appoint others in their places, and with the master, wardens, and assistants to admit brethren. Power is given to the company to settle disputes and deal with all matters relating to the marine knowledge and science of seamen that resort to the Tyne and the creeks and members of the same—Blyth, Sunderland, Hartlepool, Whitby, and Staithes; to appoint pilots, and enable them to receive 12d. a-foot for every laden ship, and 8d. a-foot for every light ship which they conduct into the river; and to levy primage—2d. for every tun of oil, wine, and other goods rated by the tun (fish killed

and brought in by Englishmen only excepted), and 3d. for every last of flax, hemp, pitch, tar, or any other goods or raff wares, rated by the last—strangers to pay before their vessels leave the river, and free merchants and other inhabitants of Newcastle within ten days after the goods are landed. These fees, and all other income are to be retained by the fraternity for the maintenance of the house, for keeping twelve poor members, and for relief of shipwrecked mariners. The fraternity may also levy lightage for repairing and maintaining the two lighthouses at Shields, and keeping lights within the same in the night time from quarter and half-quarter flood to half ebb—viz., 4d. per English and 12d. per foreign vessel every time of entering the haven. They are also to put buoys and beacons in the river, and charge for the same 4d. for every English ship of a burthen exceeding twenty chalders of coals, and 2d. for every English ship below that burthen; strangers to pay 6d. a ship irrespective of size. Any person may give, devise, assign, or convey to the company lands, tenements, etc., held in socage only, not exceeding 30*l.* a year. Some difficulty appears to have been experienced in obtaining the duties of buoyage and lightage, for in the following year (31st May) the lords of the privy council issued a warrant to the customers, etc., in the ports of Newcastle, Yarmouth, Hull, Boston, and Lynn, enforcing payment.

*January 25.*

From a letter which Sir William Selby and Sir Wilfrid Lawson send to the earl of Salisbury, we learn something about the state of the Borders at this time :—" May it please your good lordship, we had on the thirteenth of this instant a general meeting with the Scottish commissioners at Carlisle, where no English commissioners were, saving Sir William Selby, Sir Wilfrid Lawson, and Joseph Penington; and a gaol delivery there, where five offenders were put to execution; another at Newcastle upon the twentieth, where seventeen were executed, some escaped by clergy, and divers convicted of petty larceny; of the first sort, at Newcastle, six were followers of Percy the traitor, brought in with others by me, Sir William Selby. We find by experience that often holding gaol deliveries doth much advance the service, and hath well banished theft, yet many robbers are cast in our way, which we avoid with as great dexterity and as little scandal as we can for the time, and fitter to be delivered by word than by letter, because they require some discourse. The Grames are in a manner all returned, as we hear, but few of them or of the fugitives that escaped out of Carlisle Castle apprehended; the fault thereof is supposed to be in the provost-marshals, or in such as they employ. If order were taken with the Grames, Cumberland

would very shortly become peaceable, and the great execution of thieves in Northumberland, where many more are than in the other shire, hath well banished these there, so that we hope these parted will very shortly be indifferent clear from these and murder. Ready to do your lordship all service, we humbly take our leaves. Your lordship's humbly to be commanded, William Selby, Wilfrid Lawson."

*February 4.*

A bill for explaining the statute 21 Henry VIII. (see page 163) was read a first time in the House of Lords. It was referred to a committee, and disappeared. Meanwhile, the M.P.'s for Newcastle wrote lord Salisbury as follows :—

"It may please your honourable good lordship, that where a bill is preferred into the upper house tending to have the ancient course of lading of coals to be otherwise than formerly by statute, the same hath been appointed and ever used to be at Newcastle aforesaid, the contents of which bill, together with the answer of the suppositions of the same, we do herewithal offer unto your honour.

"It may please your honour, upon perusal thereof, to have consideration to the good estate of the same town, which hath been serviceable and evermore respective in all offices and duties towards the king's majesty and his noble progenitors, and the commonwealth, and a very key, storehouse, and relief in time of dearth for that part of the country.

"The bill is preferred by such as carry an hard opinion against the hostmen of Newcastle, in respect that the price of coals did arise this last year, which they wrongfully complain to proceed from combination. Now, as that imputation did arise from a sinister construing of orders made amongst the said hostmen at Newcastle, and long since by the lords' directions dissolved, so by reason, the shipmen which transport the coal, did find themselves (without any just cause) grieved at the same, upon a malicious and perverse frowardness, and upon peevish counsel amongst themselves, they did forbear by the space of two months in the spring to come to fetch coal at the ancient and accustomed rates, whereby the city and country grew less provided, which is the only true cause of the scarcity and high price.

"At the time of the incorporation of the hostmen of Newcastle, and in consideration thereof, they granted to the late queen, her heirs and successors, 12d. of every chalder to be shipped and transported from thence, amounting to a great yearly profit, which his majesty enjoyeth, and then promise was made by divers of the lords that both the town and hostmen should have their liberties corroborated, and the aforesaid act of 21 Henry VIII. kept in force,



"If this bill should proceed and take effect, to become, as is pretended, an explanation of the statute of 21 Henry VIII., not only the king should be defrauded of his customs contrary to the good intendments of the same statute, and the statute itself confounded, as also the hostmen frustrated of their incorporation and grant, but most of all, the town itself having, by ancient charters and grants, duties out of such coals as are from thence transported (and whereupon the chiefest maintenance thereof resteth) should thereof be defrauded, and in short time would fall to an utter decay, ruin, and depopulation; and thus humbly desiring your lordship's honourable favour, we crave," etc.

*February 27.*

By assignment of this date the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle were invested with the admiralty jurisdiction granted them in 1589 by queen Elizabeth. Brand (ii.-579) prints the document by which Charles, earl of Nottingham, lord high admiral of England, gave and granted to the mayor and burgesses, during the remainder of the time that he should continue in office, full power and lawful authority to have all such admiral jurisdiction, power, and authority as he had exercised within the haven, or in any other place between Hedwin Streams and the Sparhawk in the sea. They were to have all wreck of sea, flotsam, jetsam, lagon, deodands, royal fishes, and other profits and commodities incident to the office or court of admiralty, power to hear and determine within the town, before the mayor or recorder, all manner of controversies, trespasses, contracts, debts, etc., arising out of or done upon the high seas, or beyond, where one of the parties belongs to Newcastle, together with authority to the mayor and common council, whereof the mayor and six aldermen to be seven, to appoint and substitute officers as shall seem necessary. All other officers and ministers of the admiralty are expressly forbidden to intermeddle within the jurisdiction of the mayor and burgesses. "Provided always, that these presents, or anything herein contained, shall not extend to any gift or grant of pirates' goods, or to the trial of any pirate, or matter of piracy, or to the trial of life or member, or any cause or matter appertaining to the jurisdiction of the admiralty, or to the debarring or hindering of any of the deputies or officers of any of the said lord admiral for impressing of ships' mariners or others for the service of the king's majesty."

*April 19.*

Warrant to allow to Sir William Ryder, Sir John Trevor, Sir Marmaduke Darell, and Sir Thomas Bludder, farmers of the imposition for sea coals, 800*l.* deduction from their usual rent of 5800*l.*,

towards their loss of 1262*l.* on account of a combination made against them at Newcastle.

*October 16.*

Date of the will of Jane, widow of Christopher Mitford, mayor of Newcastle in 1569. She was a daughter of Henry Anderson, four times mayor of Newcastle, sister of Bertram Anderson, mayor and M.P., and aunt of Henry Anderson, mayor and M.P., who died the year before. Her age is not recorded, but it must have been great, for she was the eldest of nine children, and her brother Bertram, the third child, was sheriff of Newcastle in 1543. She desires to be buried in St. Nicholas' church, in the grave of her husband; gives to the repairs of that church, 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*, and to the poor of Newcastle, 10*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*. Leaves to Robert Mitford, son of her son Henry, deceased, 50*l.*, and to his brothers Roger, Henry, Edmund, and Thomas, 30*l.* a-piece; to Henry's daughters—Agnes Barker, Alice Sharpe, Barbara Mylborne, and Elizabeth and Mary Mitford—50*l.* each; to Christopher son of her son Robert, deceased, 120*l.*, and half her moiety of the tithe corn of the rectory of Newcastle, he paying yearly to his brother, Anderson Mitford, 20*l.*, and testatrix's niece, Alice Dent, 20*s.*; to Henry, son of Robert, 200*l.*, and the other half of the tithe, he also paying Alice Dent 20*s.* a-year; to said Christopher and Henry, the lease of coal-mines at Elswick; to Anderson Mitford aforesaid, 240*l.*; to Jane Clarkson, daughter of her son Robert, 40*l.*; to John Craister, son of her daughter Alice, deceased, and his brothers Edmond and Thomas, 20*l.* each; to the children of Jane Anderson, deceased, daughter of Alice Craster, 16*l.*; to Margaret, wife of Henry Collingwood, and Isabel, wife of Luke Ogle, Barbara, wife of Cuthbert Bewick, Grace, wife of William Armorer, and Eleanor Craster, 20*l.* each. To her cousin, Mr. Henry Chapman, 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.*; and to her cousin, William Jackson, town clerk, an old angel; to George Still, 10*l.*, and to her niece, Emmet, his sister, an old angel; to her cousin Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Miller, 6*s.* Executors—John Craster and Christopher Mitford, her son Robert's son. Supervisors—her cousins, Henry Chapman, alderman, and George Still. Her goods amounted to 1839*l.* 7*s.* 3*d.*

*November 3.*

Matthew Chapman, sheriff of Newcastle three years before, buried in St. Nicholas' church. He was a son of Oswald Chapman (mayor in 1558), by Marion, daughter of Henry Anderson, and a nephew of Jane Mitford, whose will is epitomised in the preceding paragraph. Deceased's will cannot be found, but the inventory "praised the 25th November 1606, by Mr. Francis Anderson, alderman, Robert Shafto,

Thomas Hall, and William Bonner," is preserved at Durham. He appears to have occupied a large house, for the goods appraised are found in the hall, the parlour, chamber above the hall, inner chamber, chamber above the kitchen, nether parlour, hall within the parlour, inner kitchen, outer kitchen, room next the kitchen, inner parlour, shop, and brewhouse. In leases, keels, ships, debts owing, etc., he had value to the extent of 1655*l*. It is interesting to note that he had a few books—one great Bible, a book of martyrs, and a chronicle book, valued at 3*l*. 6*s*. 8*d*., and a little Bible at 5*s*. His clothing consisted of a black broadcloth gown with three yards of velvet, 8*l*.; another of broadcloth trimmed with lace, 4*l*.; a gown of perpetuance with lace, 4*l*.; a satin doublet and a pair of black kersey breeches with lace, 3*l*.; a pair of stockings, 1*l*.; a fustian doublet, a foresador jerkin, and a pair of breeches, 2*l*. He appears also to have preserved his wife's best clothing (perchance she was dead, and he kept them for remembrance), for in the inventory appear a woman's gown of black broadcloth, with two yards of velvet, 8*l*.; a woman's grogram gown, carded with velvet, 2*l*.; a satin kirtle, with two cards of velvet, 1*l*. 13*s*. 4*d*.; a double kirtle of cloth, carded with velvet, 10*s*.; petticoats of stamell, carded with three yards of velvet, 1*l*. 16*s*. 8*d*., and a hood of broadcloth, 1*l*. 16*s*. 8*d*.



HEAD OF THE SIDE, NEWCASTLE, 18TH CENTURY.

1607.

4 and 5 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—William James.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

Sir George Selby, Mayor, and Hugh Selby, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—James Clavering.

Arms : Quarterly or and gules, a bend sable, charged in chief with a mullet or.

Sheriff—Robert Shafto.

Arms : Gules, on a bend argent, three mullets azure ; in dexter chief a martlet or.



MISSIONS to the hostmen's company included, 27th April, Thomas Tempest, son of Nicholas [afterwards knight], and Henry, son of Mr. Matthew Chapman.

*January 22.*

Bilson, bishop of Winchester, sends to lord Salisbury the examination of Francis Collingwood, late of Newcastle, as to his traitorous speeches, which he professes to have uttered in a frenzy. Thinks them unfit to be disclosed by a public arraignment. Encloses also examinations of William Turgis and others of Gosport and Winchester relative thereto.

*September 25.*

Adrian Hedworth, sheriff of Newcastle in 1596, was this day buried in St. Nicholas' church. He was the youngest of six sons born to Richard Hedworth of Wickham, by his marriage with Margaret, daughter and sole heir of Alexander Newton of Pokerley. Deceased was twice married—first, in 1581, to Catherine —, by whom he had an only son, Richard, who became his executor ; second, to Agnes, widow of Ralph Harding of Hollinside, to whom he was united in 1589, and who survived him till April.

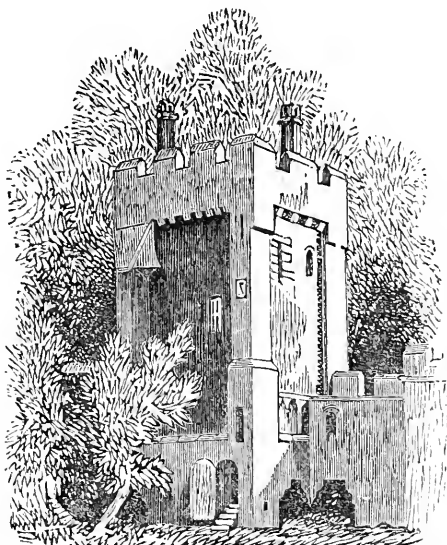
---

The plague still lingered in the town. There are traces of it this year and last year in the parish registers and the municipal accounts.

Thus, in October 1606 the chamberlains record payment of 36s. 6d. "for three weeks' charges to the infected folks;" and in January 1607 (though this is probably 1607-8) they paid "for the charges to the infected folks for three weeks, as per bill appeareth—for flesh, 8s. 6d.; for bread, 4s. 6d.; for fish, 18d.; for drink, 18d.; for coals, 2s. 3d.; for groats, 9d.; for soap, 8d.; for straw, 4s.; sum is 20s." Although the mortality was high, the corporation were not to be deprived of their amusements. They no doubt made merry as usual at Michaelmas, and kept with due rejoicing the great festival of Christmas; we know that in February they diverted themselves with a wandering contortionist, for the tell-tale books have it in black and white:—"Paid, which was given to a tumbler, for tumbling before Mr. Mayor and his brethren, 4s."

---

In the papers preserved in the register office at Durham is a record of the acquisition by Thomas Liddell of the family estate at Ravensworth. It is the document by which bishop James granted pardon for entry without licence into the castle of Ravenshelme, the manors of Ravenshelme and Lamesley, and messuages, land, etc., there, and in Eighton Hedley, Over Eighton, Nether Eighton, Longacres, Northendes, Ravensworth, and Pockerley, acquired from William Gascoigne, knight, and Barbara his wife.



A TOWER OF THE OLD CASTLE OF RAVENSWORTH.

1608.

5 and 6 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—William James.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

James Clavering, Mayor, and Robert Shafto, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—Henry Chapman.

Arms : Per chevron argent and gules ; in dexter chief a crescent sable.

Sheriff—William Hall.

Arms : Argent, between three gryphons' heads erased a fess engrailed sable, charged with a crescent or.



EW members admitted into the hostmen's company, 4th January—G. Maddison, late servant to Francis Hall ; William, son of Thomas Pattison. 8th April—Nicholas, son of Nicholas Tempest, deceased. "Ordered, that Mr. Francis Anderson, Mr. Thomas Riddell, Mr. Robert Shafto, and Mr. John Barker, measure coals," etc.

*February 4.*

At a visitation held in St. Nicholas' church the following cases were presented:—John Carr, John Forster, John Short, and John Morrison, for neglect of divine worship. They were admonished to be more diligent before Easter and report themselves at the next visitation. Ann Milburn, John Lawson, Henry Rickabie, and Adrian Hall for being notorious drunkards on the Sabbath, and railers upon the church. Ordered to attend church. Roger Nicholson, Thomas Errington, and William Cook, for keeping company in their houses in service time ; John Cookson, tailor, for working with his men upon Sundays and holidays. Admonished, and ordered to be punctual in their attendance at church thereafter. Thomas Atkinson, Thomas Smith, and Edward Lawson, for drinking in time of divine service, and Andrew Allan for playing at cards in time of prayer. To purge themselves in their parish church (St. John's) during service. Oswald Fenwick and Barbary, his wife, for not receiving the communion last year. Punishment or admonition not stated. It was reported from

St. John's that the homilies were not read there above once a year. Result not recorded. Anna Crake, suspected of being a witch. To purge herself of the offence four times in St. John's church, and on four successive market days in the market, between the hours of ten and one. Christopher Paxon and Thomas Craggs of the parish of All Saints, for casting coals on the Sabbath day. Ordered to pay 12s. into the poor box.

*August 12.*

The mayor and burgesses assembled in full guild sanctioned an addition to the ordinary of the weavers' company, by which foreigners and persons not free of the fellowship, living in or about the high castle, near the liberties of the town, were prohibited from taking work to the prejudice of the fraternity on pain of forfeiting 5*l.* for each default. It was also ordered that no one should buy any linen or harden yarn to carry out of the precincts of the town under a penalty of 40s.

*August 29.*

Lord William Howard, writing from Naworth, informs Sir Robert Cotton [see page 170] that he is at last able to send him some Roman antiquities through their mutual friend, Peter Riddell :—  
“According to your request and my promise, I have sent two stones with inscriptions to Mr. Riddell of Newcastle, who will safely keep them until he can receive certain directions from you whether he may send them to you, as by his inclosed letter you may perceive. And so with my kind commendations I bid you farewell. Naworth, 29 August, 1608. Your assured friend, William Howard. If it please you to send your letter to Mr. Riddell by post, direct it to Mr. Cuthbert Gray [father of William Gray the historian], a merchant of Newcastle, and it will come safely and speedily to his hand.”

*September 16.*

The following is the report of an Exchequer special commission about the customs. The commission itself is apparently lost :—

“May it please your lordship, we called before us the farmers of his majesty's customs at Newcastle, their deputies, and have executed the commission herewith, as appeareth by a schedule to the commission annexed. Berwick and Carlisle were fifty miles, either of them, distant from us, and for that there are great store of gentlemen of proximity to the places, and which have knowledge of the persons to be inquired upon, much fitter than we to execute that service, our continual employment in other services hereabouts being such as

would not permit us to travel to those places for the further execution of the said commission, as otherwise, according to our duties, we would willingly have done. Trusting your lordship will hold us excused therein, we take our leave, and commit your lordship to the Almighty.—Your lordship's very loving friends, William Selby, John Fenwick, Ralph Delavale."

---

St. Nicholas' steeple was in the hands of the masons this year. The upper portion, weakened by time and tempest, was taken down and renewed. Dr. Ellison's MSS., quoted by Brand (i.-263), state that the reparations included the reconstruction of three yards ten inches of the highest part of the pinnacle, and supplying new vanes to some of the spirelets. It is probable that the repairs were done at the expense of the corporation.

---

## 1609.

6 and 7 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—William James.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Henry Chapman, Mayor, and William Hall, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Thomas Liddell.

Sheriff—Thomas Liddell.

Arms of both mayor and sheriff: Argent, a fret and a chief gules; on the last three leopards' heads, or.



SIR JOHN JACKSON, who had married Elizabeth, eldest daughter and co-heir of Sir John Savil, one of the barons of the exchequer, and recorder of Newcastle named in the great charter of queen Elizabeth, succeeded his father-in-law in the recordership. Sir John was the second son of William Jackson, town clerk of Newcastle, by his marriage with Isabel, daughter of Gilbert Read of that town. In addition to the recordership, he held the



office of attorney-general to the council of the North, and was successively reader and treasurer of the Inner Temple.

*January 4.*

Enrolled in the books of the hostmens' company of Newcastle—Nicholas, son of William Blaxton, esquire, apprentice to Mr. Thomas Riddell, alderman. May 19th—Leo Carr, merchant adventurer. June 4th—John Selby, and Mr. Henry Eden, merchant. Names of those who were chosen "to make good orders between this corporation and the company of keelmen"—Mr. Thomas Riddell, Mr. Shafto, Mr. Burrell, Mr. Peter Riddell, Mr. Maddison, etc.

*January 19.*

Date of a deed by which Thomas Gray, Newcastle, tanner, conveys to his brother, Robert Gray of Newcastle, tailor, a messuage in the Nowt Market in the same town, late in the occupation of the said Thomas, which the said Thomas purchased of Henry Gray, his brother, yeoman. Witnesses—Richard Rowmaine, Thomas Gascoigne, and Henry Anthony, notary public.

*July 4.*

Grant to Robert Brandling and his heirs, in fee-simple, of the late monastery of Newminster, and lands thereto belonging.

*July 31.*

Will of Frances Anderson the younger, of Newcastle, merchant. To the poor of the parish of All Saints', 40s. ; to his sister Barbara Stote, widow, Mr. Francis Anderson and Barbara his wife, cousin Elizabeth, wife of Christopher Hutchison, Isabel, wife of Thomas Hall, each of his sister's daughters, and to his cousin, Henry Anderson, 10s. for tokens. Residue to his "kind and loving wife." Witnesses—Edward Gray, clerk, Matthew Bird, and Francis Leighton.

*August 20.*

The good opinion which Sir William Fleetwood, recorder of London, expressed in 1576 [see vol. ii.-481] to Lord Burghley, respecting the people of Gateshead—"religious, godly, and good protestants"—is confirmed by a presentment of the churchwardens of the parish of this date :—"We know no recusants who are confined in our parish. We have only one gentlewoman, Mrs. Riddell [formerly Conyers], the wife of Mr. Thomas Riddell, esquire, who refuseth to come to church and to communicate with us ; but we must needs testify this, that her husband, together with his children and servants, do duly and very orderly and religiously resort, every Sabbath day, to

the church, there to hear the word of God read and preached. We have no recusants who refuse to have their children baptised according to the statute. We have no recusants who have reformed themselves, or who keep any popish schoolmasters, popish servants, or any schoolmasters not licensed in their houses to our knowledge.—per me, John Hutton, rector of Gateshead. Thomas . . . , William Potes. John C. Chamber, his mark. George N. Nicholson.”

*November 20.*

The duties on coal levied by the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle continued to be a source of dispute and discontent. It was alleged that the duty of 2d. a chaldron was charged twice over—by the hostmen first, and by the corporation afterwards—so that merchants were compelled to pay in all 4d. a chaldron. In the Aubone MS., quoted by Brand (ii.-275), it is stated that in the 5th James I. a *quo warranto* was brought against the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, and also against the hostmen there, alleging that each of them claimed 2d. a chalde of coals. The writer adds:—“The mayor and burgesses prescribed their twopence and the hostmen disclaim it.” It appears that the mayor and burgesses of King’s Lynn were the complainants. The dispute was referred to the arbitration of Sir Henry Hobbart, attorney-general, and Sir John Jackson, recorder of Newcastle, whose award was confirmed by the Court of Chancery on the 20th November. It was decreed by the court that only one twopence should be paid.

In the paper read to the British Association by T. J. Taylor, before quoted, is an account of the sums collected in Newcastle, Sunderland, and Blyth, between 21st December 1608 and the same date this year, on account of the 1s. per chaldron on coastwise export of coals granted to Queen Elizabeth by the hostmens’ charter, and the 5s. per chaldron imposed upon all coals sent oversea. In the first half of the year the duty of 1s. produced in Newcastle 247*l.* 12s.; Sunderland, 93*l.* 11s.; Blyth, 1*l.* 4s.; and in the second half, 262*l.* 18s.; 127*l.* 1s.; and 19*l.* 3s. respectively. The 5s. duty yielded in the first half—Newcastle, 1602*l.*; Sunderland, 142*l.* 10s.; and in the second half, 1369*l.* and 141*l.* 5s. respectively, Blyth having no export trade at all. Dividing these figures by the rates of duty, it is seen that the vend for the year from those three places was as follows:—

	Coastwise. Tons.	Foreign. Tons.	Total. Tons.
Sent from Newcastle . . . .	214,305	24,956	239,261
„ „ Sunderland . . . .	9,265	2,383	11,648
„ „ Blyth . . . .	855	—	855

1610.

7 and 8 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—William James.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Thomas Liddell, Mayor, and Thomas Liddell, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—William Jenison.**

Arms : As in 1596.

**Sheriff—Timothy Draper.**

Arms : Azure, a chevron between three mullets of six points argent.

*February 3.*

HE mayor of Newcastle reports to lord Salisbury that he has provided necessities for some Irish soldiers who, the previous day, sailed with a fair wind. These men, to the number of four score, with ten women, had arrived in Newcastle by sea at the close of November.

*July 10.*

One of the numerous grievances discussed by the House of Commons was the imposition of a shilling a chaldron upon sea coals from Blyth and Sunderland. A committee had been appointed to draw up a list of such grievances as required immediate redress, and on the 7th July they presented it to the king. On the 10th his majesty met both houses of parliament in the banqueting-house at Whitehall, the prince and the duke of York being present, and after the usual courtly speeches he told them that "he received from the commons their grievances but on Saturday last, so as this being Tuesday there hath been but two days passed ; and therefore to all the same grievances they might not at that time expect satisfaction ; howbeit to some of them they should presently receive his answer." The clerk of parliament then read answers to four of the complaints. To the first of them, that of the imposition upon sea coal, the king replied that "there was never any imposition laid upon the sea coal of Blyth and Sunderland by the king's authority ; but it being conceived that they were members of Newcastle (and so within their composition) they were only mentioned in some letters patents with the town of

Newcastle ; but it appearing that they are things distinct, let the said pretended imposition be laid down, and no more taken."

*August 16.*

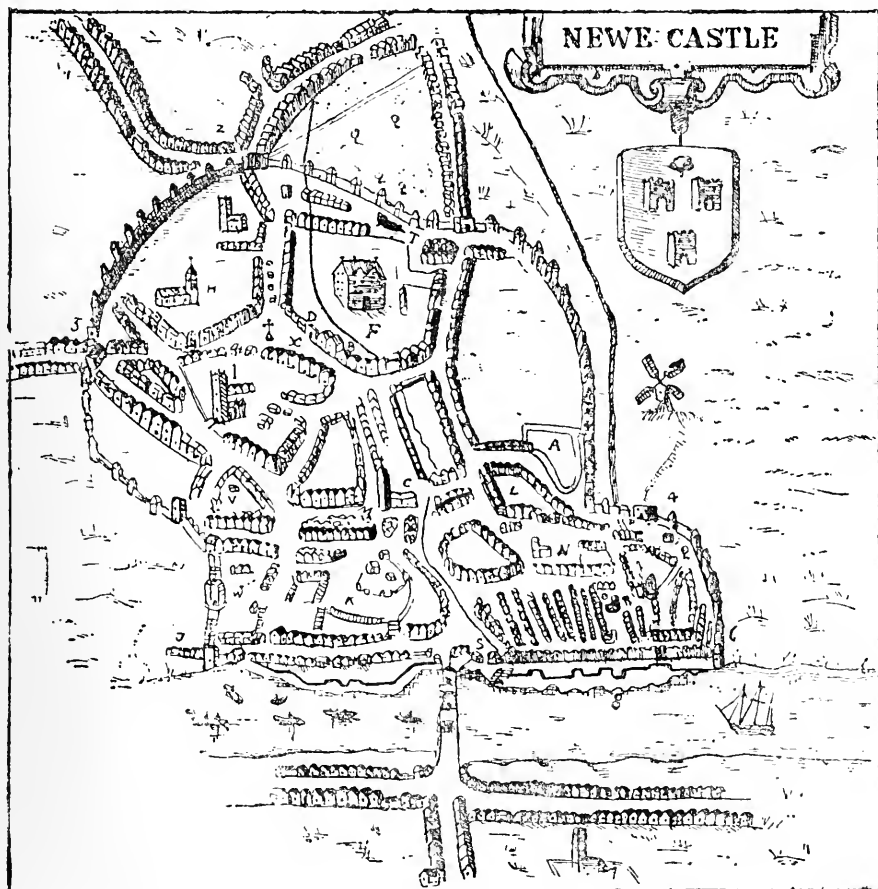
Indenture of bargain and sale, by which William Baytes of East Greenwich, Kent, mariner, conveys to Henry Cook of Gateshead, and Christian, his wife, all that capital messuage, etc., in Allhallow Bank, Newcastle, abutting on the church on the north, Allhallows Street on the south, land occupied by George Adkinson on the west, and the lands of the said William Baytes on the east. On same date, by deed of feoffment, with livery and seisin endorsed, the property is conveyed to Cook in due form.

---

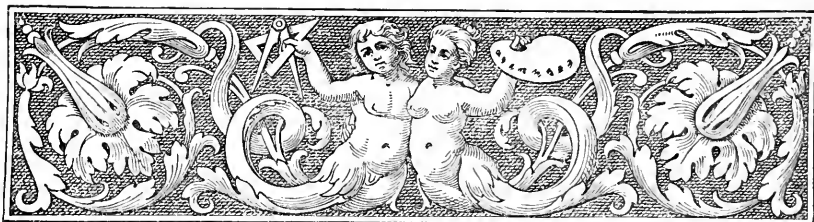
The earliest plan of Newcastle, "described by William Mathew," appears in the upper right-hand corner of a map of Northumberland, which embellished the *Theatre of the Empire of Great Britain*, "performed by John Speede, and are to be sold in Pope's Head Alley, over against the Exchange, by John Sudbury and George Humble, *cum privilegio*, Anno Domini 1610." "Covering but a few square inches of paper, the walled area, as described by William Mathew in the reign of king James," writes Mr. Clephan, "stands in marked contrast with the unwall'd town of the ordnance survey in the days of queen Victoria. The outlines of the present age bear witness to the strides that have been taken in the course of three centuries. An open country surrounds the mural barrier of our forefathers. The Lork burn flows from the Leazes to the Tyne, parting the town in twain. Outside the wall the Dene has its streamlet running past the mill above 'Pandon Yate.' The Carliol Croft is uninvaded by the builder. The four parishes have their respective churches, and the soaring tower of the Black Friars rises over an island of verdure. The 'Scottish Inne' stands on one side of Newgate Street, and on the other are the 'King's Lodgings' and 'The Manner.' The West Spital, Pandon Hall, and the Maison Dieu tell the story of the past; and from the 'Newe Yate' and the White Cross to the Close Gate and 'The Key,' William Mathew has everywhere something to say to us of the effacing fingers of Time." It is noticeable that the artist shows no houses east of the Sand Gate, although he has long rows of them outside Pilgrim Street Gate and the New Gate. The omission must not be taken to indicate that the town had not extended in that direction. We know, from deeds and wills, that houses were built there long before Speed's time, and a bird's-eye view of the town drawn about 1590 shows them.

In the original is the following table of references :—

A. King's maner.	L. Almese Houses.	T. Almese Houses.
B. King's Lodgings.	M. Saint Nicholas.	V. West Spittle.
C. Grammer Schole.	N. Alhallowes.	W. White Friers.
D. The Manner.	O. Trinitie House.	X. Scottish Inne.
F. Newe house.	P. Pandon Hall.	Z. Newe yate.
H. Black friers.	Q. The wall Knoll.	3. West gate.
I. Saint Iohns.	R. The Stone Hill.	4. Pandon yate.
K. High Castle.	S. The maison dieu.	6. Sandgate yate.
	7. Close gate.	8. The Key.



SPEED'S PLAN OF NEWCASTLE IN 1610.—(From the "Newcastle Weekly Chronicle.")



SECOND DECADE—1611-1620.



1611.

8 and 9 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—William James.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**William Jenison, Mayor, and Timothy Draper, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Sir George Selby, Knight.**

Arms : As in 1606, with a crescent in chief sable.

**Sheriff—Alexander Davison.**

Arm s : Or, a fess wavy between six cinquefoils gules.



Y lapse of time, and the treachery or fraud of past officers, the hospitals of Newcastle and Gateshead had fallen into an unsatisfactory condition, and great complaints were made respecting them. The corporation of Newcastle were agreed that reformation must be had, and they applied for letters patent to refund these charities, and reorganise them upon a wider and more useful basis. In their books, under date 28th March, appears the following appointment of a committee of seven to conduct negotiations :—

"Whereas divers and sundry business of importance concerning the general state of this corporation, especially the establishing and settling of the foundations of the several hospitals of the blessed Virgin Mary called the West Spittle in Westgate, Saint Mary Magdalene at the Barras, the hospital or chapel at the Tyne bridge end, and the hospital of Saint Edmund's in Gateshead, in the county of Durham, belonging this said town, are to be performed and effected at London with all convenient speed, of which and of the manner and orderly proceedings whereof consideration hath been in some measure had and taken by us, yet not so fully concluded as is requisite, and therefore thought fit and so ordered by us, the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff, and rest of the common council of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, for and in the name, stead, and place of the mayor and burgesses of the same town, that the further handling and proceeding in the same shall be in the consideration and power of the present mayor and aldermen, or the most part of them, as in their discretions shall be thought fit, whose act and doings therein we do and will, by this our present order, approve and ratify, to be as effectual as if the same were done by us all.—William Jenison, Lionel Maddison, Robert Dudley, Francis Anderson, William War-mouth, Thomas Riddell, James Claveringe, Robert Anderson, Francis Burrell, John Selby, Christopher Ile, William Sherwoode, James Rochester, James Bilton, Alexander Davison, Thomas Swann, Anthony Rowmaine, William Pacocke, Stephen Bowdon, Thomas Duglas."

Upon the 17th May letters patent were issued refounding the Virgin Mary hospital. Brand prints the document in its original Latin (i.-589). The preamble states that there had long existed in the town of Newcastle, in a street called the Westgate, a hospital called the hospital of St. Mary the Virgin, consisting of a master and six poor brethren, holding divers lands, tenements, etc., for the support of the poor therein in free alms; that John Raymes, a former master, had been committed to gaol, during the rebellion in the North; that the original deeds, etc., had been lost, or by time were faded and decayed; and that attempts had been made by some persons to appropriate the possessions of the hospital to their own use. Therefore it was granted that the said hospital should be and remain a hospital for the support, relief, and maintenance of poor persons, and should consist of a master and six poor men, to be found and supported therein; that the master should be at least a master of arts, and the six brethren should be single or unmarried free burgesses, indigent, and of advanced age; that they should be a body corporate with the usual powers; that whenever the master should die or be removed, the mayor and burgesses should appoint his successor, and when any

one of the brethren should die, resign, or be removed, the master should fill up the vacancy within fourteen days ; that the mayor and burgesses should from time to time revise and examine the ancient statutes and orders of the hospital, and make such fit and wholesome statutes, as well concerning divine service to be performed from day to day in the hospital as concerning the government and direction of the master and brethren, as they should see fit ; that the master and brethren should have for their own use the said hospital and all lands, tenements, etc., which they or their predecessors for sixty years last past had enjoyed, paying annually to the receiver-general of the county palatine the sum of 13s. 4d., and that they should be able to demise such of the premises as were theretofore usually demised for the term of twenty-one years or three lives, at the best rent reasonably to be had for the same. The first master under these letters patent to be Henry Ewbank, and the brethren, Nicholas Cheator, Richard Wouldhave, John Young, Alexander Cowtherd, Lawrence Jameson, and Peter Richardson.

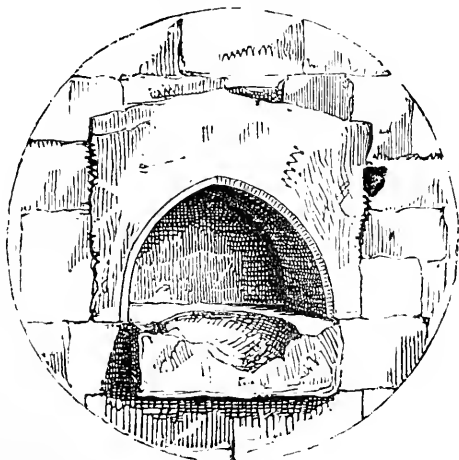
A month later the hospital of St. Mary Magdalene was refounded, and with it was incorporated the chapel of St. Thomas upon Tyne Bridge. The preamble recites that a certain hospital or almshouse, commonly called the hospital or almshouse of Saint Mary Magdalene, hath been for a long time standing in the town of Newcastle, and likewise a certain chapel, commonly called the chapel of the bridge of Tyne, had been for a long time standing upon the bridge of the same town, which said hospital consisted of a master and three poor brethren, holding divers lands, etc., for the support of the same poor in pure and perpetual charity ; that the charters, etc., had been lost, or by old age were faded and decayed, and certain persons were attempting to appropriate the property of the hospital to their own use. [The wording of the document is nearly the same as that of the letters patent to the Virgin Mary hospital.] The foundation in future to consist of a master and three brethren, single or unmarried, free burgesses, indigent, and of advanced age, who are to be a body corporate, etc., holding of the crown in free charity. The corporation of Newcastle to appoint successors to the master ; the master to appoint successors to the brethren, etc. Robert Jenison to be the first master, and Robert Dalton, Thomas Sheile, and Robert Cooke senior, the brethren, which latter are to receive 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* yearly until the death of Jenison, when the master is to have one-third, and the brethren two-thirds of the profits, etc. Power granted them to demise lands, etc., for the term of ten years, and no longer. A translation of the charter appears in a pamphlet, entitled *The Hospital of St. Mary Magdalene—Extracts from Council Minutes*, etc., issued in 1862.



At the turn of the year (4th January) St. Edmund's hospital at Gateshead was reorganised in similar terms. The letters patent in full are in Brand (i.-661). They provide that the foundation shall be called "King James' Hospital in Gateshead," and consist of a master, who shall always be the rector of Gateshead, and three brethren, who are to receive 3*l.* 6*d.* 8*d.* each during the life of John Hutton, then master, and after his death the profits to be divided—one-third to the master and two-thirds to the brethren. The endowment consisted of the site, mansion, and gardens, forty acres of arable land, five loads of hay off ten acres of meadow, forty acres of pasture, and a close at Shotley Bridge. The mansion and the land, called St. Edmund's lands, were at this time in the possession of Thomas Riddell, twice mayor and twice M.P. for Newcastle, by whose father the land had been acquired and the mansion erected.

*August 3.*

Date of the ordinary of the society of mettors of Newcastle, appointing them to meet on the 20th day of September every year, and choose four wardens, who were to pass accounts, and make an equal division of their money on the day following. A card, or table of rates for metage, was drawn up at the same date for the guidance of the fraternity and those who employed them. Three years later they are found sharing the lower storey of White Friar-tower, with the bricklayers, under the hall of the masons. A century and a-half later, during some alterations in the basement story of the tower, the following names were discovered in raised characters upon the plastering:—Ralph Rogerson, Thomas Forster, Thomas Jackson, Robert Todd, mettors; — Armstrong, — Robson, bricklayers—being, it is supposed, the names of the stewards in 1614.



PISCINA IN THE CHAPEL OF THE VIRGIN MARY HOSPITAL. (REMOVED IN 1844.)

## 1612.

9 and 10 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—William James.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Sir George Selby, Mayor, and Alexander Davison, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Francis Anderson.****Sheriff—Roger Anderson.**

Arms of both mayor and sheriff: Gules, three oak trees argent, acorned or; in chief a crescent sable.

The mayor and sheriff were father and son.



ADMISSIONS to the freedom of the hostmen's company this year were as follows:—4th January—George, son of Matthew Matfen. 26th May—Alexander Davison, servant and apprentice to Ralfe Phecocke, merchant adventurer; William Tempest, servant and apprentice to Mr. Henry Chapman.

*February 20.*

John Hutton, rector of Gateshead, and master of King James' hospital in that town, made his will, and died shortly after. Among other bequests to relations and friends he leaves to Jane, wife of Nicholas Cole, a book, entitled, *Learn to Live*, and to Elizabeth, wife of William Rand, a book, entitled, *Learn to Die*. Mentions his first wife Besse, his then wife Florence (to whom he leaves a velvet hat which he bought for Besse); sister Margaret Blackburn; son, Henry Farniside; sister's daughter's son, Edward Miller; his wife's children, Jacob Farniside, Edwin Nicholson, and William Cooke, and their wives; Thomas Cuthbert, notary public, and James Cole of Newcastle, yeoman. On 23rd March his goods were appraised by Thomas Surtees, and the inventory is more than usually interesting. Among other goods, furniture, etc., he had a French "rapperstaff" and a "pattell staff," 3s.; a hanging brass candlestick, 12d.; a clock with furniture belonging unto it, 53s. 4d.; a two-handed sword and two halberts, 8s.; a suit of armour, two steel caps, and a buckler, 33s. 4d.; eleven pictures and scutcheons in frames, 11s.; a pair of

virginals, 26s. 8d.; three pie plates and a custard coffin, 4s.; three *aqua vita* bottles, 3s.; a pair of snuffers, 12d.; a plat water-pot for a garden, 20d.; a gilded picture, 4d.; a voiding basket, 3s.; a looking-glass, 2s. 6d.; a stuff gown faced with velvet, 5*l*.; a kersey coat and breeches, 33s. 4d.; two pair of Jersey stockings, 10s.; a muff, two pair of gloves, a pair of mittens, 4s.; four pair of handcuffs, 3s. 4d.; two wrought nightcaps, 6s. 8d.; two night "kurtchers," 2s.; two hand "kurtchers," 3s.; a taffeta gown, a kersey gown, two kirtles, two petticoats, a velvet hat, a riding saddle with furniture belonging to a woman, 18*l*.; a bow, six arrows, three shearing hooks, a piece of a brass candlestick, a battle axe and a little staff, 2s.; a glass bottle in the parlour, 4d.; books in the study, 50*l*. Hutton was succeeded in the rectory and mastership by Thomas Hooke.

---

The household books of lord William Howard of Naworth, published by the Surtees Society (vol. 68), commence this year. Lord William had considerable landed estate in Northumberland, and his business connections in Newcastle were extensive and valuable. Through Newcastle he obtained great part of the luxuries which enabled him to exercise a princely hospitality in his stronghold; hither he frequently came himself on county business, and still more frequently sent his servants and messengers to convey his commands and execute his orders. Sprinkled over these interesting pages are familiar names in Newcastle history—Grays, Selbys, Carrs, Jacksons, Riddells, Fenwicks, and Halls. With the family of Cuthbert Gray, father of the author of the *Chorographia*, the lord of Naworth had especially confidential relations. When, in 1608, he was sending some Roman stones to Sir Robert Cotton, it was to Cuthbert Gray that the antiquary was directed to write if he wished to secure safety and expedition in despatching the coveted articles. Cuthbert Gray was a lessee under lord William of coal-pits at Newbiggin, near Fenham; he was also a merchant, with a well-stocked shop in the Side, and while with one hand he paid his rent, with the other he received payment from his landlord for the usual goods which the leading merchants of Newcastle supplied to their customers. For example, payments are made to him for shoes for Mrs. Mary, 2s.; a green velvet cap for Mr. William Howard, 13s. 7d.; an ell of cambrick for the children, 6s.; "to one bringing twelve lemons from Mr. Cuthbert Gray," 6d.; six couple salt ling, 15s. 6d.; six couple of salt cod, 8s. 6d.; a cade of sprats [cask containing 1000], 3s.; a hogshead of vinegar, 20s.; twenty gallons, three quarts, and a pint of sack, 3*l*. 2s. 7d.; fourteen pounds of hops, 14s., etc. Fresh fish

were supplied to the Naworth larder from the villages along the coast, sometimes by way of Morpeth and sometimes by way of Newcastle. At St. Luke's fair in Newcsstle, lady Howard, or the house steward, and some other confidential servant, seldom failed to attend and lay in a stock of the various articles required ; while extensive purchases were every now and then made in London, shipped by sea to Newcastle, sent by boat to Newburn, and thence forwarded on pack-horses or in waggons to Naworth. The minute entries contained in these books form a valuable record of manners and customs in the north country, and are especially useful in drawing comparisons between the cost of living now and the cost of living then. Prices paid for some of the necessaries, and a few of the luxuries, of life in the early part of the seventeenth century appear to have been as follows, the purchasing power of money being, perhaps, four or five times more than it is to-day :—

A cow and a calf cost 50s. ; a Scotch ox, 3*l.* 11s. 8d. ; a sheep, 10s. to 12s. ; a goat, 3s. 6d. ; pigs, 4s. to 5s. each ; fresh fish—cod, 7d. to 1s. 2d. ; herrings, 2s. 8d. to 3s. 4d. per 100 ; salmon, 1s. 3d. to 5s. ; turbot, 1s. to 2s. ; lobster, 1d. to 3d. ; mussels, 8d. a peck ; oysters, 6d. to 1s. 6d. per 100 ; sole, 2d. ; salt fish—cod, 5s. per dozen ; red herrings, 30s. a barrel ; ling, large 10s., small 4s. 8d. a couple ; salmon, 2s. to 4s. each ; groceries, etc.—almonds, 1s. to 1s. 10d. per lb. ; candles, 4d. to 5d. lb., wax ditto, 1s. 1d. lb. ; currants, 11s. 9d. to 13s. a qr. ; dates, 2s. lb. ; figs, 3d. lb. ; ginger, 1s. lb. ; salad oil, 2s. quart ; oranges, 8d. to 1s. doz. ; pepper, 1s. 7d. to 2s. 4d. lb. ; raisins, Alicant 9s. 4d. to 10s., Malaga 7s. 6d. a qr. ; rice, 5d. lb. ; soap, 16s. a firkin ; sugar, 1s. 2½d. to 1s. 6d. lb. ; provisions, fresh—apples, 1s. to 3s. 6d. firkin ; capon, 5d. to 1s. ; chicken, 2d. to 3d. ; hen, 5d. to 7d. ; duck, 4d. to 6d. ; goose, 6d. to 3s. ; hare, 4d. to 8d. ; a lamb, 3s. 4d. to 3s. 8d. ; quarter of mutton, 1s. 2d. to 2s. ; partridge, 3d. to 6d. ; pigeon, 1½d. to 2d. ; quarter of pork, 3s. 3d. ; rabbits, 8d. couple ; side of veal, 2s. 8d. to 3s. 4d. ; salt butter, 3s. 2d. to 6s. stone ; wine, etc.—canary and sack, 3s. 2d. to 4s. 6d. gal. ; claret, 2s. 6d. to 2s. 8d. gal. ; Malaga, 4s. gal. ; white wine, 2s. to 2s. 8d. gal. ; vinegar, 3*l.* 15s. hogshead ; beer, 6s. barrel ; miscellaneous—iron, 2s. 4d. stone ; damask tablecloth, 3*l.* ; two beds and bolsters, 3*l.* ; a watch, 4*l.* ; a clock, 10*l.* ; cork, 4d. to 8d. lb. ; skin of parchment, 5d. ; ink, 6d. pint ; lime, 8d. bushel ; ream of paper, 5s. ; a saw, 2s. ; a whip, 1s. ; a saddle, 26s. ; pair of boots, 10s. to 12s. ; shoes, 6s. 8d. ; 100 needles, 1s. ; beaver hat, 50s. to 70s. ; felt hat, 11s. to 16s. ; gunpowder, 1s. 6d. lb. ; wages, per day—bricklayer, 10d. to 1s. ; carpenter, 1s. (with food, 6d.), his man, 10d. (with food, 4d.) ; cooper, 6d., his man, 4d. ; gardener, 10d. ; glazier, 8d. ; haymakers—men, 6d., women, 4d., labourer, 6d., mower,

10d. to 1s.; mason, 1s.; pavior, 4d.; plasterer, 6d.; plumber, 1s.; quarryman, 4d., his boy, 2d.; saddler, 6d.; sheep-shearers, 3d. to 6d.; slater, 10d.; thatcher, 8d.; his server, 6d.; thrasher, 6d. to 9d. The maid-servants at Naworth had 1*l.* to 1*l.* 10s., the men-servants 1*l.* to 4*l.*, butler, 2*l.*, coachman, 4*l.*, gardener, 4*l.* and 5*l.*, baker, 2*l.* to 2*l.* 10s., miller, 2*l.*, warrener, 5*l.*, cook, 8*l.*, smith, 3*l.* a-year.

Sometime in April Francis Burrell, Robert Shafto, and Henry Chapman of Newcastle obtained a lease of the third part of a tenement called Grindley or Greenlawe, Durham, and of a coal-mine there, late the property of John Lyons, receiver of Northumberland and Durham, a debtor to the crown.—In August Thomas Liddell, alderman, Newcastle, purchased from John and Thomas Heath (by fine dated August 3) the estate of Darncrook, near Gateshead, formerly part of the possessions of Kepier Hospital.

### 1613.

10 and 11 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—William James.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Francis Anderson, Mayor, and Roger Anderson, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Sir Henry Anderson.**

Arms : Same as last year, without the difference.

**Sheriff—Henry Chapman, Jun.**

Arms : As in 1608.



S in 1605, we have several executions occurring in Newcastle about this time. At St. John's the register records the interment of George Nickson "out of the castle," and Bartram Potts and William Charlton, "executed" (1611); Arche Reede, John Robson, and William Armstrong, "executed and buried" (1613).

In a list of Border malefactors brought to justice through lord William

Howard's instrumentality occur the names of Henry Musgrave of Woodsword, and William Ridley, senior, of Hawcopp (before 1612), Hob. Blackley (1612), and Richard Carsome (1613), all executed at Newcastle.

*May 7.*

One of the collectors of customs in Newcastle, and an alderman of the borough, Robert Dudley, was interred at St. Nicholas' church this day. It would appear that there were two Robert Dudleys occupying prominent positions in the town when the Stuarts began to rule over England—Robert the customer, and Robert, sheriff in 1586, and mayor elected at Michaelmas, 1602, and knighted by King James in April following. The death of "Sir" Robert does not appear in any accessible record, but St. Nicholas' register, on the date above quoted, enters the custom house Robert as "Mr. Robert Dudley, alderman, buried." Which of the two figured in the disputes about the grand lease of Gateshead and Whickham, and in the exposure of corporate abuses, is not clearly indicated, but in all probability it was the customer. He married Anne, daughter of Christopher Wood, *alias* Cooke, and had five children, one of whom, Dorothy, was united to a Cuthbert Ellison Ambrose, his son and heir, acquired the manor of Chopwell, and left it to his son, Toby Dudley, whose only child, Jane, married Robert Clavering. The male issue of Clavering failed in his grandchildren, and Sarah, the sister and eventual heir of John and Dudley Clavering, became the wife of lord chancellor Cowper.

Ambrose Dudley appears to have been of a turbulent disposition. There is among the State Papers a letter from his father to lord Salisbury, to the following effect:—"May it please your honour, presuming of late by my letters to make known unto your good lordship, my son Ambrose Dudley, his unnatural dealing with me, being put in trust with the greatest part of my estate; which differences your honour seemed not willing to hear of, neither to decide, but most nobly commanded that we should agree of ourselves, which (for my own part) was always my desire, but will not be performed of my son's part, unless your honour will be pleased to address your honourable letters to some indifferent to us both in the country, to hear and determine our controversies, and to see that performed which your lordship hath commanded us both between ourselves to effect. And thus, with the remembrance of my humble duty, I humbly take my leave, and will ever rest, your honour's most bounden, Ro. Dudley."—Two years after his father's death an attempt was made by the Rutherfords of Black Hall to kill Ambrose. The affray rose out of some dispute respecting the manor of Chop-

well, which the Dudleys had purchased. One of the combatants on Ambrose's side received a mortal wound, and the Rutherfords were outlawed.

*August 13.*

"Mr. Peter Riddell, who fitted a keel without the consent of the owners thereof, was fined 40s. Paid the same; 36s. were returned, and 4s. retained." Such is the laconic record, from the books of the hostmen's company, of an offence by a leading townsman.

*August 29.*

Died at Wallington, Sir William Fenwick, knight, son of Sir Roger Fenwick, by Dorothy, daughter of Sir John Widdrington, who, after her husband's death, married Robert Constable, the reputed spy of Sir Ralph Sadler. Sir William was twice married—first, to Grace, daughter of Sir John Forster of Edderstone, and second, to Margaret, daughter of William Selby of Newcastle, esquire, and Elizabeth, his wife, daughter of Gerard Fenwick. By his will, made 3rd December 1612, Sir William gave William, his second son, the lordship of Meldon, Heron's Close, and the Leehouses, and the rectory of Hartburn, excepting the tithes of North Middleton, which he left to Roger, his third son, to whom also he gave the half of Hawick, half the mills and fishings of Bywell, and lands at Redgarth Sheele Durham; and to his eldest son John (who inherited the family estates at Fenwick, Wallington, Cambo, etc., and half a water-mill at Heaton, called "Dust-little mill") his house in the "Noutte-market in Newcastle, called Doffenbye's house," etc.

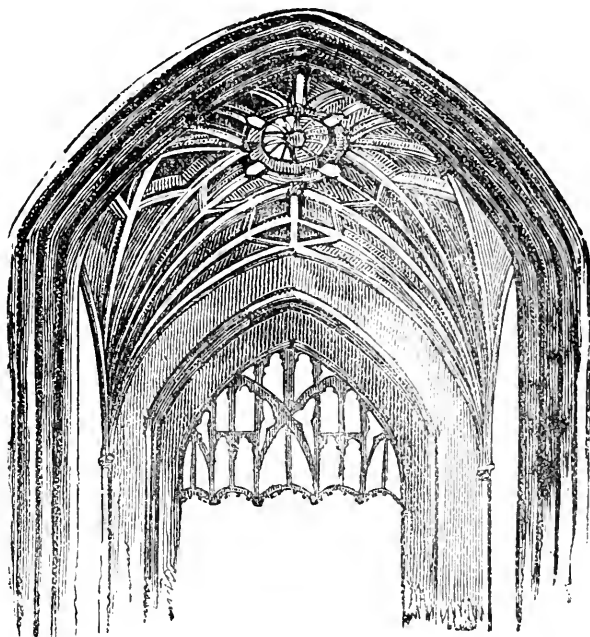
*October 9.*

Order of privy council that the Trinity House of Newcastle, having, in conference with that of Deptford, erected two turrets upon the tops of their lighthouses at Shields, each to contain two candles, may levy an additional duty of 2d. for lightage, or 6d. in all, upon each English ship, and of 4d., or 1s. 4d. in all, upon each foreign vessel.

*December 21.*

The chancel of St. Nicholas' church received to-day the remains of alderman William Selby, sheriff of Newcastle in 1564 and mayor in 1573 and 1589. At the time of his death the family of Selby had risen to high place and great power in the northern counties. Two of his sons (by Elizabeth, daughter of Gerard Fenwick) had been knighted, George of Newcastle and William of Shortflatt. Three other members of the family, William of Biddleston, John of Twisell, and William of

the Mote, near Ightham in Kent, had received a like honour. On ten separate occasions the name of Selby had appeared in the list of mayors and sheriffs of Newcastle, and in the books of the merchants' and hostmen's companies those who owned it occupied high positions. When, therefore, the venerable alderman died, his obsequies were celebrated with considerable display, and evoked widespreading tributes of sorrow and respect. His "funeral sermon" was preached on the 25th January, most probably by the bishop of Durham, and a great concourse of people came to hear it. Thomas Chaytor of Butterby (the king's surveyor general for Northumberland and Durham), a painstaking diarist, was there, and made a concise note of the ceremony:—"A great and an admirabl funerall for old Mr. Selbie att Newcastle. Ther wer assembled in the church 1000 at leest in myn opinion, for the church cold unith conteyn all without thronge. Emongest other ghests most kindlie Sir George Selby invited me. My Lord Bushop, notwithstandinge a great stormy daie, rode to Newcastle, the 24 of this, to the sollempnitie of the funeralls of old Mr. Willm. Selby."



ST. NICHOLAS' CHURCH, NEWCASTLE—UNDER THE BELFRY.



1614.

11 and 12 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—William James.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Sir Henry Anderson, Mayor, and Henry Chapman, Jun., Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—William Warmouth.**

Arms : As in 1603.

**Sheriff—John Cook.**

Arms : Argent, three bends sable, on the central one in chief a mullet argent.



NEW Parliament was summoned to meet at Westminster, 5th April, and it was dissolved 7th June. The representatives of Newcastle were

**Sir Henry Anderson, Knight, and William Jenison.**

This short-lived assembly was nicknamed the "Addled Parliament" because it produced no legislation. Its proceedings were, however, of considerable interest to the people of Tyneside. William Jenison, on the 21st May, moved the first reading of a bill to give representation to the county and city of Durham, and also to Barnard Castle, not, however, without some demur from members who were interested in maintaining the power and authority of the prince bishops. Then the sheriff of Northumberland—(John Clavering)—had returned Sir George Selby as one of the members for the county, although Sir George, being sheriff of the county of Durham, was considered not to be legally qualified. Mr. Jenison's bill was soon settled, for Parliament came to an end before it emerged from the committee to which, on the last of May, it had been referred. But the election of Sir George Selby led to a great discussion. The house met on 5th April, and on the 8th a petition against Sir George was considered by the committees for privileges. Next day they reported that the petition contained four allegations—1. That the clock was set back, and the sheriff refused to take votes after nine. 2. That Sir George being a sheriff was not eligible, for by the writ no sheriff could be chosen. 3 and 4. That he had no freehold in the county, and did not

reside in the shire. Sir George being present, alleged that the bishop had discharged him from the shrievalty before the election. The committees found that the sheriff's office was still executed by him, and the majority recommended that the sheriff of Northumberland should be sent for. A long and interesting discussion followed upon the point whether a sheriff could be returned, and whether Selby, being sheriff of a county palatine, where there was no parliamentary representation, stood in the same position as other sheriffs who were returning officers. In the course of debate Sir Henry Anderson argued that Durham ought to have knights and burgesses in parliament—thus paving the way for his colleague's bill upon that subject. Finally, it was agreed that Sir George Selby's election should be declared void, that a new writ should be issued, and that the sheriff should be sent for. On the 23rd May Sir H. Widdrington moved that Clavering, having been arrested by the serjeant-at-arms, should be heard in the house. Thereupon it was made a matter of complaint that the prisoner had outridden the serjeant's man, and Mr. Serjeant himself declared that the arrested sheriff would not so much as bid his man drink, but, it is to be presumed, posted up to London to face his accusers at once. Next day (*Journals of House of Commons*, i.-495) "The sheriff of Northumberland brought to the bar, who kneeled, and shortly after spoken to, to stand up. Charged by Mr. Speaker—1. With returning Sir George Selby, being sheriff of Durham, contrary to the purport of his writ. 2. That no proclamation of the choice till half-an-hour before the election; cometh not to the election till half-an-hour before nine. 3. That being there, he called for Sir George Selby, and called only those by name which he knew to be for Sir George Selby, not taking notice of any for Sir Raphe Grey. Not having twenty-four caused the clock to be set back. At nine having gotten twenty-four, refused to proceed further. Ill usage of the serjeant's man; outriding of the serjeant's man. [The journals of the house were apparently kept from notes taken at the table by one of the clerks, and printed just as he wrote them; hence their jerky style and occasional incoherence.] He answereth, sithence they have accused him by advice of learned counsel, he desireth he may make his defence so. That being refused, answereth, he was informed by counsel that Sir George Selby, being but sheriff of Durham, might be elected. That the serjeant's man arresting him, he accepted it as was fit. That he invited him to stay; he refused. Invited him oft. When he came to him, used him kindly. Offered to lend him money; gave him 20s. That the return of the writs and saving himself from fining, and his desire to clear himself from the accusations, the causes which made him come up post." After

considerable discussion, not too intelligible, the first and last of the complaints were referred to the committee for petitions, Clavering in the meantime to remain a prisoner, having liberty to go out with the serjeant's man, but to return at night. Nothing more is to be found in the records of this parliament about Sir George. He would probably be released by the dissolution on the 7th June, and before his brother, Sir William Selby of Shortflat, who was elected his successor, could have been fairly settled in his seat.

*January 29.*

By order of council bearing this date, the conservancy of the river Tyne was granted to the corporation of Newcastle, with whom were joined the bishop of Durham and justices of the peace for the two counties. The composition of this body was not satisfactory to the corporation, who wanted to have sole management of the river ; three years later they carried their point, and the conservancy was vested in the mayor, six aldermen, and certain members of the merchants' company and Trinity House.

*July 7.*

Lord Howard of Effingham, who in 1606 assigned to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle admiral jurisdiction in the port during the remainder of his term of office, reserving to himself the power to capture pirates, issued a commission on this date, empowering them to fit out against the pirates that then in great numbers infested the seas, one ship or more, "warlikelie" appointed with men, ordnance, and victual sufficient for the enterprise.

*November 17.*

Pardon granted to Robert Gray of Newcastle, a seminary priest (who being converted, had taken the oaths), for going beyond the seas, there becoming a Romanist and returning to England.

*December 17.*

Thomas Dackham, or Deckham, of Gateshead, gentleman, devises to his grand-daughter Elizabeth, wife of Henry Mitford, his capital messuage, etc. [Deckham's Hall], adjoining to Gateshead moor, wherein said Henry Mitford dwelleth, and all that his nether tenement thereunto adjoining ; failing her issue, to Robert, son of Tempest Brighouse, late of Newcastle, draper ; failing his issue, to Jane, daughter of Anderson Mitford, testator's daughter deceased. Gives lands in Backworth to Robert Brighouse ; 3*l.* to the poor of Gateshead "towards the bringing home of the water," and 5*l.* to William, son of his brother Henry. Mentions his cousin, John Dackham, one of the

masters of requests. Executor—Henry Mitford; supervisors—Thomas Riddell of Gateshead, and Thomas Chaitor of Butterby.

---

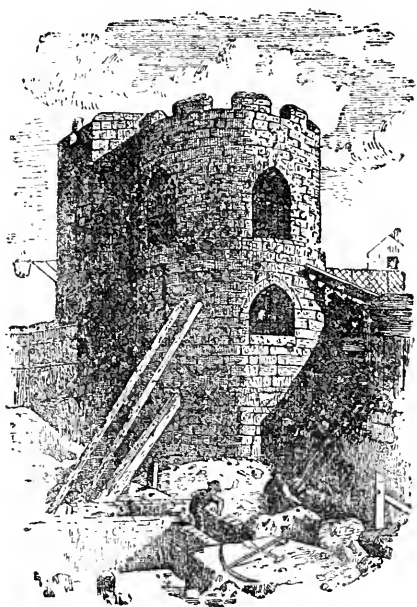
Admitted to the freedom of the hostmen's company—Henry Anderson, merchant, son of Bertram Anderson; Christopher Shafto, merchant; Sir William Selby, knight; Roger, son of Thomas Liddell, merchant, and alderman.

---

In *England's Way to Win Wealth, and to Employ Ships and Mariners*, a pamphlet printed in London for Nathaniel Butter this year, the writer describes the trade of Newcastle as the chiefest "for maintenance of shipping, for setting sea-faring men on work, and for breeding daily more. There may be about some two hundred sail of carviles, that only use to serve the city of London, besides some two hundred more that serve the sea-coast towns throughout England, small and great, as barques and other shipping of smaller burthen, and more might easily be. For hither, even to the mine's mouth, come all our neighbour country nations with their ships continually, employing their own shipping and mariners. I doubt me whether, if they had such treasure, they would not employ their own shipping. The French sail hither in whole fleets, some forty or fifty sail together, especially in summer, serving all their ports of Picardy, Normandy, and Bretagne, even as far as Rochel and Bourdeaux, with their own ships and sailors from Newcastle. So they of Breame, Embden, Holland, and Zealand do serve all Flanders, and the archduke's countries, whose shipping is not great. These paying no more than his majesty's own natural subjects, if they transport any coals. Which imposition, say our men, made our countrymen forbear their carrying any more coals abroad, because the Frenchmen would not give above their old rate; and which was worse, whereby they sold away their ships, some to France, some to Spain, some to other countries. Whereby sure their faults are more apparent than their ill-fortune, in that though their gain was less at the instant, by the imposition, than formerly; yet to leave the trade argued neither good spirits, nor great understanding, nor any special good mind to their country. For whence I pray you came such a necessity to leave the trade and to give over shipping, as if they could not live thereby; when presently foreign nations fell to the trade themselves, as is formerly set down, and fetch away our coals on the same terms which we do refuse! And by report, notwithstanding the five shillings imposed, the French do sell in France one chauldron of coals for as much money as will

buy three or four of Newcastle. Had they held to with patience, either they might have brought the stranger to their price, or else, by due order and discreet fashion, opened the inconveniency to the state of the stranger's stomach in refusing their coal, and fetching them themselves; so as they might easily have wearied them, and won their trade and gain a gain; whereas now they are beggared; and our country disfurnished of shipping."

The writer suggests that the king should ordain a staple-town in England for sea-coal, and adds:—"We have many fit places and harbours more fit and proper than that of Tynemouth at Newcastle; and herein, as I am bound in affection to wish well to London, so I must, out of many men's judgments, commend Harwich . . . lying fit for the Low-countries, and, indeed, open to all nations by the benefit of the large sea which washeth it, whereby strangers shall be restrained from further trade to Newcastle, shall all repair to the said staple-town to fetch their coals. Besides that it would be an exceeding benefit to his majesty, it would likewise help us in this our complaint of want of shipping. For by this means our English bottoms, bringing all the coals to the staple-town, shall not only be set on work, but increase will follow in shipping."



GUNNER TOWER, NEWCASTLE. REMOVED 1885. (From the *Newcastle Weekly Chronicle*.)

1615.

12 and 13 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—William James.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

William Warmouth, Mayor, and John Cook, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Francis Burrell.

Arms : As in 1602.

Sheriff—Robert Bewicke.

Arms : Argent, between three bears' heads erased sable five lozenges in fess gules, each charged with a mullet of the field.

*January 13.*

ROBERT ANDERSON, merchant and alderman, interred at St. Nicholas'. By his will, dated a few days before, he bequeathed to the poor of the town, to be given at his burial, 5*l.*; to Robert, son to Isak Anderson, "who is now in the house with me," 50*l.* at lawful age, and meantime to be bound apprentice and brought up by testator's son Robert, and by his care ordered as should be fitting; to his old servant, Anthony Metcalf, 40*s.* yearly for life out of his manor of Wynlington, county Durham; to Anne, his well-beloved wife, in satisfaction of her dower, his lands, etc., in Wyngate, and the coals and profits from his part of the grand lease colliery, and the profits of his part of the colliery at Ravensworth, for her life; also all his coals at Whickham and Ravensworth already wrought, and at the pits or staiths, and all his plate, etc., to her own use, except bedsteads, tables, and chimneys of iron. Residue to his son, Robert Anderson. Executor—his worshipful kinsman, Sir George Selby, knight. Supervisors—Francis Anderson, alderman, and Robert Ellison. Witnesses—Francis Anderson, Robert Ellison, William Helye, G. Flacke.

*August.*

Bishop James sends to archbishop Abbot information given by a Polish surgeon, Chris. Newkirk, a pretended catholic, much courted

by the priests, who wish to learn from him how to make still powder. Humphrey Clesby of Morpeth told Newkirk, while talking of a sermon against popery preached at Paul's Cross, that there would soon be a redress of their oppressions; that in queen Elizabeth's time a man might hear mass for 100 marks, but now it was treason; that had this persecution been suspected, the king had not come to the crown so quietly, but there would soon be an alteration, both in king and prince; that Sir Thomas Blakiston had a dispensation from the Pope to conform; that meetings of papists were held at his house, at Sir John Claxton's of Nettleworth, Mr. Hodgson's of Hebburn, Mr. Swinburne's of Capheaton, and others. Reports further that there is a flocking of priests in the diocese, even in a walled town like Newcastle, where a few years ago was not one recusant, and thinks that great danger arises from the king's lenity towards priests. Newkirk told him of a conversation with one William Sutheran, a priest, who said that France, Spain, and Spinola had each 20,000 men ready, and that the North of England would raise 20,000 more for a hurly-burly on a certain signal.

*October 18.*

Henry Ewbank resigned the office of master of the Virgin Mary hospital. He had had disputes with the mayor and burgesses respecting the rents of the hospital, and there had been a trial at York, in which he lost his cause and was ordered to pay the corporation a hundred pounds, but no costs. Like many other clergymen of his time he was a great pluralist. He held the twelfth stall at Durham from 1596 to 1620, was rector of Washington (1583), of Winlaton (1588), of Whickham (1620), and held a prebend at Lichfield. Dying in 1628, he left behind him sons and daughters, who married into wealthy families in Durham and Yorkshire, and transmitted his name to succeeding generations.

Ewbank's successor at the hospital was the first master of queen Elizabeth's Grammar School after its removal to the Spital—Robert Fowberry, A.M.

---

The great bell of St. Nicholas, called the "common," "great," or "thief and reiver" bell, which weighed 3129 pounds, writes Bourne, was this year sent to Colchester to be re-cast. It had been in use about twenty years.

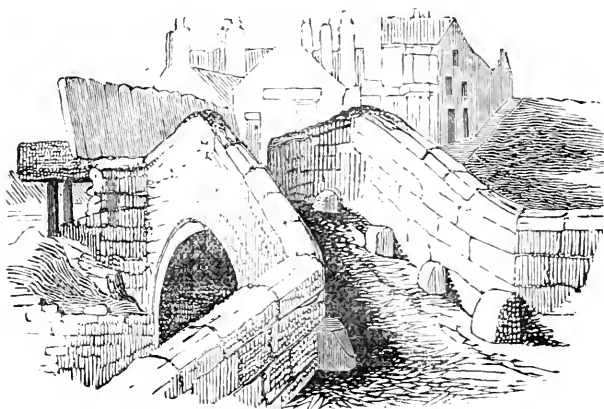
---

A rule of the glaziers' company, passed in 1598, prohibiting the brethren from working or selling their own glass under 7d. a-foot, on

pain of forfeiting 3s. 4d., was supplemented, on the 9th June this year, by an order that no brother should work any Normandy glass under 8d. the foot, on pain of suffering a penalty of 20s.

---

Glass manufacture on Tyneside begins its history about this time. Bourne places it earlier. "Sometime in the reign of queen Elizabeth," he writes, "came over to England from Lorraine the Henzels, Tyzacks, and Tytorys. The reason of their coming hither was the persecution of the protestants in their own country, of whose persuasion they were. They were by occupation glass-makers. At their first coming to this town they wrought in their trade at the Close Gate. After that they removed into Staffordshire, from whence they removed again and settled upon the river-side, at the place called, from their abiding in it, the Glass Houses." Mr. Sidney Grazebrook, in a useful little book, entitled *Collections from the Genealogy of the Noble Families of Henzey, Tyttery, and Tyzack*, writes:—"Notwithstanding what Bourne and others say, I do not think there is any proof that glass-works existed, either in the neighbourhood of Stourbridge or on the banks of the Tyne, before the year 1615, or thereabouts, when a patent was granted to Sir Robert Mansell, knight, vice-admiral of England, by James I." The whole subject of glass manufacture on the Tyne is exhaustively treated by Mr. Clephan in the *Archæologia Æliana*, vol. viii., p. 108.



THE GLASS HOUSE BRIDGE, NEWCASTLE. ERECTED IN 1669.



1616.

13 and 14 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—William James.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Francis Burrell, Mayor, and Robert Bewicke, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Sir Thomas Riddell.

Arms : As in 1604.

Sheriff—Nicholas [Carr MS. "Michell"] Milburn.

Arms : Sable, between three escallops a fess argent, charged with a crescent gules.

In May, the coming mayor, Thomas Riddell, bailiff of Gateshead, was knighted. Chaytor of Butterby, recording the fact in his diary, adds, "The price of gaining knightship is 300. *Capiat qui vult.*" His son, Thomas Riddell of Fenham, was knighted shortly afterwards, and became recorder of Newcastle on the death of Sir John Jackson.



IR HENRY ANDERSON and vicar Morton were greatly exercised by the spread of recusancy, and they complained of the encouragement given by lord William Howard to those who disobeyed the Act of Uniformity. The editor of the *Howard Household Books* [Surtees Socy., vol. lxxviii.] remarks that "in Newcastle, as in most of the large towns in England, the mercantile and trading classes were, as a rule, strongly imbued with puritanism, and bitterly adverse to the church of Rome, and it roused both their fears and their suspicions when any prominent office or place was held, or any commanding influence exercised, by those who adhered to the ancient faith. . . . Lord William was a catholic, and that was enough. . . . The burghers of Newcastle were no doubt zealous protestants, of the puritan type, as were the majority of the clergy, but the gentry of Northumberland were, almost to a man, Catholics, and the tenants and dependants, with few exceptions, were doubtless of the same faith. . . . When James I. ascended the throne, the return

made to an inquisition showed 306 popish recusants in Northumberland, and 67 non-communicants. But in 1616 the number of recusants had risen to 507, and that of non-communicants to 432."

Sir Henry, who was sheriff of Northumberland, had been mayor of Newcastle, and afterwards sat for the town in several parliaments, writes to secretary Winwood on 1st April, hinting that some of the northern recusants were implicated in the Gunpowder Plot, "wherein I fear me Mr. Widdrington will be touched if it prove true, and some others of greater quality will be occasioned to be inquired after. I am informed that my lord William Howard doth inwardly hate Roger Widdrington, but they dare not dissolve, nor well displease the one the other, God knows the reason. . . . We have sent up about our Newcastle business Sir George Selby and one Mr. Riddell, two aldermen of the town, who for themselves do as much hurt by these means against religion as any in this town. The one, his wife is a professed recusant [Mrs. Riddell was presented as a recusant at Durham sessions in April 1614], and the other of the religion the K. is of, whatsoever that may be. If they shall receive some round checks, it will be never the worse, for, for the one he is a lawyer, and altogether used by the recusants for their estates, and was, or should have been (as was here commonly reported), steward to my lord Somerset of his courts in this country by my lord William and Emerson's means." Then follows a paper stating that lord William is a known recusant, "unto whom the recusants of greatest note do daily resort," and the number of them "daily increaseth in these parts by his lordship's countenance." He maintains one Skelton of Wetherall as his servant, who goes to church only at Easter, making show to receive the communion, but "when he hath taken it doth most profanely spit it out of his mouth, both bread and wine." At Brampton the minister had been grossly disturbed during divine service at Christmas by the tenants and servants of lord William, who "shot guns in the church," and "sported themselves with pies and puddings, . . . using them as bowls in the church alleys." If the law may have course to convict him as a recusant "the king shall have two parts of his lands, and he shall be disabled to serve, which, if he be not, all men in these countries for their own safety must and will yield unto him."

Vicar Morton lifts up his voice chiefly against Roger Widdrington, who had been arrested for complicity in the Plot. Writing to archbishop Abbot on 7th May, he mentions a "long, lingering, grievous sickness" that God had smitten him with for two whole years, "till Easter last, when, I thank God, I began to amend." Roger Widdrington has poisoned all Hexhamshire with popery, and,

in a manner, all Northumberland ; "betwixt God and my conscience, he was as guilty of the Powder Plot as Thomas Percy." The same day he writes to Winwood repeating his charges, and offering to go up to London to inform him the best he can touching Northumberland, Newcastle, etc. ; "as hitherto I have, ever since I entered the ministry, made my body, goods, credit, and place to serve, first God, and then good queen Elizabeth and his sacred majesty, so will I still, by God's assistance, and though I cannot do so much in regard of my approaching age as I have done (having now been a continual preacher thirty-four years forth of the university), yet will I do it with as good a heart and as ready a will as ever I did. My full resolution being that of David's, 'I hate all false ways, but thy laws do I love ;' and again, 'I have sworn, and will perform it, that I will keep thy righteous judgments,' and, therefore, I will say to Roger Widdrington and all such bangisters, 'Depart from me, ye wicked, I will keep the commandments of my God.'"

*February 26.*

A grant of this date to Andrew Boyd of the office of surveyor of coals for life excited much dissatisfaction in Newcastle. The State Papers contain several letters on the subject. Daniel More writes in June to Sir Thomas Riddell that Boyd has succeeded in getting his seals of office made, though his answers to the objections of their party against his patent are very unsatisfactory ; but he has many friends in council. Thinks it advisable to postpone till next term their further opposition, the king having ordered his prerogative not to be argued upon without his foreknowledge, and the expected promotions of law-officers creating great uncertainty. Annexed to the letter are reasons offered by the mayor, etc., against the patent for the surveyorship, as being unnecessary, unprofitable, and illegal. In July king James writes to the officers of customs at Newcastle, Sunderland, and Blyth, explaining that objections having been raised to the patent granted to Boyd to survey coals, and prevent their being deceitfully weighed, the case has been tried in the Star Chamber, the abuse proved, and offenders fined. Orders them henceforth to restrain ships laden with coals, unless they can produce a certificate from the surveyor of the nature and quality of the coal, etc.

*August 1.*

George Younghusband suffered death for murdering a gentleman named Swenno, and on this date was buried in St. Nicholas' church, Newcastle, near the north door. Four years later, an accomplice of his, named Nicholas Foster, was hanged for the same crime, and buried close beside him.

---

According to the books of the hostmen's company, the quantity of coals shipped from the port of Newcastle this year was 13,675 tens, equal to about 287,175 tons. The use of mineral fuel was becoming general. An account of the farmers of the coal revenue for the following year shows that they had deputies at Chester and Liverpool, in Cumberland, and on the west coast, at Swansea, Milford, Aldborough, and Lynn. It shows further, that their speculation was a profitable one, for after paying all expenses the four of them had a sum of 3686*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* to their credit, being 921*l.* 13*s.* 1½*d.* each. Stowe attributes the growing employment of sea-coal to neglect in planting timber:—"There is so great a scarcity of wood throughout the whole kingdom, that not only the city of London, all haven towns, and in very many parts within the land, the inhabitants in general are constrained to make their fires of sea-coal or pit-coal; even in the chambers of honourable personages, and through necessity, which is the mother of all arts, they have of late years devised the making of iron, the making of all sorts of glass, and burning of brick, with sea-coal or pit-coal. Within thirty years last the nice dames of London would not come into any house or room where sea-coals were burned, nor willingly eat of the meat that was either sod or roasted with sea-coal fire."

---

On the top of that portion of the town wall of Newcastle that extended from Tyne Bridge along the Quayside to Sandgate, was a walk, and at the bottom of it a great many gates, called water gates. Sometime this year, Bourne tells us [it was in February 1617], these gates were ordered to be locked up every night, except one or two, which were to stand open for masters and seamen to go to and from their ships. This was done to prevent servants casting ashes and other rubbish into the river; and both gates were watched all night long.

---

From an account of the revenues of Houghton-le-Spring Grammar School, in Surtees' *History of Durham*, it appears that one of the conditions of John Franklin's will (November 19th, 1572) was in operation. The sum of 26*s.* 8*d.* is entered as paid this year out of the town chamber of Newcastle; to which the historian adds, "this was lost before 1747." The school had, also, 2*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* from the parsonage of Gateshead, and 1*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* each from Ryton and Whickham.

---

The hostmen's company admitted this year Mr. Robert

Anderson, Nicholas Blaxton, servant and apprentice to Sir Thomas Riddell, Avery Robinson, son of Robert Robinson of East Renton, near Durham, "apprentice to Sir Thomas Riddell, knight, nearly seven years."

## 1617.

14 and 15 JAMES I.

Bishops of Durham—William James and Richard Neile.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Sir Thomas Riddell, Mayor, and Nicholas (or Michael)  
Milburn, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Lionel Maddison.

Sheriff—William Bonner.

Arms : The Mayor's as in 1584 ; the Sheriff's—[a blank shield].



IN the State Papers this year there is a renewal of the correspondence about recusancy. Sir Henry Anderson resumes his pen, and (9th May) informs Winwood that Northumberland suffers from a great defect of teachers, and many of them of the worst sort, though it is better supplied than formerly, "for there be now some twelve or thereabouts of preaching ministers in the whole shire ;" but the people, he adds, are "led by the example of their masters, which is for the most part papistry or atheism, only led to their own sensuality." Complains of lord Howard of Walden, Sir Henry and Roger Widdrington, and Sir John Fenwick. Proposes some powerful nobleman to be appointed to overrule all ; but he must be a man who will reside in the county, and keep them in with a strong hand. Suggests lord Sheffield, if he were made lieutenant of the county. Lord William Howard has so much power that he would have more partisans than the king himself.

Vicar Morton writing from Durham, gives a lugubrious account of the condition of the people, government, and religion, and of the state of the town of Newcastle. Popery flourishes, and the river is in danger of being blocked up. Throughout the bishopric of

Durham popery prevails, so that at the ports, Hartlepool, Sunderland, Tynemouth, etc., the recusants can import and export as they will. Many of the clergy are very base. The chief reason why law is badly administered is the covetousness of the bishop and his bad officers. Thinks the royalties should be taken from the bishop, who is thus a king in the country. Several bishops, formerly good men, have been spoiled by too much power.

*February 14.*

Ralph Gardiner, in his voluminous indictment of the corporation of Newcastle (*England's Grievance Discovered*), before quoted, describes the reorganisation this year of the Tyne conservancy authority. His narrative has been adopted by subsequent historians—even by Brand, although the latter uses it, with a trifling alteration, as “communicated by Mr. Thomas Aubone”—

“King James, in the second year of his reign, being humbly supplicated by the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, that he would be graciously pleased to confirm all their ancient grants and charters, and to give them further powers, especially of the river Tyne, the king confirms their charters, but grants nothing new, only alters the election of their officers, and prescribes them new oaths, to be administered to the said officers in their elections, which charter is in the chappel of rolls. Also the king and his council grants them the conservancy of the river Tyne, by giving nine articles upon the 29th of January 1613, and joined in the said order the bishop of Durham, and other justices of peace, of the county of Durham and Northumberland, with the six aldermen of the said town of Newcastle; but three years after, being weary of partners, the mayor, aldermen, and a jury of the burgesses exhibited a great complaint to the king and council, at Whitehall, of the great decay of that river, occasioned by the said commissioners, through their neglect and breach of trust, which complaint begat this following reference from the council table, and further power to add to the former:—‘Whereas, upon complaint of the decay of the river of Tyne, and of the daily abuses, done and committed to the prejudice of the same, certain articles were granted, on the 29th January 1613, and commanded to be put in execution, for the remedy of such abuses: and forasmuch as a jury of Newcastle-men have, by their petition to this board, grievously complained those articles were wholly neglected by the mayor and six aldermen of the same town and the bishop of Durham, and justices of the peace, all which were joint commissioners, for the preservation of that river, the river decaying so fast, that in short time it would be dord and wrecked up with sand, etc., if not order soon taken

therein. The council ordered Sir Ralph Winwood, Sir Julius Cæsar, and Sir Daniel Dunn, one of the judges of the admiralty, with the assistance of the trinity-masters of London, to draw up thirteen articles more, to be joined with the former nine. And by special order of his majesty's council, at Whitehall, was given and commanded, that all the said two-and-twenty articles be put in execution, for the conservation and preservation of the river of Tyne, by the commissioners hereafter named, or else to forfeit all the town's liberties into the king's hands. And though the commissioners formerly appointed for the execution of the former articles are persons of place and quality, and otherwise well deserving of the public, yet forasmuch as, contrary to the trust reposed in them, they have altogether neglected their duty therein, whereof further notice may be taken, as occasion shall require, it is thought expedient that these persons following be named and authorised commissioners for the due performance and execution, as well of the said former articles, bearing date the 29th of January 1613, as of those now devised and published, with the joint consent and good liking of the aldermen of the town of Newcastle, and others attending their lordships, in that behalf, for the safety and conservancy of that river.'

"The names of the commissioners at Newcastle, for the river of Tyne—The Mayor, William Warmouth, Timothy Draper, Cudb. Bewick, Thomas Wynn, Leo. Car, John Holbourn, Hen. Johnson, Edward French, Thomas Ewbank, George Wallis, Ralph Cox, Robert Leger, John Stubs, Robert Chamberlain, John Eden, John Butler."

The nine articles, granted on the 29th January 1613, are these :—

1. "That the owners of every salt work on either side of the river of Tyne, built and to be built, do within six months build up their wharves and quays sufficiently above a full sea-mark, in height of the water, to be appointed by the mayor and six aldermen, to the end neither coals nor rubbish do fall off into the river.

2. "That all wharves and quays, in all parts of the river of Tyne, be dammed and backed with earth and not with ballast.

3. "That no ballast be cast at Shields, by any vessel which loadeth, either with coals or salt, or other commodities, nor any ballast wharves to be built there, or used for that purpose.

4. "That all salt-pan owners shall carry away their pan rubbish from off their quays or wharves every forty days, that none fall into the river.

5. "That no ballast be cast but upon sufficient ballast wharves, built and to be built, above a high-water mark, and to be allowed by the mayor and six aldermen, in any part of the river.

6. "That the surveyors, unladers, and casters of ballast, according to their offices and duties, shall every week cause all the ballast which falls off the ballast shores into the river to be taken up again, and cast upon the ballast wharves, and to take care that the ships have a good sail to lie between the ship and shore, that none of the ballast fall between into the river.

7. "That no coals nor stones be digged within sixty yards on a straight line from a full sea-mark, in any part of the river, to the end none fall in.

8. "That some strict and severe punishment be inflicted, by the mayor and six aldermen, upon any such master of ship, or keels, as shall presume to cast any ballast upon any insufficient shores, or into the river.

9. "That there shall be no weirs, dams, or other stoppage, or casting of ballast, in or near the said river, or creeks running into the said river of Tyne, or within eight miles of the town of Newcastle, but such as shall be allowed by the mayor and six aldermen of the said town, such shores being sufficiently wharfed."

The following are the thirteen articles added at this date :—

10. "That no lighters, boats, or keels, with ballast, be suffered to go up and down the river of Tyne in any night tide, to prevent the keelmen's casting ballast into the river, they often using so to do, being more easy and less labour to cast it into the river than upon the ballast shores, which spoils the river; the commissioners are to take care herein, to see the putting hereof in execution, and to punish offenders.

11. "That strangers shall be appointed every week to cleanse the streets of Newcastle of their ashes and other rubbish, to prevent the rain from washing the same into the river, through Loadbourn.

12. "That all the gates on the town quay be locked up every night except one or two, to stand open for the masters and seamen to go to and fro to their ships, which will prevent servants casting ashes and other rubbish into the river; and that those two gates be constantly watched all night long.

13. "That all servants dwelling with any the inhabitants residing or inhabiting in the town of Gateshead, and Sandgate and the Close, in Newcastle, be sworn every year not to cast any rubbish into the river.

14. "Whereas there hath been an ancient custom in Newcastle, that every master of any ship who is known to cast any ballast at sea, between Souter and Hartley, or within fourteen fathom water of the haven, to the hurt of the said river, was brought into the town chamber, and there, in the presence of the people, had a knife put



into his hand, was constrained to cut a purse, with moneys in it, as who should say he had offended in as high a degree as if he cut a purse from the person of a man, whereby he might be so ashamed that he should never offend again therein ; and others, by his example, were terrified from trespassing in the like kind, that now in the time of so general wrongs done to the river, and the great number of ships which come into that haven, this ancient custom be revived, and put in execution.

15. "That whereas much ballast falls off into the river of Tyne, between the ships and the ballast shores, in casting of it out of the ship, to the great hurt of the same, the commissioners are to set, every winter season, the poor keelmen and shovelmén on work, to cast into keels such ballast and sand fallen into the river, and then to cast it on the shores or wharf again.

16. "That some trusty, truly, substantial men, burgesses of Newcastle, be appointed to view the river every week, and to make oath for the abuses and wrongs done unto the same, two to be masters of the Trinity House of that town ; they to have no coals, nor mines, nor ballast shores, and to be appointed by the commissioners.

17. "That every owner of ground, adjoining on that river, be ordered to fence the same grounds, to prevent the banks from falling and washing into the river with great floods, flashes, and rains, to the great annoyance thereof.

18. "That the commissioners—namely, the mayor, and others named before—do give unto the masters, skippers of keels, a commission to be a company, for the ordering such their brotherhood, and for them to punish such as cast ballast into the river, or do other wrong, out of their keels, they having been a company formerly, consisting of one hundred and sixty, which was for the good of the river ; that the two great pools of water lying on the back of a ballast shore be forthwith filled up, to prevent undermining of the shore, to the hazard of the river, if the wall and ballast fall down.

19. "That all the ballast shores in the river of Tyne be constantly kept in good repair, otherwise a hundred thousand tons of ballast will fall into the river, to the destruction thereof.

20. "That no ship or vessel be suffered to load at Shields, or any roadstead in the river, but as near the town of Newcastle as can be, for when they load in remote places the wrongs cannot be so soon seen.

21. "That the commissioners do take good bonds from the owners of such shores as shall be built to lay coals on for ships, and shall take view of such places as shall not do hurt to the said river, either

by casting ballast on them, indirectly, or to suffer them to go to decay after there is no use made of them, and to keep the ballast from washing into the river.

22. "The council table ordered that Leonard Car and Cuthbert Bewick, two of the commissioners which attend this business, be allowed their charges for their pains and attendance, and likewise this board might be the better assured with what care and diligence these directions are pursued, that the commissioners do every quarter certify of the proceedings herein, that further order might be taken upon any defect that might happen, and as shall be found expedient."

Two days later (16th February) the Privy Council issued another order—viz., "Upon an order, now taken, concerning the river of Tyne, and divers articles, conceived fit by the board, for the preventing of such disorders and abuses as are done and committed, to the detriment of the said river, it is thought fit, and so ordered, for the better observancy of the said articles, and the more careful endeavours of the mayor and aldermen of the town of Newcastle, for the reformation and amendment of such things as are hurtful and prejudicial to so famous a river, which have been slighted and neglected beyond that which any way may be reasonably thought of, in a matter of so great importance.

"That upon the first just complaint renewed to this board in that kind, his majesty's attorney-general be hereby authorised, without further question or warrant, to direct some course for the seizing of all the liberties of that town into the king's hand, of which their lordships' pleasure and resolution is, that such aldermen, and others of that town, as are now here attending that business, were by the board required hereby to take notice."

In May they added to their instructions the following:—

"That the commissioners shall have power for ordering the wharfs and new shores, and every place in that river, after they are once erected, as well for the strengthening as backing of them with ballast as with other earth. That the commissioners, three at least, shall subscribe every ticket, and the mayor, for the carrying up of every keel of ballast from the ships at Shields to Newcastle ballast shoars, for the more faithful execution of that service.

"That the commissioners shall have power to order and determine of such rewards as shall be given to every wherryman or fisherman, or other that shall truly present any offence or offenders against any of the articles prescribed, to be taken out of such fines, mulcts, and americiaments as shall be imposed upon any of the delinquents against the said articles.

"That the commissioners shall have power to cause the ballast

already become noisome, or in any part of the river, or like to do hurt from the land, to be removed to a new wharf or fit place."

*April 23.*

King James had set his heart on making his Scottish subjects conform to the Church of England, and on this day, Wednesday, journeying north with that object, his majesty arrived in Newcastle. Brand tells us that "he was met upon the Sandhill by the mayor, aldermen, and sheriff, and after an oration made by the town clerk, was presented by the mayor, in the name of the whole corporation, with a great standing bowl, to the value of a hundred jacobuses, and a hundred marks in gold, the mayor carrying the sword before him, accompanied by his brethren on their foot-cloths." The royal lodgings were in the mansion of Sir George Selby, whence, on the day of his arrival, the earl of Buckingham wrote to lord-keeper Bacon, that "his majesty, God be thanked, is in very good health, and so well pleased with his journey, that I never saw him better nor merrier."

It was St. George's Day when the king entered the town, and the festival, which was usually celebrated at Windsor, though not always, was kept in Newcastle. Dr. Ellison's MSS., quoted by Brand, note the event very briefly:—"The lord-president and council of the North, kept their sitting in the Guildhall of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and lord Sheffield being then president and knight of the garter, celebrated the feast of St. George at that town"—in St. George's porch, at St. Nicholas' church, suggests Brand.

On the 1st May the king visited Henry Babbington at Heaton Hall, and knighted him. Three days after, with all his nobles, he dined with the mayor, "when it pleased him to be served by the mayor and aldermen," and to confer the honour of knighthood upon Peter Riddell and John Delaval. Next day, Monday, 4th May, he left the town, having been here a fortnight, and proceeded to Scotland.

*May 11.*

Bishop James died in his seventy-fifth year. Surtees states that king James scolded the bishop to death; in other words, he expressed so much displeasure at the prelate's conduct in, as Surtees imagines, a contest with the citizens of Durham, that "he retired to Auckland and died of a violent fit of stone and stranguary, brought on by perfect vexation." The bishop was three times married, his last wife being Isabel, widow of Robert Atkinson, alderman of Newcastle. By her he had a son, Francis James, upon whom he settled the manor of Washington, with remainder to John, son of his eldest son William,

deceased, and in default to the heirs of his two brothers successively. Dr. James's successor in the see was Richard Neile, translated from Lincoln. Bishop James's obsequies were solemnised on 8th May, and Neile stayed at Newcastle until they were over. Chaytor of Butterby met him six miles beyond the town on the 5th. "He stayed at Newcastle till the 8th, by reason he would not be present at the funeral, which" adds Chaytor, "stood with great reason, being successor."

*November 17.*

Letter from the privy council, in settlement of disputes that had arisen concerning the payment of primage to the Trinity House under their charter. It was ordered that instead of the duty of 3d. which the brethren were authorised to levy upon goods sold by the last, they should take only 1½d. a last upon corn brought into port by merchants belonging to Newcastle.

## 1618.

15 and 16 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Lionel Maddison, Mayor, and William Bonner, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—James Clavering.**

**Sheriff—John Clavering.**

Arms of both Mayor and Sheriff : Quarterly or and gules, a bend sable.

*April 24.*



THE commissioners for the survey of the border counties were at Newcastle, and addressed to the privy council a letter of thanks to king James for his care in repressing disorders by means of the active labours of the lord president. Begged that he might continue his charge until the reign of impiety and iniquity were suppressed in these parts, because any failure in execution would encourage malefactors, as it had hitherto done.

May 6.

Information laid in the Star Chamber against several hostmen and skippers of Newcastle for adulterating coals. Judgment was given against R. Bewick, J. Cole, R. Hodgson, W. Jenison, T. Hall, and H. Maddison, to be committed to the Fleet and pay a fine of 20*l.* each to his majesty's use; the decree to be read in the open market at Newcastle two several market days. The skippers and Ralph Cole were acquitted. So writes Brand on the authority of Gray's MSS.

June 18.

An inventory of the goods, etc., of Isak Anderson of Newcastle, merchant, buried at St. Nicholas', 12th September 1617, valued by Ralph Carr of Newcastle, merchant, William Swalwell, Newcastle, yeoman, Thomas Mallabar, of same, tailor, and James Scoles, of same, yeoman, shows that deceased had one-quarter of a lease of certain coal mines in Ravenshall grounds for fourteen years, or thereabouts, valued at 100*l.*, and six tens of coals at the pit, 6*l.* 3*s.* Deceased owed to Dan. Hechstetter, for a bond upon a judgment in the court of Newcastle, 200*l.*, the like to Henry Hutcheson, 8*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*, to Richard Ord for a bill of 50*l.*, to Mr. William Hall, merchant, 4*l.* 16*s.* 4*d.*, and to Henry Anderson, draper, 34*s.* 8*d.*

July 2.

"For a set of boring rods bought at Newcastle, 5*l.* 16*s.* 9*d.*," is an entry in the *Howard Household Books* at this date. Gray, in the *Chorographia*, attributes the introduction of boring rods to one Master Beaumont. He describes him as being a gentleman of great ingenuity and rare parts, who adventured into the mines with his 30,000*l.*, and brought with him "many rare engines not known in these parts—as the art to bore with iron rods to try the deepness and thickness of the coal, some engines to draw water out of the pits, waggons with one horse to carry down coals from the pits to the staiths, to the river, etc. Within few years he consumed all his money and rode home upon his light horse." "The coal-field of Newcastle," writes Mr. Clephan, "was at a low ebb when the rider left it in penniless plight. The mines were ceasing to be workable by the poor appliances at the command of the owners. . . . Master Beaumont, who appears to have been a 'south gentleman,' brought his rods and other rare devices into Northumberland. There, in Newcastle, the iron borers became in time tools of common sale. Lord William Howard bought them in 1618 for his estate in Cumberland, and in 1628 he was sending a set to his son-in-law in Gloucestershire."

*September 18.*

John Tenant, blacksmith, and Jane his wife, in consideration of a marriage to be solemnised between their daughter, Margaret Hyndmers, widow, and Robert Fenwick, weaver, convey a house and garden in Pilgrim street to William Totherick, slater, and Matthew Milborne, weaver, in trust for the said Margaret and Robert. The premises are bounded west by the street, east by the "Ayrick-borne," north by William Rand's house, and south by Robert Watson's.

*October 1.*

Taylor, the water poet, on his "penniless pilgrimage" from Scotland by Newcastle to London, arrived in this town, where he found the noble knight, Sir Henry Widdrington (a name which first occurs amongst us as Widdringtona, in the middle of the twelfth century). "Sir Henry," says the pilgrim, "because I would have no gold nor silver, gave me a bay mare, in requital of a loaf of bread that I had given him two-and-twenty years before, at the island of Flores," in the Azores. [J. C.]

*October.*

The new Tyne conservancy commissioners reported their proceedings to the privy council twice a-year, not quarterly, as ordered by article 22 of last year's regulations, and the following is a specimen of the return they made. It covers the half year ending at Michaelmas, when Lionel Maddison's mayoralty terminated :—

"Imprimis, we humbly certify, that upon every information or presentment that has been made unto us of any ballast suffered to fall or be cast into the river of Tyne, or of any wharf or staith that hath lien down, whereby any earth or rubbish did or might wash into the said river, or of complaint made of any other prejudice done, or which was likely to happen to the same ; we have from time to time called the offenders before us, and as the case deserved, have thereupon, not only imposed and taken fines of some of them for their offences committed, but also enjoined others by certain days, and upon great penalties, to repair and amend whatsoever wharfs or else was in decay, or that might hurt the river. And yet, notwithstanding, some of them have been fined since for their neglects, and have yet again further time given them to repair the same staiths upon penalties.

"Item, the rather to enforce such as enjoy and occupy coal staiths, or shores, to enter bond according to your lordship's orders, and to maintain the same in such manner as the river should receive no hurt thereby, we ordered in March last that no licence or tickets should

be granted to carry any ballast up or down the river, for the building, filling, or backing of any such staiths lying upon the same, until such time as the lessees and occupiers thereof should first enter bond according to your lordships' said orders, for the maintaining and keeping the same staiths in good repair, so as no prejudice should happen thereby to the river. Whereupon many have since entered bonds accordingly, and others have also promised so to do, whereunto we will have a due respect to call them.

"Item, for the preventing of ballast which is cast out of ships upon the ballast shores to fall from thence into the river. A special care is had, that all ballast be cast at the least a yard beyond the face or fore part of the ballast shores. And if any ballast, either in the casting thereof, or otherwise howsoever, be suffered to fall into the river, by negligence or otherwise (whereunto an especial eye is had), the offenders, upon information, are either punished by fines, or enforced to take up again the same or more than hath so fallen, upon which sundry have lately been presented and fined for the same.

"Item, the like care is had, and an especial order is made by us, that all sand and lightest ballast is first carried away, by the leaders and conveyors of ballast, from the shore side up into the land, to places for that purpose appointed, lest by great winds, or other accident, the same be blown or otherwise carried into the river.

"Item, for the purchasing of grounds for making of ballast wharfs, we likewise certify that there is no present need of any ; but we have already seen some places fit for that purpose, as we have certified before, which we will endeavour in the meantime to obtain against we shall have need thereof.—Lionel Maddison, mayor, George Selby, Thomas Riddell, H. Chapman, J. Anderson, William Warmouth, James Clavering, F. Burrell, Thomas Win, John Butler, Robert Chamber, Leonard Carr, Edward French."

Cuthbert Bewick, who was one of the commissioners sent to London when these articles were under discussion, petitions the privy council this month for letters to the mayor, etc., of Newcastle, to grant him an annuity in consideration of his pains in preservation of the river. Cuthbert was the father of fifteen children, thirteen of whom were born previous to the date of the petition. He died in July 1621.

*December.*

The books of the Trinity House for this month contain a resolution of the fraternity to build a gallery "beside the porch of All Saints' church," for their use, and at their sole expense. Bourne describes the erection as the "Sailors' Gallery," and states that it stood in the

north aisle. "It is said in a memorandum, made at the bottom of it, to have been built and finished by the Trinity House in Newcastle-upon-Tyne in the year 1618, John Holbourne then master." There were three Holbournes in the society about this time; John, master in 1618, Robert in 1624, and Thomas in 1627. Roger Holbourn was one of the churchwardens of All Saints' in 1630.

### 1619.

16 and 17 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

**James Clavering, Mayor, and John Clavering Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

**Mayor—Sir Peter Riddell.**

**Sheriff—Robert Anderson.**

Arms: The Mayor's as in 1604; the Sheriff's as in 1600.

*March 24.*



PIRATES still infested the seas, and an assessment was made for their suppression. The mayor, aldermen, etc., of Newcastle this day wrote to the privy council to say that the merchants of the town had been assessed for their contribution of 300*l*. They had made up, and sent, 150*l*.; and they requested authority to compel those who were slow of payment to bring in their money. Three weeks afterwards (April 16), they forwarded the "names of those that refuse to pay the assessment," and asked for a warrant to make them. The defaulters were Henry Chapman, jun., Henry Anderson, sen., Henry, John, and Thomas Cock, Ralph Gray, William Marley, James Harle, Robert Anderson, sen., John Hudson, John Wilkinson, George Huntley, William Garnett, and George Harle, all of them merchants, and some of them persons of position. Again on the 23rd April they wrote, informing the council that the corporation had appointed Claudius Delaval to receive back the moneys paid by



the town towards the contribution, and would proceed in their collections and have all in readiness when required ; and on the 25th May they sent a final letter, announcing that all the burgesses who refused payment had submitted under pressure of a summons to appear before the council, to contribute their assessments, except those who were beyond the seas.

*April 14.*

Date of the first crown lease of the castle of Newcastle. The lessee was Alexander Stevenson, one of the pages of the king's bed-chamber, the term fifty years, and the rent 40s. per annum. The Milbank MS. rather coarsely describes Stevenson as a Scottish man who came in with king James, and begged the castle of him, being "one of his close-stool." In his letters patent the king grants "all that his old castle of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and the site and herbage of the said castle, as well within the walls of the same as without, with the rights, members, privileges, etc., thereto belonging." The county prison ("wherein is kept the sons of Belial," interpolates Ralph Gardiner) and the moot-hall were excepted from this grant. With Stevenson began the peopling of the Castle Garth, and the establishment of trade in that locality, which was free from the restraints and hindrances of corporate monopolies and exclusions.

*April 28.*

Order of Star Chamber, that Sir Edward Gower, of Northumberland, be fined 500 marks for sending a challenge to — Brandling ; and that — Jamieson, an alderman and justice of peace, be fined 1000 marks for the same offence, with 200*l.* damages to Brandling, for injuring him in his trade by false slanders.

*May 26.*

John Conyers of Newcastle, gentleman, a descendant of the noble family of that name, made his will, and was buried at All Saints', 18th February following. Released to his son Roger two bonds "which he oweth, in satisfaction of his child's part." Bequeathed to sons John, James, and George, and to daughters Cecilie, wife of Thomas Husband, Dorothy Willies, and Grace and Mary Conyers, 140*l.* each ; to daughter Ann Anderson, 80*l.* ; cousin John Smelt, 10*l.* ; forgave Richard Metcalfe of East Leyton, husband of his daughter Elizabeth, 157*l.*, part of a debt of 357*l.*, and left Metcalfe's children, Michael, Mary, and Jane, 40*l.* each. In the inventory of his goods is a watch valued at 30s. Debts on specialties due to him, 1965*l.* 15s.

*June.*

The name of "Steven Jerrom, preacher," occurs in St. Nicholas' register. In a tract of sixty-four pages which he published this year, dated "from my house in Newcastle, May 12," he styles himself "preacher of the towne of Newcastle." Lowndes, the bibliographer, states that he was domestic chaplain to the earl of Cork. The tract is entitled "Origens Repentance : after he had sacrificed to the Jdols of the Heathen. Gathered from Svidas, Nicephorus, Osiander, and the Greeke and Latine Coppies in Origens Workes ; Illustrated and applied to the case of euery poore penitent, who in remorse of soule, shall haue recourse to the Throne of Grace. Diuided into three Sections : Containing 1 Origens fearefull fall. 2 His behaiour in it. 3 His worthy and sound Conuersion. Together with Origens Life and Death, and other materiall obseruations. Written by Stephen Ierom, Master of Arts, and Preacher of the Towne of Newcastle ; first for his owne exercise, and now published for the good of others.—Printed at London by Iohn Beale, for Roger Iackson, and are to be sold at his Shop neere Fleet-Conduit. 1619." Canon Raine had a copy of this rare treatise, from which Mr. Longstaffe quotes in the appendix to the *Life of Ambrose Barnes*. In 1624 Jerrom published at Dublin "Ireland's Jubilee, or Joyes Io Pæan ; for Prince Charles his Welcome Home," etc.

*July 6.*

Confirmation of the grant to Andrew Boyd in 1616 of the surveyorship of sea-coals laden at Newcastle, Sunderland, Blyth, and other places in Northumberland and Durham, to avoid deceits in the weighing of such coals. Grant to Godfrey Havercamp and Robert Davy of London; on the surrender of Sir Francis Jones, of the office of collector of impost at Newcastle and other places.—*July 12.* Grant to Edward Doncombe, Richard Bowle, Henry Lucas, and Simon Chamber, on behalf of the countess of Bedford, of certain arrears of an old custom of twopence per chaldron on sea-coals sold at Newcastle to people not franchised, due from 20 Elizabeth to 10 James I.; also a lease of the said custom for thirty-one years to come.

*August 3.*

Alexander Davison of Newcastle, merchant, acquired a messuage, garden, and orchard, 160 acres arable, 180 acres of meadow, 400 acres of pasture, and 500 acres of moor in Wingate Grange and Wingate, county Durham.

*October 19.*

Henry Smith, by deed of this date, gave 5*l.* per annum to the aged

and impotent poor who shall have resided five years in the parish of Gateshead, charged on lands in the possession of the earl of Scarborough.

*December 9.*

Petition of the merchants of Newcastle, York, and Hull to the privy council for a remission of the pretermitted customs of 3s. per cloth, lately charged by the collectors of customs, their wool not being staple wool, nor their coarse northern kerseys to be treated as cloths. Referred to the attorney-general.

Morden Tower, Newcastle, was this year granted to the fraternity of goldsmiths, glaziers, plumbers, pewterers, and painters, for a hall or meeting-place. In the previous year the joiners' company had granted the use of their hall in Pilgrim Street Gate to the slaters.

1620.

17 and 18 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

Sir Peter Riddell, Mayor, and Robert Anderson, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—Henry Chapman.

Arms : Per chevron argent and gules, a crescent counterchanged.

Sheriff—Nicholas [Carr MS. "Sir Nicholas"] Tempest.

Arms : Argent, between six martlets a bend engrailed sable, charged in dexter chief with a crescent or.

*January 29.*



RANT for life to Ambrose and Toby Dudley of the office of collecting the subsidies and customs in the port of Newcastle.

*March 8.*

Robert Shafto and William Bonner, merchants of Newcastle, were appointed by the consistory court of Durham to work the coals

belonging to the rectory of Whickham, then vacant by the death of John Allenson, clerk. The places where the rectory coal was wrought are described as "the parson's acres, Storge acre, in the fields below the church, the towle park, the field called Easter south field, the parson's half-acre in Dunston, five riggs of pasture ground in the middle field, and a parcel of land called Atthie's leazes."

*March.*

Complaints were made at this time of the quality of the glass manufactured by Sir Robert Mansell. Many glaziers petition the king that some proposed glass-works in Scotland may proceed, in order that they may not be compelled to buy Sir Robert's glass, which is scarce, bad, and brittle. To which Sir Robert replies that he has incurred great expense to improve the quality of his glass, that the scarcity is no fault of his, and that the high price is caused by a rise in the price of coals, etc., and still is lower than before his patent. In April 1621 the glaziers' company of London certify that Mansell's glass is cheap, of good quality, and plentiful, and superior to the glass brought out of Scotland.

*March 31.*

In the consistory court at Durham the hearing of evidence was begun in the cause of George Marshall, guardian of Thomas, son of Bartram Reed, deceased, against Oswald Chaitor and Henry Woldhave. All the parties to the suit belonged to Newcastle, and the action was brought to ascertain whether Reed possessed the personal estate set forth in the inventory, the allegation against the defendants being that they had underestimated the property in the interest of Woldhave, who was a son-in-law of deceased. One of the principal witnesses was Alexander Liddensdale of Newcastle, butcher, aged twenty-six, who deposed that Thomas Reed, the day before he died, sent for him and told him that he had lent 40*l.* to Oswald Chaitor, and had not received any part thereof, but only was behind with him for the boy's schooling, meaning Thomas Reed, the complainant, who was then learning with Chaitor, and said he knew not how much Chaitor would have, but he thought it was 10*s.* Witness and Thomas Reed were brother and sister's children, and witness's mother educated and brought up the said Thomas. Some twenty days before his intermarriage with Agnes Hood, deceased's last wife, and now wife to George Marshall, deceased sent for witness, and told him that he was to marry her, and she had nothing, yet he cared not, for that he had in one great chest, then in his house, 1000*l.* or 1100*l.*, and in another chest 500*l.* Witness expressed doubts, whereupon deceased went to the chest wherein he said he had 500*l.*

and opened the same, which was bagged with money to the sum of 500*l.* and above. Deceased asked witness's advice, how he should bestow the money, and he considered to give the same to Bartram Reed, his son Thomas Reed's son and father of the pupil, and to Henry Reed, who married the said Thomas Reed's daughter, and to their heirs. Deceased said he would bestow it on them, and then advised with witness, in whose hands he should order the same to be kept, who counselled him to send it to Henry Woldhave, who married one of deceased's daughters. Deceased seemed very willing, saying he knew his daughter Barbary, Woldhave's wife, would keep it safely, and he would send it thither forthwith. Witness departed, and came again next morning, and missing the said chest, asked deceased what was become thereof, who answered, "he was as good as his word, for he had sent it to Henry Woldhave's." That about a year after deceased's marriage with Agnes Hood, Henry Reed's wife came to witness, and knowing he could prevail very much with her father, desired witness to go to him to get a loan for her husband, then in some extremity. Witness complied, and deceased said he knew very well Henry Woldhave had good store of his money in his hands, and he had given him direction to pay the said Henry Reed 34*l.* out of that 500*l.* which he had sent to him as aforesaid.—Henry Reed of Newcastle, aged 40, deposed that he saw the appraisement of the goods of Thomas Reed soon after his death. Most part of the goods or household stuff were praised for a less rate than they were worth, or were afterwards sold for, namely, 30 bowls of malt, praised in the inventory to 10*l.*, sold afterwards by Chaitor and Woldhave for 15*l.*; a stack of hay praised to 5*l.*, sold for 8*l.*; two over-sea coverings, praised to 24*s.*, sold for 50*s.*, well worth 4*l.*; plate, spoons, and other broken silver, praised to 14*l.*, well worth 24*l.*, etc. Chaitor and Woldhave had for six years received of Nicholas Ridley 5*l.* 5*s.* yearly for a close in High Friar Chair, which was the said Thomas Reed's, and of a widow for a house-rent yearly 6*s.*, and sold the remainder of certain years for 20*l.* to Henry Lewen, and so have made by this one particular thing 53*l.* 4*s.*—the same being praised in the inventory at only 20*l.* Witness knew that Chaitor and Woldhave had received rent amounting to 16*l.* 4*s.* for tenements in Gallowgate, and that Chaitor owed Reed 60*l.* six months before his death. Witness further deposed that he was forced to renounce as an executor in order to prosecute Chaitor and Woldhave for the maintenance and education of his son, and that Thomas Reed borrowed of him a great chest in which to keep money and gold, and that it was sent to and was then in Henry Woldhave's house.—Defendants' case was a denial of most of these allegations. One of

their witnesses, Alexander Coutherd of Newcastle, aged sixty, servant to Henry Woldhave, denied the carrying of a chest at any time into his master's house, but added that about two or three years after the marriage of deceased with Anna Hood, there was plague in Newcastle, and the same was in a street called Westgate, "where Henry Woldhave then and yet doth dwell," by reason whereof, Henry, with his family, was forced to leave his house, and for fear of infection, would not take his own house stuffs, but borrowed of Henry Reed, whose wife was sister to Woldhave's wife, a chest wherein to put their victuals.—Percival Ellison of Newcastle, aged forty, proved carrying a chest from Henry Reed's house to the White Friar Tower in Newcastle, to a lodge or house which he had provided, by reason of the plague or infection then in Newcastle. In the end the court decreed the preparation of a new inventory, which was to be submitted to them in due course.

*May 16.*

Deed of feoffment, with livery, etc., from Henry Shadforth to William Shadforth and George Marley, of a messuage or burgage and garden with their appurtenances in the Close, Newcastle, in the several occupations of Mr. James Clavering, alderman, George Thompson, and Elizabeth Anderson, boundering north by a burgage of Robert Mores, east by a burgage and garth of Robert Cook and Richard Swan, west by a burgage of Matthew Dodds, and south by the street called the Close. To have and hold, etc., as to one moiety to the use of the said Henry Shadforth, his heirs, etc., and as to the other moiety, to the use of William Marley of Newcastle, merchant, as tenants in common of the chief lord, etc. Of same date is a deed to sever a joint tenancy between William Marley and Henry Shadforth of a house in the Close, betwixt a tenement of Henry Bowes on the east, unto the stairs that ascend to the high castle on the west, the east moat on the north, and the Close on the south.

*June 22.*

Lease from the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle to Thomas Riddell, merchant, for thirty-one years, at 1s. a-year, of a piece of ground called Salt Grasses, to the low-water mark along the north side of the Tyne adjoining Byker manor—400 yards—stretching eastward from the grounds of St. Laurence, etc., to build a ballast wharf.

*July 18.*

Joseph Browne, M.A., collated to the rectory of Gateshead in succession to Thomas Hooke.

*July 26.*

Vicar Morton's funeral. St. Nicholas' register contains a special record of the event :—"The Wor<sup>ll</sup>. Will<sup>m</sup> Morton, Archdeacon of Durham, and Vickar of Newcastle-upon-tyne, bur. Note.—The Wor<sup>ll</sup>. Will<sup>m</sup>. Morton, Archdeacon of Durham, and Vickar of Newcastle—the ffunerall was worthelye effected 26 of Julye, Anno 1620. Mr. Jenneson did preach." Morton was succeeded, 23rd September, by Henry Power.—This year a gallery was built in the north aisle of St. Nicholas', extending from St. George's porch to near the north entrance. It had the arms of the merchant adventurers on the front of it, and was known as the school gallery.

*August 18.*

Inquisition by the bishop of Durham and others into the condition of the castle of Newcastle, the result of an information exhibited against the mayor and burgesses at Easter term by Sir Henry Yelverton, the attorney-general. In his bill of complaint the attorney-general recites that the mayor and burgesses claimed inheritance in the castle and premises, with the liberties and interests, and have for many years got into their hands divers deeds, writings, and rentals relating to the same, and by colour of having the said deeds, entered and possessed the same, and caused great heaps of earth to be laid up against the walls, by the weight of which many parts of the walls are broken down, any man thereby having ingress and egress since 1st April, 1 James I.; and all the said deeds belonging to his majesty are come into the possession of Sir Peter Riddell, knight, mayor of Newcastle, James Clavering, and William Warmouth, aldermen. He prays that writs may be directed to the mayor, James Clavering, William Warmouth, Robert Shaftoe, William Cooke, Bartram Liddell, Robert Bewick, Anthony Morpeth, William Hathericke, Francis Anderson, and others, commanding them to appear before the court and answer to the said bill.

The mayor and burgesses in their answer say that they imagine that this information is exhibited against them by one Alexander Stevenson, esq., who by colour of a lease procured from his majesty of an old ruinous castle, standing within the walls of the said town, seeks to call into question, not only the ancient liberties, but also many of the principal streets and special houses wherein many of the principal merchants and magistrates of the said town dwell, belonging to, and in many cases the inheritance of the said persons, and in that part where the coals for the common provision of the inhabitants are dug and brought; and notwithstanding the burgesses and inhabitants

of Newcastle have enjoyed the same from the Conquest, as by divers charters and other records can be manifested. They further say that the said town is a very ancient town and borough, and (so they think) much more ancient than the said castle, and they hope to prove that king John by his charter did demise and grant to the men of Newcastle, and their heirs, the said town, with all the appurtenances, for the fee-farm of 100*l.*, to be paid yearly to the said king and his heirs; and did further grant 11*os.* to be divided and assigned to those who lost their rents by reason of a new building under the castle, and that they should enjoy the said town and its liberties without interruption, which charter was confirmed by Henry III. in the eighteenth year of his reign, since which time the mayor and burgesses of the said town have enjoyed the same.

The jurors found that the castle was in a state of great dilapidation. The keep was "very ruinous," and the roof wholly taken off and spoiled of all its lead and tiles, so that the prisoners of the county of Northumberland who were kept in the lower vaults and parts of the tower were "lying so miserably, basely, sordidly, and dangerously, that the showers of rain, snow, and hail descended on their heads." The sum of 80*9l.* 15*s.* would scarcely repair the gaol and great tower and make them fit for the king's service. "Within the site and circuit of the said castle the inhabitants of the town of Newcastle have made a certain dunghill or lea-stall in and against the outer wall of the said castle, on the west side of the said wall, and have located, placed, and cast much rubbish and other dirt and nuisances there, etc., the length of which dunghill contains 98 yards, the height 10 yards, and the breadth 32 yards. And by reason of the weight of the dunghill, etc., in and against the wall, etc., a great part of the said wall, containing in length 40 yards, in height 10 yards, and in breadth 2 yards, was, and still is, totally subverted and prostrated, etc., so that in the opinion of the jurors the sum of 120*l.* will scarcely repair the same wall." Fuller details of the inquisition appear in Mr. Longstaffe's paper on the castle—*Arch. Æliana* (New Series), iv.—106, etc.

In this inquiry a delineation of the open ground beyond the Virgin Mary Hospital—The Forth—makes its appearance. It is described as a certain parcel of land called the Fryth, lying beyond the walls of Newcastle, abutting on the south upon a small close called Goose Green Close, now or lately in the tenure or occupation of George Wilkinson, and so extends itself unto the close called Dove Cote Close, and thence southerly to the furthest ditch of the close, contiguous to the corner of the hedge nearest the common way leading to the lands called the Fryth, and so by and across the said common way unto the little rivulet or syke in the bottom of the valley, and so



passing the said syke upwards to the said close called Goose Green Close.

In like manner the town moor, or castle moor, is described as containing 848 acres, beginning at a certain house called Sick Man's House [Barras Bridge] on the south, and so extending to the fields of Jesmond on the east, to a certain corner there, and from thence turning westward to the gate leading from Newcastle to Morpeth, and so on westward near the limits of Coxlodge on the north to the corner of the Nun Moor ; on the west to a certain corner where a hedge was anciently, near the Cowgate leading from Newcastle to Hexham ; by the boundaries of the fields of Elswick on the south to the gallows, and from thence turning westward and north by the bounds and territories of East Field on the west to a certain corner of the Castle-field, and turning south and by east, by the boundaries of the Castle-field on the south to the said house called Sick Man's House.

*August 21.*

Petition of Robert Brandling, surveyor of coal-mines, "for an examination into the abuses of Sir Peter Riddell, mayor of Newcastle, and others, who laid heavy impositions on coals, engrossed the ballast wharfs, and rented the king's mines at less than a thirtieth of their value, to the loss both of his majesty and his subjects."

---

A MS. minute from the archives of a local family, printed in T. J. Taylor's paper on the coal trade, explains the nature of the duties upon coal at this time :—

"The state of his majesty's revenue upon the coals standeth thus :—

"First a composition was made between queen Elizabeth and the hostmen of Newcastle for 12d. the chaldron to be paid unto her upon all coals going thence and to be spent within the kingdom, and at the same time she imposed 5s. the chaldron upon all coals which should be transported out of the kingdom.

"And these two, the 12d. and the 5s., she demised to farm first to Sir Ralph Bulmer, and upon forfeiture of his lease for not payment of his rent, king James demised the same to Sir William Rider, Sir John Trevor, Sir Marmaduke Darell, and Sir Thomas Bludder.

"But upon complaint both out of Ireland and of Wales, Guernsey, and Jersey of the unableness of those countries to bear that imposition both the said queen and king James discharged the imposition for coals going into those parts, and gave order to the lord treasurer to allow the farmers defalcation for it.

“In the year 1620 . . . , upon surrender made by the farmers of their lease, and in consideration of a great increase of rent, the said imposition of 5s. for coals going into Ireland was, at the suit of the farmers, commanded to be renewed, and by them to be received, which was done for one half year or thereabouts, but upon like complaint out of Ireland it was again discharged, and defalcations allowed to the farmers.

“At the same time it pleased his majesty, the said king James, to impose further upon all coals transported into foreign parts—viz., 3s. 4d. upon the stranger and 20d. upon the English, which impositions were not added to the farm as an augmentation of their rent, but being estimated at the yearly value of 2,400*l.*, the farmers were required and in a manner enforced, to purchase the same of his majesty for the term of twenty-one years, and to satisfy his majesty they did in regard of his then present use of money, and paid for the same 16,300*l.* and odd pounds, with condition that if the receipt of the said 3s. 4d. and 20d. did not amount to the sum at which it was rated—viz., 2,400*l.* by year, but did fall short above 500*l.* by the year, that then the lord treasurer should allow them what loss they sustained above 500*l.* a-year out of the rent reserved upon their farms.”



PEW STANDARD IN ST. NICHOLAS', NEWCASTLE, 17TH CENTURY.



THIRD DECADE—1621–1630.



1621.

18 and 19 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Henry Chapman, Mayor, and Nicholas Tempest, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—William Jenison.

Arms : Azure, a bend or, between two swans argent.

Sheriff—Henry Liddell.

Arms : Argent, a fret and a chief gules, the last charged with three leopards heads or.



FTER governing for six years without a parliament, the king summoned both houses to assemble at Westminster in January. Newcastle was represented by

Sir Henry Anderson and Thomas Riddell,  
Knights.

A committee on religion and supply, obtained by Sir Robert Phillips, presented a report, directed against the policy of the court, in which popery was described as incompatible with

protestantism and freedom, and the king was adjured not to cultivate friendship with Spain, but to marry his son to one of his own religion. James admonished the Commons in his wrath not to meddle with his state mysteries, but to know that they had their seats, not of right, but solely of grace. The answer of the Commons was a protest asserting those rights and privileges which parliament now enjoys ; and the king, with the journals of the House before him in council, passionately tore out the record with his own hand. Phillips, and Pym, and Coke, and others were cast into prison ; and, in short, the great war of the seventeenth century was begun. [J. C.]

Parliament sat a little over a year, and while it lasted two local questions gave animation to the debates. One of them was the oft-recurring subject of the coal trade. On the 27th February the journals of the House record the first and only reading of a bill intended to throw the trade open :—" An Act for the free traffic of sea coals, stone coals, and pit coals in and out of the counties of Durham and Northumberland, acquitted and discharged." At the afternoon sitting of the day after New Year's day (26th March) " Mr. Brandling [Robert Brandling of Felling, M.P. for Morpeth] moveth that the patent of Newcastle coals may be brought in ; whereby they have received 500,000*l.* ; and that the hostmen impose 2*d.* upon a chaldron, whereby they have raised 200,000*l.*" To which proposal Mr. Solicitor objected that this might concern the king, and therefore the House had better not be hasty, but hear what the Newcastle men had to say at the first access. But as the Newcastle burgesses had gone, Mr. Brooke suggested that the matter be stayed till the next access—*i.e.*, till the House had an opportunity of hearing the representatives of Newcastle on the subject. Less than a month afterwards the general committee of the House named " a monopoly by Newcastle " as one of the grievances to be considered. In December, on the second reading of a bill for repairing Donwich haven, Sir Thomas Riddell warned the House against laying " such great impositions upon coals, corn, etc.," mentioning that 16,000*l.* per annum was already granted upon the first named commodity, and after three divisions the bill was rejected.

The other local matter discussed in parliament was the proposed representation of the county palatine. On the 6th March a bill was introduced into the Commons which gave two knights to the county and a dozen members to its boroughs—Gateshead, Darlington, Durham, Hartlepool, Stockton, and Barnard Castle. In the course of debate the fourteen were whittled down to eight—two each for the county, the city, and Barnard Castle, and in that state the bill passed a third reading. It was sent to the Lords, and on the 31st May their

lordships read it a third time. So far all was well. Only the king's assent was needed to give the bill the force of law, but that assent never came. Parliament was dissolved 8th February 1622, and the county of Durham remained unrepresented, with a brief exception during the Commonwealth, through many eventful years.

*April 24.*

A subsidy roll of this date makes us acquainted with the names of the principal inhabitants of Newcastle, and the sum that each of them was called upon to contribute. Subsidies were payable in respect of reputed estates, after the nominal rate of 4s. in the pound for lands, and 2s. 8d. for goods, but the assessment being made according to an ancient valuation, the amount to be contributed by each person was a very moderate sum. In Newcastle, the highest payment, that of Sir George Selby, was 40s.

*Parish of St. John.*—On goods alone, Timothy Draper and Henry Chapman, 16s. each ; Nicholas Tempest and Catherine Selby, widow, 13s. 4d. each ; Thomas Power and Claudius Delaval, 10s. 8d. each ; Oswald Chater, Henry Woldhave, Edward French, Thomas Ewbank, James Bitton, Margaret Smith, George Wilkinson, Dorothy Stow, widow, and Robert Henderson, 8s. each ; and thirty-one strangers with their wives, 8d. each. Total, 9*l.* 3s. 4d.

*Parish of St. Nicholas.*—On lands, Sir George Selby, 40s. ; Sir Henry Anderson, 32s. ; Sir Thomas Riddell, 24s. ; Robert Delaval, Thomas Surtees, Margaret Cook, and Christopher Mitford, 12s. each ; Roger Anderson, Anthony Swinborne, John Hedworth, Anna Anderson, widow, and Lionel Maddison, junior, 8s. each ; Michael Waterhouse and Lancelot Shafto, 4s. each. On goods, Henry Chapman, mayor, William Warmouth, William Hall, and Alexander Davison, 16s. each ; Henry Maddison, Robert Anderson, Barbara Riddell, widow, Robert Bewick, John Clavering, and William Cock, 13s. 4d. each ; Lionel Maddison, senior, Francis Anderson, James Clavering, Francis Burrell, John Milbank, Robert Ledger, and Henry Bowes, senior, 10s. 8d. each ; Cuthbert Gray, Bulmer Ile, Cuthbert Ellison, Richard Swan, Charles Selby, John Robinson, William Sherwood, Elizabeth Kirkley, widow, Henry Eden, Henry Cock, James Carr, Ralph Carr, sen., John Butler, Ralph Cock, Thomas Butler, Robert Bowes, Henry Lawson, Gawen Aydon, Henry Shadforth, Matthew Milburne, Barbara Milborne, widow, and Christopher Mitford, jun., 8s. each ; eight strangers at 8d. each. Total 29*l.* 12s.

*Parish of St. Andrew.*—Lands—Charles Hedworth, 8s., and

George Hayropp and Robert Browne, 4s. each. Goods—Richard Fountayne, 8s. Total, 24s.

*Parish of All Saints.*—Lands—Cuthbert Prockter, 12s.; Gerrard Cock, 8s.; Robert Wilkinson and Martin Errington, 4s. Goods—Sir Peter Riddell, 21s. 4d.; Robert Shafto, 16s.; Henry Rivers and William Jackson, 13s. 4d. each; William Bonner and Leonard Carr, 10s. 8d. each; Anthony Nicholson, Nicholas Ridley, Anthony Errington, Robert Andrew, Abraham Booth, William Harrison, William Pattison, Thomas Crome, William Peacock, Richard Neelson, John Holborne, William Cooke, and John Stobbs, 8s. each; and 215 strangers at 8d. each. Total, 18*l.* 0s. 8d.

*July 20.*

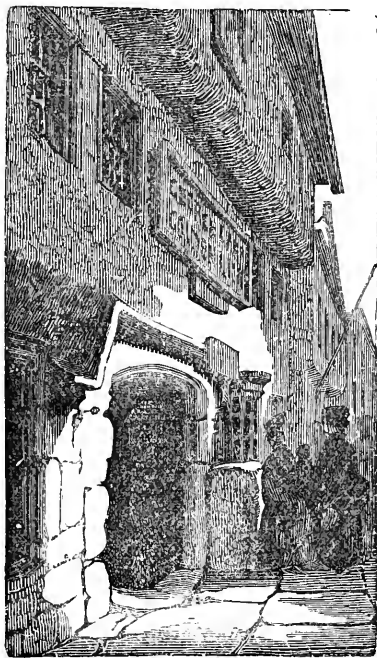
An ordinary of the incorporated company of butchers of this date enjoins them to meet every year on Ash Wednesday, to choose their two wardens; that apprentices should serve at least eight years, five of which must expire before a second apprentice can be taken; that no brother should be partner with any foreigners, called crockers, on pain of forfeiting 5*l.*; that no one should kill after nine o'clock on Saturday night, nor keep open shop after eight o'clock on Sunday morning; that no brother should buy, or seek any licence to kill flesh in Newcastle during Lent, without the general consent of the fellowship, on pain of forfeiting 5*l.*; that none should kill either at Lent or any other time, within the liberties of the high castle, being in the county of Northumberland, on the like pain for each offence. That any butcher, although not a brother, might expose good meat to sale in the market, from the hours of eight in the morning till four in the afternoon. There is a later order of the society, that no free brother should blow a calf's pluck, or any part of a calf, except calf's close-ear, nor any other goods but a cow's udder, under a penalty of 6s. 8d. unforgiven.

---

A report from the mayor and aldermen of Newcastle as the conservators of the Tyne, addressed to the privy council on 10th April, states that during the half year from Michaelmas they had failed to obtain reformation of abuses at Felling wharf, belonging to Robert Brandling. The wharf, they report, is in a state of decay, and soil thrown upon it, some of which falls into the river. All other abuses are rectified. In the September certificate they state that they have fined shipmasters allowing ballast to fall into the river, answered the complaints of Cuthbert Bewick, and taken soundings of the river, "which is as deep as ever within forty years past." Cuthbert Bewick,

as we have already seen, had petitioned for the surveyorship of the Tyne, and recompense for his services in its preservation. His claim was referred to the judges of assize; and the judges—Sir John Denham and Sir Thomas Chamberlain—in their report to the privy council, state that Bewick, although summoned, did not appear before them to plead in behalf of his petition. They found that a jury of twelve persons sat weekly to judge offences against the preservation of the river; that the commissioners were diligent in the use of precautions against all abuses; and that Bewick had already received 100*l.* for his services.

There was a very powerful reason for Bewick's absence from the inquiry entrusted to the judges. On the 13th July, obeying the summons of a higher tribunal than that of king James, he was laid in St. Nicholas' church with his kindred. Two months afterwards his second wife, Barbara, daughter of Edward Craster, was delivered of the fifteenth child born of his two marriages.



THE GOLDEN LION INN, NEWCASTLE, IN 1840.

1622.

19 and 20 JAMES I.

Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

William Jenison, Mayor, and Henry Liddell, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—Sir George Selby.

Arms : Barry of ten or and sable.

Sheriffs—Robert Ledger and William Jackson.

Arms of Ledger : Argent, between six mullets a bend gules, charged with a martlet azure in dexter chief.

Ledger died in April of the following year, and William Jackson [the town clerk?] occupied the shrievalty for the remainder of the term. Bourne, Brand, and the Adamson MS. give Ledger the name of "Richard." In the Carr MS. and St. Nicholas' Register he is entered as "Robert" Ledger.



SIR THOMAS RIDDELL of Fenham, second son of Sir Thomas Riddell of Gateshead, M.P. and ex-mayor, was appointed about this time recorder of Newcastle, in succession to Sir John Jackson, son of the town clerk. He married, seven years later, Barbara, daughter of Sir Alexander Davison, and was the progenitor of the Riddells of Swinburne Castle, Cheeseburn Grange, and Felton.

April 4.

The fraternity of merchant adventurers in Newcastle issued an order to restrain the secret transportation of money, gold, plate, or bullion, or any foreign gold or money more than was requisite for necessary expenses, tolls, etc., by the brethren of their fellowship, under pain of being disfranchised. Among the goods exported by the fraternity at this period, as appears by their books, were rye, hops, madder, cordage, hemp, flax, tow, iron, resin, soap, pitch, tar, honey, sugar, wine, wainscot, clap-board, oars, frying-pans, dripping-pans, etc.



*April 6.*

The London chandlers and other dealers in coal petition the privy council to take cognisance of former petitions relative to "frauds" committed by the hostmen of Newcastle in mixing their coals, and to afford them speedy redress, alleging that the answers of the hostmen tend only to delay for their private enrichment. Petitioners are directed by the council to suggest some course for remedying the disorders complained of. On the 20th May the hostmen issue an order on the subject. They recite that since the grant of 12d. a chaldron to the queen, "divers great abuses have arisen and grown by the secret and disorderly loading of the said coals, to the great prejudice of his majesty's revenues and the farmers of the said 12d., and of the imposition of such coals as are transported beyond the seas—as, namely, in the covert lading of great quantities of coals, and false and short entries of the same, and by the lading of divers ships by the bulk and in gross, and not by the due measure of keels and lighters," of which, and of other abuses, complaint had been made by the farmers and collectors. "Whereupon we, the said fellowship, have heretofore, according unto our duties and the tenor of the aforesaid letters, by divers ways and means attempted and endeavoured to perform his majesty's and their lordships' commands, which having not taken that good effect we expected and desired, and being now again, by process forth of Exchequer chamber, summoned to answer, have thought fit to refer the management of the vent of coals to certain choice and principal men of the company who we assure ourselves will be careful both of his majesty's benefit and their own credits in the faithful disposing of the business committed unto them. And to that end the governor, stewards, and fellowship of hostmen have ordered in manner and form following—viz.:

"We do order that Sir Peter Riddell, Mr. Thomas Tempest, Mr. Thomas Liddell, Mr. Robert Shaftoe, Mr. Alexander Davison, Mr. William Bonner, and Mr. Robert Anderson shall load and lay aboard, by such servants as shall be by them appointed, any coals belonging to any brother of this fellowship, and shall contract with the master of ships for the same at such prices as they can agree, and shall think the coals shall be worth, and the money which shall be received for the same at the end of every week shall be delivered to the owner, the necessary charge being first deducted.

"It is ordered that they shall see all men's coals loaded with indifferency—that is to say, in due proportion for times and numbers as conveniently as may be done according to the numbers hereafter set down.

"That they have a special regard to their servants and book-keepers, that the entries made for all such coals as shall be by them laden aboard of any ship or other vessel within the river Tyne either to be spent within the realm or else transported beyond the seas.

"That the book-keepers give their continual attendance in the hostmen house for the speedy dispatching of ships.

"That all the hostmen under-named make sufficient provision of keels according to the proportion of his number, and shall keep them at all times in readiness and good repair. And to the end there be no default in any of the said keels for want of measure to the prejudice of the buyer. And that all such keels as have not been already measured this year shall be forthwith duly measured according to the statute in that case provided.

"To the end that this may the better continue, if all men be equally and alike dealt withal, it is likewise ordered that Sir Peter Riddell, Mr. Thomas Tempest, Mr. Thomas Liddell, Mr. Robert Shaftoe, Mr. Alexander Davison, Mr. William Bonner, and Mr. Robert Anderson shall weekly see the account of their book-keepers, and give to every one his due proportion of money which shall be due for his coals sold and laden and vented that week. And at the end of every two months, at the least, every man shall be made even in his delivery of coals, according to his proportion, unless the fault do appear to be in himself.

"That they do not sell any man's coals for this present year at any greater price than the same hath been sold for heretofore.

"That they go to pits and staiths as often as conveniently they can, and there take order that all sorts of coals shall be clean wrought and way-led, and made merchantable.

"The number of coals [tens] which every brother of the fellowship hath to vent this year as follows:—Sir George Selby, 750; Sir Thomas Riddell, 900; Sir Peter Riddle, 300; Sir Francis Brandling, 500; Sir Nicholas Tempest, 600; Thomas Tempest, 900; Henry Liddell, 700; Thomas Liddell, 800; Francis Burrell, 150; Henry Madison, 700; Robert Shaftoe, 550; Alexander Davison, 450; Mary Hall, 450; Robert Hodgson, 600; Henry Chapman, 700; Barbara Riddell, 450; Robert Anderson, 350; William Bonner, 600; Robert Bewick, 500; Nicholas Blaxton, 550; Barbara Milburne, 60; Robert Gray, 500; Joseph Clavering, 400; Lyonell Madison, 300; Ralph Madison, 300; Henry Anderson, 125; Thomas Crome, 400; Thomas Hall, 120; Henry Eden, 350; William Sherwood, 225; Charles Tempest, 140. Total, 14,420.

"The order to take beginning from the present 20th April, and to continue until the 5th of January next."

The coals in the following divisions were to be loaded by agreement. In the first the owners were content to have them loaded by Mr. Robert Anderson and servants; in the 2nd division, by Mr. Alexander Davison and servants; 3rd, by Sir Peter Riddell and servants; 4th, by Mr. Thomas Liddell and servants; 5th, by Mr. Robert Shaftoe and servants; 6th, by Mr. Thomas Tempest; and 7th, by Mr. William Bonner.

	TENS.
1.—Mr. George Selby, 750 tens; Sir Nicholas Tempest, 600; Mr. Robert Anderson, 350; Sir Francis Brandling, 300	2000
2.—Mr. William Hall, 450; Mr. Alexander Davison, 450; Lyonel Madison, 300; Mr. Robert Hodgson, 600; Thomas Hall, 120; Mrs. Milborne, 60	1980
3.—Sir Thomas Riddall, 900; Sir Peter Riddall, 300; Mrs. Riddle, 450; Henry Eden, 350	2000
4.—Mr. Thomas Liddell, 800; Mr. Blaxton, 550; William Sherwood, 225; Thomas Crome, 400; Francis Brandling, 200	2175
5.—Mr. Clavering, 400; Mr. Burrell, 150; Mr. Shaftoe, 550; Mr. Chapman, 700; Henry Anderson, 125 Charles Tem- pest, 140	2065
6.—Mr. Thomas Tempest, 900; Mr. Henry Madison, 700; Ralph Madison, 300	1900
7.—Mr. Henry Liddle, 700; Mr. Bewicke, 500; Mr. Cuthbert Gray, 500; Mr. Bonner, 600	2300
	<hr/> 14,420

Subscribed by William Jenison, coalowner; George Selby, Thomas Riddle, Peter Riddle, Francis Brandling, Thomas Tempest, Francis Burrell, Robert Bewick, Robert Anderson, Henry Liddell, Henry Madison, Robert Shaftoe, Thomas Liddle, William Hall, Henry Chapman, William Bonner, John Clavering, Nicholas Blaxton, William Sherwood, Cuthbert Gray, Thomas Crome, Henry Eden, Henry Anderson.

While this formidable combination was in process of arrangement, the king granted to the poor of London an impost of 1s. a chaldron on 4000 chaldrons of coal shipped from the port of Newcastle per annum.

Among the Exchequer bills and answers is one of this year, in which Edward Duncombe and Richard Bowle, esquires, Henry Lucas and Simon Chamber, gentlemen, complained that whereas upon every chaldron of sea coal sold to people not franchised in the port

of Newcastle-upon-Tyne, twopence have been and are due to the crown of England of right and ancient custom, and that his present majesty king James, by his letters patent dated 15th July, 17 James I., gave and granted unto the said complainants and their assigns, as trustees of lady Lucy, countess of Bedford, full and free license and authority to discover all arrears and sums of money, customs and demands, which may have accrued or become due to the king in respect of the said custom of twopence; and whereas the king had granted and let to farm to the complainants the said custom of twopence, with any arrears, for a term of thirty-one years; and whereas several persons, not franchised, had brought sea coal within the said port, the complainants prayed that the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle be obliged to give the names of such persons, with the quantity of coal they bought, in order that the custom due upon the same might be received by the complainants.

The mayor and burgesses, in their answer, denied that they had at any time bought or sold any coals whatsoever, or received any duty upon any coals belonging to the complainants. They further said that the town of Newcastle was an ancient town and incorporate, and as such, that they were seized in their demesne as of fee of the said town and of the river Tyne there, extending from Sparhawke to Hedwine Stream, and of the port of Newcastle, with its rights and liberties, paying 100*l.* yearly for the same; that the said town was of great strength and a principal bulwark for defence of the northern parts, the said river of Tyne being a goodly navigable river, and one of the most commodious in the kingdom; that the charges pertaining to the fortifications of the town and the navigation of the river fell upon the mayor and burgesses, towards which they had always received certain tolls, and amongst the rest a toll of twopence on every chaldron of coals loaded at Newcastle by men not franchised, and that they knew of no act of parliament entitling the complainants to the same, and claimed the said toll as theirs by ancient custom and usage.

A commission in the ordinary form was thereupon directed to Henry Wooderington, knight, Ephraim Wooderington, knight, John Calverley, knight, and William Cocke, esquire, and the following witnesses were examined on behalf of the complainants:—Lionel Maddison of Newcastle, aged eighty-five, deposed that he knew the defendants, and that they had received twopence on every chaldron of coals from men not franchised by virtue of a charter granted in the time of Henry VI.—William Tonge, gentleman, of the county palatine, aged sixty-eight, said that he knew the defendants, and that he had a copy of a letter which was said to be sent from lord

Buckhurst, then lord treasurer, to one Connocke in Newcastle, to this effect, "that whereas the townsmen of Newcastle had run into sundry arrearages by way of forfeiture to her majesty, by reason of a statute in the time of Henry V., which forfeiture of it were taken, their whole estate would not answer it, but in respect of a free offer of 12d. of every chaldron of sea coals to be paid by the defendants to her majesty, for mitigating the penalties incurred by oastmen, it pleased her majesty graciously to pardon her forfeitures and arrearages."—William Jackson of Newcastle, gentleman, aged sixty years, stated that the town of Newcastle—viz., the defendants—was called before the lords of the council at York House by one Mr. Hills and others of the Trinity House, for taking twopence upon every chaldron of sea coals, and that one Mr. Chapman, alderman of Newcastle, and himself, being solicitors for the town, were called before the said lords, the matter being argued, and the said Mr. Hills affirmed that he and the masters of his ships had paid it for fifty years, whereupon the lords said that then they should pay it still; further, that as long as he can remember, the defendants have received the said duty of twopence.

On behalf of the mayor and burgesses were called the same Lionel Maddison the elder, of Newcastle, esquire, aged eighty-five years or thereabouts, and deposed that he knew none of the complainants; that the town was incorporated by the name of mayor and burgesses, and had been all the time of his remembrance; that they are seized of the town and river and of all the rights belonging to the same; that the town was compassed with fair and stately walls, and is the principal refuge for the country in time of war; that the mayor and burgesses bore and maintained the charges of repairs, etc., and that they had received as long as he can remember the said duty of twopence; that he had seen an exemplification of an inquisition taken in the time of Henry VI., wherein it appeared that the said duty of twopence was then, as now, taken by the mayor and burgesses.—Thomas Waller of North Shields, master and mariner, aged eighty-three years, said that he had been master of a ship for sixty years, and had always paid into the town chamber of Newcastle twopence on every chaldron of sea coal.—William Jackson of Newcastle, gentleman, aged sixty years; James Denton of South Shields, master and mariner, aged seventy-five; John Chaytor of Newcastle, gentleman, aged seventy-two; and Peter Thompson of Newcastle, aged seventy-two, deposed to the same effect as Lionel Maddison.

On the 15th June Sir Andrew Boyd petitioned the king for a grant of two-thirds of the bonds forfeited by divers shippers, for transporting coals from Newcastle without submitting to the survey, having spent

much time and money on his patent for survey, and reaped no benefit, owing to the obstinate resistance to it. The lord treasurer was ordered to grant petitioner such forfeited bonds as he thought meet.

A few days later (26th June) the privy council refer complaints of the woodmongers and brewers of London against the hostmen for mingling "unfuellable stuff" with their coals, and the answers of the accused to a committee; which committee report (29th August) that the deceits of the hostmen are very great and prejudicial; that complainants offer to pay all expenses of search, and they recommend for the present that Sir Andrew Boyd, who has already taken much pains therein, appoint John Parsons and others as inspectors to survey the coal, and that letters be written to the mayor and aldermen and officers of customs to that effect.

*September 1.*

Buried at St. Nicholas', Roger Anderson, merchant, sheriff of Newcastle in 1612-13, when his father was a second time mayor. He was the son of Frances Anderson, merchant, by Barbara Nicholson, and was baptised at St. Nicholas', 5th December 1585. His first wife, Anne, daughter of William Jackson, did not live long after their union in April 1612, and on the 20th January 1614 he espoused Jane, daughter of William Bower, of Oxenlefield. So writes Longstaffe (*Hist. Darlington*, lxxxv.), correcting Surtees (*Hist. Durham*, ii-269). From this marriage came Sir Francis Anderson, the loyalist, founder of the Anderson family of Bradley.

*December 4.*

Robert Fowberry, master of the Virgin Mary hospital, and head-master of the free grammar school, Gray's "learned and painfull man," made his will. He desires that no great cost be bestowed upon his funeral, considering his poor estate, his debts, and his children. Gives Jocelin Dickenson 8*l.* to be sent to his cousin Thomas Smyth. "To my son John, my seal that I do wear, and my desk in the great chamber. To my cousin Sara, 5*s.* in gold and my little whistle. To my sons, Thomas and Robert, all my books equally between them, which I entreat my worthy friend, Mr. Power [vicar of Newcastle], to see performed. To my son Robert, 5*l.* towards his commencement. My servant hath had her half-year wages before, and till May-day next, save that I promised her a mark more towards shoes, she being often called abroad to the market, and such like occasions. To the six brethren of the Spital, 6*s.* To my kind friend, Mr. Power, I give *Colleg. Paræ*. To my continued kind neighbour, Mr. Drap, the choice

of the two maps in my study, the other I leave to Mr. Maddison. To Henry Drap, whom God direct in all the ways of godliness, my black coffer, the key usually hanged at my purse. And as I give to my friends, so I forgive all my enemies, who, if they imagine evil against me, I freely forgive them, and live to die in charity with them. Thus I do conclude, desiring, with all humility of heart and true repentance, my heavenly father to receive my soul into his merciful hands for Christ's sake, to whom with the Father and Holy Spirit all laud, praise, power, and glory both now and ever. Amen. Written with my own hand at three o'clock after midnight." Executors—His sons, Thomas and Robert. Witnesses—H. Power, Thomas Smith, jun., and Francis Gray. From the inventory of his effects it appears that his study contained a little table, and carpet-cloth, a work desk, a seeing glass, a chair with two cushions, and two little desks. The library comprised eighty-eight books in folio, valued at 20*l.*; seventy-nine in quarto, valued at 6*l.*; small books, 7*l.*; a large map of the world in two globes, worth 10*s.* 6*d.*; a map of England and Ireland, 5*s.*; two old plain maps, 2*s.*; and two pictures, 6*d.*

*December 26.*

Dr. Jenison, curate of All Saints', of whom more will be heard presently, was the recipient of a special compliment from his flock on this date. The parish vestry met, and a motion was passed by the church-wardens and forwarded to the right worshipful Sir Peter Riddell, knight, and the rest of the four-and-twenty, that "whereas Mr. Doctor Jenison, now present lecturer, whose pains and labours in this parish is extraordinary amongst us, for better encouragement of his said pains we, whose names be hereunder written, are content willingly to pay quarterly those several sums undermentioned for his stipend." A subscription of 10*l.* 5*s.* follows.

---

Three members of the Newcastle family of Gray made their wills this year, and died shortly after. Thomas Gray, mariner, signed his on the 9th May. He confirmed to his brother, Robert Gray, tailor, a recent conveyance of two houses in Hornsby's Chare, subject to the occupation of Agnes Gray (widow of his brother Henry), and gave his daughter Barbara four other tenements there. Executor, his brother Robert.—On 3rd September Robert, the executor of Thomas, stricken down by illness, followed his brother's example. He left to his wife Dorothy for life a house in the Nowt Market occupied by their son Francis (preacher at St. Andrew's), and five tenements in Friar Chare adjoining, with remainder to Francis; to his second son William,

tanner, the house in the Nowt Market (held by Henry Page, silkman) which he bought of his brother Thomas, with remainder to his son Oswald, the inheritor paying thereout 10*l.* towards binding his son Robert apprentice ; to his son Richard, the house in Hornsby's Chare, occupied as above by Agnes Gray, he paying her 15*s.* a-year during her life, and afterwards the king's rent for the same ; to son Robert, 3*s.* 4*d.*, yearly rent from a house at the head of the same chare, held by Thomas Kay, beer brewer, under lease from his father, John Gray, deceased, and the reversion of the same. Another house in that chare to be sold for payment of his debts, first of all paying Garrett Cock, the occupier, 60*l.* mortgage, George Nicholson, 35*l.* 4*s.*, and his mother, Margaret Wigham, 22*l.* His two keels to be sold, and the money, with any surplus from the sale of Cock's house, to go to his three daughters, Agnes, Sarah, and Dorothy. Residue to his wife, the sole executrix. Witnesses—Richard Rowmaine, Francis Gray, George Nicholson, notary.—On October 26th, John Gray, butcher, bequeathed to his mother, Isabella, wife of Richard Reavely, 22*s.*; gave his sister and servant, Isabel Gray, two wheyes ; his son, John Gray, 60*l.* at lawful age, and if he died earlier, then his wife Margaret to have 20*l.*, his sister Isabel 20*l.*, and his brothers, Francis and Thomas Gray, 10*l.* each.



HEAD OF HORNSBY'S CHARE, NEWCASTLE, IN 1843.



1623.

20 and 21 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.***Mayor and Sheriffs of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Sir George Selby, Mayor, Robert Ledger and William Jackson, Sheriffs.***Mayor and Sheriffs elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Henry Maddison.**

Arms : As in 1605, but without any crescent.

**Sheriffs—Henry Bowes and William Jackson.**

Arms of Bowes : Argent or ermine, three bows in pale gules, stringed sable.



S in the previous year, the sheriff died before completing his term of office, and again William Jackson stepped in and performed the duties till the day of election. Death was remarkably busy among prominent men in Newcastle. Besides the sheriff, the town lost in succession—most of them in the month of April—Timothy Draper, the king's customer, who had married three local wives, one of them a Liddell of Ravensworth ; Robert Selby ; alderman Henry Chapman ; Cuthbert Gray ; Jacob and Henry Farnaby ; alderman Francis Anderson (sheriff 1595, mayor 1601 and 1612) ; Ralph Carr ; Claudius Delaval, the king's receiver ; Redhead, postmaster ; Christopher Mitford, coal-owner ; Oswald Chaytor, parish clerk of St. John's ; Henry Power, vicar ; alderman Robert Shafto (sheriff 1607) ; William Swan, preacher ; and Thomas Swan, notary public.

*March 30.*

Grant to Alexander Stevenson, page of the bedchamber, and lessee of the castle, of a lease of a coal-mine in Whickham, during the lives of Robert Anderson, of Newcastle, Francis Anderson of Jesmond, and Thomas Anderson of Hedley Hope.

*April 10.*

Henry lord Clifford, writing to secretary Sir George Calvert, sends the names and punishments of offenders at the gaol delivery.

Newcastle gaol is so weak that many escape from it, and so noisome and infectious that many prisoners die. Requests 100*l.* of forfeited recognisances to spend on repairing it. Much false money, scarcely distinguishable, is abroad ; but the coiner is taken. Tyndale and Riddesdale men are the most cunning thieves. Many steal from hunger. A course is taken for catechising youth and erecting a free school.—On May 15th a warrant is issued to pay 100*l.* to lord Clifford for repair of the gaol at Newcastle, to be levied from recognisances forfeited at the assizes there.

*April 19.*

Henry Chapman, merchant, buried at St. Nicholas'. In his will, dated September 17th, 1620, he gives to his wife Rebecca, in full satisfaction of the covenants dated 19th September 1606, between his brother-in-law, Samuel Garrand, and himself, the sum of 1600*l.* in money, and jewels, etc. ; his dwelling-house in Newcastle for life, and afterwards to his nephew, Henry Chapman ; to his niece, Mary Bonner, one of his brother Matthew Chapman's daughters, 25*l.* ; to his niece, Elizabeth Kirkeley, another of his brother's daughters, 25*l.* ; to his niece, Ann Eden, 25*l.* ; to his nieces, Anne and Johan White, daughters of his sister, Emmot White, 40*l.* each ; to his son-in-law, Sir John Howland, 3*l.* to buy a gold ring ; and to his loving daughter-in-law the like.

*April 22.*

The mayor of Newcastle writes to secretary Calvert, referring to his consideration the indiscreet words of Lawrence Rusforth of Acklington Park, who told Eleanor, wife of Cuthbert Bates of Newcastle, that the traitor, Thomas Percy, had appointed him to wait for him with two horses and a boy, and if he came not, to go away.

*April 24.*

Among the notable men belonging to Newcastle who were smitten down by death in the spring of this year was Cuthbert Gray, merchant and coal-owner, father of William Gray, the first historian of Newcastle. By his will, dated 19th April, he left considerable property to be divided among nine children. To his first-born, William, he bequeathed houses, land, etc., outside Pandon Gate, houses at Gateshead, and his interest in certain coal-pits which he shared with his wife's relatives, the Huntleys, subject to payment of his wife's thirds. To his wife he left his house in the Side, with the plate, furniture, and stock-in-trade, all his interests in ships and keels, and the leases of Newbiggin, Higham Dykes, Bellasis, Newham, Whitby

Moor, and East Denton pits for life, with equal remainders to William and John. To the latter he gave his mansion in the Side, called "Marley's Land," and 100*l.* to repair it, together with 200*l.*, payable when he attained his majority. His seven daughters were to receive 200*l.* each when they came of age, or married, and he remembered, with suitable tokens of affection, his brothers Edward, William, and Oswald, his sister Elizabeth, brothers-in-law George Huntley, John Butler, and Jacob Ferinsed, uncle Cuthbert Anderson, cousins John Mitford and Ralph Gray, brother Robert Anderson and wife, and their son William Huntley, vicar Power, Robert Jenison, Mr. Alvey, preacher, Robert Henryson, physician, and many others. —(See a paper in the *Archæologia Æliana*, N.S., xi.-65.)

May 9.

The principal officer under the corporation as conservators of the Tyne was the "Sergeant of the Water," known afterwards as the water bailiff. Charles Mitford occurs at this date as holding the office, and he was probably the first occupant. His duty was "to prevent all default against the haven and river of Tyne; to seize to the use of the mayor and burgesses all such merchandises as are conveyed on shore in suspected places; and to look after, preserve, and maintain the royalties, privileges, and liberties of the port."

May 18.

In filling up the vacancy which the death of Robert Fowberry had created in the mastership of the grammar school, the crown and the corporation were at variance. The king, through secretary Conway, wrote on the date above quoted to his friend the mayor, desiring him to admit a Mr. Conyers to be the new master. But the corporation had already made up their minds to confer the office upon Edward Wigham, master of arts, one of the under-masters, who had married the widow of John Gray, and, therefore, bore some sort of cousinship to many of the principal families in Newcastle. They assembled on 10th June to consider the matter, when Conyers received only seven out of twenty-five voices, and the courtly mayor wrote the same evening announcing the failure of his nominee. He expressed his sorrow that the letters he had received from Conway, and other privy councillors, though read at the meeting, failed to secure Conyers's election, and to show how hopeless was the chance of this man succeeding he enclosed a statement of the votes given by each member of the corporation. From that document we learn that he (the mayor) made the nomination, and that he was supported by Sir Thomas Riddell, Sir Peter Riddell, William Jenison, Sir Nicholas

Tempest, Robert Anderson, and Anthony Swinburne. Sir Henry Anderson declined to vote at all. He yielded all obedience, he said, to his majesty's request, yet forbore to give his vote, and would give satisfaction of his reasons. The following members refused to accept Conyers, and voted a negative :—Lionel Maddison, James Clavering, Henry Maddison, Robert Shaftoe, William Jackson, William Hall, Henry Chapman, Robert Bewicke, John Clavering, Henry Bowes, John Milbank, Henry Lawson, Abraham Booth, Richard Kirkhouse, Thomas Davison, Richard Romaine, Henry Wouldhave, Richard Browne. In August Wigham was appointed, and at the same time he was presented to the mastership of the Virgin Mary hospital by the king, to whom, says Brand, the right of presentation had reverted through lapse of time. The question whether the hospital mastership was donative or presentative had been previously referred to the attorney-general, who decided that the new charter of the hospital made no change in that particular.

*June 16.*

The commissioners for the passage of the seas write to lord Zouch from Dover, informing him that a young man lately landed with a trunk directed to Sir Thomas Riddell of Newcastle, in which were found beads, letters, pictures, and certain Jesuitical prohibited books and manuscripts. The youth escaped. His papers are sent up, and instructions are requested.

*June 20.*

Will of Christopher (son of Robert, and grandson of alderman Christopher) Mitford. Leaves to brother Henry, the fourth part of the tithe corn of the rectory of Newcastle ; to Jane and Margaret, Henry's daughters, 100 marks each ; to Jane, daughter of his brother Anderson, deceased, 100*l.* ; to Robert Clarkson and Thomas Clarkson, sons of his sister Jane, 200*l.* and 100*l.* respectively ; to Thomas Legard (son of sister Jane by a second husband), 200*l.* and the plate and household stuff ; to their mother, Jane Legard, his five salt-pans at South Shields and his collieries in Gateshead and Elswick ; to Thomas Muschampe, 20*l.* ; to his cousin, Robert Brigham, 10*l.* ; to his sister-in-law, Elizabeth Mitford, 10*l.* Executrix—Jane Legard.

*July 21.*

The parish clerk of St. John's, whose name frequently appears in these pages, passed over to the great majority. "Oswald Chaytor, clerk of this church, and weaver," is the entry in the register, and his tombstone in the chancel bore the inscription, "Oswald Chaytor,

lining weaver, 38 years clerk of this church, departed to the mercy of God, July 21., A.D. 1623, aged 68 years."

*September 3.*

Henry Power, vicar of Newcastle, buried in his own church after only three years' ministry there. He was succeeded, 27th November, by Thomas Jackson, D.D., a ripe scholar, a prolific theological writer, "much followed and admired for his excellent way of preaching, which was then puritanical." Bishop Neile made him his chaplain, and in 1625 gave him a dispensation to hold the rectory of Winston together with the vicarage of Newcastle, which the king confirmed.

---

The letters patent granted in the autumn of 1622 to Sir Robert Sharpey and Alexander Hedley, nominees of the dukes of Richmond and Lennox, of the office of surveyors of sea-coal at Newcastle, Sunderland, and Blyth, for preventing certain abuses and deceits in weighing base, low-priced coals with good coals, were regarded with great disfavour. In March this year the House of Commons discussed the matter on a report by Sir Edward Coke from the committee of grievances. The report stated that the patent granted the surveyors 4d. a great chaldron, and amounted to 3200*l.* per annum for twenty-one years. It was an imposition upon commodities which the king himself disliked. A former patent to Boyle [Boyd?] and another also revoked, and there was a proviso in this one that it should be void when six of the council should declare it unfit. The house ordered Sharpey and Hedley to be sent for in Easter week. A proposal that the patent be not put in execution till further order be taken was not entertained.

Others had grievances in connection with the coal trade besides the House of Commons. The shipmasters conveying Newcastle and Sunderland coal to France petitioned the king against the injury done to their trade by special licenses granted in France to bring over coals; some London merchants, they stated, had offered to employ them instead of the Hamburgers and Flemings employed by France. In like manner the shipmasters of London, Ipswich, Harwich, and other coast towns trading to Newcastle for coals, had their grievance. They complained to the privy council about the behaviour of the hostmen of Newcastle, alleging that these great monopolists continued to prevent free trade, compelled buyers to take refuse coal, and used deceits in the measuring of it. In their opinion a Newcastle hostman was a monopolist who sold bad coal and gave short measure, and they were not the only persons who held that opinion. Among the

State Papers is a list of persons (dated 21st May) who, with others upon further inquiry to be certified and returned, were accused of combination to reduce the sale of coal to seven of their number, and of prohibiting a free market at Newcastle. The list contains the names of Sir George Selby, mayor ; Sir Thomas, Sir Peter, and George Riddell ; Sir Nicholas Tempest, senior and junior ; Thomas, Henry, and Roger Liddell ; Henry Anderson, Alexander Davison, Francis Burrell, Robert Bewicke, William Bonner, Henry Chapman, James Clavering, Thomas Crome, Henry Eden, William Hall, Robert Hodgson, Lionel Maddison, Robert Shaftoe, William Sherwood, and Thomas Surtees.

Next, the farmers of the coal dues had a thrust at the hostmen. There is in the Record Office a bill of complaint addressed to the barons of the Exchequer by Sir Thomas Lake, Sir John Trevor, Sir Marmaduke Darrell, and Sir Thomas Bludder, knights, stating that "Whereas the hostmen, with the consent of the mayor and burgesses, granted to the crown 12d. for every chaldron of sea-coal, stone-coal, or pit-coal, to the water measure of Newcastle, which should be sold or shipped out of the haven of Tyne to be spent within this realm, and not transported beyond the seas ; and whereas his present majesty, by letters patent, dated 19th January, in the eighteenth year of his reign, granted to the complainants the said sum of 12d. for twenty-one years, paying a yearly sum for the same ; and whereas the hostmen are not only enabled by their charter to make laws and ordinances for the better payment of the said sum of 12d., but the king, by his letters to the said mayor and governor, as well showing their indirect proceedings in lading ships by the bulk, and not by the measured keels (as by act of parliament provided), as straightly charging them to assemble together for reformation of the abuses, that no seller of coals should presume contrary to the statute ; whereupon the said governor and hostmen did not only assemble, but did put in writing certain orders whereby they might better take knowledge of the coals paid for according to the grant. The said orders and ordinances have not been put into execution, but for what reason the complainants know not, and some of the said hostmen persevere in their practice of secretly contriving the loading of ships by the bulk, and concealing many chaldrons of coals, without paying the sums due to the complainants, whereby the said complainants shall be unable to pay the sums of yearly rents reserved upon their lease." The farmers prayed that a writ of subpoena might be directed to the hostmen, charging them to appear before the Court of Exchequer and answer to the same.

Then the attorney-general went before the barons of the Exchequer with a bill of complaint. He alleged that the mayor and burgesses

"time out of memory" had enjoyed the sole trade of loading and shipping coals, the company of hostmen ordering and having the management of the same trade, no foreigner being able to use it, nor any freeman of Newcastle, until admitted into the company of hostmen, which they might be by payment of a small fine; that the mayor and burgesses and company of hostmen had incurred great penalties and forfeitures against a statute made, 9 Henry V. [1421], for measuring keels, and another, 21 Henry VIII. [1530], for loading and delivering goods, etc., in Newcastle, and against an act made 1 Elizabeth [June 14, 1558], appointing a time for unlading merchandise; and the town of Newcastle being much damaged by defects in former charters, the charter was renewed [1600], by which the hostmen were to be incorporated and the said forfeitures pardoned; in consideration whereof 12d. upon a chaldron of coal shipped within the port of Newcastle should be paid to the queen and her successors; that this was regularly paid until John Brandling, a freeman of Newcastle (but not a hostman), combining with other persons, sought to subvert the course of trade by withstanding the government of the hostmen, and refused to pay the custom of 12d., inciting others to do the same, by which 200*l.* is due to the king; in which doings Brandling had been aided and abetted by the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle.

The mayor and burgesses denied that they had incurred any penalties against the statute, and they said that John Brandling had detained, or caused to be detained, the said custom against their sanction. John Brandling, on his part, stated that by grant from his father [Robert of Felling] he was interested in certain coal-mines for one year [1621-22], and thought it lawful to vent his coal in the Tyne to any shipmen who would buy the same, being willing and ready to pay all customs. He was anxious to be admitted a hostman, but was put off from so doing for nearly a year by the governor and brethren. He offered to pay the custom, but they would not receive it. He had no intention to defraud his majesty, neither did he incite others so to do.

A commission was thereupon directed to Sir John Calverley, and William Smith, touching the alleged custom of toll to be paid by every free burgess for selling and delivering coals in the river to aliens. Depositions were made by William Jackson, gentleman, aged 60; Lionel Maddison, alderman, aged 86; John Chaytor, gentleman, aged 72; Francis Anderson, alderman, aged 64; Charles Selby, clerk of the town chamber, aged 40; William Pattison, vintner, aged 68; Robert Selby, merchant, aged 30, all of Newcastle, who stated that the custom and usage was that every free burgess, both hostmen and others, selling and delivering coals within the river of Tyne to any alien born, were accustomed to pay the sum of sixteenpence for every

chaldron of coals, Newcastle water measure, by them sold within the port, for and to the use of the mayor and burgesses towards the defraying of the common charges of the corporation, and any free burgess selling coals to any subject of the realm not a free burgess of Newcastle pays threepence for every chaldron to the mayor and burgesses. That John Brandling refused of late to pay the said duties, as his father, Robert Brandling, always paid for the coals wrought at his mines, although the same were demanded of him.

Inquisitions respecting the rights and privileges of the mayor and burgesses were now becoming frequent. The attorney-general filed another bill of complaint before the year was out, referring this time to the old subject of the castle, metes and bounds, customs of manor, etc. It was addressed to Sir John Calverley and Thomas Surtees, who in due course took down the depositions of Peter Thompson, aged 72, William Pattison (67), John Chaytor (73), Thomas Shevill (87), Richard Kirkhouse (73), George Liddell (80), and Robert Ellison (62), all of Newcastle.

Peter Thompson deposed to knowing the town of Newcastle, with all its parts, members, streets, and precincts, and the castle, with the grounds called the Castle-moor, the Castle-field, and the Firth or Frith, and the streets called the Close, Balygate, Backrow, and the Side, of which the mayor and burgesses were seised in right of their corporation, and had wrought the mines upon the Castle-moor for their own use. That the streets mentioned were in Newcastle and not within the county of Northumberland, nor within the precincts of the castle. That there had been for many years two fairs held yearly, upon Lammas day and St. Luke's day, upon the Castle-moor, which are proclaimed by the mayor and burgesses and their officers—each fair lasting eight days, the mayor and burgesses taking the profits of the same—at which time the mayor and sheriff hold a court of “Pye-powder” for deciding of controversies. That every year at Easter and Whitsuntide the mayor and burgesses perambulate the Firth, the insignia of office being carried before them. That 4*l.* yearly is the sum paid to the king for the farm of the Firth, where they have their musters and train their soldiers. That there are twenty-four wards in the town, the aldermen having charge of the same, and each ward has constables belonging to it. That as long as he can remember, the walls surrounding the castle have been in great ruin and decay.

The testimony of the other witnesses was much the same as that of Peter Thompson.

---

The Trinity brethren had their bible and the lock of the great



door mended, costing 2s. ; gave Edward Burton's wife and four ship-broken men, 6s. ; paid the musicians for music upon election day, 10s., and on the same festive occasion distributed 12s. worth of bread among the poor.

## 1624.

21 and 22 JAMES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.**

*Mayor and Sheriffs of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Henry Maddison, Mayor, Henry Bowes and William Jackson,  
Sheriffs.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—William Hall.**

**Sheriff—Lionel Maddison.**

Arms : The Mayor's as in 1608 ; the Sheriff's as in 1593 ; but no crescent in either.



ING JAMES' last parliament—*i.e.*, the last parliament of his reign—met in February. The burgesses of Newcastle elected as their representatives—

**Sir Henry Anderson and Sir Peter Riddell,  
Knights.**

Sir Henry is named by Mr. Forster, in his *Life of Sir John Eliot*, as prominent in that formidable group of members known as the Northern men, and as a warm advocate for giving help to the protestants of Bohemia.

*April 1.*

The half-yearly report of the mayor of Newcastle and his fellow commissioners for the conservancy of the Tyne, concerning their proceedings since Michaelmas, 1623, certifies that they have ordered the repair of sundry wharfs broken down in the winter, forbidden the men of Gateshead to throw ashes, etc., near the river, and fined ship-masters who threw their ballast into boats on the river. Bourne states that about this time a person was sued for building houses in Sandgate, within the flood-mark of the Tyne, and was obliged to pull them down at his own expense.

*May 17.*

The title of earl of Newcastle and duke of Richmond was conferred by letters patent of this date upon Ludowick, son of the Scottish duke of Lennox. At his death without issue the earldom became extinct.

*May 20.*

In the House of Lords a petition to the king touching popish recusants was read. It had been sent up from the Commons, and contained the names of persons holding offices of trust, who were either open recusants or suspected of ill affection to religion, or had wives, children, or servants of that character. Among them were the following local persons:—"William Jenison, esquire, reported to be a commissioner of the peace in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, and that he is suspected to be popish, and backward in religion." "Sir Thomas Riddell, knight, certified to be a commissioner of the peace in the bishoprick of Durham, and that his wife is a popish recusant." "Sir William Selby, knight, and Cuthbert Heron, esquire, certified to be commissioners of the peace in Northumberland, and that their wives are recusants." Their lordships did not adopt the petition, though they stated that their hearts went with that which was propounded therein. Their way was to proceed on oath, and hear the defence of the accused, "which the shortness of time in this case can in no means permit." But they offered, if the Commons approved, "to move the prince his highness privately to acquaint his majesty with this as with a matter of State." The Commons did approve, and "rendered most humble thanks unto the prince his highness that he is pleased to intimate their request unto his majesty," etc.

*June 1.*

The Maison Dieu on the Sandhill was conveyed to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle by Sir Richard Lumley, a descendant of its founder, Roger Thornton. Bourne states that the consideration money was 100*l.*; Brand adds that an annual rent appears to have been reserved. The place is described as "all that building of stone covered with lead, standing near to the water of Tyne, and to the east part of the town's chamber of the said town of Newcastle, being about sixteen yards in length, and anciently part of and belonging to the hospital of St. Catherine the Virgin, commonly called Thornton's hospital."

*June 4.*

The sheriff, Henry Bowes, was buried in St. Nicholas' church. He was the eldest of eleven children born to Thomas Bowes, merchant-

adventurer, of Newcastle, one of whom, Elizabeth, was the wife of Ralph Gray, merchant, while another, Margaret, was united to Thomas Reay, merchant, and a third, Mary, married her cousin, Henry Bowes the younger. By his union with Anne, daughter of Francis Anderson of Newcastle, merchant, the deceased sheriff was the father of Francis Bowes, afterwards Sir Francis, of Thornton Hall, in the county palatine, to whom garter king-of-arms in 1639 granted the arms of Sir George Bowes:—"Ermine, three long bows bent palewise, in fesse gules, in chief three torteaux for a difference." Sir Francis married, first, Eleanor, daughter of Henry Maddison of Newcastle (who died in April 1636), and second, in January 1642, Margaret, daughter of Robert Delaval of Cowpen. Three other of the sheriff's children contracted alliances with wealthy local families. Barbara married Ralph Jenison of Elswick, Roger was united to Barbara Carr of Cocken, where he resided, and Thomas, who followed his father's business as a merchant in Newcastle, took to wife Jane, daughter of Robert Shafto.

In October the family vault was again opened, to receive the body of Anne, the mother of the departed sheriff. By her will, dated 30th September, she gave all her household stuff to her daughter, Margaret Reay; a silver piece to her daughter, Elizabeth Gray, and similar tokens to her grandchildren and other kindred. The residue she gave to her three daughters, Margaret, Elizabeth, and Mary.

*July 12.*

Charles, lord Stanhope, master of the posts, to secretary Conway:—The officers, constables, etc., of Newcastle refuse to assist George Swan, his majesty's post, in taking up horses on warrant, and even forcibly resist him. Requests that some of the offenders may be sent for. In this reign it was settled by an order in council, that any person, whether a public officer or a private individual, furnished with a council-warrant, should have prior claim to post horses and entertainment; and Newcastle did not stand alone in its occasional resistance to the mandate. In 1630, a few years after the accession of Charles, when Sir Cornelius Vermuyden was riding post from London to Boston, one Edward Whitehead sturdily refused to obey the royal warrant at Royston, and was told that he should answer for his neglect. "Tush! do your worst!" was his scornful reply; "you shall have none of my horses, in spite of your teeth!" [J. C.]

*September 29.*

Andrew, or Anthony Hebson, parish clerk of Gateshead, by his will of this date left rent charges on various houses in Gateshead,

amounting annually to 20s., for the benefit of the poor of that town. The Hebsons were a family of parish clerks on both sides the water. Thomas Hebson occurs as parish clerk of Gateshead at a visitation in 1578, and at St. Andrew's, Newcastle, there were at least two of the name who filled the same office. In the register of that church is an entry—"Thomas Hebson, son of Barnard Hebson, clerk of this church, 'chosd' clerk in Jarman Stanton's room, by Mr. Alvey, vicar of this town, the 25th day of April 1635." And this item is followed by a record of his marriage, the baptisms of his nine sons and two daughters, the burials of his father and mother, ten of his family, some of his relatives, his wife (2nd February 1655), and lastly, in another hand, of course, his own burial on the last day of the year 1659.

*November 4.*

The mayor, aldermen, etc., of Newcastle send to the council a statement of grievances in the levying of excessive fees by the officers of customs in that port and its members; they request a reformation, and to have a table of regular and reasonable fees set up in the custom house.

*November 6.*

Secretary Sir Edward Conway writes to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, that the king wishes them to increase to 100*l.* per annum the allowance to Dr. Henryson, whom, at his recommendation, they have appointed physician to the town, and who is tied to a continual and laborious attendance, and not allowed to leave the town without license.

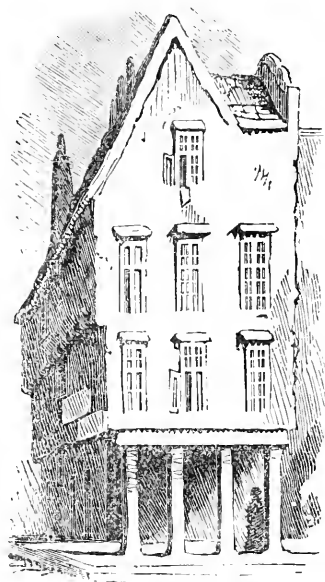
*November 24.*

Petition of the merchant adventurers of Newcastle to the council, to be permitted to ship in strangers' bottoms small quantities of cloth, as formerly, into the Low Countries and Germany, which, for the last five or six years, they have been prevented from doing. The council granted this request, and ordered that goods might be exported in foreign vessels when there were no English vessels at Newcastle bound for the ports of which the goods were destined.

---

The surveyorship of Newcastle coal continued to be a bone of contention. Sir Robert Sharpey, one of the new surveyors, writes to lord Zouch on the 20th February, that he is at Newcastle to reform abuses, and sends an extract from the tables in the custom house relative to the grant of his employment. In April reasons are offered to parliament by both surveyors in favour of their patent. On the

21st May Sir Andrew Boyd petitions for an order to the chancellor of the exchequer to deliver to him the forfeited bonds of the Newcastle coal-shippers, two-thirds of the benefit of which had been granted to him, and for permission to commence suits and make compositions thereon, reserving one-third to the king. A few days later the House of Commons present an address to the king, enumerating the grievances of which they request redress, and amongst them is the "patent for surveyorship of Newcastle coals." The Commons complain that the office was made perpetual; that 3000*l.* per annum was raised by it; that the office was fruitless, for the mixing of coals was not to be discovered by search, but only by fire; that no complaint had been made to the lord mayor; that consent had been unduly obtained by promises and threats, while the parties whose hands appeared to the request had confessed it was not voluntary; that the office was prejudicial to the king's interests, for two voyages were hindered by this pretended search, the king lost 3000*l.* per annum, and it was very burthensome to the subject, etc., etc. The king, however, maintained his rights, and, on the 9th June, he commands the mayor, aldermen, and fellowship of hostmen to assist the patentee in the execution of his office, "which was interrupted by the questioning of it in parliament, but restored on signification of his pleasure." All shipowners and coal-carriers are required to conform.



OLD HOUSE NEAR ST. NICHOLAS' CHURCH. REMOVED IN 1838.

## 1625.

22 and 23 JAMES I. 1 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—***William Hall, Mayor, and Lionel Maddison, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—***Mayor—Thomas Liddell.**

Arms : Argent, fretty and on a chief gules, three leopards' heads cabossed or.

**Sheriff—Ralph Cole.**

Arms : Argent, a chevron engrailed between three scorpions sable ; on a chief azure three fleurs-de-lis or.



JAMES I. died on Sunday, 27th March, and was succeeded by his eldest son, Charles I. The first parliament of the new monarch met in May, and

**Sir Henry Anderson and Sir Thomas Riddell,  
Knights,**

sat in it as members for Newcastle. King James had no love for parliaments, and Charles still less ; it was not surprising, therefore, that when the Commons refused to settle the revenue of tonnage for more than a year, declined to grant sufficient supplies for a war with Spain, and commenced to discuss grievances and arraign ministers, the king dismissed them after only a few weeks' sitting. To this parliament Sir Thomas Wentworth, afterwards lord Strafford, and Sir Thomas Fairfax of Denton, were returned for Yorkshire. The return was contested by Sir John Savile, and there was a keen conflict in the Commons. During its progress, "a leading northern member, who represented Newcastle, Sir Henry Anderson," proposed that the matter should be deferred till next day, but objection being made to this course, an amendment was moved and carried, and the return declared void. Parliament met at Oxford in its second session.

The new reign did not begin auspiciously. Fear of a Spanish war, dread of pirates, a visitation of plague, and the uncompromising attitude of parliament, created a general feeling of discontent and discomfort. Dangers from without, being the least known, were the

most magnified, and hurried preparations were made for strengthening the navy and defending the principal seaports of the kingdom.

In May the *Elizabeth* of Newcastle was taken by Dunkirkers, near Yarmouth, and was carried off to France as a prize, the crew being pillaged of their money and effects. In October the privy council ordered a sharp letter to be sent to Newcastle, requiring the authorities to provide for the defence of the town, and the mayor and aldermen replied, sending up one of the latter to explain matters. They told the council that there used to be good store of great ordnance in the king's castle at Tynemouth, but it had been removed, and as for the castle in the heart of Newcastle, it was in great ruin. Towards the close of the month bishop Neile wrote to secretary Conway enclosing a letter sent to him by the mayor and aldermen of Newcastle, in which it is stated that fourteen or fifteen great ships of Dunkirk were on the west coast, and had burnt sixty Holland fishing ships, and taken two Holland men-of-war, and that one hundred and thirty Dutch fishermen, placed on board English ships by the Dunkirkers, had been brought to Newcastle. They had asked the bishop to join them in advising for the general safety, and in relieving the distressed fishermen. He had advised that Tynemouth haven should be secured, and the Hollanders set on shore relieved. Newcastle, his lordship stated, lay open to the enemy, who, besides the spoil of a great, populous, and very rich town, might burn two or three hundred ships; for there were oftentimes so many lying in the river. Next day the mayor and aldermen report to Conway that of eight Hollanders the Dunkirk great ship sunk two off Scarborough, and put the rest to flight, and that the fishermen brought to Newcastle had been relieved, and 20*l.* given to a vessel to land them at Enckhuysen. Later, Conway is informed by lord Clifford that Tynemouth and Holy Island ought to be fortified, for Sir John Fenwick, the captain of the former place, declares it to be so ruinous that he cannot remain there, while in Holy Island the arms are not fit for service. As to the cost, Newcastle makes a poor offer of 300*l.*, Cumberland a like sum, and Westmoreland a base excuse of poverty. Before the year closed the king's founder of iron ordnance had received orders to cast three hundred pieces for the purpose of arming thirty Newcastle ships to assist in the national defence.

To the fears of impending war were added the terrors of pestilence. The plague broke out with great violence in the summer, and continued through the great part of the following year. It swept away the inhabitants of London at the rate of a thousand a day. Trade and industry were paralysed, homes were deserted, people fled into the open country with their portable treasures and died among

strangers, grass grew in the streets, distraction and consternation prevailed everywhere. It was not so destructive in the northern parts of the island, yet the registers of the parish churches in Newcastle teem with entries of burials. Those of St. John's are in a confused state from the number of interments, the haste with which dead parishioners were put out of sight, and the difficulty of obtaining information respecting them. As on previous occasions, the plague respected neither rank nor wealth, neither youth nor beauty. It visited even Naworth Castle. Lord Clifford, writing to secretary Conway, 10th September, reports that Sir Francis Howard's lady "took the infection from a new gown she had from London, so as she died the same day she took it, whereupon they are all dispersed [from Naworth] most miserably, with the greatest terror in the world, since they had all been with the lady, and all in danger by that means. God knows it is a most lamentable accident, and worthy of the tenderest pity to have all his children and grandchildren in this apparent danger, and the lady of Sir William Howard, the hope of his house (being his heir) great with child."

The horrors of plague, and the preparations for war, did not tend to lessen religious rancour. Lord Clifford tells Conway, in September, that in Northumberland the papists are so powerful, and are so adhered to by the thieves, that his majesty cannot find one man in ten to do him service. Such a faction among the gentlemen, that if those that are firm in religion be not encouraged, his majesty's best servants will come to the worse. Newcastle is so infected with plague, so ill-fortified, and so ill-neighbour'd, that 500 men could ransack it.

In November bishop Neile complained to the mayor of Newcastle that Sir Robert Hodgson of Hebburn, and Mrs. Dorothy Lawson of St. Anthony's, were dangerous neighbours. The *Life of Dorothy Lawson*, published in 1851 by G. Bouchier Richardson—a most interesting book—shows that the lady was a devoted adherent of the old faith, and the suspicion that fell upon her was not altogether without reason. She had just removed from Heaton to a new house at St. Anthony's, which she had erected, "first, because the place was holy, dedicated in catholic times to St. Anthony, his picture being decently placed in a tree near the river Tyne for the comfort of seamen; secondly, for that it was more private than Heaton, and free to frequent her chapel. . . . At the end of the house, opposite to the water, she caused to be made the sacred name of Jesus, large in proportion, and accurate for art, that it might serve the mariners instead of St. Anthony's picture; and when the fabric was ended, she dedicated the whole to St. Michael and St. Anthony, and each room (the chapel excepted, which was consecrated to the Mother of God)



was nominated and publicly known by the name of some particular saint." Mrs. Lawson's biographer, a Jesuit father, describes the place as "most commodious for pleasure, and pleasant for all commoditys; the rich and renowned river Tine ebbing and flowing in such a proportionable distance from the house, that neither the water is inconvenient to it, nor does it want the convenience of the water. The vast confluence of ships which it brings to Newcastle for coles (and this is looked upon one of the greatest sorts of traffic in the kingdom) pass under the full view of the house, and, notwithstanding, catholics may resort thither with such privacy, that they are not exposed to the aspect of any. The name of Jesus she caused to be drawn so public for two reasons. The first, her own safeguard and protection, esteeming herself ever safest under that standard, especially when she had greatest frequent of priests. . . . The second reason, that seafaring men of other nations might know it to be a catholic house, and fly thither, as truly they did in swarms for their spiritual refection."

The mayor of Newcastle refused to become a persecutor to please bishop Neile, and on the 19th November he replied, "I understand my lord of Durham desires to be satisfied concerning the danger of Sir Robert Hodgson and Mrs. Lawson's houses, and of the recourse of each other by boats over the river. I, and the aldermen my brethren, hearing of such report, made inquiry touching the same, and could find no matter thereof but idle report, other than their keeping of boats for crossing the river.—Your loving brother, Thomas Liddell."

Two of Mrs. Lawson's ghostly fathers—Morse and Robinson—were apprehended and lodged in the town prison about this time. Her biographer relates, as a proof of her courage, that "the two prisoners in Newcastle above-mentioned she furnished with church stuff, washed their linen, provided with all necessaries for clothes and victuals, and though Mr. Morse was known to belong to her, nevertheless preferring his conveniency before her own safety, she adventured to visit him in the gaol, and suited the magistrate he might enjoy the liberty of the town for his health." Sir Thomas Riddell, too, suffered for the recusancy of his wife and eldest son. The authorities of the bishopric, searching for arms, found at his house a pike and a corslet, and these they confiscated, lest his son might be tempted to use them.

*February 16.*

Died, George Nicholson, notary-public and deputy town clerk, the latter an office created, probably, by the appointment of the town clerk to fill the office of sheriff, void by death on two recent occasions.

He was buried at St. John's, where Brand noted his tombstone with the following singular Latin inscription :—

“Corpus heus animus conclusum  
Liberâ clarus  
Est fruitur spectat carcere  
Pace Deum.”

which, “with great diffidence,” he ventures thus to translate :—“The body, alas! is shut up in this prison—the bright mind enjoys free peace and beholds its God.”

*March 30.*

Three days after the death of the monarch whom he delighted to honour, the foremost local man of his time—Sir George Selby—was gathered to his kindred. Sir George had filled all the great offices of trust in the two northern counties, and the tomb closed upon him full of honours if not of years. Four times he occupied the municipal chair in Newcastle; he successively discharged the duties of sheriff there, and in the counties of Northumberland and Durham; twice represented his fellow-burgesses in parliament, and once was elected M.P. for his native county. “The king’s host,” as he was called, had lived sumptuously, and he was buried sumptuously, in a magnificent tomb in St. Nicholas’ church, where beforetime stood the Percy shrine. “His effigies, and that of his lady,” writes Bourne, “are at length, resting upon pillows, with uplifted hands. On the south of the tomb are the effigies of his children in a posture of prayer, kneeling with raised hands.” A marble stone, placed in the wall, recited his family history in flowing Latin, which, turned into English, reads as follows :—“George Selby, knight, sprung from the ancient and illustrious family of the Selbys, of Selby, in the county of York, four times mayor of this town, sheriff of the county palatine of Durham, ennobled by his hospitality and service towards the most illustrious king James. Certainly everywhere most celebrated for his splendid and ever-abounding style of living, and the dispensing of a most liberal table. Supremely fortunate in his marriage with his wife Margaret, daughter of John Selby, of Twizell, esquire, by whom he had five sons, who were cut off by a premature death, and six daughters, who survived him; four married before his decease—Margaret, the eldest, to William Belasyse of Morton; Elizabeth, the second, to John Delaval of Dissington, knight; Barbara, the third, to Robert Delaval, heir of Ralph Delaval of Seaton, knight; Isabella, the fourth, to Patrick Curwen of Workington, esquire, and two unmarried, Dorothy and Mary. Having enjoyed through the whole

course of his life a most ample good fortune, in this he was truly happy, that, in undoubted hope of the full remission of all his sins, and of his resurrection to eternal life, he commended his spirit into the hands of the Lord, and in him fell peacefully asleep, 30th March 1625, aged 68. His body lies buried in a crypt under this tomb, built by the care of his dear wife. By virtue of love, honour, and memory, though dead I live." Within the palisading surrounding the tomb was a marble tablet, bearing the names of his grandfather and grandmother—"Jesu have mercy of the sowlle of George Selbe, marchant adventurer, sometime alderman of this town (anno 1542), and Margaret, his wife, and their children (anno 1562)."



THE SELBY MONUMENT IN 1782.

Sir George was the last of a long list of Selbys who held office in the municipality of Newcastle, and a century and a-half later there was no one of his name who uttered a protest when the churchwardens of St. Nicholas' "restored" the church, and sold the monuments by auction! "All that tomb and vault in the church of St. Nicholas', Newcastle," so ran the advertisement of sale in the *Newcastle Chronicle* of February 9th, 1782, "situate at the east end of the said church, in length 18 feet, and in breadth 12 feet, as the same is enclosed with iron railings, and known as the Selby's burial tomb or vault. . . . Mr. Richard Fisher, clerk of the said church, will show the premises!"

April 1.

If the Milbank MS. quoted by Bourne could be trusted, the White Cross, at the north-west end of Newgate Street, near the Hucksters' Booths, where, for more than a century there had been a market,

was taken down about this time. It states that "this cross was pulled down that very night that Sir George Selby died and king James of sacred memory, March 24." But in this short paragraph are two mistakes, if not three. King James and Sir George Selby did not die on the same day, and neither of them died on the 24th March. And if the cross was pulled down this year it must have been badly restored, or lay in ruins a long time, for Brand quotes an order of the common council in 1687, to the then town's surveyor, to rebuild the cross, which is described as "almost quite demolished and fallen down." Local history limps over the White Cross. The Milbank MS. gives Bourne 1625 as the year of demolition, to which that writer adds, "On the place where the cross stood was a cistern for receiving the water which was then called the new water. This was lately pulled down [1736], and there is now in the place where the cross was a pillar of stone work." Then we have the order of common council in 1687 to rebuild the cross, "with steps and other conveniences." Next comes leave granted by the council (20th March 1700-1) to William Yarnold to erect a cistern "at the White Cross, on columns, removing the then pillar and dial" (which is no doubt Bourne's "new water" cistern); and finally a statement of Brand that in his time—1783—"the cross" was pulled down and rebuilt after a design of Mr David Stevenson, architect.

*August 29.*

Baptised at St. John's, Newcastle, "Ralph, son to Mr. Devereux Gardiner," an infant who in after years became the scourge of the corporation of Newcastle. His father, at this date, was writing-master at the Grammar School; in 1632 he received from the corporation a sum of 10*l*. "in respect of his poverty, for a full discharge to depart the school," and that is the last that local history knows of him. Of the son, who, settling at Chirton, married Katherine Reed of North Shields, and of his book, *England's Grievance Discovered in Relation to the Coal Trade*, we have already heard, and shall hear more than enough in the coming years.

*October 25.*

Sir Francis Anderson of Bradley sold to Mark Milbank a messuage at the Nun's Gate, Newcastle, late in the tenure of Thomas Lawson, and then of Robert Bertram, together with the Nuns and the low orchard and garden thereunto belonging, and in like occupation.



## 1626.

1 and 2 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Thomas Liddell, Mayor, and Ralph Cole, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Alexander Davison.

Arms : As in 1611.

Sheriff—Ralph Cock.

Arms : Azure, a plate in fesse between three cocks argent, crested and jelloped gules, and armed sable.



PARLIAMENT met in February and was dissolved in June. The members for Newcastle were

Sir Henry Anderson and Sir Peter Riddell,  
Knights.

Grievances, the impeachment of Buckingham and the earl of Bristol, and the arbitrary arrest of the earl of Arundel, were the principal topics of discussion, and again the king dismissed both houses without any real progress having been effected. Among local matters of interest was the introduction of a bill into the Commons to prevent the abuse of false measures in the sale of sea-coal. The bill passed through all its stages, was ordered to be engrossed, and there ended. Another bill was read a second time and referred to a committee (from which it never emerged), which proposed to punish Sir Robert Sharpey for reviving the imposition upon Newcastle coals, and prevent the like in time to come. While these measures were under discussion a list of grievances was drawn up by the Commons, and among them came the patent for the survey of Newcastle coal. Above a hundred bonds had been returned into the Exchequer against such as carried coals from Newcastle, who could get no cockets there by reason of the refusal to pay the fourpence per chaldron, and it was agreed that petition be made to his majesty for stay of these suits, and cancelling of these bonds ; Sir A. Boyd (if able), or else some one instructed for him, and — Cotham, to attend the committee of

grievances ; Sir Robert Sharpey also to attend, and bring in his new patent. But the dissolution again put an end to the movement, although later on, in November, the hostmen of Newcastle were called upon to send a deputation to London, for the purpose of explaining their objections to the patent before the lord chief-justice, and other judges appointed by the king to make a report upon the subject.

In the Lords, a committee appointed to consider the defence of the kingdom reported that in devising how they might provide gunpowder they found that saltpetre could not be made for want of sea-coal, whereupon they propounded to the house that a fleet should be set out to secure the colliers from Newcastle to London. The house took this into their consideration, as also a relation made by the bishop of Durham of the multitude of ships maintained by these coals, and of the danger of the coal works to be "utterly lost if they cease but for one month ;" and going into committee "for the freer debate thereof," it was agreed (after the house resumed) that the committee for defence should consider how the Newcastle ships might be secured. To the same committee was referred a claim of the lord admiral, that the measuring of sea-coals should be converted to the use of the navy, to which he contended it formerly belonged. Here, also, the dissolution intervened, and stayed proceedings.

Both before and after parliament had assembled, grumbled, and separated, the privy council and the local authorities were corresponding about the protection of the coast, and considering how to remedy the stoppage of trade which fear of piracy and dread of maritime warfare had produced. In the beginning of the year the commissioners of the navy informed the privy council that in their opinion two of the king's ships of five hundred or six hundred tons, and ten Newcastle ships of three hundred and fifty tons or four hundred tons, each of the latter carrying fourteen guns and sixty men, would be sufficient as a convoy for the shipping trading with the Tyne. But parliament must provide the money, and that was a serious matter ; for an estimate of the cost of setting forth six Newcastle ships with three hundred and sixty men for five months for guarding the fishermen, and for revictualling the *Hector* and *Aletheia* with one hundred and seventy men for one month, was 5688*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* Parliament, as we have seen, would do nothing till their grievances were redressed, and the national purse was empty. Idle colliers lay in the Thames and the Tyne, and the price of coals in London went up to 33*s.* a chaldron. In the beginning of April the mayor and justices of Newcastle write to the privy council, reporting "the lamentable spoil

done to this nation by the Dunkirkers, who remain on the coast taking and spoiling our ships, to the utter undoing of merchants and masters—many of the latter being taken prisoners—and to the ruin of many thousand labouring people, there being no vent for coals.” A month later an illustration of the peril which beset Newcastle shipping was sent to London. The owners of the *Friendship* (Alice, wife of Robert Young of Newcastle, the master, and her children) petitioned the privy council, stating that their ship had been captured by Dunkirkers, sent to sea by them while they detained the master in captivity, taken by two of the king’s vessels, and condemned by the admiralty as a prize. The petitioners prayed that the ships might be restored to them, and the man commanding her be held to ransom Robert Young. John Butler also writes their lordships that his ship, the *Robert* of Newcastle, having been captured by a Dunkirker, and released on ransom of 300*l.*, was immediately afterwards taken by a Dutch ship, and carried into Holland, where she was unjustly condemned to pay 150*l.* as for redemption from the Dunkirker. Prays that he may have redress against any Hollander that may come to Newcastle. To this injured townsman letters of marque were granted, and he fitted out a vessel, fitly named the *Revenge*, of two hundred tons, with one of his name—Ralph Butler—as master. Similar letters were granted to Alexander Davison, William Hall, Thomas Chapman, and William Gibbins, who fitted out the *Alexander* of two hundred and forty tons, William Gibbins, master, to prey upon the enemy.

But neither privately-owned fighting ships, nor the vessels of the royal navy, hindered the daring Dunkirkers. The former were too few to be effective ; the latter were badly officered, ill manned, and worse provisioned. Captain Gyffard reported from Portsmouth that the fleet was going from bad to worse, and that the whole kingdom would be dishonoured by their doings. Another captain wrote that when he ordered the *Mary Magdalen* and the *Lion* of Newcastle to go out to two ships, the men of the former mutinied, and many of them ran away. Thomas Liddell, writing from Ravenshelme to Sir Henry Anderson, mentions that “the mariners went to the lord admiral for pay, and forced [their way] to speak to him.” Thus the navy was crippled by favouritism and poverty, and against the latter there appeared, in the temper of the time, to be no remedy.

In this condition of things the king hit upon a notable plan of raising money. He issued a commission under the great seal to the archbishop of York and others, in which he recited, as quoted by Rushworth, that he had received information of the great loss and damages which his subjects in maritime towns, especially in the

northern parts, suffered by depredations at sea, "whereby trade from those parts are interrupted, and the city of London much endamaged for want of coals and other commodities usually transported thither from Newcastle. For redress of which evil his majesty doth think fit to appropriate and convert all such debts, sums of money, rents, penalties, and forfeitures of all recusants inhabiting in the counties of York, Durham, Northumberland, Cumberland [and six other counties], which at any time have grown due since the tenth year of king James, and are not yet satisfied, or which hereafter shall grow due, etc., to be employed for the maintenance, provision, arming, manning, victualling, and furnishing of six able ships of war for guarding and defending the coast of this realm, from the furthest north-east point of the sea unto the mouth of the river of Thames." His majesty further expressed his belief that "his subjects who are owners of coal-pits, the hostmen of Newcastle, owners of ships and merchants, buyers and sellers of Newcastle coals, have been and are willing to contribute and pay for every chaldron for the uses aforesaid." He therefore gave power to the commissioners to compound with the recusants for leases of their lands and tenements for any term of years not exceeding forty-one, and for all forfeitures due for their recusancy in not going to church to hear divine service, and appointed Sir John Saville to be receiver. In like manner he appointed Alexander Davison of Newcastle, merchant adventurer [afterwards Sir Alexander], to receive out of "the voluntary and free-will contribution of the owners, buyers, and sellers of coals, the sixpence per chaldron."

At the same time a special charge was laid upon the ports and maritime counties to furnish and set out ships for active service. This impost met with a very unfavourable reception. Richard Wynne and Toby Dudley wrote to the privy council from Newcastle on the 3rd September, that Sunderland, where the coal trade was one-fourteenth of that at Newcastle, ought to pay a fourteenth of the charge of setting out two ships for the king's service, "but the traders of Sunderland deny to yield any contribution." So also the county of Cumberland, which, write the deputy-lieutenants, "is not able to perform what is required of it in regard to the voluntary gift, but will contribute according to its subsidy." Northumberland made a similar return, praying that it might not be called to contribute with Newcastle in setting forth ships for war.

Newcastle, it would appear, enjoying special privileges and monopolies, was expected to bear the lion's share of the cost of protecting its trade and that of other people on land and at sea. Fortifications at or near Tynemouth were necessary, and the burgesses were called upon to pay a part of the cost of making them. In May 1200*l.* was



assigned for this work, and the remainder, whatever it may have been, was to be found by "those of Newcastle."

*January 7.*

The incorporated company of tailors in Newcastle issued an order on this date to reform some abuses and regulate the behaviour of the brethren upon Michaelmas Monday in the election of municipal officers :—"Whereas it is ordained by the charter of Newcastle that on the Monday after Saint Michael the Archangel, that the free companies of the town shall assemble together for the choosing and electing of such men as is most sufficient and discreet of every of their companies, and for that time being to repair unto the Spital for to give their voices to that purpose, for the election of the mayor according to the charter of this town being of famous memory; and for that some of the said company of tailors is of uncivil and lewd behaviour, and so by their rudeness and uncivil carriage is in danger to breed a mutiny amongst this company and fraternity, to the evil example of others, by which cause the company is much scandalised, both by the magistrates and other the commoners of the town. And for the reformation of those abuses we have caused to make the order with general consent, and most part of the said company, that upon the Monday next after Saint Michael the Archangel, all the said company of tailors, being freemen of this town, shall come and repair to the tailors' hall, between the hours of seven and eight of the clock in the morning, to give their voices and receive the money due for so doing, and also those which shall be so elected forthwith to attend the mayor and aldermen for the election of the mayor and other officers according to the laudable custom of this town; and also, that all such as shall be come unto the said hall for that present day shall be free for to go and come for any trespass done or committed unto the said fellowship before that day, so that no presentments shall be made nor presented by the officers, except that it shall happen there be some evil-disposed and mutinous person or persons for to make a tumult, or any uprising; and in those, whomsoever shall be found for to offend the company, he shall pay the sum of 6s. 8d. for a fine to the company for that offence; whereto we have set our hands with a free consent."

*April 4.*

King Charles's marriage to a catholic princess served to moderate the persecuting spirit of the time, and to tone down the zeal of local magnates against papists and recusants. But just prior to the wedding, and before the natural effect of such a match could be fairly appreciated in the north of England, two or three unfortunate events

happened. A ship of Hamburg—the *Flying Hart*—came up to Newcastle, and an officer of customs found in her a whole bagful of popish books; a ship bound to Calais was found to have on board a man and a boy “disguised as mariners,” the man being, it was thought, a seminary priest; another ship—the *Good Fortune*—arrived in the Tyne from Calais with “three passengers, and many books, relics, and faculties of priests.” Always on the look-out for papists and recusants, the authorities in Newcastle made a great fuss about this business. On the date above written they reported the book seizure to the privy council; on the fifteenth they announced the capture and imprisonment of the man and boy (who gave the respective names of Thomas Shepherd, born at Broome in Suffolk, and John Clopton of Idberrye, Oxon); and on 2nd May they related the apprehension of the three passengers, and the master of the *Good Fortune*, enclosing on each occasion depositions, examinations, and such other evidences of guilt as they could obtain. The mayor’s name appears to these documents, but it is known from his letter of the previous year that however severe he may have been upon foreigners who tried to smuggle in books and relics contrary to law, he was not willing to throw the odium of their doings upon Mrs. Dorothy Lawson, Sir Robert Hodgson, and other of his neighbours down the river. For that is what the bishop of Durham laboured to accomplish. His lordship made a report to the privy council, and a draft of it, preserved in the Mickleton MSS., reads as follows:—

“Upon several searches made by the sheriff for Sir Robert Hodshon of Heborne, and John Davel, his servant, and one Anthonye Berrye of Jarroe, three popish recusants, men of ill-note in that kind, and dwelling very dangerously near the river of Tyne, for the receiving and conveying of popish passengers and their carriages, of what kind soever, none of them can be found; but that upon the late discovery of their doings they absent themselves from their dwellings, so as no examinations of them, or security of their persons, can as yet be had. It also appeareth that Anthony Vandackam, a Brabanter, now in the gaol at Durham, servant also to Sir Robert Hodshon, hath been the conveyer of the said passengers from Callice to Newcastle, and knew what kind of men the passengers were, and of the books which they brought. . . . Sir Robert Hodshon’s dwelling at Heborne, Anthonye Berrye’s and John Davel’s at Jarroe, on the south side of Tyne, about the middle way betwixt the Tynemouth and Newcastle, and one Mrs. Lawson’s at St. Anthonie’s, over against them on the north side, they all being convicted recusants, and reported pragmatical in ill offices of conveying, receiving, and harbouring of persons of all sorts ill-affected to the State, is very inconvenient and dangerous;

the redress whereof, either by removing them from their habitations, and commanding them to some other places of less opportunity for their evil dispositions and endeavours, or otherwise, I humbly leave to your lordships' wisdom." An enclosure from the sheriff, Sir William Bellasis, states that with Sir John Calverley and Dr. Cradocke he sent to Sir Robert Hodgson, and also wrote to the mayor of Newcastle, "entreating his company (if his occasions would permit him) at Durham, or some other convenient place (the sickness being dangerously dispersed and daily increasing in Newcastle), and likewise that if that Anthonie mentioned in the examinations were in Newcastle, we might have him also. In answer of which from Mr. Mayor we received a letter testifying his readiness, and sent us the said Anthonie and three other examinations taken since ; the first one of them being the master of the ship's, the others two of the company of the same ship, in which there is little more than in the first, save some circumstances to confirm that the books did belong, or at least the care of conveyance thereof, to the foresaid Anthonie. But upon Monday, being met at Durham, we received another letter from Mr. Mayor, excusing his not coming, being detained about the examination of four other . . . taken the night before ; three of them coming from beyond sea, who had with them more books, relics, and divers letters, and, as he supposed, they were likely to be priests. And as it fell out we saved a journey to Hebborne, for Sir Robert Hodshon was from home, so we missed him, but Mr. Comyn, who went through his house, found a stranger there whom he brought to Durham with him, and being there questioned by us, called himself Roger Readman . . . now travelling to Newcastle to a brother of his, a seafaring man, with intention to go with him to London, and further confesseth himself to be a Roman catholic, and denied to take the oath of allegiance," etc.

An undated document of two pages in the Record Office contains further information respecting papists seized at Shields and the spread of the plague in Newcastle this year. It is a letter from Thomas Liddell, the mayor, to his brother-in-law, Sir Henry Anderson. The writer states that he has delivered Anthony, servant to Sir Robert Hodgson, understanding that the lords had given order therein, and that some men being stayed at Shields by the searchers, he went with Mr. Clavering to bring them up, and now sends their examinations. One of them will find no language but a little Latin, French, and Dutch. The writer persuades himself he is an Englishman and a Jesuit. There is found in the ship great store of books, which Dr. Jackson has viewed, and many MSS., with abundance of pictures and popish relics. Of the others, one is an English youth, who put his beads into the river, and is committed for refusing the oath of

allegiance; the third is a Scotchman. Prays Sir Henry to get a reward for the officers; such services have been too much neglected in Newcastle. Mr. Alvey has seen some of the MSS., and says that he who penned them was a good scholar. "There are yet two Dunkirkers off this coast, and that which is worse, the plague continues. Last week there were twenty-one houses infected, and fifteen died in the fields, and twelve in the town." [This document is calendared in the State Papers under date 1637, and the editor adds, "Probably written in May 1637." But Dr. Jackson left Newcastle in 1630.]

*April 18.*

The mayor and burgesses of Newcastle lease, for ninety-nine years, to Sir William Fenwick and John Fenwick, esquire, at a rent of one shilling per annum, the soil of the river between high and low water mark, from a place called the Scots . . . up the river Tyne, bounding St. Anthony's and Walker ground, to erect a ballast wharf.

*June 28.*

The governor of Calais writes to the mayor of Newcastle, that certain French ships, having gone to the Tyne for coals, intending to pay for the same with cardecues, such cardecues were seized by the searchers of the port as confiscated by royal proclamation, and he demands justice for the seizure. The mayor replies that he has nothing to do with the king's searchers of the custom house, but will give the poor men his best furtherance; and on July 11th he reports to lord-treasurer Marlborough the circumstance, and desires instructions, for the governor has threatened to stay English goods for satisfaction.

---

Gateshead parish books begin in 1626, and among the entries for this and the following year are these:—"Paid James Coats for making clasps to the rogue stob, 1s. 2d.; for carrying the town's armour, and powder and match, to Whitburn Lizard, 9s. 9d.; for the last muster going to Whitall-dike, before Sir Thomas Tempest, 8s.; to Mr. Ralph Cole for the bull "wentring," 1*l*.; for ringing on the coronation day, 1s.; to Mr. Robert Riddell, for cloth to make the "wayte" beadle and bellman each of them a coat; paid the fine estreated for want of a ducking stool, 6s. 8d."

---

## 1627

2 and 3 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Richard Neile.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Alexander Davison, Mayor, and Ralph Cock, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Henry Chapman.**

Arms : As in 1620 ; with a crescent gules, in dexter chief.

**Sheriff—Henry Cock.**

Arms : Azure, a plate between three cocks argent, combed and wattled gules, in chief a mullet or.



ILLIAM CAVENDISH, viscount Mansfield, and baron Ogle, received the title and dignity of earl of Newcastle-upon-Tyne.

A summary of the national affairs this year in which Tyneside people were interested is obtainable from the State Papers, and may be conveniently collected into a paragraph :—*April 4.*—Francis, earl of Cumberland, and Henry, lord Clifford, write to the privy council that they have sent directions, as instructed, to Northumberland, to levy one hundred and fifty men, and Westmoreland, one hundred. The justices of the latter county returned the names of their proportion, but those of the former had given them to understand that the number required could not be made ready within the limited period, and had requested further directions, which the writers dared not presume to give. *April 5.*—The mayor, etc., of Newcastle to the town council :—The charge for the three days they were called upon to set forth [for the defence of the coast and protection of the collier fleet] would amount to 5000*l.* ; and having brought together the inhabitants able to contribute to such a charge, they found that by reason of the plague, decay of trade, losses in France, and by Dunkirkers, and also by the late loan-money, they were utterly disabled, and prayed that they might not be further pressed to a charge which amounted to four score and ten subsidies. *April 8.*—Captain Francis Hooke sends to the duke of Buckingham

a report that being against Flamborough Head, bound for Iceland, as convoy to a fleet of 150 sail of fishermen, he spied a sail "which were the ragged staff." Gave chase, but was outsailed. Rescued from him a small bark, which he (Hooke) had taken into Tynemouth. On same date Hooke tells Edward Nicholas (sworn clerk to the privy council extraordinary in May) that the Dunkirkers have oars as well as sails, so that they can take ships, "and we in sight and cannot come up to help," adding that Hamburgh sloops, under pretence of carrying coals from Newcastle to Calais, carry provisions to Dunkirk. *June 14.*—Richard Caseby states, in a petition to the duke of Buckingham, that having been stayed with his ship, the *John* of Newcastle, at Bordeaux, he remained on board with his men, in hope to procure her discharge, until he had spent all that he had, but at length was forced to leave all, and repair home. Prays for loan of a French prize with ordnance and letters of marque, and doubts not to give them "such a requital jerk" as should be advantageous to the king and some satisfaction to himself. *June 29.*—Sir John Hippisley sends Edward Nicholas a letter from king Charles to the Cinque Ports, calling upon them to pay sixpence a chaldron of coals, and begs that he will stick by them, and get them off. The king's letter, dated May 29, apprises Sandwich and Dover of his assignment of revenue from recusants north of the Trent for the protection of the coasts from Dunkirkers, and his grant of sixpence a chaldron of coals from Newcastle and Sunderland, levied "by your own free consent and agreement," to supply what may fall short. *August 17.*—The deputy-lieutenants of Cumberland, apprising Henry lord Clifford of a levy of a hundred men for the king's service, inform him that ninety-two were delivered to Ambrose Topping to be conducted to Newcastle, eight having been found missing on muster. *August 29.*—Henry lord Clifford to secretary Conway :—Conference with the bishop of Durham on the propriety of sending the thousand foot of the bishopric to Newcastle. The castle at Tynemouth has not one piece of ordnance mounted. Newcastle will pay for half of the ordnance sent down. On these alarms, the thieves and outlaws of the high lands of Northumberland have begun to troop together ; but one of their captains has been taken, and will hang for it. *September 3.*—The mayor and aldermen of Newcastle inform the privy council that the loan-money assessed on Newcastle, being 263*l.* 10*s.*, was paid to the collector at once, no one refusing, and was by him paid into the Exchequer in May.

*January 3.*

From a published certificate, signed by Abraham Dawes, customer

of London inwards, it appears that 143,326 chaldrons of coals had been shipped at Newcastle and other ports from January 1626 to January 1627. 16,832 chaldrons were for foreign ports, 2288 for Ireland and the Isle of Man, and the remainder for home consumption.

*January.*

There was about this date a petition to the privy council from the shoemakers of Newcastle, in which it was set forth that, not having good hides in these parts, petitioners had supplied themselves with tanned leather from London. They prayed that they might be permitted to continue so to do, notwithstanding a prohibitory proclamation issued in December.

*March 14.*

Part of the jointure of queen Henrietta Maria was provided out of the revenues of the bishopric of Durham. The king assigned to her rents in the palatinate amounting to a large sum. Amongst them were 80*l.* from divers lands, messuages, etc., at Easington, Sadberge, Middleham, Gateshead, etc., 47*l.* 1*s.* 4*d.* from the manor of Chopwell, and 26*l.* 2*s.* 8¼*d.* from the prebends of Lumley, Pelton, Chester, Tanfield, and Urpeth.

*June 11.*

Of this date is a certificate from the mayor, recorder, and aldermen of Newcastle, that William Steward, confined in their gaol on suspicion that he was a priest, had taken the oath of allegiance, and denied himself to be a priest.

*July 16.*

The diary of Sir James Whitelock, one of the judges of the Court of King's Bench, who came the northern circuit this summer, contains copious entries of his receipts and expenditure, and among them the following of local interest:—Receipts—Bishop of Durham, 12*l.*; town of Newcastle, 2*l.*; the mayor of Newcastle (spur royall), 18*s.* 6*d.* [in another place he values it at 15*s.*]. "The northern circuits was worth to me *de claro* this year, all charges borne, the 20*l.* in the duchy [of Lancaster] allowed as part of it, 310*l.* 17*s.* 1*d.*" "Clear profits this year, less expenses, 974*l.* 10*s.* 10*d.* *Deo gratias.*"

*August 6.*

Although the king could not raise sufficient money to pay the fleet, he allowed the king of Denmark to recruit his battalions with

Englishmen. On the 5th August captain Herbert Prise wrote to secretary Coke from Newcastle, reporting his arrival there to receive 250 men, and convey them across the North Sea. He describes them as numbering only 233, and many of them very unable, with a general want of apparel. Captain Prise commended the exertions of the mayor, and the latter wrote to the privy council a few days later announcing the departure of the recruits for Stade on the sixth, on board the ship *Sara* of Newcastle, under convoy of captain James Duppa.

*October 3.*

For 200*l.*, William Clavering of Gateshead, gentleman, acquired the new house at Beamish Park, from William Andrew of Newcastle, "boolter."

*October 10.*

Bishop Neile was translated to the see of Winchester. His successor, George Montaigne, sat at Durham only three months, being advanced to the see of York in June 1628. John Howson followed Montaigne at Durham, and held the bishopric till 1631.



FOOT OF THE SIDE, NEWCASTLE. 15TH CENTURY.



## 1628.

3 and 4 CHARLES I.

**Bishops of Durham—Richard Neile, George Montaigne, and  
John Howson.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Henry Chapman, Mayor, and Henry Cock, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Robert Bewicke.**

Arms : As in 1615.

**Sheriff—Ralph Gray.**

Arms : Barry of six argent and azure, a bend gules, charged in chief with a bezant ; in chief a martlet of the third.



O Charles' third parliament, which sat from March this year to June, and from January to March following, the burgesses of Newcastle sent—

**Sir Thomas Riddell and Sir Peter Riddell,  
Knights.**

For eleven years thereafter the king governed without a parliament.

*February 9.*

The king granted an imposition of 2s. upon every chaldron of coals laden in Newcastle and Sunderland to be vended in the kingdom, and next day ordered a levy of 5s. a chaldron to be made upon coals transported to foreign parts. Both grants were made for the purpose of providing ships to guard the coasts. A month later it appeared that delay in making the levy had occurred ; for on 12th March captain James Duppa wrote to Edward Nicholas that "if some speedy course be not taken for levying the 2s. per chaldron assigned for the charge of the colliers' convoy for this year, great prejudice will ensue." The writer points out that the wind being fair for Newcastle, the colliers will return the sooner, "and this present fleet will yield 2000*l*." A few days earlier there was trouble about despatching the Iceland fishing fleet. A convoy of armed ships was wanted to waft the fleet to its destination, but was not forthcoming. Officers of the navy reported that they had pressed four ships

into that special service, and one of them, the *Amity* of Newcastle, was ready to go, but the others utterly refused. One reason for their obstinacy was the doubts they entertained about receiving pay for their assistance; and that such doubts were not ill-founded is seen in an application made later on by the captain of the *Amity*, Richard Fell, to the lords of the admiralty. Captain Fell sets forth his three years' service, first for Cadiz, then as a wafter for the colliers, and lastly as a wafter for Iceland, and prays that he may receive his pay. In May the House of Commons took up the question. On the seventh the journals of the House record "much complaint about the not guarding of our seas, and the mischiefs growing by it. . . . The privy seal for an imposition of 2s. upon a chaldron of sea-coal to be brought to the committee by Sir John Wostenholme, and such letters as he hath concerning it." Again, on the seventeenth, the matter was considered, and Sir John was directed to bring up the privy seal for the imposition of 5s. a chaldron on exported coal, "and the directions for the stay of putting the same in execution." Further progress in the matter is not reported in the journals, but "the not guarding of the seas" was one of the heads of the "grand remonstrance."

*May 14.*

There is a letter of this date from lord-treasurer Marlborough, addressed to the officers of customs in Newcastle, concerning the restriction on exporting and importing in strangers' ships, against which the merchants of the Tyne had repeatedly protested. His lordship has been certified by the officers of the port of London that the officers of the port of Newcastle mistake the meaning of the warrant of February 9th, and over-strictly interpret the proclamation. Requires them to suffer the merchants to export and import in strangers' bottoms to and from places in amity with his majesty.

*August 23.*

Assassination of George Villiers, duke of Buckingham, by John Felton, whose mother was a Durham woman. This lady, Eleanor Felton, who was in St. Dunstan's church, London, when she heard the news of the assassination, and swooned in the midst of the commotion which it created, was examined (with her son, Edmund Felton, gentleman, and her daughter, Elizabeth Done) before lord chief-justice Richardson, and gave some pieces of family history in her evidence. She was born, she said, in the city of Durham, and was daughter of William Wright, mayor in first king James, and Eleanor, his wife. Her father died about sixteen years past. Her mother was near of kin to the Andersons of Newcastle, and other northern

families. They had five sons, and she (witness) three sisters, one of whom was married to Pattison, who served lord Stanhope. Her brother Hugh, then living in Durham, had been divers times mayor of the city. She knew Rotherby (?) very well, and that it was about three miles from Newcastle. All the genteel families there were of kin to her. Such were the statements of Mrs. Felton, mother of the assassin of Villiers, the favourite of king James and king Charles. Her brother, Hugh Wright (according to Surtees), was in 1601 the last "alderman" and first mayor of Durham; and Hugh Wright occurs again as mayor in 1610, '14, '23, and '32. She had also a brother Richard, who was mayor in 1612; and her father appears as alderman (when there was no mayor), in 1581. Surtees assigns two wives to her father, but gives no name to the first. She herself supplies the Christian name in her deposition—viz., Eleanor—who would be her mother. In 1629 50*l.* was granted to her out of the Exchequer. It was to her brother Hugh, five times mayor of Durham, and to Mr. Timothy Comyn, that bishop Neile wrote on the 11th of April, 1622, from Durham House, London, wishing there were a brewery of beer at Auckland, in regard to his being there some part of the coming summer, and that it should be "well-hopt," for keeping it the better from souring; "but the brewer," said his lordship, "must be charged to look well to the sweetness of his casks, for there is never a year but I lose my beer by the mustiness of his casks." [J. C.]

---

Sir Thomas Swinburne, high sheriff of Northumberland for two years (1628 and 1629), kept a diary, in which is preserved an interesting record of events during his term of office. [Portions of it appear in the Mickleton MSS., in the *Archæologia Æliana* (old series), and in Hodgson's *History of Northumberland*.] His predecessor, Sir Francis Brandling, handed over to him on 22nd December, 1627, the county gaol in the "high castle," Newcastle, with fifteen prisoners, eight doors, ten locks, ten keys, ten pair of iron fetters, and one pair of bolts. Among the prisoners were "John Brewes, Scottishman [of Black Heddon], in the said gaol, committed for stealing of thirty-eight wether sheep [Sir John Selby's], who made an escape before the last assizes forth of the same gaol with irons on his legs;" the unfortunate gaoler who let him go—Simon Robson—"commit at the last assizes for the escape of the said Brewes, and is to answer the same at the next assizes;" and Matthew Hall, of Newcastle, "charged with the suspicion of the felonious stealing of a red lyard mare, the goods of Anthony Woodman, of Elstwick." At the summer assizes (12th August 1628) the calendar contained the names of twenty-nine

prisoners, including Matthew Hall and John Brewes before-named, and Nicholas Robson of Newcastle, tailor, "suspiciously taken with a lyard or roaned horse, riding upon without bridle or saddle, . . . a man of evil fame and behaviour as by mitt' appeareth." Hall was hung, and buried at St. Andrew's, 18th August; Robson was also hung and, under the name of "Nick Nickson," tailor, buried at All Saints' the same day. Brewes was remanded without bail till next assizes, in July, 1629. On the latter occasion there were thirty-six prisoners for trial, none of them belonging to Newcastle, except Brewes, whose trial was again postponed, but this time the culprit was admitted to bail. At the end of the year Sir Thomas handed over the gaol, with twenty-one prisoners, the doors, locks, keys, etc., to his successor, Thomas Carr of Ford.

In the *Howard Household Book* is an item of 2s. paid for a copy of the calendar at these assizes.

The expenses of Sir Thomas at the assizes in 1628 include the following items:—"Dinner for the gentlemen and others that went with me to meet the judges [at Sheriff Hill, on Gateshead Fell], being 200 men, paying for every gentleman 2s. 6d., and serving men 12d. a-piece, two days, at Edward French, his house in Newcastle, 35*l.*; wine, 12*l.*, sugar, 2*l.*, tobacco, 1*l.*, March beer, 3*l.*—18*l.*; paid to Edward French for other meals when my friend and I were there, at 12d. a-piece, one with another, 6*l.*; venison and wild fowl for the assizes [11½ bucks, 4½ stags, and 2 roes], 13*l.* 3s.; to the cook, 40s., butter, 10s., music, 20s.—3*l.* 10s.; to 24 bailiffs, for their board wages at 12d. a-day, for each of them remaining from the Tuesday that I came to Newcastle, till Monday that the prisoners were executed, being in all seven days, 8*l.* 8s.; paid the judges' men out of my own purse, 40s.; paid to the judges, Sir Henry Yelverton and Sir James Whitlock, either of them a-piece, at our parting upon Benwell hills, 40s.; to the minister of St. Nicholas' church for visiting the prisoners, 10s.; for mending the town gallows and carrying the ladders, 12s.; for burying three poor prisoners, 7s. 6d. 'O let the sorrowful sighing of the prisoners come before thee; according to the greatness of thy power preserve thou those that are appointed to die.'—Ps. lxxix., v. 12. To my host, Hutchinson, where I lodged in the time of the assizes, upon one bill, 2*l.*; at my coming away, for drink and my own men's diet, 4*l.*; for blue coats for 24 bailiffs, Lancelot Allgood, the county clerk, the two gaolers, Simon Robson and Henry Robson, the under-sheriff's man, Reynold Burrell—in all 28 coats, in every coat a yard and a-half; in all 42 yards of blue at 9s. a-yard, 18*l.* 18s.; ten blue coats for mine own men (10) at 13s. 6d. a coat, 6*l.* 15s."

With this year Sir Thomas's shrievalty should have ended. Robert Brandling of Alnwick Abbey was to have been high sheriff, but refused to serve, and retired to Scotland. Sir Thomas petitioned the lord keeper to be released from the office. The privy council, while they condemned Brandling's proceedings, and stated that the king had given directions to have him sent for from Scotland to answer his contempt and neglect, conveyed to the petitioner his majesty's will and pleasure, "that as by the law you are high sheriff of that county from the time of his majesty's letters patent granted to you of the custody thereof till you shall receive his majesty's writ of discharge, so you do continue the care of executing that place of high sheriff accordingly as you have done and do until further order be taken." So Sir Thomas was obliged to continue in the office, and his expenditure at the assizes in July 1629 were as follows:—

"In Henry Hutchinson's house in Newcastle—Given to the judges in lieu for their dinner, each of them 10 pieces, 20*l.* ; upon Tuesday night, 10 gentlemen and 17 serving men and others, at 12*d.* a-piece, 1*l.* 7*s.* ; Wednesday, dinner, when I came in with the judges, 69 gentlemen at 2*s.* a-piece, and 83 serving men and others at 12*d.*, 11*l.* 1*s.* ; Wednesday night, 24 gentlemen and others at 12*d.*, 1*l.* 4*s.* ; Thursday, 33 gentlemen and others at 12*d.*, 1*l.* 13*s.* ; Thursday night, 27 gentlemen and others, 1*l.* 7*s.* ; Friday dinner, 22 gentlemen, etc., 1*l.* 2*s.* ; Friday night, 10 gentlemen, etc., 10*s.* ; Saturday dinner, 15 gentlemen, etc., 15*s.* ; my man's three meals before the assizes, 1*s.* 6*d.* ; in beer and tobacco at several times, 5*s.* 6*d.* ; paid to Mungo Barnes, the cook, 1*l.* 2*s.* ; for a buck and a stag from my lord William Howard, 1*l.* 10*s.* ; for glasses, 7*s.* 6*d.* ; to George Reed for wild fowl, 11*s.* ; for wine by the gallon, out of Edward French's, 2*l.* 10*s.* ; for a sugar loaf weighing six pounds, at 19*d.* per pound, 9*s.* 6*d.* ; for board wages for 24 bailiffs for five days, at every one 12*d.* a-day, 6*l.* ; for 28 blue coats, given in lieu of them, 10*l.* ; for making a pair of gallows in the Castle Garth, 13*s.* 4*d.* ; to Mr. Lancelot Errington's man for oats, and his master's Barbary horse to meet the judges, 10*s.* ; for my own horse's meat when I came away, 16*s.* ; to my father's maid, Dorothy Collingwood, for her pains the assize time, 10*s.*"

The total sum expended by Sir Thomas in the two years was 677*l.*, for, besides the items enumerated in the foregoing extracts, he paid these which follow:—"Bringing John Dennyson from West Chester to Newcastle upon mine own charges, as by writ I was commanded, with the charges of three men to attend him from thence, 30*l.* The charges of the irons and gibbet, and carriage of him twenty miles from Newcastle, as by the judge I was commanded, 10*l.* Bringing his brother Edward from Carlisle to Newcastle, being three-

score and odd miles, and the charges of three men to attend him, 10*l*. Bringing Ambrose Dennison, their father, from his own house in Tynedale, in my lord of Suffolk's liberties, 5*l*. All three condemned and hanged for murder at the assizes holden at Newcastle in August 1628. ["August 19. Buried—The Denisons for murder." St. Nicholas' register.] Other three hanged at the same time, for which usually was allowed for every rope 5*l*, which is in all 30*l*. Removing and carrying one Alexander Humbleton, a notorious witch, and burnt in Scotland for the same, who was commonly called the Devil's Chancellor, from Newcastle into Scotland, and the charges of four men to attend him, where I delivered him to Sir George Hume, as by a special letter under his majesty's own hand and private seal to me directed, 20*l*. Twice going to meet the sheriff of Cumberland for the delivery of one John Foster, *alias* Clowers John, as by two several writs from the judge I was commanded, 30*l*. Removing one Ralph Sprott from Durham to Newcastle, 5*l*. Repairing the gaol and Moot Hall, where the judges sit, for these two years, and for making of bolts and locks, and other reparations about the gaoler's house, 50*l*. Twenty-four bailiffs' wages, at 40*s*. a-piece, for two years, 96*l*. The justices' allowances for eight quarter sessions, 60*l*. Relief of the poor prisoners in gaol these two years, and the Marshalseas, which, notwithstanding I had the judges' warrant for the collecting of a weekly contribution, the county withstood it, and the justices bound such my collectors to the good behaviour for their pains, and so laid the whole charge upon me, 20*l*. Sum total, 366*l*."



THE BRANKS AND DRUNKARD'S CLOAK. (PAGE 104.)

1629.

4 and 5 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—John Howson.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Robert Bewicke, Mayor, and Ralph Gray, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—John Clavering.

Sheriff—Robert Shafto.

Arms : The Mayor's as in 1618 ; the Sheriff's as in 1607.



NCE more the patent for the surveyorship of sea-coal was discussed. Objection was taken to it this time by the people of Newcastle, York, Ipswich, and various coast towns, who contended that the king was deceived in the grant, that the office was not only unnecessary, but unprofitable for the commonwealth, and void in law. The king's necessities were, however, so great that he was unable to resist the easy method of raising money which letters patent afforded him. On the 18th February lord-treasurer Weston writes to attorney-general Heath, reciting king James's grant for twenty-one years to Bludder and others of the 1s. a ton conceded by the hostmen of Newcastle, and the 5s. a chaldron imposed on coal sent foreign, at a yearly rent of 8300*l.* till Christmas, 1629, and thenceforward at 10,000*l.*, and directs him to prepare a deed extending the lease for another term of twenty-one years from Christmas, in consideration of a payment of 11,000*l.*, and a yearly rent of 8300*l.*

*January 24.*

Responding to directions from the privy council, the mayor of Newcastle has called before him, he says, the owners and masters of ships now at home, and conferred with them as to the payment of sixpence for every hundred tons of the burden of their ships brought into the Thames and Medway ; and for every fifty chaldron, other sixpence. The owners say they cannot answer till they have conferred with owners at Ipswich, Harwich, and other places. The masters of ships are willing to pay as desired.

*February 21.*

In the House of Lords a petition of James Rochester and others was read against Cuthbert Proctor, complaining amongst other things that Proctor had uttered divers idle and unfitting terms and reports against some of the lords; whereupon James Rochester, William Southgate, and Geoffery Heron were examined upon oath at the bar, and testified that they heard one William Mills report that the said Proctor had spoken some unfitting speeches of the lord Grey of Wark. It was ordered that the mayor of Newcastle and Sir John Delaval take the examination of William Mills of Newcastle aforesaid; and of such others whom James Rochester or Alice Mills shall produce, to prove that Cuthbert Proctor uttered unbecoming speeches of the lord Grey, and if the said William Mills, and one other witness, justify the same, the mayor and Sir John Delaval to take bonds of Mills and of that other witness, and of Cuthbert Proctor, to his majesty's use, to appear before their lordships within twenty days after the examinations. The house met but four times after passing the foregoing resolution, and on the last day of its assembling, 10th March, the king dissolved parliament.

*April 23.*

In a cause, the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle against Humphrey Johnson, it was this day ordered that a common brew-house kept by the defendant at North Shields should be suppressed, and that thenceforth the defendant should not by himself, or his servants, or otherwise, keep any brewhouse, or brew beer for sale at Shields, or at any other place within the port, save only at Newcastle.

*April 27.*

The mayor and aldermen of Newcastle send to the privy council a list of the names of all recusants, reporting that they caused all these persons to be indicted at the Easter sessions, to the end they may proceed to their conviction:—"Oswold Fenwicke, gentleman, and Barbary his wife; Peter Pearson, yeoman, and his wife; Thomas Ogle, gentleman, and Ellinor his wife; Adonell Sotheron, widow; Jane, wife of Robert Carr, tailor; Dorothie Rookebie, widow; Clement Ogle, gentleman; Rendall Fenwicke, gentleman, and Katherin his wife; Robert Rookeby, gentleman, and Alice his wife; Philipp Gooddrick, gentleman, and Alice his wife; Margret Doughtie, widow; Marie Moore, widow; Ellinor Rotherforthe, widow; Anne, wife of Francis Slinger, scrivener; Elizabeth, wife of Robert Spoore, barber; Elizabeth, wife of Bartram Swan, tailor; Bartram Liddell, gentleman, and his wife; Anthony Tothericke, esquire; Marmaduke Squire,



labourer, and his wife. Signed—Robert Bewicke, mayor, Peter Riddell, T. Clavering, Henry Maddison, Alex. Davison, Hen. Chapman.”

*May 31.*

Thomas Surtees, the last of the main line of the ancient family of Surtees of Dinsdale, Felling, Gosforth, etc., was buried in St. Nicholas' church. (The division of the property between the Surtees and the Brandlings has been already described, vol. ii.—286.) He married Jane, widow of Matthew Matfen (by whom she had had issue Robert Matfen, merchant, and two daughters), and their children were Isabel, married to Anthony Swinburne of Newcastle, gentleman; Mary, wife of Sir Peter Riddell; and Elizabeth, wife of Sir Charles Tempest of Newcastle, merchant. By his will he bequeathed to Swinburne the lease of his freehold lands in Elswick, and forgave him all moneys due, etc.; to Sir Peter Riddell, half the lease of Benwell coal-mine, and to Swinburne and Tempest the other half; to his sister-in-law, Katherine Carr, 5*l.* for a token; to Matthew Matfen's daughters—Katherine, wife of Hugh Selby, and Margery, wife of John Milbanke—a 30*s.*-piece for a token. Residue to his three daughters. The inventory of his goods and chattels includes money, 510*l.* 14*s.* 5*d.*; coals, and things pertaining, at Lumley and Offerton, 196*l.* 19*s.*; a fringed bed and canopy, etc.—total, 1156*l.* 6*s.* 2*d.* Funeral expenses, 151*l.* 19*s.* 5*d.*

There was formerly in St. George's porch, St. Nicholas', an inscription—

“Thomas Surteis, armiger, juxta hunc tumulum suum sepultus est, 3<sup>o</sup> die Maii, 1629, æt 63.”

Surtees, the historian, supposes that this inscription was at one time attached to a nameless monument which still remains built into the wall of the porch. The monument is a curious piece of sculpture. It bears the arms of Surtees and Grey—quarterly first and fourth, ermine, on a canton an orle for Surtees; second and third, a lion rampant within a bordure engrailed for Grey. The crest is mutilated, but appears to have been a lion passant. Supporters—on the dexter side a mermaid holding a mirror in her right hand; on the sinister side a savage wreathed about the temples and middle, holding a club in his left hand. Along the base has been cut the motto, “En Dieu est mon esperance.”

From the occurrence of a mermaid combing her hair among the ancient adornments of a window in St. George's porch, and the fact of an early member of the Surtees family at Gosforth bequeathing houses and lands to maintain a chantry in St. Nicholas', the editor,

in *Monuments and Tombstones in the Church of St. Nicholas', Newcastle*, conjectured that this old monument was erected to commemorate a Gosforth Surtees. But Mr. Longstaffe, who is a competent authority, sees no reason to disturb the conclusion of the historian of Durham. He writes :—"The disappearance of the inscription, and the introduction of the 'En Dieu,' etc., are puzzling enough. The crest is not that of Surtees; the motto resembles that of Percy; the supporters may possibly be relics of some customary ones worn by the Surtees family, perhaps in allusion to the stalwart race, Super Teysam [Sur Tees], keeping watch and ward over the river goddesses. The salmon on the earliest Surtees seal might be transferred into a mermaid, and it is a matter of fact that some private families did use supporters. I cannot see how the 'tumulus' can be other than that of the *ultimus suorum*, and I cannot see why the mermaid on it and in the glass may not have been the successor, as a badge and supporter, of the salmon of Surtees."

*June 9.*

Lease from the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle to Matthew Chapman, merchant, for thirty years, at a rent of 1s. a-year, of five hundred lineal yards of ground near Felling Shore, between high and low water mark, bounded on the east by the grounds of Hayning, and on the west by the grounds of Felling.

*July 20.*

Alderman John Clavering of Newcastle (the mayor elected at Michaelmas this year) acquired the "tenement of Axwell houses from William Smyth of Durham," who fourteen years earlier bought it of the Lumley family. The Claverings reunited some other parcels of the estate by purchase, and thus founded the well-known local family of Clavering of Axwell.

*October 23.*

Indenture of bargain and sale whereby John Reefley, Newcastle, miller, sold to Charles Mitford, of the same place, merchant, in consideration of 20*l.*, all those two tenements or horse mill, situate in the Postern, bounding upon the town wall on the west, a tenement of Richard Kirkhouse, tanner, on the south, and the king's street on the north and east. The property occupied the corner site, formed by the junction of the Postern and the continuation of Westgate Street towards Clavering Place.

---

The churchwardens of All Saints' added to their communion

plate—in 1628 two chalices, and in 1629 two salvers. The former are marked A.H. [All-hallows], and contain the names of the churchwardens—Robert Blenkinsop, Laurence Carr, William Gibson, and William Duxfield. Upon the salvers the initials A.H. are repeated, followed by the words, *Corpus meum hoc est*, and the churchwardens' names—Ninian Shafto, Robert Young, Henry Rowcastle, and Thomas Roderforth.

---

Noticeable entries in the parish books of Gateshead from 1628 to 1632 :—" Ambrose Moss, for a blue marble belonging to the church that we sold him, 1*l.* 2*s.* Paid unto an Irish gentlewoman, which had a pass with divers of the privy councillors' hands at it, which she did show unto Mr. Browne [the rector], and he willed us to give her 5*s.* Christopher Thorpe, for making a new coffin and mending two old ones, 5*s.*; for mending of Susanna More her head, 6*s.*; letten to Mr. Nicholas White and Matthew White those stalls room which belonged to Mr. Robert White, 4*s.* 4*d.*; to Mr. Thomas Riddell, Mr. George Riddell, and Mr. Robert Riddell, the stall that joineth to the south end of Mr. Nicholas White's stall, 2*s.* 8*d.* Disbursed—Mr. Ogell, the preacher, 10*s.*; to a poor lass, 3*d.*; to a blind priest, 1*s.*; for bringing the ducking-stool from the trunk staith, 6*d.*; setting a post in the vestry, 1*s.* 6*d.*; to the preacher of Jarrow, 10*s.*; paid unto five Irish folk which had a pass, 2*s.* 6*d.*; paid [May 29, 1630] for ringing for the prince, 2*s.*; bestowed in wine of Mr. Peskott for one sermon, 2*s.* 6*d.*; Mr. Ogle, the preacher, for his sermons, 12*s.*; building the gallery in the church, 12*l.*; paid for whipping black Barborie, 6*d.*"

---

In Trinity term this year Thomas Trollop obtained a verdict against Henry Sanderson, for ejectment from a messuage in Newcastle demised to the plaintiff for five years by Edmund Allen.

---

The corporation of Newcastle and the hostmen's company were put upon the defence of their privileges this year by a *quo warranto* brought in the King's Bench at Michaelmas term against them. In the library of the Literary and Philosophical Society of Newcastle is a goodly collection of MS. which contains the reply and pleadings of the hostmen's company already described (vol. ii.—266). The case ended in favour of the town. "Upon a view of the acts of parliament, letters patent, allowances, and other records, writings, and ancient books of the mayor and burgesses, shewn to the king's attorney-general, and examined by him, and also upon testimony of witnesses

in the court of King's Bench, who deposed that the said mayor and burgesses had held, used, and enjoyed all and singular the said liberties, privileges, and franchises which they claimed, the said attorney-general acknowledged and confessed the same. And thereupon, after due and mature deliberation, the king's serjeant and the said attorney-general, being called thereto and present, the court of King's Bench adjudged that the said mayor and burgesses and their successors should use, have, and enjoy, by virtue of the premises, all and singular the said liberties, privileges, franchises, and free customs which they claimed and challenged, and that they should be allowed and adjudged to them." In like manner the hostmen were victorious. "Upon view of their ancient books the attorney-general confessed their plea, and thereupon their said liberties were allowed and adjudged to them."

## 1630.

5 and 6 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—John Howson.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**John Clavering, Mayor, and Robert Shafto, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—Robert Anderson.**

Arms : Vert, three stags couchant attired or.

**Sheriff—James Carr.**

Arms : Gules, on a chevron argent, three mullets sable.



UR commerce was still harassed. England was at war with Spain ; the king was at variance with parliament ; the exchequer was empty and mortgaged, and the port towns must protect themselves at their own cost. The mayor of Newcastle (Clavering), with other leading inhabitants, writes to the privy council, 7th March, representing a late spoil, done to the merchants of the town by the Dunkirkers, to the extent of 7000*l*. Three hundred sail are ready to depart for London and other places, but dare not venture to sea, till some

course be taken for their safety. There is great want of corn, but ships cannot come. At the close of the month captain March writes from Newcastle to Nicholas, the secretary of the admiralty, that there are between two and three hundred sail of brave ships in the harbour, the greater part of them unrigged, and in expectation of wafers. Is persuaded in his conscience that if his majesty did but know half what he has seen, he would not suffer the daring enemy so to domineer upon his shores. There are two great ships of thirty brass pieces that keep this part of the world in awe. Nicholas, at the same time that March was thus advising him, was himself writing to Sir Henry Mervyn, admiral of the narrow seas, apprising him that lord-treasurer Weston, understanding that Sir Henry's ship, and the rest appointed to waft the colliers from Newcastle, were still at Lee or Tilbury, had commanded him to signify the orders of the admiralty that he presently put to sea. Meanwhile, the merchants of Newcastle, York, and Hull were petitioning the privy council that Mervyn might take into his guardianship also their ships laden with cloth at Newcastle, bound for the East lands, and bring them with him to the Humber.

*March 8.*

The mayor of Newcastle encloses to the privy council information touching Giles Abraham, master of a vessel in the harbour, supposed to belong to Ostend, of which place he says he is a native. Is suspected to be a spy, and his ship is stayed.

Zacharias Vandersteen, of the province of Luycke [Liege], also petitions the privy council this month. Coming into this realm in a French bottom in 1626, with some passengers who were suspected for priests, he was apprehended at Newcastle, was left in the custody of the mayor, and subsequently committed to the common gaol, where he has lain three years and more, having neither friends, means, nor the language to gain any help by. Prays warrant of discharge, that he may repair to his own country.

*March 20.*

Lease from the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle for twenty-one years, at 20*l.* per annum, to Sir Peter Riddell, of all that messuage or tenement, with the appurtenances, commonly called St. Laurence, in the parish of All Saints, adjoining to the river Tyne on the south part, on the manor or lordship of Byker on the north and east, and on a parcel of ground called the ballast-shores on the west.

*May 2.*

James Clavering, son of Robert Clavering of Callaley, by Anne,

daughter and co-heir of Sir Thomas Gray of Horton, and father of the mayor, buried in St. Nicholas' church. He was an alderman of Newcastle, sheriff in 1599, mayor in 1607, and again in 1618. By his first marriage, January 28th, 1588-9, with Grace, daughter and co-heir of Roger Nicholson of Newcastle, merchant, he had, among other children, John Clavering, mayor this year, who married Anne, daughter of alderman Robert Shafto, and widow of Robert Tempest, and acquired the manor of Axwell ; Grace, wife of Roger Liddell of Darncrook, near Ravenshelme, and Mary, wife of Thomas Butler, whose daughter, Mary Butler, married Ambrose Barnes. By his second wife, Eleanor Swinburne, James Clavering apparently had no family.

*May 5.*

The lord mayor of London and others send to the privy council the opinion of the Trinity masters as to the force requisite for safe fetching coals from Newcastle—viz., six ships, at 1278*l.* per month. So many of the ships lately arrived from the Tyne as were ready to depart are wafted thither by the Greenland fleet, now lately gone. The business is one which concerns all England, and should be carried with a royal hand.

*May 26.*

Sir Robert Heath, having lately taken by lease from the dean and chapter of Durham a parcel of land at South Shields, with purpose to build a ballast-shore, petitions the privy council. He desires, he says, to use this shore with such moderation as to entertain great ships only ; and he prays them to hear the question between the church of Durham and himself as their farmer, and the town of Newcastle, and to do what shall be just and fit. Referred to the lord-treasurer.

*August 3.*

Among the instructions for articles to be exhibited against Dr. Cosin, archdeacon of Durham, and others, is an item of local interest : —“ And another time you, John Cosin, said to some gentlewomen sitting quietly [in Durham cathedral] when others stood when the Nicene Creed is sung, you, I say, going to their pew, said, in the audience of many, ‘ I pray you stand, I pray you stand ; ’ and catching a gentlewoman by the sleeve, you tore her sleeve with these reproachful words—‘ Can ye not stand, ye lazy sows.’ ” In a commonplace book kept by Peter Smart, the author of most of the charges against Cosin, it is explained that the gentlewomen referred to were “ Mrs. Smith and her daughter Heath, and her son Mr. Baker’s wife of Newcastle.” Mrs. Smith was the wife of William Smith of Durham, counsellor, and

widow of Oswald Baker. Her son George, afterwards Sir George Baker, recorder of Newcastle, married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Liddell of Ravensworth, the first baronet.

*August 8.*

"Here lyeth the body of Will. Jackson, esq., and sometime shiriff of this towne. He departed to the mercy of God, 8th August, 1630. And also Judith Booth his daughter, wife was to Abraham Booth, merchant adventurer. She departed 4th January, 1630 [31]." Such was the record, in St. Nicholas' church, of the first town-clerk of Newcastle. He was a son of John Jackson, by Jane, daughter and heir of William Brigham, both of Newcastle. His marriage with Isabel, daughter of Gilbert Read of Newcastle, brought him two sons—Henry Jackson, upon whom he settled the estate of Cotham-Mundeville, in the bishopric; John, afterwards Sir John, Jackson, treasurer of the Inner Temple and recorder of Newcastle—and one daughter, Judith (baptised at All Saints' in 1603), who married Abraham Booth of Newcastle, merchant, and was buried six months after her father. Some hard things were said about Jackson (see page 121), during the dispute about the "grand lease."

---

Among the Harleian MSS. is one which contains an astounding narrative of the alleged fruitfulness of a Scotchwoman, some of whose family were resident in Newcastle. "A weaver in Scotland had by one woman sixty-two children, all living till they were baptised, of which there were but four daughters only who lived till they were women, and forty-six sons all attaining to man's estate. During the time of this fruitfulness in the woman her husband at her importunity absented himself from her for the space of five years together, serving as a soldier under the command of Captain Selby in the Low Countries. After his return home his wife was again delivered of three children at a birth; and so in her due time continued in such births till, through bearing, she became impotent. The certainty of this relation I [the writer is said to be 'Thomas Gybbons, esquire'] had from John Delaval of Northumberland, esquire, who, anno 1630, rid about thirty miles beyond Edinburgh to see this fruitful couple, who were both then living. Her stature and features he described to me then more fully. There was not any of the children then abiding with their parents, Sir John Bowes and three other men of quality having taken, at several times, ten of their children a-piece from them, and brought them up. The rest were disposed of by other English and Scottish gentlemen, amongst which three or four of them are now alive, and abiding at Newcastle, 1630."

---

Petition to the privy council of masters and owners of ships trading to Newcastle for coals, setting forth that some of the hostmen, being lately questioned for short entries of coals paying custom, have endeavoured to procure their discharge by propounding to yield to his majesty a new payment of a shilling per chaldron on coals shipped, and thereby to procure a grant that some few of them might have the sole vending of coals at Newcastle, and the only lading of ships. Ships have ever heretofore had a free market, to buy of any free hostmen of whom they might have best coals and truest and justest measure. The petitioners further explain the inconveniences which will ensue from the attempted monopoly, and pray that they may be left to their ancient liberty. The answer of the fellowship of hostmen was, that all proper freedom existed, and that absolute freedom would be great loss to his majesty, and the utter undoing of many of the hostmen.

---

The saltmakers of North and South Shields petition the privy council, alleging that the officers of the customs of Newcastle, by commandment of the lord-treasurer, have prohibited the export of salt to foreign parts, and exacted security that all salt taken in that port should be delivered in this kingdom. The petitioners assert that there is no want of salt in the hands of the makers, but that the dearth arises from the buyers not fetching it away, in order to beat down the price at Shields, and to raise it to the country, and they pray that the order may be revoked. [The price of salt at Shields was 9d. to 10d. a bushel.]

---

Whatsoever may have been the objection of Robert Brandling to accept the shrievalty of Northumberland in 1628, he apparently had none now, for he occupied the office this year, and made himself very unpleasant, as was his wont. He was a very turbulent descendant and representative of the old Newcastle family. Local history introduces him at his birth in 1575 as "the heir of Felling." Just before he came of age he married Jane, daughter of Francis Wortley of Wortley, in Yorkshire. A dozen years later he was rendering homage for the manor of Felling, to the dean and chapter of Durham, and taking this solemn oath:—"I do become yours and the chapter's man from this day forward for life, and member, and earthly honour, and to you shall be faithful and loyal, and shall be in faith to you for the lands which I do claim to hold of you, saving the faith I owe to



our sovereign lord the king, and to such other lords as I hold of." About the same time he acquired Alnwick Abbey, and in 1610 king James I. granted him the site of the Abbey of Newminster, near Morpeth. Six years afterwards he purchased the manor of South Gosforth and added it to the family possessions, and the following year, 1617, he was appointed sheriff of Northumberland. At the election for Morpeth, in 1620, he was returned to parliament in conjunction with the vicar of that town, and retained his seat, although the election of a person in holy orders formed the subject of debate, and led to the issue of a new writ. In the State Papers for this year (1630) the burgesses and townspeople of Alnwick make a serious complaint against him to the privy council. They state that he is extremely turbulent and contentious. He is bound to good behaviour in the crown office, and excommunicated at Durham; notwithstanding which, it is his daily practice to abuse the church and churchmen, and to make violent assaults on divers men with armed troops. They pray for protection against one who has several times laboured to take the life of his own children, who at this present has exhibited a bill in the Star Chamber against sixteen of the burgesses of Alnwick, intending to deprive them of their means and livelihood, and who, that he may put in practice his wicked inventions, has procured himself to be sheriff this year, which will be the utter undoing of many of his majesty's subjects. Summoned to appear before the privy council to answer this charge, Brandling appealed to the justices of the peace for the county, who certified that he had executed the office of sheriff formerly with good approbation and without public complaint, and that his absence from the county would be prejudicial to the public service.

---

About this time an inventory was made of all goods and implements belonging to the church of All Saints', Newcastle. Thus:—"One great Bible with three communion books. One great book of the acts and monuments of the church; chained in the quire. One book called the Defence of the Apology of the Church of England, made by that worthy instrument of God's glory, Mr. Doctor Jewell; chained in the quire. One other book of the Defence of the Apology; lying in the vestry. One book of homilies, and one postill book containing the exposition of the gospels. One book of canons and constitutions of the church, and one book of articles which contains the fundamental points of Christian religion, which is now wanting. One communion table, one table in the vestry, nine long forms in the church for men to sit on, one form in the vestry and one desk for the communion

pots. One frame in the church to set corpse on when there is a funeral sermon. One carpet of broad green, and another of tapestry work, for the communion table. One carpet of broad green for the table in the vestry. One linen cloth for the communion table, two long towels, and two surplices. Four silver cups for the communion, whereof one is gilt. Two silver bowls for the communion table. Four flagon pots for the communion table, two greater, two lesser, with two saucers, also one little flagon. Fifteen velvet cushions, twelve red cushions, with the church's name sewed on them, and nine old cushions to serve at the font. One cloth of embroidered work for the pulpit, and two coffin cloths of velvet for corpse. One whole hour glass, one half-hour glass, four maser cups, four tin boxes, three iron floors for candles, one brush for the church's cloths, one little box with two cast of counters in it, and one standish for pen and ink. One great chest in the vestry for books and writings, one little coffer with evidence of the church, and one coffer for the register book. One new book for the accounts of the church treasure, one stall book, one box for the church's treasure, and another for the poor's treasure. One iron gavelock, and one sweatree with two rollers, for taking and laying down lair-stones, five coffins for corpse (two for the elder sort, one for the middle sort, and two for the younger sort), one hack and four shovels for making graves. Four locks and keys for the four doors, one lock and key for the vestry door, five bells in the steeple, twelve water buckets, two long spars for trying drops of rain in the leads, one long ladder, one soe for carrying water, one barrow for carrying stones or flags. One branch candlestick of brass containing twelve lights, given by Mr. Samuel Cocke, master and mariner of this parish, to the use of church, in the year of our Lord God 1632, which now accordingly hangs by in the body of the church. A good benefactor."

The last item has evidently been added at a subsequent period to the rest of the inventory. The names of Henry Rowcastle and Thomas Clark, churchwardens in 1630, are signed.

In this year the wall at the east end of the old church of All Saints was either built, or very considerably repaired, and the inside of the walls whitened, the Trinity gallery repaired, and the roof covered with new lead. The parish books contain the following entries:—"Receipts for bells tolling—Clement Anderson, 9d., Edward Pearce, 8d.; Katharine Riddell, for church cloth, 1s. 4d. Mr. Ralph Crowe, for a pew for his family, 10s. Stall rooms—of Mark Millbank, for himself for a turnover, 3s. Given by Mr. James Clavering, alderman, to the poor, 1*l.* 13s. 4d.; given by Mr. William Jackson, to the poor, 2*l.* 10s.; given by Peter Riddell, at Christmas last, 1*l.*"

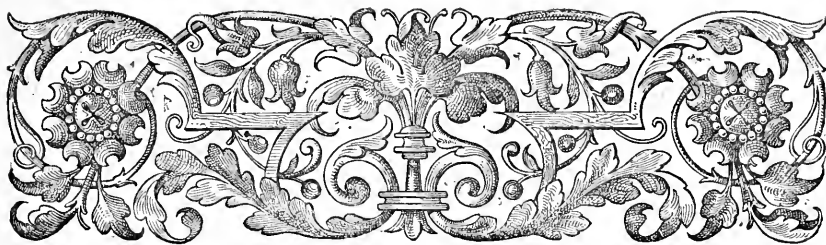
Dr. Jackson resigned the living of Newcastle this year, and was succeeded by Yeldard Alvey. Anthony à Wood, in the *Athene Oxonienses*, describes the retiring vicar as "the ornament of the university in his time." He was born at Witton-le-Wear in 1579, became a student in Queen's College in 1595, admitted scholar of Christ Church 1596, and probationary fellow 1606, "being then M.A., and had laid the grounds carefully in arithmetic, grammar, philology, geometry, rhetoric, logic, philosophy, oriental languages, histories, etc., with an insight in heraldry and hieroglyphics. All which he made use of to serve either as rubbish under the foundation, or as drudges and day-labourers to theology." In 1622 he proceeded D.D., "and two years after left his college for a benefice in his own county [Winston, Durham], which the president and society thereof had then lately conferred on him. But he, keeping the said living not long, was made vicar of St. Nicholas' church in Newcastle-on Tyne, where he was much followed and admired for his excellent way of preaching, which was then puritanical. At length, being elected president of Christ Church college (1630), partly with the helps of Neile, bishop of Durham (who before had taken him off from his precise way, and made him his chaplain), but more by the endeavours of Dr. Laud, and also made chaplain in ordinary to his majesty, he left the said vicarage, and was made prebendary of Winchester, vicar of Witney in Oxfordshire, and dean of Peterborough. . . . He was a person furnished with all learned languages, arts, and sciences, especially metaphysics, which he looked upon as a necessary handmaid to divinity. He was also profoundly read in the fathers, and was of a wonderful and deep judgment, as it appears by his works, that are much admired by all persons. None wrote more highly concerning the attributes of God, and more vigorous in some of his works against the church of Rome than he. . . . In a word, he was a man of a blameless life, studious, humble, courteous, and very charitable, devout towards God, and exemplary in private and public, beloved of Laud, archbishop of Canterbury, and blamed by none in any respect, but by the restless presbyterians, the chief of whom, Will. Prynne, who busily concerned himself in all affairs, doth give him this character in the name of the brethren:—'Dr. Jackson of Oxon is a man of great abilities, and of a plausible, affable, courteous deportment, till of late he hath been transported beyond himself with metaphysical contemplations, to his own infamy and his renowned mother's shame—I mean the university of Oxon, who grieves for his defection, from whose dugs he never sucked his poisonous doctrines. . . .' At length, after our author had spent sixty years or more in this life, mostly in studies and

devotion, he surrendered up his devout soul to him that gave it on the 21st of September in 1640, and was buried in the inner chapel of Corpus Christi college, but hath no memory at all over his grave."

The writer of the *Life of Ambrose Barnes* styles him "our English Rabbi, Dr. Jackson," and one "whose learned works have perpetuated his memory." His appointment to the presidency of Corpus Christi was one of the charges against Laud in after years. Laud replied that he thought Dr. Jackson learned, honest, and orthodox; to which answer was made, that though learned and honest, he was an Arminian. "As preferments were heaped upon him without his suit or knowledge, so there was nothing in his power to give which he was not ready and willing to part withal to the deserving and indigent. His vicarage of St. Nicholas' in Newcastle he gave to Master Alvey of Trinity College, upon no other relation but out of the good opinion he conceived of his merits." Mr. Longstaffe, in the appendix to *Ambrose Barnes*, tells the following story of him:—"When he went out at Newcastle he usually gave what money he had to the poor, who at length flocked so much to him that his servant took care that he had not too much in his pocket. Dr. Henderson, the town's physician his neighbour and friend, having made a purchase, was one day sitting in a sad mood, and fetched a sigh. To a question by Jackson, he replied, 'I have a payment to make, and want money.' Jackson bade his friend be of good cheer, for he would furnish him. Calling for his servant he mentioned the physician's need, and asked what money he had. The man stepped back silent. The doctor bid him speak. At length came the answer, 'forty shillings.' The vicar bade him fetch it, for Master Henderson should have it all. Upon this the physician's sadness gave way to laughter, and on the simple-minded clergyman's inquiry of the cause, he said his need was of 400*l.* or 500*l.* Jackson answered that he thought 40*s.* to be a great sum, and that he should have it, and more also if he had had it himself."

Dr. Jackson's works were published in three folio volumes by Edward Vaughan in 1673, and in twelve volumes octavo at Oxford in 1844. There is also a synoptical table of his writings, with biographical notices, published, under the title of *Repertorium Theologicum*, by the Rev. J. H. Todd, M.A., London, 1838.





FOURTH DECADE—1631–1640.



1631.

6 and 7 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—John Howson.**

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

**Robert Anderson, Mayor, and James Carr, Sheriff.**

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

**Mayor—William Warmouth.**

**Sheriff—Henry Warmouth.**

Arms of both Mayor and Sheriff the same as in 1598.



ELDARD ALVEY was formally instituted to the living of St. Nicholas' in the autumn. The bishop of Durham apparently did not hurry the process, and in November the king wrote him rather sharply on the subject :—"Whereas Alvy, a man (as we hear) without exception, is presented by the bishop of Carlisle, the undoubted patron of the vicarage of Newcastle, we require you to give him, the said Alvy, institution without delay, that the church may not suffer by the ordinary's default, who should rather be

careful for the speedy supply thereof," etc. The bishop replied that he had instituted Alvey before his majesty's letter arrived, and respecting the delay, explained that he understood that one of his officers had been entreated by Dr. Jackson's servant, "who ordereth his estate," that he would defer the acceptance of Dr. Jackson's resignation until after Easter.

*January 30.*

The mayor, etc., of Newcastle, write to the privy council that one of his majesty's servants, John Le Neve, has been to Newcastle with a patent directing the execution of the statute of 33 Henry VIII., for shooting with the long-bow. The statute has long slept, and is very penal. Since the use of muskets, the use of bows and arrows is quite gone out. The town and country are utterly destitute of bowyers and fletchers, and bow-staves and all other necessities, and are charged with muskets, pikes, corslets, and other arms. They desire that time may be given to provide necessities, if this patent is to be put in execution; and that the council will send bowyers and fletchers from London, and take course to provide them with bow-staves.

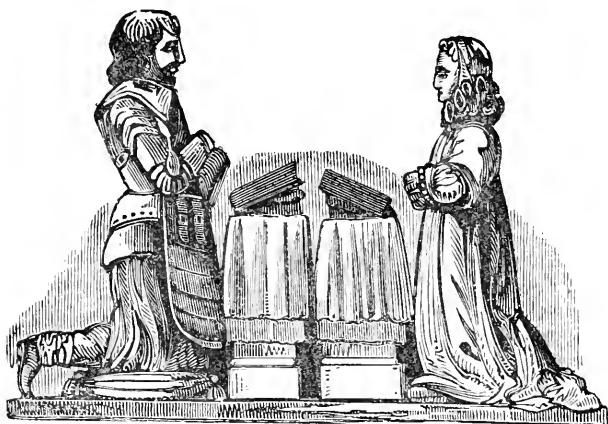
*May 3.*

Indenture enrolled, by which Sir Henry Anderson conveyed the lordship of Little Haswell, with certain chantry lands within Pittington, to William Hall of Newcastle, merchant, for 4600*l*. He had previously disposed of his property in Pespoole and Wingate, and by the alienation of Little Haswell and Pittington he practically severed his connection with the bishopric, and henceforward was known chiefly in connection with Newcastle and his Yorkshire estate at Cowton Grange.

William Hall, the purchaser of Haswell (sheriff of Newcastle, 1608, and mayor in 1624), did not live long to enjoy his newly-acquired property. He was buried in St. Nicholas' church, Newcastle, at the end of July, and his son set up in memory of him the beautiful sculptured monument, which still survives there, bearing an inscription which may be translated thus:—"William Hall, esquire, formerly mayor of this town, and Jane his dearest wife, enriched with a happy offspring, repose in the Lord near this monument. He died on the 28th July, 1631, in the 63rd year of his age; she on the 12th August, 1613, aged 36. In whose memory, Alexander Hall, knight, their only surviving son, has deservedly set this up."

Bourne's description of the Hall Monument has been copied by all subsequent local historians:—"The body of the monument has on each side of it a pillar of the Corinthian order, between which is a

representation of a desk, with open books upon it, and he on the one side of it, and his wife on the other, in the posture of prayer, kneeling before it, with their folded hands upon the books. Below this are the effigies of their children in the same posture; one of which is represented kneeling alone at one side of a desk, with an open book upon it, and other five on the other side of it, kneeling one after another. The former I take to be designed for their son, the other for their daughters."



CENTRAL FIGURES IN THE HALL MONUMENT.

There was an organ at this time in All Saints' church, Newcastle. "Received of John Cocke towards the repayment for the organ, 5s.," and "Drawing articles and charges about the organ," are the entries in the churchwardens' books for 1631-32, which afford a clue to the date of its repair. A similar entry occurs in the books of the Trinity House—"Given to the church towards the repair of the organ, 1s." The organ stood under a pointed arch in the middle of the west gallery, adjoining the steeple.

Other entries in All Saints' books from Easter 1631 to Easter 1632 are these:—Given to a poor Irishman, at the request of Mr. Mayor, 3s. 4d.; given to a poor preacher, 1s. 2d.; given to the four poor Dutchmen who were taken by the Dunkirkers, 2s. 8d.; paid for making Robert Pearson's coat, and for a new hat, and a pair of shoes for him, 6s. 10d.; paid for horse hire and charges of one to pay the poor preacher's money at Durham, 5s.; given to a poor woman that travelled into Scotland, 1s. Received rents due of Mr. Alexander Davison, 9s. Bell tolling—Jane Ellison, 10d.; Francis Lumley, 10d.; Robert Ellison, 8d.; Mrs. Shafto, 10d.; William Marley, 10d.;

William Shafto, 8d. ; Marmaduke Fenwick, 10d. ; Mrs. Lawson, 1s. For church cloth, Francis Lumley and Robert Ellison, 1s. 4d. each. Lair-stones—Robert Ellison, 7s. 8d. ; Marmaduke Fenwick, 6s. 8d. Given by Mr. Mayor and Sir Peter Riddell, knight, which was levied of two men for being drunk, for the use of the poor, 10s.

## 1632.

7 and 8 CHARLES I.

Bishops of Durham—John Howson and Thomas Morton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

William Warmouth, Mayor, and Henry Warmouth, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Lionel Maddison.

Sheriff—Francis Bowes.

Arms : The Mayor's as in 1584 ; the Sheriff's as in 1623.



DISPUTE arose about this time between the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle and Sir Robert Heath respecting the ballast wharf at South Shields. Gardiner's chuckling account of it, in *England's Grievance Discovered*, is as follows :—" Sir Robert Heath, lord chief-justice of the Common Pleas, was building a ballast wharf or shore on his own land at Shields, adjoining upon the river of Tyne, seven miles from Newcastle ; but the commissioners of Newcastle, the mayor and aldermen, with others, obstructed the building thereof, pretending it would spoil the river ; but the lord chief-justice, well knowing it to the contrary, by the advice of most of the ancient Trinity masters of London, and other experienced traders thither, went on with the building thereof, upon which, in the year 1632, the said mayor, and other commissioners, exhibited a complaint to the king and council against the same at Whitehall, complaining that, if any ballast-shores or wharves were built at Shields, it would much spoil the river, and hinder trade and navigation ; at which there



was a legal trial. It appeared to the contrary. The king and council, upon the 13th July, 1632, ordered that Sir Robert Heath's ballast-shore should be built. In February next the commissioners of Newcastle complained again, upon the same business, by pleading some new matter in their petition, and, the reference obtained, it was ordered this 15th February, 1632 [33], that Sir Robert Heath's ballast shore should be built. The commissioners aforesaid put in the third petition, not doubting but that by such new matter they should prevent the building of the said shore. Ordered by the king and council, 27th February, 1632 [33], that Sir Robert Heath's ballast-shore, wharf, or quay a-building shall be built, go forward, and be quite finished."

The State Papers give us further details. In May 1632 presentment was made before the Conservancy against Paul Dod, master of the *White Lion* of London, for casting sandy ballast at the new ballast quay at Shields, and he and his father gave bond in 200*l.* for the appearance of the former before the privy council. Sir Robert Heath thereupon writes to the mayor, stating that he had received from him as fair an answer as he could expect about the ballast-shore, and when he looks at the agreement between them cannot imagine there could be any other thing. But from John Wright, his servant, and Mr. Dod, who has related some passages about himself, he is at a stand what to think of his words and actions compared together. Desires the mayor to read the agreement, and see whether masters who are willing to cast their ballast with him till his shore be finished, ought in justice to be hindered as they are daily, and Mr. Dod bound over to answer as for a misdemeanour. If they can make it appear that he does the town any wrong, he will sit down with the loss, otherwise he must maintain his right.—In June the master and others of the Trinity House, London, report that a ballast-shore at South Shields is convenient for navigation and for the public good, assigning as the grounds of their favourable opinion the convenience of the place, and its tendency to scour the channel and increase the burthen of ships employed in the coal trade.—On the 27th February following, upon the petition of the town of Newcastle, complaining of the ballast-shore, the privy council refer to an order of July 13, which was to continue in force until their lordships, having heard both sides, should see cause to alter it, Sir Robert Heath finishing the shore whereon the ballast might be cast.—In April Heath writes to Sir William Becher, clerk of council, that an order was made that the ballast-shore should be perfected, and yet no ballast is cast there in the meantime. Entreats him to move their lordships to explain that such ballast may be laid as is necessary for finishing the work, which

is what Mr. Warmouth agreed was fit.—Then the Trinity House of London appear on the scene, and write to secretary Coke that the townsmen of Newcastle will probably take advantage of his majesty being there with them, to move him against the going forward of Heath's wharf, "more preferring their private ends and profit than the preservation of the ships trading with them for coals." The writers enclose a copy of a certificate formerly given by the Trinity House of Newcastle, showing that the quays or staiths for ballast there are in possession of Sir Robert Heath, Sir Peter Riddell, Sir Thomas Liddell, and Ralph Cole, Arthur Alvey, the assigns of Sir Robert Mansell at the glass-house, and the mayor and aldermen. Such a quantity of ballast and rubbish falls from these quays into the Tyne, that if the quays are not kept in repair the river will be choked up.—Towards the end of May Heath himself writes to Coke, that at the motion of a kinsman of his name at Durham, he had undertaken the building of a ballast-shore at South Shields. The town of Newcastle gave consent, but has thrown many impediments in the way. The council board has often been troubled with them on both sides. Now the town proposes to possess the king at his being in Newcastle with the inconveniency thereof, where the writer, nor any for him, can be heard. Hopes the shore will be found well built ; and if it be not good for the public, for the safety of shipping, and for navigation, he will not desire it to be continued. If it be, he is assured of his majesty's goodness and justice, that the town shall not destroy it. His own interest, which he intended for his second son, is not a thing considerable ; but the safety of ships trading to the port is of moment. Begs Coke to interpose with his majesty that the cause may be heard at the board ; and if his majesty would hear it, he is the best judge.

While complaining about the interference of the town with his ballast-shore, Sir Robert had his thrust at the hostmen. There are suggestions of his in the State Papers for dealing with the fraternity, who, he states, have been charged with neglecting the Tyne, and serving the subject deceitfully with coals. They should be threatened, he thinks, with the loss of their charter, which would result in improved regulations for the shipping of coals and increase of profit to the king.

*March 25.*

On this day, being the first of the civil year, the feast of the Annunciation, and Palm Sunday, died Dorothy Lawson of St. Anthony's, whose pious life and works have been already noted. "Our Lord came not to her suddenly or at unawares," writes her

biographer, "much less unprovided ; he knocked and gave her above six months' warning by a languishing consumption or cough of the lungs, and she, expecting his coming, with the resigned patience of Judith, and indefatigable love of Jacob, opened willingly the garden door of her soul that he might enter and reap the fruit he planted.' Her last moments are described as comforting and edifying. When her attendants thought her end had come, and were about to close her eyes, "to our amazement, she elevated her hand, and imparted her benediction in the form of a large cross ; then pronouncing, or rather repeating the life-giving name of Jesus, to gain the pardon of the sin last committed, as in manner of jubily, with Jesus in her mouth, and a jubily in her soul, she sweetly departed, about twelve of the clock, in the year of our Lord 1632, and of her own age fifty-two."

Although Mrs. Lawson was a devoted Catholic, general respect was shown to her remains. "The next day after her death all the gentry thereabouts were invited, and a dinner was prepared for them. . . . Divers boats full of people came in the afternoon from Newcastle, all plentifully entertained with a banquet ; and when these civil respects were ended, we carried the corpse in the evening to Newcastle in her own boat, accompanied with at least twenty other boats and barges, and above twice as many horse, planting them on both sides of the shore till their arrival at the city. They found the streets shining with tapers as light as if it had been noon. The magistrates and aldermen, with the whole glory of the town, which for state is second only to London, attended at the landing-place to wait on the coffin, which they received covered with a fine black velvet cloth and a white satin cross, and carried it but to the church door, where, with a ceremony of such civility as astonished all (none, out of love of her, and fear of them, daring to oppose it), they delivered it to the Catholics only, who with another priest (for I [Father Palmes the biographer] was not worthy of the honour) laid it with Catholic ceremonies in the grave. In the interim a gentleman was appointed to conduct the ladies and magistrates to a sumptuous banquet in the finest house in the town, where they expected [waited] enlarging themselves in discourses upon her praises till all was ended in the church."

*May 30.*

The mayor, etc., of Newcastle write to the privy council, that upon notice given that Walter Stile, master of a ship of Newport, Isle of Wight, had brought into the Tyne, from Calais, three passengers, with books and other things, they sent to him to bring the passengers, books, etc., before them. Stile came, bringing with him a cloak-bag,

and a little trunk containing popish books both in Latin and English, to the number of eighteen or twenty, as also divers relics, beads, and letters directed to gentlemen in divers counties, all which the writers have in their possession, and they have bound Stile to appear at the assizes to answer his neglect in suffering the passengers to escape.

---

Sir Henry Anderson was at loggerheads with one Bacon, patron of the living of East Cowton, a village adjoining his estate of Cowton Grange. Rushworth tells the story in his record of the proceedings of the Star Chamber :—"The defendant, Sir Henry Anderson, coveting to gain unto himself the rectory of East Cowton from the plaintiff, threatened the plaintiff's tenant to set fire on his hay, and that he would be troublesome to him, and Maulters [Sir Henry's friend, or steward] told him he would be undone by it ; and they, bearing malice to the plaintiff for that, as it should seem, he would not sell the said rectory to Sir Henry, Sir Henry sent the plaintiff a message full of provoking language ; and Maulters, meeting him in the town of East Cowton, bid him get out the town like a skipjack fellow as he was, for he would have him packed out of the town. . . . And soon after, as the plaintiff was going to the pound to release a horse of his tenant's there impounded, which they would in no wise deliver unless the plaintiff came in person, the defendant, Henry Anderson [son of Sir Henry], came to the plaintiff, picked a quarrel with him, and Maulters being come almost to him, took hold of the plaintiff's horse-bridle, and struck the plaintiff on the breast with a staff, and Green beat him about the neck and shoulders with a pitchfork ; and the plaintiff having gotten from them, Maulters, standing by, said, ' Stay, sirrah ! Stay, you go not so ; I have something to say to you before you go. I told you you should be beaten out of the town,' and Sir Henry after said he was not cudgelled half enough." The case was heard in the Star Chamber in January following, and the defendants were all committed to the Fleet ; " Sir Henry, for abetment of the riot, and Henry, his son, for the riot, fined 300*l.* a-piece ; Green and Maulters fined 200*l.*, and bound to their good behaviour a year, and Sir Henry and Henry Anderson to pay their fines if they be not able, and the defendants convicted to pay the plaintiff 100*l.* damages."

---

Before the High Commission Court at Durham two unsavoury cases of offence against the ecclesiastical law, committed by residents in Newcastle, were heard. At the sitting on 12th January William Hall, junior, of St. Andrew's parish, was cited to appear (his companion in guilt being Elizabeth Hall, his father's widow), and being

absent, was fined 20*l*. In May he submitted to the mercy of the court, and the commissioners decreed that the said William and Elizabeth should penitently, in their linen apparel, bare head and foot, with a white rod in their hand, acknowledge their offence once in each of the churches of St. Nicholas, St. Andrew, and All Saints, and at the Market Cross, Newcastle, and in the cathedral at Durham, and pay 500*l*., fine to his majesty, "with power of reservation that if Hall should duly perform the same, then etc. [sic], which said decree he in contemptible manner opposed, whereupon the commissioners did commit him to the gaol till he should find sureties to perform the same." In November it was certified that he had performed the penance, and the costs were taxed at 5*l*. He had no money, and was committed to gaol; but on petition, after a fortnight's durance, was released, and the costs moderated to 50*s*.

The other offenders were William Bell, otherwise Urwen, and his wife's sister. He was enjoined public penance at the Market Cross on four several market days, and at St. Nicholas' and All Saints' on two Sundays at each place. Performance was certified in July, when it was alleged that "he was overtaken with drink at the performance thereof one time in the church." He was summoned for this new offence three times, the penalty for disobedience being raised on the last occasion to 60*l*. It was February, 1633, before he presented himself, and then he was ordered to confess publicly his drunkenness. On 28th March performance was certified by the minister, etc., of All Saints', and he was excused from payment of costs by reason of his poverty.

---

There is a gap in the municipal account books of Newcastle, extending from 1607 to this year. The item of most interest in the volume for 1632 is that which notes the existence of horse-racing as a sport which the burgesses had begun to patronise:—"Paid John Blakiston, chamberlain, which he disbursed for two silver pots granted by C. [the common council] for the race on Killingworth Moor after Whitsunday 1632, 20*l*." Among other entries are the following:—"Paid for tar barrels burnt on the Sandhill, the 27th of March, being the day of his majesty's entrance to the crown, 8*s*. 2*d*. Paid more for a banquet to Mr. Mayor and the aldermen on the Long Pentice on the same day, 6*s*. 2*d*. Paid Mr. Henderson, the town's physician, his half-year's stipend due at Lady-day, 20*l*. Paid John Pithy, chamberlain, which he disbursed for wherry hire and charges of Mr. Mayor, aldermen, and others to Hedwin streams, to view and set the town's bounders, 42*s*. 5*d*. Paid for wine, 21*s*. 4*d*., 15 lb. of sugar at 20*d*. per

lb., 25s., sent as a present to the earl of Arundel, the 3rd August, 46s. 4d."

A rhyming epitaph in St. Mary's, Gateshead, commemorates "the peaceable Thomas Arrowsmith," as Mr. Surtees calls him, though he mistakes the date upon his monument.

"MDCXXXII.

Reader, in that piece of earth  
In peace rests Thomas Arrowsmith.  
In peace hee liv'd, in peace went hence  
With God and man and conscience.  
Peace for other men he sought,  
And peace with peeces som time bought.

Pacifici may others bee  
But ex pace factus hee.

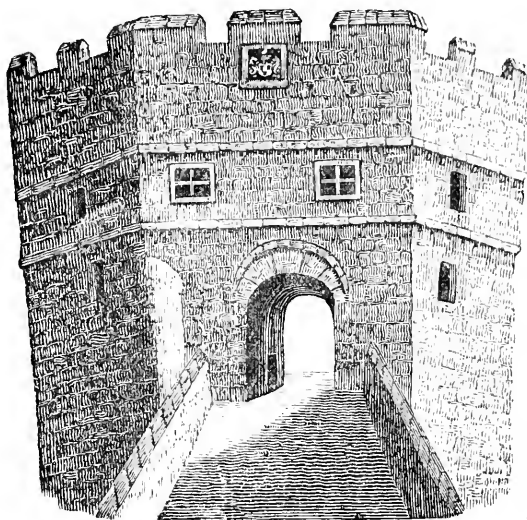
Peace, reader, then doe not molest  
That peace whereof he's now possest.  
The God of peace for him in store,  
Hath joy and peace for evermore.

Pangit                      Plangit

et

Amore                      Dolore  
Robertus Arrowsmith."

In Gateshead register of burials the interment of Thomas Arrowsmith is entered under date September 27, 1632.



TOWER ON TYNE BRIDGE, 17TH CENTURY.

1633.

8 and 9 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Sir Lionel Maddison, Mayor, and Francis Bowes, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Ralph Cole.

Sheriff—Nicholas Cole.

Arms : As in 1625.



ING CHARLES came through Newcastle on his way to be crowned in Scotland. He was attended by Laud, bishop of London, White, bishop of Ely, the earls of Northumberland, Arundel, Pembroke, Southampton, and Holland, and other persons of distinction.

The royal party entered the town on the evening of Monday, the 3rd June, amid the ringing of bells and the joyful acclamations of the people, and were housed by the magistrates and corporation. On the following evening his majesty dined with the mayor, who was knighted for his loyalty. The day afterwards, the 5th, he went with his retinue, escorted by the master and brethren of the Trinity House, to the castle at Tynemouth. What his majesty did on the 6th and 7th is not known, but there is among the State Papers a letter from Coke to Windebank, bearing the latter date, which indicates that he remained in the town until Saturday :—"The king purposes to stay in Newcastle till Saturday, and then comes post to Berwick, whither the train set forward this morning to attend him at that town to keep our Whitsuntide, and to remain the holidays in England."

Local discontent, always simmering up, and threatening disaster, fairly overflowed this year. On Shrove Tuesday there was a riot among the apprentices. It was reported that the disturbance arose through the erection of a lime-kiln near the Ballast Hills, which interfered with the drying of clothes in the neighbourhood, and destroyed the beauty of a walk along which the apprentices and

their sweethearts, rambled after the hours of divine worship. Shrove Tuesday fell on the 5th March, and on the 11th the mayor and aldermen reported the circumstances to the privy council. The apprentices, they said, had pulled down a lime-kiln belonging to Christopher Reasley, which stood on the Ballast Hills without the walls. Some of the rioters were arrested, and the mayor and others were conveying them to prison, when the rest made fast Sandgate Gate against them; and although the captives were lodged in gaol, they were subsequently rescued by their comrades. The rioters then assembled again on the Ballast Hills, and held possession of them on the two following days, endeavouring to pull down Reasley's house, and partly effecting their purpose with pikes and halberts. They withstood the mayor and justices, and little assistance could be obtained from the burgesses; for, indeed, the townspeople secretly aided the rioters. Some few arrests were made; but the writers, at the date of their letters, apprehended some further wicked doings.

Henry, lord Clifford, wrote to the mayor on the 12th, regretting such an outbreak in a town which, he said, had hitherto been so well governed; and suggested that if the authorities had assembled the train-bands to apprehend the rioters, and had had good guard and watch over the captives, the delinquents had not been so easily rescued, and the tumult, consequently, would have been sooner ended. He added that the sheriff of the county dwelt among them, and the deputy-lieutenants of Northumberland were ready to help them; and that if the disorder increased, he (lord Clifford) would not fail to give his best assistance.

About a fortnight elapsed, and then (March 26th) the mayor and his brethren made a further report. They were comforted, as they told secretary Coke, that the king approved of their endeavours to suppress the riot. They doubted their power to call out the trained bands; besides, the trained bands consisted of townsmen, and not finding such forwardness as they expected in them to assist the mayor, they feared to add thereby more strength to the rioters. All had been quiet since the riot was suppressed. The council of the north had arrested most of the delinquents, and they were at York to be censured by that tribunal. Until they were thence dismissed, the writers could not send the chiefest of them to London as directed.

Gray, in the MS. notes to his *Chorographia*, tells the story of the disturbance thus:—"Without Sandgate is the lime-kilns which serve the town with lime, and the ballast hills for drying of clothes. There happened in the year 1632 an uproar of apprentices, called to this day Resly's Rebellion, occasioned by building a new lime-kiln under the ballast hills. The common people of the town complained in



guild of the nuisance, and begged to be redressed. Next Shrovetide, prentices and men in Sandgate marshalled themselves in arms, demolished the lime-kiln and the house adjoining ; but being resisted by the mayor, their forces increased for three days. The multitude came into the town and marched into the Sandhill in arms, commanded the mayor and all the town, . . . till an alderman upon a confront came out of the town court and encounters with the captain of the rebels, hurt their captain, and his soldiers . . . put to flight and dissipated. . . . Many masters of families was questioned, fined, imprisoned, and undone by the misgovernment of our rulers."

At the sessions in Newcastle, on the 29th of March, an indictment was found against Edward Clavering and others, for the riot and misdemeanour ; but what became of it is not known. "Secretary Coke," writes Mr. Clephan, "attributed the disturbances, not to the pretence of destroying the lime-kiln built on the town drying and pleasure ground, but to a desire in the commons to have a change in their government, and stated various circumstances connected with the audit of the corporation accounts, and the last election of mayor, from which he drew this inference. Coke had misgivings that the masters as well as the apprentices had brought about the disorders ; and as the governors, when the governed are unruly, are seldom without some share of blame, he was probably in the right."

There can, indeed, be little doubt that secretary Coke's conjectures were well founded, for while the apprentices were rioting the burgesses were petitioning. A statement of the "Grievances which the burgesses and commonalty of the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne have and do sustain, and for many years past have laid down the same to Mr. Mayor and alderman and common council, and by petition in open guild, and have not as yet received satisfaction nor redress therein," was sent to the king by the hands of four burgesses. The grievances were these :—

"Inprimis, where there hath been, time out of the memory of man, three guilds, or three general assemblies of the mayor, aldermen, and all the commons of the said town, holden and kept in the guildhall of the said town, the one after Michaelmas, the other after Christmas, and the third after Easter, which guilds have usually been held from nine o'clock in the morning until twelve o'clock following, which have been instituted for the redressing and reforming of such enormities and wrongs whereof the said burgesses should then complain, and likewise for the enjoying of those rights and duties which were due unto them, and then were denied, and especially about provision of coals for their firing, and water for their necessary use, which said coals and water have been usually provided

out of the common revenues of the said town. It is now come to pass, that for divers years past, the mayor and aldermen (without whom no guild can be kept) do not come into the Guildhall for the keeping of the said guild till it be about ten o'clock or after, and when they are there, if anything be moved touching the reformation of the said general grievances, or the having their accustomed rights and duties, they either thereupon rise and depart without giving any satisfaction to the commons, or if they give them satisfaction by any promise for the present, yet they never perform that promise, as is to be manifested by many instances and particulars.

2. "Whereas there are many offices belonging to the said town which are in the gift of the mayor and aldermen, and have usually been sold, and the money given for them employed and bestowed in the amending of river of Tyne, repairing and mending the gates of the said town, and other general common and necessary reparations; the said money, (the offices being sold at a far greater value then heretofore), is converted to the proper use and benefit of the mayor of Newcastle for the time being, without being employed to the general good of the said town, according to the ancient custom.

3. "Whereas by the charter (2 James I.) his majesty granted to the auditors who are appointed yearly to audit and cast up the chamberlains' accounts of the said town, 13s 4d. a-day, to be paid unto them out of the revenues of the said town, for every day they sit and take pains about the said audit, till it be finished. And whereas also, by the ancient custom of the said town, there hath been also paid to the said auditors the sum of 10*l.* at the least over and above the said 13s. 4d. a-day, for a dinner to be made to forty of the grave, ancient, and discreet burgesses of the said town, by the said auditors, at the end of the said audit, as a day of declaration unto them of the said audit, and how the revenues of the said town have that year been bestowed. The said sum of 10*l.* for the said dinner hath not been paid the last year, but refused to be paid to the said auditors by the mayor of Newcastle then being, and is yet unpaid, to the great discouragement of the auditors, and the discontent of the grave, ancient, and discreet burgesses of the said town.

4. "Whereas by the said charter the common council of the said town doth consist of four-and-twenty burgesses added to the mayor and aldermen, which in the whole do amount to thirty-six, who have the disposing of all the town's revenues, the granting of all leases of the town's land, and of all yearly pensions payable out of the town chamber. It is now so ordered by the mayor and aldermen that four or five, or perhaps six only, for the most part, are of the common burgesses, and all the other are of the kinsfolk and special friends of

the mayor and aldermen, whereby the revenues of the said town, or the greatest part thereof, is yearly distributed and spent, not for the common good, though for a pretence and colour of their doings they pretend the[m] to be done by the consent and approbation of the common council, or the greatest part of them, as may be instanced and demonstrated by divers particular examples.

5. "Whereas by the said charter it is ordered that there are six aldermen to be joined to the mayor, and which are so of the quorum that nothing in the common council can be done without them; and whereas it is conceived that the said quorum is the true cause wherefore the commons have no redress or reformation of their grievances. Therefore it is desired that his majesty would be graciously pleased to grant a new charter of explanation, like to that of the second year of king James, to the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, in which his majesty's pleasure to be signified, that none shall be of the quorum but the mayor, and every alderman in respect of his voice to be but as a common burgess, and all elections, acts of common council, and the like to pass by the consent of the mayor and the greater part of the common council, for all the aldermen and sheriffs are also of the common council.

6. "Unfreemen are permitted and suffered in this corporation and liberties thereof to trade in merchandise, to the great prejudice of the poor freemen of this town, being countenanced therein by some of the magistrates. These and many more grievances were presented to Mr. Mayor in open guild, and to the common council, by Mr. John Butler, Mr. Anthony Errington, and divers other burgesses of this town, in anno 1625, Mr. William Hall being then mayor, and in anno 1629, Mr. John Clavering being then mayor."

The four burgesses, furnished with a letter of attorney, attested by more than seven hundred of the townsmen, went to London on the 23rd April, but finding that his majesty was coming north, "did forbear to proceed then therein." There was no opportunity for them to enter into such matters while the king was the guest of the accused persons, although as he was proceeding down the river to Tynemouth, Edward Bulmer, steersman of the royal barge, contrived to put into his majesty's hands a complaint from the master mariners of the port about the erection of quays and staiths upon the Tyne for the private emolument of the municipal conservators. As soon, however, as the king had gone to Berwick, the four burgesses followed him. They duly presented their petition, and the king referred it and them to the president and council at York. It was then represented to his majesty that York was a great distance from Newcastle, that a great number of burgesses were anxious to be heard in support of the

petition, that the mayor and common council received all the revenue of the town, that the majority of the burgesses were complainants, and that, therefore, the expense of prosecuting the petition ought to be paid out of the town's treasury. Whether the king agreed to this course does not appear, but it is known that the business dragged on for some time, and caused the petitioners great annoyance and expense. In August the council of the North reported that they had heard the parties and their witnesses; that the alleged grievances seemed to be grounded on exceptions taken against the mode of election as settled by charter, which mode, "having continued ever since the reign of Henry VIII., it would be too high and unbecoming an undertaking for the council to propound any course for the alteration of it." They therefore set down the manner of the elections, in order that the privy council might consider it. In November the burgesses petitioned the privy council direct, stating that they have heard of the presentation of a report upon the complaints, and as they "have attended in town about five weeks, to the great charge of the poor citizens," they ask for a copy of the document, and pray that the lords of the council will appoint a day for a hearing.

---

Payments made by the churchwardens of All Saints' this year include the following :—For one pair of bellows for the organs, 2*l.*; for wire for the chimes, 5*s.* 9*d.*; to John Pattison, for blowing organs, which was due the 21st of November, 1632, 4*s.*; charges for two churchwardens and five joiners riding to Branspeth with Mr. Chancellor, 1*l.* 5*s.*; paid for ringing at the king's majesty his coming to town, 6*s.*; paid for ringing at his majesty's return, 4*s.* 2*d.*; given to a poor Bohemian minister, 6*s.*; given to two distressed travellers, 1*s.* 6*d.*



THE OLD CUSTOM HOUSE, NEWCASTLE.

1634.

9 and 10 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Ralph Cole, Mayor, and Nicholas Cole, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Ralph Cock.

Arms : As in 1626.

Sheriff—John Marley.

Arms : Argent, on a chevron between three martlets sable, a mullet of six points or.



SIR ROBERT BRANDLING, great nephew of the first Sir Robert, received a check in his mad course of life. His contemptuous proceedings concerning the shrievalty of Northumberland, and his treatment of the burgesses of Alnwick, have been already recorded, and now he is more seriously taken in hand by the church. Fifteen pages of vol. xxxiv. of the Surtees Society's publications are filled with the evidence of his misdemeanours. They are summarised in a letter which bishop Morton sent to the treasury on May 24th this year, and include "adulteries, incest, and impious profanations, especially in vilifying the order of ministers and using violence against their persons; and at one time locking the church door and impounding the archdeacon's official in the time of the exercise of his ecclesiastical jurisdiction. And," continues the bishop, "all this done, not upon provocation, or hope of any benefit, but merely in a scurrilous malignity, long habited in him, wherein he has shown himself insolent beyond all others. For these causes, as also for his refusal to answer articles, and his escape out of prison, the commissioners imposed upon him first 520*l.*; after that they added, upon intimation after his non-appearance, 500*l.* more; and after that added, upon the like intimation, four times 500*l.*; but all these *in terrorem*. At last they gave him his heaviest load by censuring him in 3000*l.*, reserving themselves, notwithstanding, until the day of mitigation yet to come for an exact sum to be certified into their

Exchequer, which, in the intendment of some, was to be 4500*l.*, and not, of any, above 5000*l.* All which they refer to his majesty, whether to mitigate or exact, being all suppliants to his majesty to entrust them with the disposal of some competent proportion of this fine *in pios usus*, which the desperate desolation of divers churches in Northumberland and other spiritual occasions, do beg of his majesty."

The judgment of the Commissioners is more fully detailed in the Surtees volume than in the bishop's letter. They overlooked "for the present" the charge of speaking irreverent words against themselves, but for all his other "enormous and unparalleled offences" they sentenced him as follows:—"For his adulteries and contempt of jurisdiction and of ecclesiastical persons and offences, he shall make public submission in penitential manner in Alnwick church and St. Nicholas' in Newcastle, on several Sundays, according to a schedule. For his laying violent hands upon the clergy he shall be denounced excommunicate *ipso facto*, in his parish church, according to the statute." Finally, he was to pay the 3000*l.* and costs, and to be imprisoned during the king's pleasure.

*February 1.*

About the 1st February Henry Cock and Abraham Booth, merchant adventurers of Newcastle, freighted the *Mayflower*, 300 tons, John Taylor, master, with cloth, grindstones, and coals, for Middleburg in Zealand. On the 12th, at midnight, she was boarded by a man-of-war of Nieuport, captain Simon Dansker, with seventy or eighty men, who turned her to Nieuport; but finding she drew too much water for that harbour, in most outrageous manner they stripped all the English of their clothes, and the ship of various necessities, to the value of 300*l.*, and carried away the merchant, the master, and three more of the company, to Ostend, till there should be imposition made; which ship, so spoiled, had arrived in the Thames; captain Dansker alleging that he was warranted so to do, by an edict of the archduchess, that all grindstones and coals should be prize which were to be carried into any of the countries of the enemy of her or of the king of Spain. These are the statements made in a petition from Cock and Booth to the admiralty, praying that they may have satisfaction and liberation of their men.

A similar complaint was made to the admiralty this month by John Fenwick, merchant of Newcastle. Complainant had freighted a ship for Cadiz, with coals, cloth, etc., and on the 8th inst., certain Holland men-of-war meeting with her, beat the master and put him in the bilboes to make him confess that he was bound for Dunkirk. The master was constant in the truth, and the Hollanders found all

the letters in the ship directed to Cadiz ; but they took away two packs of cloth worth 150*l*. He petitioned the admiralty for redress, and the admiralty ordered him to make proof of his petition, and thereupon they would make further order.

*March 17.*

The fraternity of hostmen of Newcastle issued an order against the practice of loading coals at Shields instead of at Newcastle. They alleged that the practice involved a higher charge upon hostmen, because they were obliged to hire more keels than otherwise would be needful, "and many times a loss and hazard of the keels coming down so far, and a great hindrance to the making of the more voyages, for that the keels cannot so often load the ships as when they come further up to the said town of Newcastle." "And the shippers also during their residence in the said port make their abode at Shields, where they are without government, and there also furnish themselves with victuals and other provisions which they ought to buy at Newcastle, for the bettering of that town." Moreover the shippers, taking occasion of the distance from Newcastle, where the searchers, etc., did not reside, "do oftentime depart without paying the customs and duties to his majesty and to the said town of Newcastle, and especially neglecting the payment of the 12*d*. a chaldron of coals, for which the hostmen are liable to his majesty." Therefore it was ordered that after the 1st of April none of the fraternity, their fitters, servants, agents, or factors, under a penalty of 6*l*., should load ships with coals or stones at any other place within the river, "only at or before the said town of Newcastle, or above a place called the Hawks-bill," until such ships had taken in one-half of their loading at Newcastle or above the Hawks-bill, unless the shippers had obtained a special warrant from the governor and stewards.

*April 16.*

Edward Bulmer, mariner, petitions the king, that being one of the Trinity House of Newcastle, and steersman of his majesty's barge, to carry his majesty and divers of the nobility down the Tyne, he showed the king and the lords a certificate from his brethren of the Trinity House of the great abuses concerning the river ; for the which relation, and for no other cause that he can imagine, the mayor and aldermen, having property in the staiths and quays whence the abuse arises, have taken so great malice against him, that in his absence, in a suit at York followed by the town, they procured him to be fined 500 marks as being one of those who animated the boys to the late pulling down of a house and lime-kiln, the evidence against

him being only that of some lewd persons whom he had before punished ; and the petitioner in his answer having expressed his innocence thereof, yet, not so satisfied, they use other unjust persecutions against him. Prays the king to remit the fine of 500 marks, or refer the same, and the cause, to the admiralty. Then comes a reference by the admiralty to the vice-president and secretary of the council of York, supposed to be then in London, with instructions to certify as to the truth of the petition. Three days later the admiralty order Richard Smyth, water-bailiff, etc., to bring up Bulmer to answer matters to be objected against him.—On the 16th May Bulmer petitions the admiralty again, complaining that he has been three weeks in custody, and understands that the messenger is suddenly to ride with him to York. He is so weak, by reason of his age and infirmities, that he is unable to ride so long a journey without great danger. Prays that he may have time given him to appear in the court at York, on sufficient security. This document is endorsed by their lordships' secretary, Edward Nicholas, "To present his security for 1000*l*," and on the 8th June he is discharged on bond. At the end of the month Bulmer writes to the vice-president and council of the North, alleging that he was informed against, with many others, for riots at Newcastle, for which he was, with the rest, most justly censured at this table, he being then employed by the merchant adventurers for a voyage to Hamburg, and unable to attend at the hearing of the cause Acknowledges his censure to be just, and submits thereto, but beseeches them to consider his great losses by the Dunkirkers, and in other ways. The result of the appeal was that the fine was mitigated to 40*l*., which Bulmer paid just before Christmas.

Bulmer died in 1638, mentioning in his will his wife Annie, his daughter Margaret, his sister Alice Fell, and his sons Edward and Charles. To the latter he bequeaths his "large silver beaker with the Emildon's arms," suggesting that he claimed descent from the marriage in the previous century of Sir William Bulmer, knight, with Elizabeth, daughter and heir of William Elmeden of Elmeden.

*May 30.*

Sir Robert Heath makes proposals to the privy council for reconciling the differences as to his ballast-shore at South Shields. The erection is objected to by Newcastle as calculated to draw trade from that town. He suggests a variety of restrictive regulations by way of allaying the fears of Newcastle. A couple of days later the subject was discussed by the king and council, and, according to Gardiner, it was ordered that the shore should be finished and backed with ballast



to make it fit for the salt-works, that seamen should have liberty freely to cast their ballast there without interruption, that neither those of Newcastle, nor the free hostmen, should hinder the same indirectly by denying to carry down coals in keels or lighters to the ships which cast their ballast at that shore, to the end that the said shore, "which may be for the safety and encouragement of navigation and shipping, may be so used as the same may neither be prejudicial to the town in diverting or withdrawing of trade, nor to his majesty in his customs or duty, nor hurtful to the said river."

*June 23.*

Minute made of the decree of the Exchequer chamber in the cause of the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle against Henry Hilton, ordering defendant's brewhouse in South Shields to be demolished, as had been the case in North Shields. The mayor and burgesses petitioned the king, setting forth their various suits for maintenance of their corporate privileges against the inhabitants of North and South Shields, and praying his majesty to cause a general restraint and inhibition to be made, that no baker, brewer, victualler, or smith, or other person using any trade, shall exercise the same in any part of the said port or its precincts, but only at the town of Newcastle. In January following the mayor and burgesses petition the king again, reciting that they had exhibited a bill in the court of Exchequer against Henry Hilton, to suppress a common brewhouse erected by him of late in South Shields, to the prejudice of the port and town of Newcastle, and contrary to its ancient liberty, in which cause a decree was made for the suppression of the brewhouse, but stay is made thereof until the king's pleasure be known. Meanwhile, Hilton continues his brewing, and the petitioners have no means to restrain him till the decree is entered. His brewing will hinder the resort to Newcastle, and tend to withdraw the inhabitants to Shields, whereby the petitioners will be disabled to perform such services as may be chargeable on their town. They pray that the decree may be entered, and Hilton restrained.

*August 28.*

The *St. Peter*, a Spanish patache, of which Christian Cheverria, or Chevarria, was captain, entered the harbour of the Tyne, pursued by a Holland man-of-war; and a long controversy was the result. The Spanish resident complained to secretary Windebank of the treatment experienced by a ship of the king of Spain; and Windebank sent his complaint to Ralph Cole, the mayor of Newcastle, using as his messenger, for greater expedition, Anthonie de Lemos, one of the

company of the *St. Peter*. The secretary's letter, written on the 18th of September, reached the mayor on the 29th; and on the 25th of October his worship and the resident were each making a formal statement of the facts. The mayor explained that he interfered between the two vessels to prevent any breach of the peace in the king's streams; but the Hollander accused the Spaniard of being a pirate. Chevarria was commanded into custody for two days, but afterwards liberated, with leave to depart. The Hollander again averred that the Spaniard was a pirate, and offered to prove that he had robbed both English and Hamburgers, if the mayor would stay him four-and-twenty hours; whereupon Chevarria promised to attend, but in the night went off in the ship's boat, with twelve or thirteen of his men, and had not been heard of since. After his departure, he (the mayor) caused his ship to be brought to Newcastle, and an inventory and appraisement to be made of her, and of the goods on board, leaving her in the custody of the master and ten of the company. This was Cole's account. The Spanish resident stated that the mayor, and the captain of Tynemouth castle, suffered the vessel to be set upon and rifled by the Hollander; and when she was set free, they imprisoned the captain, seized the goods, and allowed the mariners, in the very streets, to be reviled, stoned, beaten, wounded, and robbed by the inhabitants. He prayed that the patache might be delivered up, with her tackling, furniture, and goods, and that the mayor and captain should make satisfaction for what were lost and embezzled. The resident, on the other hand, was ready, if he should not establish his accusation against the mayor and captain, to make good their costs and damages. On the 29th October the lords of the admiralty sent to Cole and Fenwick, instructing them, the charge of piracy not having been proved, to deliver the *St. Peter* to Chevarria, or other person accredited by the resident, unless, before the receipt of this order, they should receive sufficient proof of the charge. In December (13th) Sir John Fenwick, lieutenant of Tynemouth castle, makes his statement, in reply to the captain of St. Sebastian's:—The Spanish ship arrived under the castle, and desired protection against a Hollander. Fenwick interfered, and the Hollander said he would not hurt the Spaniard. The next morning he heard that the Hollander, notwithstanding his promise, had taken the Spaniard; whereupon he went down to the Shields, and found the Spaniard's own people bringing their goods ashore and selling them. He went to every place where he heard there were any, and told the parties they should be answerable. He also caused part thereof to be delivered to the Spanish captain, and made him the best help he could. Afterwards, hearing that he had

forsaken his ship, he went down and commanded the master not to suffer more goods to come ashore, and sent men on board to assist him. To prevent further danger from the Hollander, he carried the sails ashore, where (says Sir John) they now remain, subject to the pleasure of their lordships. The men he sent on board remained on board until the mayor of Newcastle came with strong forces and carried the ship away. Two days before a message was dispatched from Whitehall to bring Cole before the lords to answer such matters as should be objected against him on his majesty's behalf. In the month of February following, their lordships referred a memorial of the Spanish resident to Sir Henry Martin, judge of the admiralty court; and in March we have a petition of Cole's before the lords of the admiralty praying for dismissal. He had repeatedly attended the judge concerning the resident's memorial, demanding security for his charges and a positive accusation, and none could be got. The lords ordered Martin to examine on oath such witnesses as might be offered on either side, and report. [J. C.]

*August.*

A MS. in the Lansdowne collection, transcribed by M. A. Richardson, and printed as one of his rare tracts in 1847, tells how three Southern commanders—a captain, a lieutenant, and an ancient—all voluntary members of the noble military company in Norwich, agreed, at an opportune and vacant leisure, to take a view of the cities, castles, and chief situations in the northern and other counties of England, and to that end and purpose met on Monday, 11th August 1634, “and mustering up their triple force from Norwich, with soldiers, journeying ammunition, two of them (the captain and the ensign) clad in green cloth like young foresters, and mounted on horses,” set out on their journey. Coming through Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, they entered the county of Durham, and made their way to its cathedral city, where they were entertained by the dean, and shown all the sights of the place. The narrative is written by the lieutenant, and he describes the entry of the party into Newcastle, after dark, in the following graphic language:—

“The dark veil of night overtook us, and it was so late when we entered that sea-coal maritime town (Newcastle), as like pilgrims we were forced to lie in Pilgrim Street, where our host, a good fellow, and his daughter, and an indifferent virginal player, somewhat refreshed our weary limbs. When we were within a mile of the town the light above gave us no directions to descend the steep rocky hill to the town, but the lights beneath, as we passed that stony street (Gateshead) down to the bridge, did serve us for

landmarks by which we made shift to grope out our way, and late, with some difficulty, obtained our harbour."

Here Richardson draws a lively picture:—"Imagine our trio, amid the gloom of an autumn night, urging their weary steeds, bearing not less weary burdens, adown the awkward roadway of Bottle-bank—steep, uneven, and scored by numerous channels of dirty, loathsome water, which, running onward, rendered the noble stream beneath more turbid than heavy rains had made it. Now they are passing beneath the three gloomy portals of the bridge, hemmed in with overhanging houses, whose tenants, or most of them, had long before retired to rest. View them emerging from the gate at the bridge end; whose superstructure, bearing a portraiture of the father of their present king, was but dimly visible in the gloom; they pass the grim walls of the chapel of St. Thomas the Martyr, and stand on the Sandhill: at their backs the opening of the Close, with its opulent and knightly inhabitants; on their right, the gloomy Watergate, and hard by it the Guildhall of good Roger Thornton, and beyond, the building, formerly the hospital of St. Katherine, likewise founded by him, but now used as the hall of the fraternity of merchant adventurers, whose barques lay safely in the dancing current a few yards in front. To the left and in front were discernible great piles of picturesque wooden houses, with continuous lines of casemented windows, whose ample space had but a little before been resplendent with the lamps of festivity, though now mostly extinguished; and spreading away from their horses' feet was a vast hill of sand, whose surface had that evening witnessed the sports of many an honest artisan and apprentice, while their more opulent neighbours looked on approvingly, and at times joined the merry throng. But these things had passed for this time, and our travellers, weary and wayworn, seek for the rest they may not find on the Sandhill; the night air blows chilly from the river, and the rising tide plashes in the stream which intersects the sand—they spur onward, and reaching its brink find something akin to difficulty of passage, but moving up its western brink, they pass beneath the huge projecting storeys of tall houses, closely set side by side, and ford by the foot of an ancient stone cross, while they immediately begin to ascend the steep winding hill which leads to the foot of Pilgrim Street. Now they pass the old church of All Hallows, and ensconce themselves at some hostelry, in all probability one of those ancient inns in that notable street which to this day rejoice in their olden features, and bear the very signs (if not the sign boards) which swung from their balconies in the reigns of James the First and Charles."

Next morning the travellers were early astir, and went out to see the town, and this is their testimony :—"We found the people and the streets much alike, neither sweet nor clean, yet seated in a vale between two mighty hills, in two counties (Northumberland and Durham), parted by that famous river (Tyne) which we passed by a fair stone bridge of ten arches with some towers, to which comes the ships. The Key is fair and long, and a strong wall there is between it and the town, on which we marched all abreast. On the top of the old castle, built by Robert D. of Normandy, we saw all the way down to Shields, some seven miles distance, where the sea's entrance is, in which channel lay not that number of ships, vessels, and barks that sometimes doth, for we were informed that the river is capable of receiving 200, 300, 400, or 500 sail at a time, and to ride therein safely at anchor, without damnifying one another. The town is surrounded by a strong and fair-built wall, with many towers thereon. It hath seven gates, and is governed by a mayor (Mr. Cole), then fat and rich, vested in a sack of satin, and twelve aldermen. The last mayor (Sir Lionel Maddison), and now recorder (Sir T. Riddell, senior), did both endure knighthood in his majesty's late progress. Then did we take a view of the market-place, the town-hall, the neat cross over against which almost is a stately, prince-like, freestone inn [the Nag's Head—see pages 34 and 280], in which we tasted a cup of good wine; then taking a view of the four churches in the town, and breaking our fast in that fair inn (Mr. Leonard Carr's), we hastened to take horse. And now are we ready to take our leaves of the progress way, having no stomachs for Tweed, nor those inhabitants, for being got out of the town through one of the gates, we marched away, with pretty murmuring music along the rivers of Tyne and Derwent, which kept us from straying on our left, as the Picts' wall did on our right."

Mine host of the Nag's Head, Leonard Carr, was an alderman who, in the following year, was elected sheriff of Newcastle. His name occurs frequently in the *Howard Household Books* (Surtees Society, vol. lxxviii.) as the wine-merchant of the Naworth family. Thus, in 1625, we have, under date August 17, "To Mr. Carr of Newcastle, for 15 gallons, 3 quarts of claret, at 2s. 8d. the gallon, and 6 gallons, one pottle of canary sack, 4s. per gallon, 3*l.* 8s." Again, in October, "For wine bought of Leonard Carr—viz., 8 gallons of canary, 32s.; 2 rundlets of claret, containing 16 gallons, 1 pottle, at 2s. a gallon, 33s. 3d.; 4 gallons, 1 quart, a gill of muscadine, at 4s. a gallon, 17s. 3d.; 3 pints of white wine for my lady Howard, 12d." In 1626 he supplies a whole tun at once :—"15 July. To Leonard Carr of Newcastle, for a tun of wine, by his bill, 20*l.*"

Writing of All Saints' church, Bourne mentions Mr. Carr's tombstone:—"There is an old stone which lies between the vestry and quire-door, with its inscription erased. It belonged to alderman Leonard Carr [buried August 1658] who gave 5*l.* yearly, for ever, to the poor of this parish, and appointed it out of divers houses in the Butcher Bank. He was an alderman of the town before the rebellion, and turned out by the rebels. He deserves a better monument."

*September 15.*

Will of this date of Thomas Conyers of Newcastle, gentleman. Bequeaths to the poor of All Saints', 40*s.*; to his brother John, 10*l.*, and his best wearing cloak; to his brother Roger, 5*l.*; to Alice his wife, 20*s.*; to his sisters Mary Stubbs, Elizabeth Metcalf, Dorothy Willis, and Sisly Husband, and his sister-in-law, Sarah Conyers, 20*s.*; to his honest friend Daniel Pusey, clerk, parish of All Saints, 20*s.*; to his kind friend John Tomkins of Newcastle, gentleman, 5*l.*, he to be executor and residuary legatee. Inventory taken February 27, 1635. Value, 138*l.* 1*s.* 10*d.*

*October 20.*

Writs for levying ship-money were issued. One ship of 800 tons, with men, ordnance, gunpowder, pikes, and provender, was to be provided by the corporations of Newcastle, Berwick, Hartlepool, Durham, Scarborough, and other towns and maritime places between Berwick and Bridlington. Towards the close of the year the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle represented to the privy council the difficulties they encountered in making an equitable assessment among all these widely scattered contributories. After treaty with the other parties to be charged, they had offered to bear a fourth part of the burden; but the others would not extend the assessment to all the towns on the sea coast and the rivers, but would confine it to the towns named in the writ, and laboured to undervalue themselves, and lay a most heavy charge upon the petitioners, expressing themselves that Newcastle was much enriched by the coal trade, whereas a great number of the hostmen and others, who had the chief benefit of that trade, lived in London and elsewhere out of the precincts of Newcastle. The assessment not being agreed upon devolved to the sheriffs of York, Northumberland, and Durham; and the petitioners prayed their lordships to give such instructions to these sheriffs as would prevent the overcharging of them.

In like manner—that is to say, solely by his own authority—the king imposed a duty of 4*s.* a chaldron on all sea-coal, stone-coal, or pit-coal exported from England to foreign parts.

November 10.

The books of the Trinity House of Newcastle show that upon this date 5*l.* 11*s.* 2*d.* was paid to George Ward of Upton, Yorkshire, for a parcel of waste ground at Pow Pans, near North Shields, and for their low light-house there, 30 ells in length and 60 in breadth, which was formerly part of the possessions of Tynemouth monastery. The purchase had been arranged in September, when the fraternity paid 9*s.* 6*d.* "for wherry hire and charges when livery and seisin was made of the sandy ground on which the lower lighthouse stands." In January following the society made an order that every elder brother should furnish himself with a silver whistle and chain, and every younger brother with a silver whistle and silk scarf. Brand notes the occurrence of a stone over the door of the chapel in the Trinity House, inscribed "June 7, 1634."

November 20.

By indenture of this date the dean and chapter of Carlisle demised to Ralph, son of John Salkeld of Hulne Abbey, for the term of twenty-one years, paying 11*l.* per annum at Lammas day, "all that moiety or one-half of the tithe corn and sheaves of corn and grain, coming, etc., within the fields and territories belonging to the parish of St. Nicholas, Newcastle, with all ways, etc., late in the tenure or occupation of William Barwicke or his assigns." In 1649 the value of the moiety was reported by the parliamentary surveyors to be 95*l.* per annum.

December 4.

Ralph Gardiner, in the twentieth chapter of *England's Grievance*, states that on this date it was discovered by the king's commissioners that Jarrow Slake belonged to the crown. The mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, who always had a watchful eye on the foreshore, put in a claim to it, alleging that all ground from full sea-mark to low water mark on both sides the river, from Hedwyn Streams to Sparhawk, was granted to them by king John. The commissioners, in 1637, called upon them to make their claim good, and then they offered to purchase the Slake for 200*l.* "Upon which Mr. Thomas Talbot and Mr. Richard Allen of London gave 400*l.* and got it." Gardiner continues scornfully—"If this ground to a full sea-mark were really the corporation of Newcastle's, it would have so appeared in the charter granted by king John, and also they then might have made good their claim, and not have become petitioners to purchase the thing which was their own before."

1635.

10 and 11 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Ralph Cock, Mayor, and John Marley, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Sir Peter Riddell.**

Arms : Gules, a lion rampant within a bordure indented argent.

**Sheriff—Leonard Carr.**

Arms : Gules, on a chevron argent, three mullets sable.



IN the summer of this year a running post was established, by which letters arrived in, and were despatched from, Newcastle with regularity. Rushworth prints the royal order for this long-needed improvement :—"To this time there having been no certain or constant intercourse between the kingdoms of England and Scotland, his majesty hath been pleased to command his servant, Thomas Witherings, esquire, his majesty's postmaster of England for foreign parts, to settle one running post, or two, to run night and day between Edinburgh in Scotland and the city of London, to go thither and come back again in six days ; and to take with them all such letters as shall be directed to any post town in the said road, . . . and to pay 2d. for every single letter under four score miles, and if 140 miles, 4d., and if above, then 6d. . . . And the king doth command that no other messenger, foot-post, or foot-posts, shall take up, carry, receive, or deliver, any letter or letters whatsoever, other than the messengers appointed by the said Thomas Witherings, except common known carriers, or a particular messenger to be sent on purpose with a letter to a friend."

The assessment of ship-money continued to be a fruitful source of discontent and trouble. Bishop Morton, writing to Mr. Richard Baddeley in London, says :—"Our great business in this country is provision for a ship, and the sages of Newcastle have so advanced the matter for exoneration of themselves and burdening their neighbours,



that they are become odious that way, so that we of the church, who thought we might plead immunity, I doubt shall be found chargeable, notwithstanding that the sheriffs are all propitious unto us, but yet we want directions." Alderman William Warmouth of Newcastle, ill at his lodgings in Holborn, near Chancery Lane, writes to secretary Coke on the 27th March, that he has delivered to him a cess of all such marine places as the sheriffs of York, Northumberland, and Durham had omitted, and sends Thomas Tempest to give him satisfaction therein. By the 1st April, out of 104,252*l.* levied in the maritime towns, only 36,378*l.* 7*s.* 11*d.* had been collected. Northumberland, among other counties, had not paid any portion of the 3500*l.* which it was ordered to contribute. In October there is a receipt of the treasurer for 21*l.* ship-money, paid by Sir Lionel Maddison on behalf of Sir Ralph Selby, sheriff of the county. Next month the privy council, the king presiding, are considering a petition from Northumberland for mitigation of the assessment, and the order of council is that the assessment must proceed, and consideration be given thereafter "for the most ease." The year closes with another petition from "the poor inhabitants" between Tyne and Tweed, asking that the 3500*l.* may be divided into several payments, and an order of the king in council that the amount may be collected in two equal sums, to be paid the following March and at Michaelmas.

*March 7.*

Buried in the church of St. Nicholas, Newcastle, Nicholas Rayne, "pursuivant." He was an officer of the High Commission court at Durham, resembling somewhat the modern bailiff. A MS., preserved at Rome, on the persecution of catholics in England during Elizabeth's reign, enumerates twelve kinds of pursuivants. Among them are "those of the bishops who go about two and two, and each month cite catholics to the bishop's court, called of the High Commission, where the oath of allegiance and supremacy is tendered to them." Nicholas Rayne served writs, gave proof of service, and sometimes was sadly beaten and maltreated by those whom he summoned. On the 5th of the month, styling himself "Nicholas Rayne of the city of Durham, gentleman," he made his will, ordering his body to be buried in the parish church of St. Nicholas [Newcastle], as near my eld-father, Charles Slingsbye, clerk, parson of Rothbury [buried October 28, 1628], as possible may be. And there, two days afterwards, he was interred. His widow, Margaret Rayne, daughter probably of Mr. Slingsby of Rothbury, proved the will in May. He left nothing of consequence, the value of his goods being placed in the inventory at 7*l.* 16*s.* 2*d.*

*April 18.*

Sir Francis Brandling of Warkworth Castle, for 40*l.*, conveys to Anthony Norman, yeoman, and Thomas Norman, his son, all that close in the tenure of Roger Hills, situate without the walls, but within the liberties of Newcastle, outside Pilgrim Street Gate, on the west side of the street there ; bounded south by a tenement and garth belonging to Thomas Butler, merchant ; north by a tenement and garth belonging to Walter Boutth, yeoman ; east by the king's street ; and west by a piece of ground belonging to Raphe Fewler, merchant, and Thomas Road, saddler.

*June 22.*

Sir William Brereton, bart., of Handford, Cheshire, travelling in the north of England, visited Newcastle, and in his journal, printed by the Chetham Society, thus describes the town and river :—" This is beyond all compare the fairest and richest town in England, inferior for wealth and building to no city save London and Bristow, and whether it may not deserve to be accounted as wealthy as Bristow I make some doubt. It is seated upon the river Tine, the mouth of which river affords such a narrow channel at low water, as it is said not to be above forty yards broad ; and at the mouth there is a great shelf and bank of sand, so as at a high water also it is most dangerous passage for strangers, inasmuch as they must pass near to that side of the haven which lieth close by, and near under the command of Tine-mouth castle ; which is a dainty-seated castle, almost compassed with the sea, wherein hath been the fairest church I have seen in any castle, but it is now out of repair, and much neglected ; it belongeth to the earl of Northumberland. This river conveys a navigable channel from the sea to Newcastle, which is about seven miles, and it doth flow about six or seven miles (as I was informed) above the town into the country ; this river is very plentifully furnished with salmon—and over the same, 'twixt bishoprick and Northumberland, there is erected (except London Bridge over Thames, and the bridge at Barwick over Tweed) one of the finest bridges I have met with in England, consisting of eight arches. . . . This town of Newcastle is governed by a mayor, a recorder, a sheriff, and ten aldermen ; it hath great revenues belonging unto it (as I was informed) at least 5000*l.* or 6000*l.* per annum, besides great collieries employed for the use and supply of the commons and poor of the town. Herein are five churches ; and St. Nicholas' church, which is the fairest, is as neat pewed, and formed with as much uniformity, as any I have found in England, and it is as neatly kept and trimmed. This town was assessed to pay 3570*l.* towards the building of the late ship ; and

York taxed 1800*l.*; and some towns of the country contributed with them, and paid 700*l.*, part of 1800*l.* taxed. There is every day a market here kept, and in a dainty market place. Tuesday and Saturday a mighty market, and much provision comes out of Northumberland; infinite store of poultry. This town (a great part of it) placed upon the highest and the steepest hills that I have found in any great town; these so steep as horses cannot stand upon the pavements—therefore the daintiest flagged channels are in every street that I have seen; hereupon may horse or man go without danger of sliding. Resting here, 23rd June, I took boat about twelve o'clock, and went to Tine-mouth and to the Sheeldes, and returned about seven o'clock; it is about seven miles. Here I viewed the salt works, wherein is more salt works, and more salt made, than in any part of England that I know, and all the salt here is made of salt water; these pans, which are not to be numbered, placed in the river-mouth, and wrought with coals brought by water from Newcastle pits. [Describes the process of salt-making at great length.] Here at Newcastle is the fairest quay in England I have met withal, from Tine-bridge all along town-wall, and almost to the glassworks, where is made window-glass. Divers havens of stone-wall erected to cast out their ballast upon, and they pay for every ton cast out 6*d.* This is a spacious haven, now naked of ships, but sometimes thronged. The fairest built inn in England that I have seen is Mr. Carre's in this town [the Nag's Head]; we lodged at the Swan, at Mr. Swan's, the postmaster's, and paid 8*d.* ordinary, and no great provision. He is a very forward man to have a coy [decoy for wild fowl?] here erected. This town unto this country serves instead of London, by means whereof the country is supplied with money; whereas otherwise so much money is carried out of the country to the lords and landlords, as there would be neither sufficient money to pay the tenants' rents, nor would the country be supplied with money. This town is also famous for the walls which compass round the town, about which you may walk, and which is strengthened with strong towers placed upon the wall at no great distance."

*June.*

In the State Papers of this year, with a query as to the month, is a statement respecting the various payments levied at Newcastle upon every chaldron of coal shipped there, and the danger to the coal-fleet from its lying exposed in the harbour without any protection from fortification. The corporation of hostmen levy payments to the king amounting to 12*d.* a chaldron on coals to be spent within the kingdom, and 12*s.* 4*d.* [1*s.* 4*d.* ?] on coals transported to foreign parts.

The corporation of Newcastle levy also 3d. per chaldron on coals to be vendēd in the kingdom, and 16d. on coals sent abroad, upon pretence of expending the same in relief of the poor, although the town takes the amount to itself, and expends but a small proportion in works of charity. It is suggested that this last levy might be applied to the erection of fortifications for the protection of the fleet of six or seven hundred ships which are many times in the Tyne altogether. On the 11th July the king writes to bishop Morton, the mayor of Newcastle, and the sheriffs of Northumberland and Durham, that he finds the port of Newcastle, although of great importance, either not at all, or very weakly, defended against incursions. Requires them to certify what fortifications are upon the Tyne, and what are fit to be made, and the estimated charge.

*September 23.*

Assessments were levied for building stalls in Gateshead church, and the parson and churchwardens proceeded to assign seats to the parishioners. Among the seat-holders occur the well-known local names of Sir Alexander Hall, Roger Liddell, Francis Liddell and wife, Sir Thomas Riddell and family, Ralph, John, Anne, and Mrs. Cole, Roger and Susan Pearce, William and Ellinor Mallett, Charles Tempest, Henry Midford, Nicholas Calvert, and Mrs. Ann Cookson. The churchwardens paid for twelve yards of "lineing cloth for a sirpcloth of the makeing," 2*l.* 9*s.* 6*d.*; and for altering the old sirpcloth for the clerk, 2*s.* 6*d.*; for a new service book, 9*s.*; and for binding the old service book for the clerk, 2*s.* 6*d.*

*December 5.*

George Tonge, son of Sir George Tonge, knight, married at St. Nicholas' church to Barbara, daughter of Mr. James Carr. A wedding dinner at Mr. Carr's house: present, Vicar Alvey, Sir George Tonge, Mr. Robert Carr, Mr. John Blakiston, mercer (afterwards a regicide), and Susanna his wife, Mr. Robert Harle, Mr. Ball, Christopher Copperthwaite, gentleman, Francis Liddell, gentleman, Lindley Wrenn, esquire, Ninian Shafto, gentleman, Henry Maddison, gentleman, and George Fenwick, merchant. After dinner Mr. Alvey and Mrs. Blakiston were sitting apart from the company, in the room where they had dined, at the table side, and continued a pretty space, in a serious discourse. Maddison, Fenwick, and Blakiston were standing together. Blakiston went to his wife, took her by the hand, and said, "Wife, what discourse is this you have with Mr. Alvey? If you doubt of any thing, I would have you be satisfied with your husband at home, and, if he cannot, then may you go to your minister

to be resolved." Alvey, in very angry manner, replied, "What, man art thou comen to outface me? thou art but a priest's son more than I am." Blakiston (whose father was a prebendary of the seventh stall at Durham) mildly answered that he was not, but only came to advise his wife not to meddle with anything which concerned Mr. Alvey and him; and that he would not make any comparisons with him, but would give him all the respect that was fitting to his place and calling. Upon some other passages, Blakiston said, "You have ever borne spite or malice to me since you came to the town." Alvey passionately replied, instantly, "Go, I will have nothing to do with ye, for thou art a man hath no religion nor grace in thy heart, if you say so." Blakiston mildly and temperately desired the vicar to let him know what religion was, and indeed then told him that he had so much religion as he could discern of errors which fell from him, or words to that effect. The two were reasoning together in more forward than ordinary manner. After some other passages they departed. Upon their parting, Blakiston, much transported with passion, as Robert Carr conceived, and upon what occasion he knew not, said to Alvey, "I will maintain that in your last sermon at Allhallows' you delivered seven errors." One of the company said to Mr. Alvey, "Vindicate your credit now." He seemed much discontented, and, taking Lindley Wrenn by the hand, desired him to remember the passages, and spoke thus, "Mr. Blakiston, you will justify this." Blackiston replied, "Yea, if need be, I will justify seventeen (or seventy) since you came to the town," rather seventy, as Wrenn thought. Robert Carr observed to Blakiston, that he would not have spoken so disgracefully of Mr. Alvey unless the devil were in his tongue. Fenwick did not conceive that any words spoken by Blakiston were injurious or defamatory, but did not speak to the concluding words, by which Wrenn thought Mr. Alvey was much abused in regard of his function and calling. All these particulars came out upon an investigation by the High Commission court at Durham, to which Blakiston was summoned by Alvey. What follows, as well as what precedes, is Mr. Longstaffe's summary of the evidence, from the report in vol. xxxiv. of the Surtees Society's publications.

Blakiston was at St. Nicholas' church on a lecture day, and was standing and leaning in his pew, and did not kneel at the reading of such prayers as is enjoined according to the curate, or, according to Edward Mann, a mercer, who was placed in a seat near, was behaving himself reverently by bowing his body and bending his knees, having his hat before his face and resting his arm upon the pew, without any offence to the congregation. Mann saw others sitting near who did

not behave so reverently, of whom he believed Alvey took no notice at all. The vicar ceased in the reading of prayers, and sent the beadle to Blakiston, to say that Mr. Alvey sent him to bid him kneel. Blakiston made some answer, and the beadle returned. Immediately Alvey spoke to Christopher Forster, the curate, to send John Willys, the parish clerk, to Blakiston, to wish him to conform himself by kneeling. The clerk did so, and returning to Forster, told him that Blakiston said that he knew his duty or what he had to do as well as his master. Many of the congregation stood up and gazed at them. Forster considered that the minister was hindered for the time in celebrating divine service; Mann and Mrs. Elizabeth Lorraine that the congregation was disturbed by Mr. Alvey without just cause, by his so sending to Blakiston and hindering him in his devotions. Blakiston, on leaving the church, wished Elizabeth, the wife of Henry Dawson, merchant, to take notice of the circumstance.

It was further alleged in evidence against Blakiston, that living in St. Nicholas' parish, he had not for four or five years received the holy communion in St. Nicholas' church. He oftener repaired to All-hallows' church [where Dr. Jenison preached] than to St. Nicholas'. Yet Alvey was a good, orthodox, able, painful, preacher of sound doctrine, and was so esteemed by all his auditors of good and sound judgment. Blakiston's friends in reply say nothing about Alvey's preaching or character, but believe Blakiston, who is a very religious man, to be conformable to the doctrine, discipline, rites, and ceremonies of the church of England. They come mostly to the beginning of prayers, and always stay to the ending, but not to observe any man's gesture or behaviour, or when he comes or goes away, but are at their own devotions, and join with the congregation in such religious duties or offices as are handled. John Lodge's seat, indeed, is distant from Blakiston's, "over against him on the other side, and divers people usually stand in the alleys or bench before the seats between them." Howbeit, some have seen his decent, reverent, religious, and christian behaviour. The bowing of his body and bending of his knees at the reading of the confession, collects, and other public prayers have been observed. He has been seen standing at the reading of the Creed. His gesture or deportment of his body at the reading of the gospel and litany, and at the name of Jesus, and his bowing thereat, have not been observed. "The whole town of Newcastle, and some other places adjoining are accounted all one parish, and not certainly distinguished." Witness Fenwick liveth "in a street called the Close, reputed by some to be of the parish of St. Nicholas, within the said town," and repairs "unto some of the churches or chapels in Newcastle." Mann lives "in the

chapelry of All Saints, in the parish of St. Nicholas," and repairs mostly "to the said chapel, and sometimes to the church." Elizabeth Dawson lives "in St. Nicholas' parish, as the same is accounted, and sometimes repaireth to St. Nicholas' church, and at other times to some other churches, as occasion serveth." Elizabeth Lorraine, since her removal into the chapelry of St. John's, doth not so often repair to St. Nicholas' church as formerly she did. Blakiston's house "is not accounted to be of the chapelry" of Allhallows'. It is "within the parish of St. Nicholas, as the same is accounted to be." He is much from home as a merchant. When at home he duly and constantly frequents St. Nicholas' and other churches in the town. He comes to them sometimes sooner and sometimes later, "as others did and still do."

The proceedings did not end until 1639, when Blakiston was ordered to make an acknowledgment to Alvey for charging him with the seven errors, and of his nonconformity and nonreception of the communion, to be declared excommunicate, pay the king 100*l.*, and defray all the costs. He obtained a respite for a month on the 23rd July, in that year, and that is the last we hear of the case.

*December 9.*

Will of this date of Elizabeth Grey of Newcastle, widow. [Proved 1637.] Directs her body to be buried in St. Nicholas' church, in the place called St. George's porch. Gives to the two sons of her brother, Bartram Borne, 5*l.* each towards binding them as apprentices in some honest calling; to her cousin, Oliver Killingworth, gentleman, 26*s.* 8*d.* to be paid to him for the life natural of Emmett Aydon, widow, from and out of one annuity which she (testatrix) held by grant from Gawine Aydon, merchant, deceased; to her sister, Elizabeth Gray, 20*s.*; to her cousin, William Gray, merchant, 20*s.* yearly, to be paid out of the said grant of the said annuity during life; to Thomas Gray all her interest in the stall-room within the parish church of St. Nicholas.

---

Peter Pearson and Richard Hodgson of Newcastle were summoned before the court of High Commission at Durham (Surtees Society, vol. xxxiv., p. 132) to answer a charge of using scandalous words. The articles exhibited against them stated that Pearson, the day after Dr. Cosin preached in St. Nicholas', Newcastle, in April or May 1635, met with two who had been at the sermon, and after asking how they liked it said, "Well, howsoever, my lord of Canterbury and he (Cosin) are ours;" by which it was urged that he, being a recusant papist, meant that the archbishop and Cosin were popishly addicted.

Hodgson was charged with the same offence. Both the accused appeared and denied—Pearson that he ever spoke the words, or, if he did, that he spoke them to any such purpose or intent; Hodgson that he ever named or spoke of the archbishop or Cosin. Edward Man, merchant, aged 37, and Thomas Hallman, gentleman, aged 47, were the two persons who had the conversation with the defendants. Man deposed that he met Pearson and Hodgson as alleged, “and did go unto the house of Alice Coward, widow, and there did drink their morning draughts together.” Pearson asked him how he liked the sermon, and he replied that he liked it very well, and that Dr. Cosin taught very substantially, in his opinion, so as no sober mind could take just exception at anything he delivered. Pearson immediately replying, said, “Howsoever, my lord of Canterbury and he are both ours.” Hodgson then asked, “Did you observe Dr. Cosin his gesture in time of divine service?” Man answered that he did a little. Hodgson again asked, “Do you know how they catch apes?” He answered, “Not well.” Hodgson then said, “They first put on one part and then another part of their habit till they had put on all, and so they catch them.” From which discourse he believed that Hodgson meant to say that the Protestants were a catching or inclining to their popish religion. The case dragged on, because of the plague, until the spring of 1637, when Pearson was fined 1000 marks and sent to prison for a year, and Hodgson was condemned to pay costs.

Besides the cases already enumerated, several charges relating to Newcastle people, though mostly of a minor degree, were exhibited before the court this year. John Simpson, brought up on suspicion of being a popish seducer, was ordered to repair to Mr. Alvey, vicar of Newcastle, and confer with him, and to bring a certificate that he had been to church. So also, Arthur Lee was ordered to confer with Mr. Alvey in points of religion, and to enter bond and certify of his conference. Lee, however, declined to do either, and “fled away from Newcastle.” Margaret Knox, wife of John Knox of Newcastle, was brought up for sundry adulteries, and for attempting to father a child on Gawin Forster of Newcastle, yeoman. Margaret was ordered to do public penance in penitential habit at the Market Cross, Durham, on a Saturday, in the cathedral on the following forenoon, and at St. Nicholas’ church on the following afternoon. And there was a very unpleasant case in which Marmaduke Hedworth and Margaret Rey of Chester-le-Street were involved, and in which the names of Richard Garbutt of Newcastle, plasterer, Mark Clifton, living in St. Nicholas’ church-yard, William Rey of Newcastle, merchant, and William Bowes of Gateshead, occur.



The corporation of Newcastle paid the following accounts this year:—"For rowing and steering the barge, and for ten wherries that accompanied the bishop of Durham down to Shields, 39s.; for the charges of a dinner for the bishop, mayor, aldermen, and their attendants, at Shields, the same time, 15*l.* 1s. 4d.; paid the wherry-men for attending with the barge and wherries to carry the judges down to Shields, 10s.; paid Thomas Corner for a band rope for the common bell's clap, 13s. 4d.; Matthew Hutton, for coals sent to the lord president of York, 16*l.*; paid which was assessed upon the town chamber for the setting out of ships of war in anno 1634, 30*l.*; paid Mr Lucke, goldsmith, for making a new silver seal for the town court, 20*l.*"

## 1636.

11 and 12 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas:—*

Sir Peter Riddell, Mayor, and Leonard Carr, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas:—*

Mayor—Thomas Liddell.

Arms: Argent, fretty and on a chief gules, three leopards' heads cabosed or.

Sheriff—Henry Lawson.



ANOTHER outbreak of plague troubled Tyneside. It began at North Shields in October 1635—brought over "from Holland and other parts beyond the seas"—and after an intermission broke out at Newcastle in May, "with such fury that 114 persons died of it in the first fortnight." From May 6th to the end of the year, 5037 persons died in the visitation at Newcastle, and 515 at Gateshead. The weekly mortality rose from 59, 55, and 99 in May, to 212, 270, and 366 in July; while, in the week ending 4th September, 520 inhabitants of Newcastle fell victims to the malady. All trade

was at a stand, and Brand quotes a tradition that the streets of the town were covered with grass. Famine would have followed but for the energetic means taken by the authorities to prevent it, and the assistance rendered by other communities. In the *Archæologia Æliana* (O. S. ii.—366) is a letter from the mayor, etc., of Newcastle to the corporation of Berwick, acknowledging the receipt of 40 marks. It must have been written on the very eve of the mayor-choosing, for the letter is dated "October 1636," and Michaelmas Monday, when Sir Peter Riddell went out of office, fell on the 2nd of that month:—

"Right worthy gentlemen, we have received from you, by a servant of Sir John Clavering, the sum of forty marks, a very ample expression of your pity to us in this our great calamity by reason of the sore pestilence so long continuing in this place; your charity, with the help of God, shall be by us continually had in remembrance, and as occasion shall require shall be requited with thankfulness, according to our powers. God in his mercy for Christ Jesus his sake cease the sickness and preserve you and all others from the same. The number of the dead is not so many this last week as formerly, being but 122. The great death of people that hath been, which doth amount to very near 6000 persons since the beginning, we fear is the cause that there die fewer now; there being not so many people left in the town as there was. Thus, with all due respects of thankfulness, we rest, your truly loving friends, Peter Riddell, mayor, William Warmouth, Ralph Cole, Robert Anderson, Leonard Carr."

In his tract of 1643, Lieut.-Colonel John Fenwick, remonstrating with Newcastle on its sins, asks:—"Hast thou forgot how loud God spake to thee in that great plague, *anno* 1636, when there died in half-a-yeare about seven thousand, which made thee almost desolate, thy streets growne greene with grasse, thy treasure wasted, thy trading departed, as thou never yet recovered it; thy wounds increased thy madnesse; thou wentest not to heaven for a perfect cure? What thinkst thou was the meaning of that strange fire brake out (none ever knew how) in thy secret chamber of thy towne's house, or common hall, where the next yeere after the great plague, thy rulers, like wolves of the evening, were lurking all that day plotting the new project about coals and salt, to devoure thy poore inhabitants, and also new devices to suppress sound preaching, and starve your soules?" Further on, the writer, who had "lost his whole estate in these late troubles," states that he had been in the country, "and comming to towne I heard presently of the increase of the plague, and that the night before some six and thirty died of it; and from thence it daily increased to foure hundred a-weeke."

The registers of three of the churches in Newcastle are crowded

with entries of burials this year. That of All Saints' is missing, but there is an entry referring to the visitation in the churchwardens books:—"Paid for deals, nails, and workmanship in nailing up a great stair door in the churchyard by reason of the infection of a house on the stairs, and for making a key, etc., 4s. 9d." At St. Andrew's, in October, the writer of the record makes a note of the days on which no burial occurred:—"None for the 15th," and "19 none and 20;" while in several instances he enters "a burial," "3 burials," "2 poor ones," etc., without names. Mr. Hodgson Hinde (*Arch. Æl.*, N. S. iii.-64) considers that the frequent visitations of the plague to which Newcastle was subjected "must have prevented any material increase of population; and it is probable that in 1636 the number of inhabitants was not greater than in 1548. If such were the case, upwards of one-half were cut off in that disastrous year."

Dr. Jenison, of All Saints', improved the occasion by writing a book of 252 pages on the subject. It was published in the month of January, 1636-37, and is entitled, "Newcastle's Call, To her Neighbour and Sister Townes and Cities throughout the land, to take warning by her Sins and Sorrowes. Lest this overflowing scourge of Pestilence reach even unto them also. As also a Direction how to discover such sins as are the procurers of God's judgments by divers methods. By R. Jenison, Dr. of D. Whereunto is added the number of them that dyed weekly in Newcastle and Garth-side from May 6 to December 31, 1636. London: Printed for Robert Milbourne, at the signe of the Vnicorne, neere to Fleet Bridge." "God's arrow of pestilence," writes the Doctor, "hath arrived even unto us of this sinful place and town after the broad warning and summons given us a few months ago, when it arrived at our port (at the North Shields in Octob. 1635), and made its abode there awhile chiefly, yet so as that it sent up the river to us some few messengers of death, where, I say, after some few months' intermission it hath broken out fearfully, and begins to spread like wildfire (May 6th, 1636), mo perishing by it the first fortnight since it began (namely, 114 persons), or was discovered amongst us, than ever formerly with us, or yet with the great and mother city of London in the first three months after it began with them, some eleven years ago, though, for number of parishes, the disproportion be thirty to one."

At the Trinity House fumigations were kept up to prevent the infection spreading from those who came from Shields to do business there, and such entries as these occur in the books of the fraternity:—"Paid for rosin and frankincense to burn in the house, 10d.; paid for pitch and rosin when Peter Mohon's house was cleansed, 9d."

Newcastle cases in the High Commission court at Durham were

postponed, for everybody feared to encounter an inhabitant of the plague-stricken town within speaking distance. John Harrison, summoned for a clandestine marriage, probably escaped trial altogether. His case came before the court on the 21st June, and was ordered "not to be entered until it please God to send Newcastle clear of the infection." In August, "the cause to remain and continue *statu quo* until the town were clear of the sickness."

*March 11.*

Will of Henry Anderson of Newcastle, merchant. To be buried in the church of St. Nicholas, as near to his grandfather as conveniently might be. To his two sisters, Anne and Margaret Anderson, either of them 5*l.* for a token. Residue to his loving wife Margaret. Proved 1637.

*March 18.*

"Robert Bewick, John Marley, John Cock, etc., fined for fitting other men's coals," is an entry in the books of the hostmen's company of this date.

*May 24.*

Ralph Cole, mayor in 1633-34, "fat and rich, vested in a sack of satin," as the three Norwich soldiers described him, purchased from lady Ann Middleton and others the lordship of Brancepeth, in trust for Nicholas Cole, his son; "which lordship had by letters patent, 4 Car. I., been granted by the crown to Edward Ditchfield, John Highlord, Humphrey Clark, and Francis Mosse, trustees for the city of London, and by them conveyed to lady Middleton, 25th April 1633." He was the son of Nicholas Cole, son of James Cole of Gateshead, whose will is summarised on page 16. A history of the family, contributed to the *Newcastle Courant*, in August 1886, by Mr. J. Edwin-Cole of Boston, Lincolnshire, corrects the prevailing impression that the purchaser of Brancepeth was knighted, and limits the honour to his son Nicholas (knight and baronet), on whose behalf he made the purchase. Ralph Cole received from his uncle Thomas, who died in 1620, "worth an immense sum in bills, bonds, and mortgages," Scots House and Gilbert Leazes; and in 1630 he bought the estate, grange, and manor of Kepyner hospital from the Heath family. His father Nicholas and his uncle Thomas were unable to prove their right to arms at the visitation of Durham in 1615; but Ralph Cole, when he was mayor, obtained a grant from Sir William Segar, garter, of "argent, a chevron engrailed sable, between three scorpions reversed of the second, on a chief azure as

many fleur de lis of the first." These, says Mr. Edwin-Cole, which were the ancient bearings of the Coles of Shrewsbury, augmented by the chief charged with fleur de lis, were for some cause or other changed, and "argent, a fesse engrailed between three scorpions erect sable," were passed by patent to Ralph and Sir Nicholas, his son, by Sir John Borough, garter. More about the Cole family will transpire when we come to the period of Ralph's death in 1655.

---

Entries in the books of Newcastle Trinity House include these:—"1636. Paid about the procuring of my lord bishop of Durham, his warrant for sermons to be preached in the chapel, for ever, 30s; given to Mr. Yeldard Alvey, vicar of Newcastle, for a present from the house in wine and wheat, in regard he made the first sermon in the chapel, 2*l.* 5*s.* 10*d.*; paid for a dinner for the vicar, the doctor [Jenison], and the rest of the clergy, that day the vicar preached in the chapel, being the first sermon, 28th March, 3*l.* 1*s.* 6*d.*" Same date, press-masters [heads of the press-gang], visited the house, and were entertained there.

---

Brand quotes from the books of the merchants company of Newcastle a statement, that the London merchants at Rotterdam laid this year a new imposition on cloth from Newcastle, though a composition had been made at Antwerp, in 1519, for a payment of 8*l.* by the Newcastle company, in lieu of all impositions, which payment had been constantly tendered and accepted. The Newcastle merchants petitioned the king, who referred it to the privy council, who referred it to the lord chief-justice and lord chief-baron, who reported in favour of Newcastle. Among the State Papers is a copy of the reply which the London merchants made to the Newcastle petition. They cited the local charter of Edward VI. [see vol. ii.—245], and state that that charter did not give the Newcastle fraternity liberty to trade in cloth or woollen manufactures formerly granted to the merchant adventurers of England. The composition of 8*l.* per annum, pretended to have been paid to them by the merchants of Newcastle for their trade of cloths into places privileged to the writers, is believed to have been paid for the addition of wool and woollfells to the trade which formerly they had among the merchant adventurers in cloths and kersies. Since the trade of all woollen manufactures has been "reduced under government," and the woollen trade of Newcastle very much increased, the merchant adventurers have required from those of Newcastle such impositions as they take from the brethren at York, Hull, etc., to ease themselves of a great debt which they fell

into for service done to king James. Finally, they stated reasons why the merchants of Newcastle should not be freed from these impositions. Attached to this argumentative paper is a note in the hand-writing of Sir Robert Heath, tracing the separate existence of the Newcastle fraternity back to the 17th John, and showing that they traded in woollen goods from a period long anterior to that attributed to them in the preceding document. The dispute was not settled for some time; a note of it appears more than once in the State Papers in after years.

*November 13.*

The bailiffs of great Yarmouth petition the privy council, that whereas they were recently commanded by the king to make no provision of salt except from the corporation of salters at Newcastle and the Shields, the patentees have brought very little salt to Yarmouth, and the sickness is so at Newcastle and Shields as none dare adventure to fetch any there. They pray, therefore, that they may import a reasonable quantity of foreign salt for the use of their fishery, upon which their whole subsistence depends. The Shields saltmakers replied that they were not tied to carry salt to any port, but only to sell it at their works at prices fixed in their charter; but as Yarmouth wilfully neglected to fetch it, they did send some to that town, and were so ill-treated, and sustained so much damage, that they pray their grievances may be heard, and reparation ordered. As to the sickness, Yarmouth had taken coals from Shields and from Newcastle, where the sickness had most been, and there was no more cause to fear fetching salt than coals; besides, the shipping of other ports had not forborne to fetch salt. An undated document of about this time contains a petition to the king from Sir Nicholas Tempest, William Chapman, Leonard Carr, Robert Anderson, etc., salters of North and South Shields, and owners of 157 pans there. Petitioners state that Thomas Horth, and others of the society of salters, have been with them for the king's duty of 10s., and 3s. 4d. per wey upon salt, and have proffered such price, and for such quantity, as they are willing to accept. But George Harle, Cuthbert Hunter, and others, owners of 45 or 50 pans, continue refractory, and will not accept the price unless they receive a special command from his majesty. They therefore ask for an order to compel the refractory ones to sell salt at the same rate as petitioners, or else to take salt of petitioners at the prices offered by Thomas Horth.

A report to the privy council on the defences of Tynemouth contains a note that when the reporter was leaving Newcastle, the mayor and aldermen gave him charge to represent the state of that

town for defence, and "prayed that twenty or thirty pieces of great ordnance might be sent thither, and also that consideration might be had of the great abundance of miserable poor people, from divers countries, who go begging in their streets."

*December 4.*

John Trollop the younger, of Thornley, Durham, at a horse race at White Hall Dyke Nook, killed William Selby, esquire, of Newcastle, son and heir of Sir William Selby of Winlaton, and nephew of Sir George Selby, "the king's host." Surtees thinks that the quarrel which terminated so disastrously had its origin in a family feud. Trollop had contracted his son and heir, Francis, to a daughter of William Selby, under a penalty of 300*l.*, but afterwards, upon some disgust, paid the forfeit and married his son to a daughter of Sir F. Tunstall. As soon as the fatal deed was done, Trollop fled, and at the assizes he was outlawed. His father, petitioning some years later for a pardon, states that Selby had given his son "such provoking language and affronts, by bursting his mouth and nose with his fist, that he could not in honour brook without demanding satisfaction, which at last brake out into a duel, in which Mr. Selby was unfortunately slain." Selby's death led to family complications. On the 30th May 1637, Sir William Selby and his wife, and the widow of the deceased, petitioned the crown to permit William Selby, infant son of the slain, to suffer a recovery of a moiety of the manor of Winlaton, under circumstances detailed at length in the State Papers. Their prayer was granted, but in the following year Sir William petitioned again, stating that although the recovery had been executed, yet they were unable to pay his son's debts, amounting to 11,000*l.*, because they could not sell the colliceries. No man could make any gain by them but a free hostman of Newcastle; "and there being very few free of that company who could dispend so much money," he prayed that such persons as should buy the mines might be admitted to trade as free hostmen of Newcastle, as he himself was, by which means he would soon find chapmen.



1637.

12 and 13 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***Thomas Liddell; Mayor, and Henry Lawson, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—John Marley.**

Arms : As in 1634.

**Sheriff—Peter Maddison.**

Arms : Argent, two battle axes in saltire sable.



THE persistence with which the king and archbishop Laud forced a liturgy upon the people of Scotland led to what the latter termed an "ill-favoured tumult" in St. Giles' church, Edinburgh, on the 23rd July, when a stool was thrown at the dean's head, and the bishop was put in danger of his life. Great excitement followed, and general resistance to the reception of Laud's service-book was offered throughout the northern kingdom. By December, says Sir Walter Scott, more than thirty peers, and a very great proportion of the gentry, of Scotland had agreed not merely to oppose the service-book, but to act together in resisting the further intrusion of prelacy. "A species of engagement or declaration was drawn up, the principal object of which was the eradication of prelacy in all its modifications, and the establishment of presbytery on its purest and most simple basis. This engagement was called the National Covenant, as resembling those covenants which, in the Old Testament, God is said to have made with the people of Israel." What came of it we shall see presently.

*January 10.*

The house in the Close, adjoining the east side of the Tuthill, formerly belonging to Henry Chapman, was this day leased by the venerable Alexander Davison, alderman, to his son-in-law, Thomas,



afterwards Sir Thomas Riddell of Fenham. Three days later, in anticipation of a marriage to be solemnised between his son Ralph, and Timothea, daughter of Sir William Bellasis, high sheriff of the county palatine, and in satisfaction of the portion which Ralph might claim at his (Alexander's) death, he settled it upon himself for life [he died fighting on the walls of Newcastle in 1644, aged eighty], and then in tail to his sons Ralph, Edward, Samuel, and Joseph. The list of property so settled is interesting. Besides the messuage above-mentioned, it comprised two little burgages to the east of it, a tenement or burgage at or near the north part of the orchard belonging to the same messuage, now or late in the tenure of Yeldard Alvey, and in a street or place called the Tuthill; Dent's Close in Blindman's Chare; Tenter's Close, with a house thereupon, in Sidgate; meadow land in the castle field, purchased of Michael Weldon, whereof there are two small parcels called the Newkes; a close of meadow or pasture without and near unto the walls of the town, containing four acres "purchased of Leonard Carr, and sometime the inheritance of George Spoore;" and Hart Close, within the liberties of Newcastle.

*April 25.*

The coal monopoly came to the front again. On this date the masters and owners of ships in the Newcastle coal trade sent a petition to the king setting forth their grievances. Their trade, they remind his majesty, has led to "a great increase of shipping, and a great nursery of seamen ever ready within the realm." Some few of the free hostmen of Newcastle, being lately questioned for defrauding the customs by short entries of coals, have endeavoured to procure their discharge by propounding to yield to his majesty a new payment of 12d. for every chaldron of coals shipped from thence. They also endeavour to procure a grant that some few of them may have the sole vending of all the coals at Newcastle, and the lading of ships with coals. The shippers have ever had a free market; but these few persons, having the sole trade, compel owners of ships to take coals mingled of all sorts, and deliver the coals by a deceitful way of weight in the keels. Although the new impost of 12d. a chaldron was imposed as a redemption of the hostmen's wrongs, they lay the whole on petitioners, receiving from them 12s. for every chaldron, for which they before paid but 11s. Petitioners pray that they may be left to their ancient liberty to buy of what free hostmen they may receive best commodity and justest dealing, and that the hostmen may be ordered to deliver their coals by a just measure, which is by an upright bowl. They are willing to pay the new impost of 12d., but point out that it will yield a greater revenue by free trade than by this restraint.

At the end of May (30th) the king in council issued an order respecting "gift coal." This was a percentage of overweight given by the hostmen, generally amounting to five chaldrons on every score. "The price of a chaldron of coals at Newcastle being 11s., of which the king has 1s.; the hostmen usually give in measure to the masters and owners twenty-five chaldrons for a score, whereby they lose their price, and his majesty the customs of five chaldrons upon every score." It was ordered that the lord-treasurer should send for the hostmen, "and signify to them that his majesty is pleased to take off the gift coal, and that in recompense thereof, they are to allow the king 1s. upon every chaldron above the 1s. formerly paid, not increasing the price of 11s. for a chaldron of coal at Newcastle." Next day the privy council sent Edward Barker down to Newcastle on a mission to the hostmen. The merchants, masters, and owners of ships trading to the Tyne, complained that, contrary to an order dated May 2nd, whereby free trade was granted to them upon paying 12d. per chaldron more than formerly, and that the hostmen contractors should be discharged of their contract with his majesty, a copy of the order being delivered to the contractors, divers of them, in contempt, gave out that they would continue the same till they had his majesty's discharge under seal. Barker was to see the hostmen and require conformity with the order of the 2nd May, or the apprehension of those who refused to obey it. [The dates are confusing. Barker's mission evidently belongs to 1638—after the agreement with Horth. See page 356.]

Complaint was also made at this time of the quality of coals sent from Newcastle. Seventy-five chaldrons had been condemned by the council, and sold for their value—5s. a chaldron—"whereby the master and owner [of the ship] are demnified, 94*l.* 15s., which should be allowed them by Robert Anderson, the owner of the coals." The council order Anderson to pay the same, or give attendance before them.

*April 30.*

Ship-money found its way but slowly into the treasury. On the last day of April one of the constables of Chester Ward writes to Sir William Bellasis, the high sheriff of Durham:—"Sir Thomas Tempest, Sir William Selby, Robert Anderson, and the most part of the freeholders of collieries say that they conceive they are not liable to pay ship-money for the same, except Thomas Liddell, mayor of Newcastle, who is very willing to pay. Sir Thomas Tempest, Sir Lionel Maddison, and the grand leasers acknowledge that they are liable to pay for their collieries, but for the present will part with no money." August comes and the payments are still behind. The high sheriff

informs secretary Nicholas on the 22nd of that month, that he is 300*l.* in arrear, "most part whereof is to be paid by the owners of coal-mines," who are so backward that he must be forced to distrain. "If there be any new writs for next year the assessment may be more equally divided betwixt Newcastle and the counties of Durham and Northumberland, by making some abatements to the counties and letting the mines be assessed with Newcastle." Next day Sir William Widdrington, sheriff of Northumberland, reports to Nicholas that he has paid 1360*l.* of the ship-money; the remainder of the sum, being 740*l.*, was charged thus:—"Upon Newcastle, 700*l.*, Berwick, 20*l.*, and Morpeth, 20*l.*, all which is paid excepting the sum charged upon Newcastle, which I have no power to levy, it being a county of itself."

A month passes away, and then the council write to the mayor of Newcastle for the 700*l.*, adding that "his majesty expected a more speedy payment, considering how much was last year abated, and requires you presently to pay the arrear, as you tender the good of his majesty's service, and will answer to the contrary." The mayor, sheriff, and inhabitants reply by a petition to the king. They allege that their principal means are their collieries in Durham and Northumberland, which are cessed in those counties; that their estates are so poor by reason of the heavy visitation of plague that they are unable to pay the 700*l.*, and they pray for a remission of part of the same and time for payment of the remainder.

*July 27.*

A royal warrant to pay amounts due to postmasters up to the 27th September contains the following local names and rates of payment:—John Glover, Darlington, 2*s.* 4*d.* per day; William Sherrington, Durham, 2*s.* 4*d.* do.; George Swan, Newcastle, 3*s.* do.; John Pye, Morpeth, 3*s.* do.; Alexander Armorer, Alnwick, 3*s.* do.; Thomas Armorer, Belford, 3*s.* do.; and Thomas Carr, Berwick, 2*s.* 4*d.* per day.

*July 28.*

A lease of the bailiwick of Gateshead, and the lands called the Salt Meadows and East Field, was renewed for twenty-one years by the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle to their recorder, Sir Thomas Riddell.

*October 1.*

A certificate of the mayor of Newcastle, and eight others, concerning their proceedings in the conservancy of the Tyne, from Easter to Michaelmas, mentions that the ballast-wharf at South

Shields, belonging to Sir Robert Heath or his assigns, has fallen down, and ballast has washed out of it to the hurt of the river.

*October 2.*

"Ordered, by the consent of the company of wallers and bricklayers, that every brother of the said fellowship shall pay sixpence each week towards the maintaining of a suit against foreigners."

*December 31.*

The master and brethren of the Trinity House of Newcastle wound up the festival of Christmas by passing the following resolution :—"That Mr. Joseph Alvey be dismissed and expelled from reading the prayers in our chapel hereafter." Who this Joseph Alvey was, and what was his offence, are questions upon which local records throw no light. The name suggests a probable relationship to the vicar. He died a little over twelve months after his dismissal, and was buried in St. Nicholas'.

---

This year died John Shaw, curate of St. John's, Newcastle. According to a MS. quoted by Brand, "Mr. Shaw was, about 1614, lecturer at St. John's, and had a salary quarterly paid him out of the town, and the like for several years after, during his continuance." His name appears in the register of that church on the 30th April 1621, when his wife Elizabeth was interred there, and again on the 22nd September, the same year, when he married Alice Wilkinson. He was succeeded at St. John's by Robert Urthwart.

---

The following undated document in the Record Office appears to be the answer of some person in authority to an inquiry respecting the employment of labour in the working and transit of Newcastle coals at this time :—"There is in Newcastle-upon-Tyne, of keelmen, watermen, and other labourers, above eighteen hundred able men, the most of them being Scottish men and Borderers which came out of Tynedale and Riddesdale. By reason of the stop of trade occasioned cross winds this year, they have wanted employment, and are thereby in great necessity, having most of them great charge of wives and children. And unless they have employment, they must be relieved by the charity of others, the inhabitants of the town, many of whom are so poor that they are scarce able to maintain themselves, or else we doubt that, in regard of their necessity and rude condition, they will be in danger to assemble themselves and make an uproar in the

town, as they did of late, or if there be any troubles in the State, to make use of it to the damage of the town. Also there are many coal works near unto Newcastle that are laid in, by reason of the stop of coal trade by sea, and, at the least, one thousand men, that were employed in the said work, are now lying idle for want of work. And unless there may be some course taken to encourage the shipmasters, that they may go to Newcastle again this winter, both these and the other labourers, being at least three thousand, besides their wives and children, must suffer greatly through their necessity, to the great hurt and damage of the town, and of all the country thereabout."

From a return presented to the privy council about this time, we learn the names of "the fellowship of brewers now living in Newcastle, with the breadth and depth of their several mash tuns." The first figures indicate in each case the breadth, and the second figures the depth, in feet and inches:—

Richard Nelson	- 5-9, 2-8	Richard Maughan	5-5, 2-0	Edward Cozen	- 4-2, 2-8
Edward Hall	- 5-11, 2-6	William Robinson	3-9, 2-7	William Sadler	- 3-9, 2-9
George Straker	- 5-10, 2-9	Thomas Dunn	- 3-10, 2-9	John Gofton	- 5-8, 2-10
Ralph Righ	- 4-5, 2-6	Gawin Ffoster	- 5-1, 2-7	William Dobson	- 3-9, 2-9
William Dalton	- 4-11, 2-7	Thomas Smith	- 4-0, 2-8	Roger Dalton	- 3-4, 3-3
Thomas Cleugh	- 4-8, 2-8	Thomas Andrew	- 3-7, 2-7	Thomas Thompson	2-2, 2-2
John Key	- 5-11, 2-10	Heugh Stanger	- 4-8, 2-7	Richard Byers	- 4-0, 2-9
Richard Totherick	5-10, 2-9	Oswold Gray	- 5-4, 2-8	John Ffell	- 5-0, 3-0
William Mitcheson	5-4, 2-4	John Potte	- 3-2, 2-9	Mrs. Mrgt. Andrsen	5-9, 2-9
Leonard Olliver	- 3-10, 2-4	William Colyer	- 5-10, 2-8	Mary Andrew, widow	4-4, 2-5
Henry Rowcastle	- 6-5, 2-9	Cuthbert Wrangham	4-3, 2-8	Jane Hall	- 4-1, 2-6
George Hindemers	3-6, 2-6	Gawin Preston	- 4-9, 2-8		

The following brewers occur without any record of their plant:—

Robert Robinson	-	Georger Younger	-	Henry Wall	-
John Browne	-	Richard Browne	-	Luke Nelson	-
Reginald Potts	-	Symond Dalton	-	Robert Dalton	-
Thomas Mitford	-	George Swinborne	-	Mathew Hall	-
Lawrence Muscropp	-	William Dods	-	George Dobson	-
John Hall	-	Thomas Younger	-	John Hogg	-
Thomas Robinson	-	John Tailor	-		



1638.

13 and 14 CHARLES I.

**Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.***Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—***John Marley, Mayor, and Peter Maddison, Sheriff.***Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—***Mayor—Alexander Davison.**

Arms : Or, a fess wavy, between six cinquefoils gules.

**Sheriff—Mark Milbank.**

Arms : Gules, a bend ermine, on a canton or, a lion's head erased of the first.



AT the beginning of the year the Scottish people were completing their National Covenant, and by the end of February it was ready for signature. "This covenant," says Sir Walter Scott, "which had for its object to annul all of prelatie innovation that James's policy and his son's violence had been able to introduce into the presbyterian church, was sworn to by hundreds, thousands, and hundreds of thousands, of every age and description, vowing with uplifted hands and weeping eyes that, with the Divine assistance, they would dedicate life and fortune to maintain the object of their solemn engagement." And John Fenwick, the puritan, being in Scotland at the time, states that he saw "some ancient and white-haired men to water their cheeks and wipe off the tears with one hand, while they held up the other hand in token of assent to the covenant, as their custom was." The covenanters, as they were called, had become formidable; it was feared that they would invade the northern counties, and attempt to seize Carlisle and Berwick, and possibly Newcastle. Sir Jacob Astley, Colonel William Legge, and Sir Thomas Morton were sent into the north to inspect fortifications and muster the train-bands; the navy, under the command of the earl of Northumberland, was reorganised, and two ships were sent down to intercept supplies of arms and ammunition which the Scots were procuring from Rotterdam and Bremen. The following extracts from the State Papers show what was being done in and about the town of Newcastle:—*September 10.*—

Minutes of a council of war—1500 arms and 500 calivers with powder and munition to be sent to Newcastle, and instructions to be given by the privy council to the mayor and the storekeeper respecting the sale thereof. None to buy munition but such as bring certificate from a deputy-lieutenant of Northumberland. Six pieces of ordnance to be sent to Newcastle. The fort of Tynemouth to be slighted, and a fort made half a mile from the same. The bishop of Durham to muster all his trained men, and have them in readiness to assist Newcastle. *September 16.*—The king orders the earl of Newport to deliver out of the stores of the ordnance to be sent to Newcastle, to Thomas Heath, storekeeper there, six demi-culverins of iron, mounted upon field carriages, with 600 round shot, 900 muskets, with bandoleers, rests, and other ordnance stores. He also orders captain William Legge to deliver out of the stores for the same destination 600 armours, consisting each of back, breast, gorget, and head-piece. *November 15.*—The mayor and aldermen write:—"Your letter of the 6th of November instant we have received, and hope ere this you have received ours in answer touching Sir Robert Heath's business and the ship-money. We have been at excessive charges in repairing our walls, gates, portcullises, and doing such other things as we are directed by the gentleman sent hither by captain Legge; the truth is, our daily charge is so great, the town in so much debt, and the revenues so small by occasion of the small trade of ships, that we run still further and further in debt, so that it is not probable we shall get out of debt; what charges we have been at already we are content to bear, but if we shall be put to any further or new charges, neither the common purse nor our particulars are able to support it. You know our poverty as well as ourselves, and therefore we desire you to do your best endeavour to prevent any further charge that may be above in any respect imposed upon us; of which nothing doubting, with our loves remembered we rest—Your very loving friends, Alexander Davison, mayor, Peter Riddell, Lionel Maddison, William Warmouth, Robert Bewicke, John Clavering, Robert Anderson, Ralph Cock, John Marley. The fall of the Windoes will cost us above 1200*l*. [Addressed] To our very loving friend, Mr. Thomas Riddell, at Mr. Scargell's, over against the Sun Tavern, in Holborn, near Chancery Lane end, be this delivered. 6*d*. London." *December 14.*—Legge writes to lord Newport that he has seen the last of Sir Jacob Astley's provisions delivered at Hull, and is now on his way to Newcastle to see what Heath and "my Dutchman" have done there. *December 18.*—Instructions from the king to Sir John Astley, sergeant-major general of the field, that (among other things) he is to repair to Newcastle and consider how it may be made safe. He is to view also the

castle of Tynemouth, and a piece of ground at Shields whereon to raise a sconce ; the rivers Tweed and Tyne, and the passages, and to consider the fittest place for making stages for supply of victuals, also what corn, butter, and cheese may be had in that country.

Upon a skin of parchment in the Record Office is a sketch drawn to scale of the walls of Newcastle, showing the situation and character of the gates and towers, and comprising drawings of the castle and the four churches. There are also suggestions respecting the protection of the town. [The sketch is engraved in the *Archæologia Æliana*, N.S., xii.—230.]

*January 12.*

Order of the privy council upon complaint of the company of glaziers against Sir Robert Mansell and his contractors respecting the dearness, badness, and scarcity of glass and the want of full size. Sir Robert answered that the dearness was due to the rise in price of materials, the scarcity was caused by the mortality that fell amongst the workmen at Newcastle during the late visitation, and since for want of shipping, and as to the badness, he agreed that whatever proved nought in the making should be broken at the furnace. These answers seemed reasonable, but the council having found that glass was not so fair, clear, and strong as it was wont to be, ordered that Sir Robert should take effectual care in those particulars. It was further objected that Sir Robert had contracted for all his glass with Lancelot Hobson, so that glaziers could have none but such as he thought fit, and that he cut the glass into quarries, and made a reservation at Newcastle of the best glass. It was thought fit that the contract with Hobson should be dissolved, and that the cutters should be recalled from Newcastle, and no more be cut there, etc.

Under date the 5th February, this year, Brand quotes from the books of the common council of Newcastle, a copy of a lease to Sir Robert (on consideration of the surrender of a former lease not yet expired) of certain grounds, "being the greatest part of the east ballast-shores and the glass-houses, and other several tenements erected upon the same, and boundereth upon Ouseburn on the west; and extendeth itself to a runnel betwixt the said shores and the grounds of St. Lawrence on the east, upon the river of Tyne upon the south, unto a place called Slatiford on the north part." Term, twenty-one years from Michaelmas before ; annual rent, 20s.

*February 3.*

A bill was entered in the Star Chamber by Henry Jackson of Newcastle against the mayor and commonalty, Sir Thomas Riddell, Sir Peter Riddell, Robert Shafto, Leonard Carr, Abraham Booth,



Thomas Jackson, William Mills, and others, alleging that they had colourably preferred an indictment for forgery against William Mills in order to protect him from punishment for forging a warrant in the name of Robert Shafto, then sheriff of Newcastle, under which warrant Robert Cook was arrested at the suit of John Robinson, on a plea of trespass. To this the defendants demurred, pleading that they were not described in the bill by their proper corporate title, and therefore were not bound to answer, and that an indictment for forgery could be no colour of protection to Mills from question or punishment. The result of the suit is not recorded.

*February 3.*

Orders having been made for the attendance of the mayor and burgesses of Newcastle before the board of commissioners for management of the king's estates as Prince of Wales, to compound for ground lying between high and low water-mark of the Tyne, Mr. Liddell and Mr. Riddell, on behalf of the town, informed the board that by several charters the mayor and burgesses held the said ground of his majesty, with liberty to erect wharves there, and conservancy of the river, upon preservation whereof depend the town and the coal trade, and that if any other should be admitted, upon any new composition to obtain a pretence of a new title from his majesty, it would engage the town in a multiplicity of suits, and overthrow the trade. It was ordered that if any person desire to compound for any part of the said ground, notice must be given to the mayor and burgesses. The following, from the State Papers, is a statement of title to the ground referred to:—

“The mayor and burgesses of Newcastle, both by ancient and latter charters, have and hold of his majesty in fee farm the town of Newcastle and river of Tyne, and the soil thereof so far as the water floweth from a place called Sparhawk to another place called Hedwin streams, together with the conservancy of the said river, etc., upon the preservation whereof depends the weal both of that town and all those parts, and of the whole coal trade, which so much concerns both his majesty and the realm. They do accordingly, with caution for preservation of the said river, build and permit and allow there divers wharfs and staiths, useful and necessary for the coal trade and traffic of that town and county. They (being desirous to avoid all occasion of suit or question) have attended his majesty's commissioners of his commission of grace to compound for a confirmation and establishment of the premises, being their ancient right and possession. They have also to that purpose endeavoured to have a particular drawn up by their ancient inquisitions whereby the same were found. But those inquisitions entitling the mayor and burgesses under the crown

as aforesaid, and the same not being in the crown, they can have no particular thereof to proceed thereupon as other compounders for new titles do in other cases. They can take no new inquisition to entitle his majesty without a kind of relinquishment of their ancient rights and liberties, which they are sworn to maintain, and the same would occasion manifold oppositions, and much stir both in the said town and counties adjoining, who would be jealous that by finding a new title to his majesty, their ancient right might be prejudiced. And for a several or particular composition to be made for the several or particular wharves or staiths, it is impossible, for that no such staiths are of any longer use than only while that mine or those pits are working, the coals whereof are to be brought to such staiths ; and when the mine or pits are wrought elsewhere, they must have other staiths in places fittest or nearest to those mines or pits, so as it will be endless to compound unless they be thereby so quieted for the whole, as that they may make use of any part thereof, from time to time, as occasion shall require, as is and hath been used. If any other should be admitted to take inquisitions, and to find, or compound for any particulars, in [it ?] would engage the town in multiplicity of suits, and thereby undo them ; it would likewise occasion the spoil of the river, encumber and distract the coal-owners, and overthrow that trade, and beside his majesty's loss thereby, could raise no settled profit to his majesty from those compounders who could have no good title thereby, but only a pretence of his majesty's title, which is formerly granted away as aforesaid. And therefore they trust such pretence of title from his majesty will not be sold or granted to any other, by colour thereof to vex or impeach the said former right, so long enjoyed without any question."

*March 6.*

The State Papers contain further entries respecting the coal monopoly. On the date above quoted, the merchants, shipowners, masters, and mariners trading to Newcastle, petition the king that, whereas, in June last past, after a hearing before his majesty, it was ordered that petitioners should have free trade and just measures, "securing to his majesty 3000*l.* per annum for the new 12*d.* per chaldron;" nevertheless, petitioners, by the practice of the Newcastle hostmen, have been hindered of a just measure of free trade, to the great grievance of the kingdom, and the undoing of petitioners ; they pray, therefore, that some course may be taken to secure for them the benefit of the said order.

An undated petition from the same persons states that until lately

petitioners had liberty, as in a free market, to buy coals of any hostmen at Newcastle, and had such over-measure as for a long time had been allowed. In the fourth of his majesty's reign coals were raised 12d. a chaldron, upon promise that the over-measure should be continued, which was never denied till last year, when, by combination between the hostmen and his majesty's farmers at Newcastle, the hostmen, being about fifty, appointed seven persons to sit at a board of green cloth, and there to appoint deliverance of coals to every shipper for the whole fraternity ; by which means petitioners were not only often laden with unsaleable coals, but were debarred of their accustomed overplus measure, which was their very livelihood. Against which grievance and innovation they petitioned last summer, but their petition was stayed by Mr. Warmouth, alderman and solicitor of Newcastle, then attending the council on other business, upon promise that at his return to Newcastle he would cause the quartering and gross sale in common to cease, which about Michaelmas last was for a short time performed. Since Christmas the hostmen have set up again their quartering and monopoly, by which means a great number of ships do not go to Newcastle, for the Newcastle voyage will not bear common charge and losses of adventure.

In April (4th) the consideration of the great scarcity of Newcastle coals being resumed [in the council] in the presence of Mr. Morley [John Marley], one of the contractors with his majesty, touching coals on the one side, and Thomas Horth of Yarmouth, with various masters and owners of ships, on the other side, propositions were tendered by Horth, etc., that if they might have a free trade and just measure, " 21 bolls to the chalder," as formerly, they would serve the city at 17s. the chaldron from March to August, and at 19s. from August to October, and for the new 12d. per chaldron they would give his majesty security for 10,000*l.* per annum. But if their proffers were not accepted, they were ready to let the men of Newcastle their ships at 10s. the London chaldron freight, provided they be tied to serve the city at the rates proffered, and give as quick despatch to the ships as before. The king required an answer from Morley for the Newcastle men, but he craving time to advise thereof, his majesty approving well of the propositions, fixed the 2nd May for the Newcastle men to bring in their answer ; in the meantime the ships to go to Newcastle, load coals at present prices, and sell them in the Thames at 19s. the London chaldron for this voyage only.

In May (2nd), having received the answer of the hostmen, and heard all the parties, the king ordered that the shipowners, giving security that they, being made a corporation, will supply London with coals according to their proposition, and answer the new duty of 12d. upon

every chaldron of twenty-one Newcastle bolls, for ten years, shall have a free and open trade at Newcastle as formerly, and the attorney-general is to take a surrender of his majesty's contract with the hostmen, who are to be relieved of all payments touching the 12d., and to prepare a charter of incorporation of all such merchants, shipowners, etc., as shall trade for coals to Newcastle, Sunderland, Blyth Nook, and Berwick. This is apparently the agreement with Horth to which Brand refers, vol. ii., p. 283. The 12d. a chaldron named in it had been collected by the mayor and burgesses while the negotiations were in progress, and in the books of the Trinity House of Newcastle is a copy of a letter from the bishop of Durham, ordering its restitution, on the authority of the lord-treasurer and lord Cottington.

The king's agreement with the hostmen and coalowners was as follows:—For twenty-one years, from 16th January ultimo, his majesty shall have all good and merchantable coals laden aboard any ship or other vessel within the river Tyne. The same not to be vended or sold to any but only to his majesty, or to some other of the fraternity who shall sell the same to his majesty. The king covenants to sell the coals, and to pay the hostmen and owners for the same. Hostmen and coalowners are to provide keels, and to pay all duties to the king in the town of Newcastle. Coals sold aboard ships of his majesty's subjects for home or foreign vend to be 11s. per chaldron, and 12s. for every chaldron laden aboard the ships of aliens for foreign vend, such prices to be paid weekly to the coalowners, and that those prices were the same that for many years past coals had been sold for. An advance of price may be made at the end of any seven years of the term, provided just cause is shown "in respect of the great charges of winning and working the said coals." The six factors shall deduct 2d. out of every chaldron out of the coalowners' price, the same to be a stock, and to be kept in the hands of three of the hostmen to be chosen by the eleven, out of which stock shall be paid the charge of finishing this contract, and expenses of those that attend and travel about; the surplus to be disposed of every year by the direction of the eleven, for the reward of the factors and others that take pains in these premises. The hostmen shall assemble at their meeting-house, and chose eleven persons out of the fittest hostmen to continue in office five years. The six factors to be nominated by the said eleven, and to be chosen out of the hostmen. The factors to vend each owner's coals in a due proportion. The eleven, once every year before the 16th January, shall consider what coals, coal-works, or coal-mines are fit to be wrought for the year next ensuing, and, without partiality, what number of tens every colliery and hostmen shall furnish towards making up the whole

quantity of coals to be vended that year. If any hostman's vend shall be more or less than was allotted to him in any week, the factors are to equal their proportions again the next week or time of shipping. If a mine in any year shall not be able to provide the quantity for which it was rated, then the owners so failing shall abate that want out of their respective rates, and the same shall be supplied by the rest of the fraternity. No persons to be permitted to vend coals to be shipped but such as are freemen of the said fraternity, and the coals his own; nor shall vend the same in any other manner than according to these presents. No ship to be cleared in the Customs house or town house, but upon the certificate of one of the factors or his deputy. Persons vending in any other manner than prescribed to be punished. Coals to be good merchantable coals. If any refuse to be ordered by the factors, then the factors shall give notice thereof to the eleven, who may convene those parties before them, and hear and determine the same, as also all other differences that may arise to the hindrance of the coal trade. Masters of ships to have their due measure, and for this purpose all keels to be measured and made equal measure by commissioners to be appointed.

This contract was passed under the great seal on the 1st of August, and in January following the hostmen of Newcastle appointed Richard Tickell, gentleman (at a salary of 30*l.* a-year, and a part of what he seized), for the purpose of seizing all coals unlawfully laid on board any ship—*i.e.*, without the knowledge of the six factors.

In connection with the agreement concluded between the king and the shipmasters, a dateless, but apparently contemporaneous, document respecting the fortification of the town may be quoted:—

“Whereas it is conceived to be needful that some fortifications be presently made without the walls for the safety of this town of Newcastle, which will require a great charge both for the erecting and keeping the same; for the raising of moneys to that purpose, these positions are to be considered of. 1. Whereas this new corporation of masters of ships have imposed of every several master who shall carry coals from either Newcastle or Sunderland, the payment of twopence per chaldron of coals so carried, which doth amount unto 1300*l.* per annum, at least, which they say is for the maintenance of their corporation. Now, forasmuch as the moneys thus paid doth arise forth of the purses of those which are owners of ships according to their several parts, of which number abundance of them are not members of that corporation, therefore ought not to be assessed for this purpose; it is therefore desired that this twopence per chaldron henceforth may be paid for two or three years, or as long as need shall be, for the use above-mentioned; and then quite to surcease,

it being both reasonable and just, that moneys thus raised should be employed for the public good, and not for any particular society ; and in case it be alleged that they have spent much money in the procuring their patent to be a corporation, it may be answered they have received these moneys two years already, which is more than they can have expended, and besides they have, and still do, receive a mark at least of every one they make free, which doth arise to a great sum of money, for they make many free every year. 2. That as much be paid upon every chaldron of coals, for the same use, by those who sell the same, for the same time and no longer. 3. That there be as much paid upon every chaldron of coals which is laden from Sunderland, both by the seller and buyer, as is paid at Newcastle, and during the same time, for otherwise all the small ships will go for that place, which will hurt Newcastle very much, and be distasteful. 4. That all common brewers, and all others who brew strong ale or beer to sell, shall pay so much of every tun as shall be thought fitting, and likewise all those who sell tobacco. 5. But in all this the two counties adjacent—Northumberland and Bishopbridge [bishopric ?]—whom the safety of this place doth much concern, payeth nothing ; therefore, it were fitting that they should contribute towards the charge in some reasonable manner ; but this and all the rest I refer to your honours' grave consideration.

*March 28.*

John Rushworth, afterwards M.P. for Berwick, and the indefatigable editor of the "Collections" which bear his name, was appointed by the common council of Newcastle to the office of town's solicitor, "he having been found to be a man very able, and well experienced in the matters of this town."

*July 10.*

In the High Commission court at Durham, George Rutherford, who the previous year had been summoned, and failing to appear, forfeited his bond of 50*l.*, acknowledged his clandestine marriage and private baptisms, and was ordered to repair unto his vicar, Yeldard Alvey, who was to confer with him in points of religion, and endeavour his conformity to the doctrine of the church of England. In August Alvey certified that Rutherford had been with him, and at the church, and he hoped he would continue thereat. He was thereupon ordered to repair to prayers at the bishop's chapel, and undergo a submission in the church. The next court he appeared not, and in 1639 his bond for 10*l.* was forfeited.

*August 8.*

The oldest recorded ordinary of the Newcastle shipwrights' company bears this date. By this deed, which is certified by the judges of assize, the brethren are to meet yearly on the 27th December to choose two wardens, and the like number of overseers; they are not to work on Sundays or church holidays, nor are apprentices to be allowed to work tide-work till they have served three years. Power is given to make bye-laws.

*September 16.*

John Cornelius, a native of Haarlem, who had kept a victualling house in Newcastle for twelve years, was examined by attorney-general Bankes respecting an attempt to procure workmen in the alum works on the Tyne to go to make alum in Denmark.

*September 26.*

On the resignation of Ralph Errington, William Bowes of Gateshead, gentleman, was appointed muster-master for the training up of youth and the train-bands in Newcastle, at a salary of 20*l.* per annum.

---

Extracts from the church books at All Saints', Newcastle:—To John Swadell for numbering the stalls, 10*s.*; spent in sute about the plate, 2*l.* 8*s.* 4*d.*; charges at Durham about the reforming of fees, 1*l.* 15*s.* 1*d.*; given to needful ministers and other distressed travellers, the sum of 2*l.* 6*s.* 6*d.*; to needful householders within our parish out of the overplus of the communion money, 3*l.* 1*s.* 6*d.*; paid for copper for a new vane, 1*s.* 6*d.*; for cutting it and mending the stalk, 15*s.*; for painting it, 2*s.*; for taking it down and getting it up, 7*s.*; to Alexander Moor, a poor "fisitian," at Mr. Vicar's request, 3*s.* Similar entries in Gateshead church books show payments: for mending the seat in the churchyard, 4*s.*; whitening, dressing the church, 27*s.* 2*d.*; to a poor scholar, 1*s.*; to a preacher, 2*s.*

---

The grievances of the burgesses came up again about this date as strong and as varied as ever. In running through the calendars of the State Papers it is noticeable that one seldom finds complaints from other towns in the kingdom, while from Newcastle they are frequent. Here is what the complainants had to say about the misgovernment of the town on this occasion:—

"The mayor, aldermen, and greater part of the common council, by them chosen of their own friends, kindred, and such as will serve

their private ends more than commonwealth, trench upon the other burgesses in these particulars following :—

“The burgesses in general should, and ought to have, all the pit-coals they spend in their families provided for them out of the coal-pits of the said town, at the price they were wrought at, and no more. The said mayor and aldermen will not suffer any to be wrought, though some private burgesses have offered to work for the use and good of the town at their own hazard, whereby the burgesses are much wronged, and the poorer burgesses much distressed.

“The water is conveyed to the common pant, or conduit, at the common charge, and from those common conduits the town in general, poor and rich, should fetch their water by the common custom and usage of the said town. But the water is conveyed by some of the greater men by private pipes from those public cisterns or pants to their private houses, so as the burgesses many times can have no water from the said conduit.

“The privileges of the town are infringed by the suffering of foreigners and strangers to trade and work within the said town and liberties thereof, and by both privately and publicly so countenancing of the said foreigners and strangers, as by no petition, complaint, or suit, private or public, the freemen can obtain any order for their suppression, which, being not timely redressed, must of necessity overthrow all the trades and mysteries of the said town, for who will serve an apprenticeship in that corporation where a stranger shall be his equal, and may traffic with much liberty and more advantage than he?

“The revenues of the said town are badly husbanded—nay, wasted, and the town brought into debt by letting and demising the lands and other hereditaments for many years unto the magistrates and their friends at very low values, by disposing of the common purse to private uses, maintaining unnecessary suits, continuing pensions and fees, which should be taken away, contrary to the act of common council and former customs of the said town.

“The records of the town are not rightly preserved, an act of common council being wanting, which was formerly read and seen in the register book, and a whole leaf in the book fund torn out; some rents due to the said town are not recorded, or charged, which is of dangerous consequence to the said town, as former experience hath taught; the burgesses by long leases, and not recording either them or the rents, or otherwise embezzling of the records, having been enforced to buy their own land back from the leases.

“The evidences of the said town should be read and made known



to the burgesses in general yearly; but the magistrates of this time will not permit the said burgesses, for the good of the said town, to view their own evidence, though they petition to them for the same.

"The elections of the said town are not rightly made according to the charters, in regard that men are chosen to be of the common council which are not resident, and abiding, and dwelling in the said town, or the liberties thereof, and none can be elected to bear office but such as are near allied in blood to the aldermen, and such as they can command for their private ends.

"The burgesses have petitioned unto the said magistrates for many years together, but cannot receive any redress of their grievances unless they could receive their contentment from promises and words, which are never performed; which promises, being called upon, some of the burgesses have received bad language from some of the governors, and menaces, upon which the burgesses made shew to complain to his majesty; yet, upon new promises, the said burgesses applied themselves again to new patience and expectancy, until such time as they found a private and unjust complaint made against them to his majesty at Newcastle, that (perceiving they were pursued not only by public injuries and grievances, but cunning and private malice) they then thought they had more than just cause, and that it was high time for them to fly to his majesty's gracious protection, since which address of others, the town clerk of the said town hath averred, in the presence of the magistrates, without reprehension, that the said burgesses were worse than cut-purses. And they have been threatened by another, that the burgesses should be made spend the last groat, and they and their posterity should be reduced to beggary.

"The not expressed particulars tending to the further proof of any of these generals, we shall, God permitting, have in a readiness, and produce as we shall be commanded.

"The form of election prescribed in the last addition to our charter, which was procured by the said governors (which, though it bear a show of a free election, indeed, and in truth, takes the freedom clearly away), we conceive to be the original and fountain of all their inconveniences and grievances, which, amongst other things, we desire humbly to have redress by his majesty's gracious clemency, wisdom, and justice, wherein he shall follow the renowned care of his royal progenitors of happy memory, who have for near five hundred years by past (as appears by their several grants to the said town) been from time to time graciously ready to extend their care and bounties towards the said town.

"The governors aforesaid have the possession and command of the common purse, and make use of it against us, beating us with our

own weapon ; we are only thrown upon our own poor estates, and must support our troubles from thence or sink. What may we expect shall be the issue? Certainly the ruin of ourselves and posterity, except God shall be mercifully pleased to stir up the heart of his majesty, and the goodness and justice of his honourable council, to take the honesty and justice of our cause into care and protection, and so rescue us from this threatened misery ; for what misery will not these men be ready to expose us to if we were quite thrown down and prostrate at their feet, that (now, whilst we have some vital spirit and power to cry out against them) adventure to deprive us of our fire, water, revenues, records, liberties, privileges, charters, evidences, and our good name ? ”

1639.

14 and 15 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Alexander Davison, Mayor, and Mark Milbank, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Robert Bewick.

Arms : Argent, five fusils in fess gules (each charged with a mullet of the first) between three bears' heads sable.

Sheriff—John Emmerson.



REPARATIONS for war were resumed with a show of vigour on both sides. The Scots had made up their minds to fight rather than abandon the presbyterian form of worship ; the king was equally determined that there should be but one recognised mode of church government in his dominions. Placing himself at the head of a considerable army, king Charles came northward, intending to march into Scotland through Berwick. At the same time lord Antrim, with 10,000 men from Ireland, was to enter Argyleshire ; Wentworth, accompanied by another Irish band, to force

the Clyde ; the marquis of Huntley was to secure the north of Scotland and march southward to join the king, while the marquis of Hamilton, assisted with a fleet of sixteen sail, scoured the east coast. How all this formidable array melted into the "Pacification of Dunse Law"—a truce in which neither party was thoroughly sincere—is matter of general history. As in former times when there was trouble between England and Scotland, Newcastle had much to do with the preparations for conflict. It is not practicable, nor would it be desirable, to quote a tithe of the entries in the State Papers for 1639 in which the name of Newcastle occurs, but the course of events, so far as Tyneside was interested in them, is fairly expressed in that which follows :—

On the 11th January the king writes to Newcastle and various other places announcing that Sir Jacob Astley is appointed serjeant-major general of the field, and charging all persons to be assistant and obedient to him ; and on the 17th the committee for the North decide that Newcastle must be fortified against a surprise, the marquis of Hamilton declaring that "the Scots intend to take it if they can." Ten days afterwards the mayor, Thomas Riddell the recorder, and ten others send to the earl marshal, the lord high admiral, and lord Maltravers, lord-lieutenants of the town, a copy of such instructions as Sir Jacob, in conference with them, had resolved upon for the safety of the town.

"Right honourable—We have received your honours' letter by Sir Jacob Astley, who hath been pleased to view our trained bands, consisting of four companies, each company having fourscore musketeers and forty corslets, of whose sufficiency and equipage we hope Sir Jacob will give your honour satisfaction. We make bold to send your honours here enclosed a copy of such directions and instructions as Sir Jacob, upon conference with ourselves, hath been pleased to resolve upon for the safety of this town. For what concerns ourselves by these instructions to be done we shall not fail (God willing) with all expedition to perform the same ; and for what other things therein contained, which we have made bold to crave the assistance of the right honourable the lords of his majesty's most honourable privy council, our humble suit to your lordships is that you will be pleased to do us that honourable favour as to commend our suit therein to their honours ; and as duty binds us we shall be, as we have always been, most ready and forward to adventure our lives and fortunes for the advancement of his majesty's service, in the defence of this our ancient town and liberties. And so we humbly take our leaves, and rest—Your honours' to be commanded—Alexander Davison, mayor, Thomas Riddell, recorder, Peter Riddell, Lionel Maddison, William

Warmouth, Thomas Liddell, Robert Bewick, John Clavering, Robert Anderson, Ralph Cole, Ralph Cock, John Marley.

1. "The said Sir Jacob Astley conceives it necessary that a draw-bridge be made at the south end of the Tyne bridge, where a draw-bridge formerly hath been, and to be drawn up to the town side, without any respect to the houses and shops lately built upon it, which ought to be broken down, in which case they are to treat with the lord bishop of Durham, in whose liberty the same is, and whom it doth concern.

2. "About the middle of the bridge there would be a freese-rooter, firmly fastened, and made to be opened on the day and shut on the night, as occasion shall require.

3. "And being there lies upon the Quay fourteen small pieces of ordnance, belonging to the town and other particular men, shooting a bullet of about three pound weight and upward, it is fit that these pieces be laid upon ship carriages, and placed upon the fittest towers of the walls, to defend the ports and passages to the town, and over against the hills which overlook the town; and that fifty bullets be provided for every piece, with powder and all other things fit for the same.

4. "The six demi-culverins of the king's being already upon carriages, some would be placed upon the sides of the ports, and others upon convenient batteries that shall be appointed, to hinder the enemy's access to the town.

5. "That the four companies of the town, being five hundred men, they be appointed their several places where to meet, to make good the ports and walls upon occasion.

6. "That we have numbered 1500 men in the town and suburbs, besides the trained bands, all able of body to bear arms upon occasion, and we suppose there will be at least 1000 more, that, if there be occasion, will come into the town for their own safety.

7. "We humbly pray their lordships there may be arms and ammunition laid in the town to arm these men if there be occasion, the town being only to be made good by strength of men, all other fortifications being in vain, the town is so commanded by the hills adjacent, save only the making of the ports defensible, a great part whereof is done, and the rest shall be done with all possible speed, by which addition of arms and ammunition we conceive we may be the better enabled to maintain this town for some time, until his majesty shall send succours.

8. "There is in the hands of our merchants 3000 quarters of rye, besides other grain, and there is daily expected more to be brought in by the said merchants. And for other victuals we have no provision,

but it is all brought to us weekly out of the country, and great store of fresh fish is brought from the sea to the town, which is a great relief to the inhabitants thereof.

9. "For gunsmiths, armourers, or pistol-makers, we have not any, nor any that can mend them, if there be need; and therefore we humbly pray their lordships that they will be pleased to cause some artificers of that kind to be sent from London to this town, who may be resident here for the better accommodation of the town and the adjacent countries.

10. "For all the moneys that have been taken for his majesty's arms and ammunition, being as yet about 300 $\frac{1}{2}$ , it is all received by Mr. Mayor, who is ready to pay it when he shall be thereunto required.

11. "Being that there is much butter by licence exported out of the ports of Yorkshire, Durham, and this port, whereby it is become very scant here, and the price almost double to that it hath been of late, we humbly pray that the same may be restrained in these times of scarcity.

12. "The town doth undertake that there shall be presently, in their own particular storehouse, four score barrels of powder, with six hundredweight of match, thirty-two hundredweight musket shot, two hundred demi-culverin shot, one hundred and fifty saker shot, and five hundred minion shot, which shall be distributed, when occasion serves, for the use of the fourteen pieces of ordnance and the three hundred and twenty musketeers. Upon Saturday, the 19th of this instant, January, Sir Jacob Astley and three of the aldermen, with two engineers, went to view Tynemouth castle and the Shields, and the grounds on both sides of the river near the harbour mouth; for the castle of Tynemouth it will be needless to demolish it, because the ground whereupon it stands will command all the lower works to the waterside; and for the making of any fort upon the side of the ground towards Shields, being about a mile off Tynemouth castle, near the upper light—where we conceive it would be most convenient—the ground close by it to the land inward is so high that it would overlook any fort that could be made by the side of the river, and there is so good ground to approach to it as an army by land in six days may take it, and the ground on the south side of the river is far worse to build any fort upon; so that it is conceived by us all, that the best safety for this port, in time of hostility, will be for two of his majesty's ships to lie near the harbour mouth.

"All which we humbly submit to the grave wisdom and further consideration of the lords of his majesty's most honourable privy council. And, in all obedience, most humbly submit our lives and

fortunes to his majesty's service, for whose happy and prosperous reign we shall daily pray.—Alexander Davison, mayor," and the rest.

Next day the king orders the earl of Newport to send to Newcastle 1500 more arms for foot soldiers—two parts muskets and a third part pikes, with munitions proportionable—to be sold by the mayor and storekeeper there for furnishing the country roundabout. Same date Sir Jacob reports that he has viewed the "scirquet" round Newcastle, and found the place no ways possible to be made defensible against a siege by fortifications, the hills on every side commanding it, but suggests some contrivances for partial defence. He speaks highly of the Newcastle trained bands; the town takes pride in their well-doing, and he himself has not seen better companies in any of these parts. Has been with three of the aldermen to Tynemouth, and finds no means of fortifying it against a siege. Wishes considerable stores to be sent to Newcastle, which will be bought away very fast and used to good purpose, for the town must be defended by many hands until his majesty may send an army to relieve it. He encloses an outline map or card of the town [*Arch. Æl.* (N.S.), xii.-234], showing guns placed in position to hinder the approach of an enemy. The bishop of Durham consents to make a drawbridge over the river. Recommends that the king should appoint some special person of honour to be governor of Newcastle, to direct all military actions.

The local authorities, stimulated by their conferences with Sir Jacob, pass a resolution in common council on the 23rd to expend "betwixt 500*l.* and 600*l.* for the making of provision of powder, shot, and divers other necessary things for the defence and safety of the town, to be raised by a cess." As the month was closing writs were issued to both Newcastle and Hull, ordering the authorities to fortify those towns at their own charge, to which was added an explanatory statement that "the writ now sent you from the king for fortifying the town is not to compel you legally, but to authorise you in case any persons should be refractory." Within a week after the writs arrived Sir Jacob Astley informed Windebank that Newcastle, "which will be the centre of the war," must have a train of artillery. He has sent for the nine brass pieces in the cellar at Tynemouth, six shooting a bullet of six in the pound and three of three in the pound, and has bespoken timber and workmen to mount them on carriages. Has already in Newcastle six iron pieces shooting a bullet of nine to the pound, which are not so fit for the field, but can be used upon several occasions. Is negotiating with the mayor to continue and increase the supply of grain in the town, and with the richest and best-minded of the citizens to provide for their families all manner of grain and victuals, also that the meal may be ready ground, and the town mills

repaired. On the 9th February Henry, lord Clifford, was appointed governor of Newcastle, "to reside there and command all the forces belonging to the same."

The king journeyed northward in April, and on the 22nd of that month the mayor and sheriff of Newcastle issued the following proclamation:—"Whereas his majesty intends shortly, God willing, to be at this town, and it is very fitting and necessary that the streets should be clean and sweet, it is, therefore, ordered by the mayor, aldermen, Mr. Sheriff, and the rest of the Common Council, that every inhabitant shall make the front of his house and shop clean presently, and so from time to time keep the same; and if any shall be negligent herein, he or she forfeit for every such default 6s. 8d., to be levied by distress of the offender's goods, rendering to the parties the overplus, if any be.—Alexander Davison, mayor; Mark Milbank, sheriff."

Under date the 9th May secretary Coke writes to Windebank:—"Yesterday we came to Newcastle, where we find good accommodation and plenty. About ten days hence his majesty purposes to march with his army towards Berwick." On the 11th, John Marley, writing to the marquis of Hamilton, states that the king has shown him much gracious respect, and that publicly, and the lord general told him his majesty would show him more before he went away. He continues:—"I have given my lord of St. Andrews contentment for 300*l*. Mr. Hamilton, the master of your horse, called on me for money. I told him he should have what I possibly could get. If you write to me I shall do what I can, but I entreat, as you have, so to forbear me as much as you can. I will not speak of what loss I sustained by the contract, but the Ipswich puritans have so wrought with the shipmen, that for six weeks I did not load one chaldron of coals, so that my staiths are so full that they are like to fire. P.S.—My wife remembers her service to you, and has sent you these small toys, which she entreats you to accept. If her store had been better she would have sent more—viz., one keg of sturgeon, ten capons, two turkeys, six dried neats' tongues, and one hannekin of bacon."

Sir John Borough informs Windebank from Newcastle, on the 14th May, that Lion king-at-arms for Scotland, "who refused to proclaim the king's proclamation of pardon at Edinburgh, according to his majesty's mandate, arrived here three days since as confidently as if he expected reward for that good service, but was presently committed to the sheriff's house of this town"; that Lord Kerr, son of the earl of Roxburgh, "who lately came from the queen with letters to the king, being then at Durham, went from thence into Scotland, and presently turned covenanter"; and that "the earl of Roxburgh is committed

to the mayor's house of this town, but not close prisoner." Sir John encloses orders for the court leaving Newcastle. On Saturday, 18th, or Sunday, 19th, the train of artillery to set forward; Monday, 20th, all the foot to march; Tuesday, the horse guards; Wednesday, 22nd, his majesty's tents and household; Thursday, his majesty to set forward from the town, and to lie that night at the abbey of Alnwick; Friday, all the army to encamp at Goswick, five miles from Berwick, where his majesty will be in person. The king remained in camp till the 22nd of June, by which time articles of pacification had been signed at Berwick, and both armies were disbanded—"flying homewards," as Norgate expressed it, "like a broken up school."

While the king was in Newcastle,—“where,” says Rushworth, “he was magnificently entertained; all the town seemed but as one man against the Scots in case of an invasion,”—he knighted the mayor, Alexander Davison, and the town clerk, Thomas Riddell, son of Thomas Riddell, recorder. At Berwick he conferred a similar honour upon John Marley.

---

Although the leading members of the municipal body in Newcastle were loyal to crown and church, there were not wanting those who sympathised with the covenanters, and their number and influence increased, until, in the autumn of this year, they thought themselves strong enough to elect the mayor—and succeeded. We read in the State Papers a great deal about John Fenwick, Bittleston the tanner, William Morton, Dr. Jenison of All Saints', and others, who became prominent among the puritan party in Newcastle a few years later. So early as the 19th January Windebank writes down to Sir Jacob Astley, by command of the king, informing him that Fenwick and Bittleston had been in Scotland and subscribed the covenant, “and carried with them the names of divers who will do the like.” Such conduct is “a most notorious and base treachery, especially in any English subject, and of most pernicious consequence if it should spread further.” Sir Jacob is to inquire into the matter strictly, conferring with Mr. Marley and Sir William Bellasis, and if he finds Fenwick and Bittleston guilty, he is to commit them to close prison until his majesty's pleasure be known. He is further to examine what names they carried with them into Scotland to become covenanters, and what others there are in the town affected that way, and what intelligence they hold with the covenanters. Sir Jacob declined to undertake the work, and handed the letter over to the mayor, etc., at the same time expressing a belief that there were “false villains” in Newcastle who held intelligence with the covenanters.



On the 24th January a letter goes up from the mayor, Sir William Bellasis, and John Marley, informing Windebank that they have taken evidence respecting Fenwick and Bittleston. Fenwick is not at home, but it appears that he has been thrice into Scotland since October, and they are persuaded that he is still there. They cannot discover the names of the many persons who resort every Sunday night to the meeting at Henry Dawson's (where Mr. Morton resides), to the repetition of the sermons, as they pretend, all of whom they suspect not to be well affected to church government, for none of them resort ordinarily to their parish church. Mr. Morton, the preacher, though his residence is there, and has been so for divers years, never has had any allowance from the vicar or from the town, so that what maintenance he gets there is from private persons, whose names they know not. If Fenwick returns, of which they are doubtful, as he is a man sunk in his estate, they will not fail to examine him. Bittleston they have committed to the safe custody of a sworn officer. They enclose a copy of the examination of Bittleston, Dawson, Morton, Andrew Barker, merchant, and Jane, the wife, and George Basnett, the servant, of John Fenwick. Bittleston admits that he went with John and Jane Fenwick into Scotland about Martintide last, to observe the manner of the day of humiliation, and very well approved of the proceedings of the Scots, both in their ministry and manner of humiliation. Henry Dawson declared that he had had no intercourse with any Scotchman for seven years; admitted that on Sunday nights divers people went to his house to hear repetitions of sermons, but declined to name those who resorted there. William Morton, clerk, deposed that he had no intelligence from any Scotchmen of their proceedings. He heard of Fenwick and Bittleston going to Scotland, and Fenwick reported to him the resolution and affection of Scotchmen in their doings. On Sunday nights, after supper, divers people whom he knew not came, to whom he repeated his own sermons, and afterwards said prayer, but they met to no other purpose that he knew of.

A few days later (February 2nd) the mayor and Marley, joined by Sir Jacob Astley and Sir William Bellasis, write again to Windebank. They cannot discover where John Fenwick is; but they have examined Giles Bittleston, "a man so obstinate that he will not give any direct answer" to their questions, "neither will he subscribe his hand" to their notes of his examination. They committed him to the custody of a sworn officer, and searched his house, where they found some letters, also notes of sermons, which latter they have delivered to Mr. Alvey, the vicar. Crossing this letter is one from Windebank approving of their proceedings, and urging that some

speedy course be taken for preventing "these clandestine meetings at undue hours at Henry Dawson's house under pretext of devotion." If Master Morton, the preacher there, be ill affected to the church government, they are to inquire whence he hath his maintenance, and if they find that he lives by contribution of refractory persons, they must either prevent his preaching in private, or else not suffer him to remain in the town.

To this communication the mayor replied on the 6th, stating that Morton had left the town, going southward, "resolving, as it is said, to come here no more." The following day Sir Jacob, in a long letter to Windebank upon general business, referring to the examinations of Bittleston and others, remarks:—"Now their private meetings will be excluded them [the puritans], for their combination is dissolved, and we shall have an eye upon them all, who I find to be poor in estate and but simple in judgment, their consciences serving to borrow, and not pay, being most 'bancroftes'; and if a fat puritan could be laid hold of it were good to punish him, but for these lean ones, to punish any of them in an extreme way will but cause them to clamour against persecution."

Within a week from the date of this correspondence the zealous authorities had fresh cause for perturbation. The post from Scotland brought to Ralph and John Cock, merchants in Newcastle, a letter and a book of a seditious character, which those worthy citizens hastened to show the mayor; but before any action could be taken upon the matter, "divers of the same books were scattered abroad, and cast in at the doors and shop windows of several people." Eighteen of them were taken to the chief magistrate, who caused it to be proclaimed in the market-place, that whosoever had found any of the said books should deliver them to him at their peril. A copy was sent to Windebank, another to the bishop of Durham, and a third to Laud; while all the ministers in Newcastle undertook to admonish their congregations against being misled or seduced by this book, or any other of the same nature. Sir Jacob Astley, writing to Windebank on the 19th February, states that besides the copies sent to Newcastle, many were thrown upon the highways in Northumberland, adding—"We assembled the preachers, and required them to preach obedience to the people, and find one Dr. Jenison something cool, but have not a staff sufficient to question him."

Dr. Jenison was examined within a few hours after Astley had written, and his statement was forwarded to Windebank, with the depositions of witnesses against Ralph Fowler, merchant, of Newcastle, and Fowler's denial that he ever expressed the sympathy with the covenanters which these witnesses attributed to him. The

church now took Dr. Jenison in hand. Articles were exhibited against him in the ecclesiastical court at York. He is described as "of the parish church of St. John's, Newcastle [this is something new] and Allhallows' chapel." Some of the points objected against him were these:—Omitting to use the sign of the cross in baptism; administering the communion to persons not kneeling; omitting to read service in surplice and hood before sermon, and when such service was read, only coming into church at the singing before the sermon; hindering the reading of the prayer for the church militant; preaching against bowing at the name of Jesus; preaching that the saints of God, or God's people, are persecuted by great ones, and that to correct non-conformitants is persecution; holding meetings for discourses in divinity, and extemporary prayers; having conference with Scotch covenanters; not endeavouring to reclaim his wife from her error in refusing to come to the church. In a letter which the doctor sent to the authorities about this time he explained his position. He had been, he says, "examined by Mr. Alexander Davison, mayor of Newcastle, Sir Jacob Astley, knight, and Mr. John March [Marley?], alderman, concerning five particulars, upon a jealousy that in some late sermon on Psalm the 37th and 5th, 'Commit, or roll thy way upon the Lord,' or otherwise, I should give encouragement to some who either do favour, or are suspected to favour, the Scottish condition at this time." The doctor had an interview with archbishop Neile, and gave such explanations as, for the time being, satisfied that prelate, who wrote off joyously to the king, then at Berwick. The king replied, through the dean of Chichester, that he was pleased to receive the news. Dr. Jenison might now go back to Newcastle, "but so only as under a legal title of one of the curates there, so that besides his preaching he constantly performs all other canonical duties of the ministry, and make certificate of his performance thereof; this only during the king's pleasure." Further—"Since he has acknowledged that he once caused a disturbance in divine service by giving the blessing unseasonably, the king says he is constantly to read the said service in his hood and surplice, so that (according to the rubric) immediately after the Nicene creed is ended he go up to the pulpit in hood and surplice and so preach, and when the sermon is ended he is to come down and end the service with the blessing in the place appointed by law. Or, if the archbishop thinks it too great labour for him to read the whole service in his own person every day he is to preach, the king says, that constantly when he preaches he is to read at least the second service throughout in his own person, and preach likewise in hood and surplice."

It had become known by this time that the puritans had an eye

upon the mayoralty of Newcastle, and would probably attempt to elect one of their own party to that commanding and responsible position. A note of alarm was sounded by Marley (now Sir John) on the 18th August, in a letter which he wrote to the dean of Durham, then in London:—"Unless it be prevented, and that speedily, the puritan faction in our town, which has much troubled us, is like to multiply, for it is reported Dr. Jenison is coming home; but that is no great matter, he may be looked to. But what is worse, there is an intention to make Robert Bewick mayor at Michaelmas next, who is the doctor's half-brother, and strong for that faction, and I am sure most who know him think him good for little else; for I protest, as I have told his best friends, he is not fit for government, for if any occasion of moment should be, he may prejudice both his majesty's service and the good of that town. And the rather, because if he be mayor he is to be deputy-lieutenant, of course, with the preceding mayor. How fit either of them is for that employment let those that know them both judge. . . . A letter from his majesty, or the lords, to the mayor, etc., to be careful in their choice, will prevent it."

Windebank, in a letter to archbishop Neile, dated September 4th, refers to Marley's hint about Jenison, and advises that the latter be kept away from Newcastle, and that within a twelvemonth he may be provided for elsewhere. By the same post he writes to the mayor and aldermen of Newcastle, that his majesty, having a special care of the good of their great and populous town, and desiring to preserve it free from faction, and finding that the discreet choice of a mayor there will be a principal means to keep the town in that good order wherein for the present it stands, has commanded him to signify his majesty's express pleasure that they should be very careful in choosing the mayor for this next succeeding year, and by no means admit any factious or seditiously affected person to that place, and the rather because of what condition soever he be, he is *ex officio* a deputy-lieutenant, which may also be as great a prejudice to his majesty's service as an inconvenience to the town.

While this correspondence was passing, archbishop Neile was having another interview with Dr. Jenison. It was not a successful meeting. The doctor refused to follow the king's directions in conducting public worship, and the archbishop suspended him from ministerial functions, dismissing him in these words:—"Dr. Jenison, I do not by virtue of this commission either set you at liberty to go to Newcastle, or prohibit your going thither. Had you submitted yourself to his majesty's directions you might have gone thither, but as you refuse, I think his majesty will not be pleased with it; and remember that you stand suspended." Then Dr. Jenison petitions the king

(September 15th) to be released from his suspension and permitted to return to Newcastle, "after twenty-five weeks' restraint from thence," there to enjoy his ministry again. Archbishop Neile writes to Windebank on the 4th October, asking how the king accepted his reply concerning Dr. Jenison. "I am in a strait," he adds, "not knowing what to do with him; to let him return to Newcastle I dare not; to restrain him from his own house, wife, and children, he thinks a very hard case, and indeed so it is." Jenison, he adds, still professes conformity, and he (the archbishop) has endeavoured to obtain information of any correspondence he has held with the Scotch covenanters, but can discover none.

On the 8th is a letter from bishop Maxwell, of Ross, in Scotland, to Windebank, suggesting that a royal letter, and an earnest one, be directed with all diligence, that Dr. George Wishart, sometime preacher at St. Andrew's, may, during the suspension of Dr. Jenison, have the charge he had at Newcastle, that is to be lecturer at All Hallows' on Sunday, and at St. Nicholas' on Thursday. Next day Windebank writes archbishop Neile that he has acquainted the king with his letter of the 6th September concerning Dr. Jenison, and he is very well pleased with his grace's grave and discreet carriage in that business. For the nonconformity of the person his majesty holds it dangerous to his government, especially considering the ill symptom it carries with it of his correspondence with the Scottish faction; and therefore his majesty's pleasure is that the archbishop shall not only continue his suspension, but proceed further against him for such misdemeanours as by proof and evidence he shall be found guilty of. In the meantime, that the place he held at Newcastle may not continue unsupplied, his majesty has commanded him to write to the town, requiring them to admit Dr. Wishart, sometime preacher at St. Andrew's, to Jenison's charge. The same day he writes to the mayor, etc.:—"His majesty having understood that Dr. Jenison, who held the place of lecturer in Newcastle, stands suspended for nonconformity, and is to be questioned for sundry other misdemeanours, has commanded me to signify to you his care of the good of that town, and how sensible he is that the place should continue unfurnished of an able and learned minister; whereupon his majesty's intention is that it be supplied with some person of integrity of life, and soundness in religion, and to that end has made choice of Dr. George Wishart, whom his majesty knows to be very fit for that charge. His majesty's pleasure therefore is that you do not only immediately choose the said Dr. Wishart to the place of lecturer of All Hallows' in Newcastle upon Sundays, and at St. Nicholas' upon Thursdays there, but that you likewise suffer him to enjoy and

receive all profits, commodities, and advantages whatsoever thereunto belonging in as ample a manner as Dr. Jenison enjoyed the same, and that Dr. Wishart shall hold and exercise that charge during the suspension of the said Dr. Jenison."

In the midst of all this letter-writing the municipal electors of Newcastle met to choose a mayor and a sheriff. They had before them a statement of the king's wishes, they were favoured with the presence of the king's local knights, and they had the advantage of receiving sound advice from the bishop and clergy. But neither bishop nor vicar, neither Sir John nor Sir Alexander, nor, indeed, any of the great men whom the king had exalted, were able to stem the rising tide. The king's good town of Newcastle, endowed by royal charters, and fed by crown monopolies; Newcastle, "the eye of the North" and "the key to Scotland," practically declared for the king's enemies. On Michaelmas Monday, within five months of his majesty's departure from the town, the municipal government passed into the hands of a puritan mayor and a puritan sheriff.

---

The printing press was introduced into Newcastle this year. On the 29th April the earl of Arundel and Surrey wrote from York to Windebank, informing him that "his majesty would have you with all expedition to send a printer with a press, to set out his majesty's daily commands for his court or army, and that to be done by more than ordinary diligence, the want being daily found so great. I conceive a waggon by land the surer way, to change horses as often as they will, by express warrant to take up teams daily." An endorsement by secretary Windebank shows that he answered this letter on the 30th of the month. There was no delay in obeying the royal mandate. The printer was in Newcastle with his press in less than three weeks from the date of the lord-general's communication. On May 12th Edward Norgate wrote from Newcastle to his cousin, Robert Reade, nephew and secretary of Windebank, in the following terms:—"We have a printer here, and this day I made ready for the king's hand a proclamation for the importation of butter; it is now printing, so are 400 of the former proclamation of pardon to the Scots."

One of the early uses to which the printing press was put on its arrival here was the publication of a sermon by bishop Morton, to which the king had listened at Durham. "A Sermon preached before the King's most excellent Majestic, in the Cathedral Church of Durham, upon Sunday being the fifth day of May, 1639, by the Right Reverend Father in God, Thomas Lord Bishop of Duresme.

Published by His Majesty's special command. Imprinted at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, by Robert Barker, printer to the King's Most Excellent Majestic, and by the assignees of John Bill, 1639." This sermon Mr. Hodgson Hinde describes as a good orthodox high prerogative discourse, occupying forty-two pages of clear type in small quarto. Barker also printed here the earl marshal's laws for the army royal—"Lawes and Ordinances of Warre, for the better Government of His Majestie's Royall, in the present expedition in the Northern parts and safety of the Kingdom," etc. "These ordinances," Mr. Hodgson Hinde states, "inculcate a severity of discipline, and an attention to moral and religious duties, which we have not been in the habit of connecting with the army of Charles I., and an oath is appended, to be taken by every soldier, pledging himself to their observance." There is a copy of it in the Public Library of Newcastle.

---

The churchwardens of St. Nicholas' and All Saints' were reluctant to remove the galleries which obstructed the chancels of their churches. Bishop Morton wrote to vicar Alvey:—"It was required of the churchwardens of St. Nicholas', according as his majesty hath commanded, that the gallery which obstructs the chancel should be removed; which being not done, the churchwardens of All-Hallows', who were afterwards commanded the like, presumed that theirs might likewise stand.—Call upon the churchwardens of St. Nicholas', that they, without any further delay, perform his majesty's command; and if they shall neglect to do it, let me understand, that I may question them accordingly; and as soon as they begin, require the same performance of the churchwardens of All-Hallows' for their gallery; for without further questioning both must be down." The All Saints' officers sent John Hall and William Robson to Auckland, "to intreat the bishop for the standing of the gallery," as appears in their accounts, but the mission was unsuccessful, and the gallery was taken down. At the same time the church was thoroughly repaired, the treble bell was re-cast, and some repairs were done to the other bells, so that they might ring a joyful peal when the king came to the town. In the church books all these expenses are entered as follows:—Ralph Walker, housewright, for five three-quarter wheels to the five bells, 7*l.* 10*s.*; for two new brass rods from Durham to hang the bells in, 2*l.* 2*s.* 8*d.*; John Moody, for carrying the treble bell over to Durham and back again, 1*l.* 5*s.*; Mr. Oldfield, bell-founder, for casting the said bell anew, and for overplus metal, 6*l.* 4*s.*; Robert Willis and Ralph Walker, for their necessary expenses two days and one

night at Durham, in attending the casting of the bell and for expedition therein, 1*l*.; Robert Slaitor, mason, for taking down the steeple window to let out the bell and setting up again, 6*s*.; the weigh-master, for weighing the bell, and unto six labourers for drawing her down to the Sandhill and back again, 3*s*. 4*d*.; John Huntley, for five bell-ropes and a rope to the clock, 2*l*. 7*s*. 7*d*.; Charles Robson, plasterer, for plastering and whitening the whole church about, 9*l*.; Richard Wallis, the painter, for marbling all the pillars, and colouring the bowes about, 4*l*. 8*s*.; John Moody, for work done about the chimes, 8*s*.; for ringing the bells when the king's majesty came to the town in his Northern expedition, 3*s*. 4*d*.; John Hall and William Robson, for their necessary charges in going over to Auckland to entreat the bishop for the standing of the gallery, 8*s*.; to the joiners, for taking down the gallery over the quire by the chancellor's special directions, 5*s*.; for our visitation dinner according to custom, 15*s*.; for a new large bible of the last English translation and a new common prayer-book, by special injunction from the archdeacon at the visitation, 3*l*. 4*s*.; for William Robinson's horse hire when he went to Auckland to petition my lord about the communion table, 4*s*.; Mr. Dabbs, for writing the petition, 2*s*.; the ringers, the coronation day, 2*s*. Money given and lent to repair the bells, etc.:—Mr. George Hodshon, lately deceased, draper, 5*s*.; Mr. Matthew Milbank, 10*s*.; Mr. Samuel Locke, 11*s*.; Mr. Thomas Maddison, 10*s*.; Edward Lawson, 10*s*. Lent—Sir Peter Riddell, knight, 1*l*.; Dr. Rand, 3*l*.; Mr. Ralph Gray, 2*l*.; Mr. Leonard Carr, 2*l*.; Mr. John Coulson, 4*l*.; Mr. William Davison, 2*l*.

---

Brand states that the town-clerk's office in Newcastle, and part of the exchange, were burnt this year, and several of the deeds and writings of the corporation destroyed. Lieut.-Col. John Fenwick would seem, in his tract of 1643, to give an earlier date to the event. He speaks of the fire as having broken out in "the next year after the great plague" of 1636, in the evening after the consultation on "the new project about coals and salt, to devour the poor inhabitants," etc. The plague, however, was lingering about the Tyne after 1636. By depositions in the High Court of Commission at Durham, it appears that in January 1638, as in June 1636, proceedings were "respired by reason of the infection."

---



1640.

15 and 16 CHARLES I.

Bishop of Durham—Thomas Morton.

*Mayor and Sheriff of Newcastle till Michaelmas :—*

Robert Bewick; Mayor, and John Emmerson, Sheriff.

*Mayor and Sheriff elected at Michaelmas :—*

Mayor—Sir Nicholas Cole.

Arms : Argent, a chevron engrailed between three scorpions sable, on a chief azure, three fleurs de lis or.

Sheriff—Francis Liddell.



THE events which led to the summoning of two parliaments this year are well known. Exercising the franchise for the first time in a decade, the electors throughout the kingdom went to the polls in March and October with strong party feelings, and exercised their franchise amid noisy demonstrations. There were troubles in Newcastle on both occasions, for the townspeople participated largely in the political and religious struggles of the day, and the contending parties in church and state had faithful and able adherents among the leading men of the town. The first election ended in the return of

Sir Peter Riddell and Thomas Liddell, Esquire

[not two Riddells, as some local historians have them], who represented Newcastle in an assembly which lasted only three weeks, and obtained the name of the Short Parliament. One of the electors, Anthony Errington, a warden of the merchants' company, was not contented with the formality of returning representatives ; he desired to instruct the newly-appointed members how they should conduct themselves among the controversies and dissensions which they would have to encounter. He remembered a good old plan which had fallen into disuse in Newcastle, the appointment of a committee to present to members of parliament such things as they might consider to be for the good of the town. At the close of the election, or a few days afterwards, he waited upon the mayor, reminded his worship

of the former custom, and acquainted him with a petition for redress of grievances which he had prepared. The mayor told him there would be a meeting of the common council in a couple of days, and if he had anything to communicate he might then prefer it. Errington consulted successfully Ralph Gray, Henry Lawson, Henry Holme, and Edward Man, who being merchants, approved of his proceedings, and desired to have a copy of his statement of grievances that they might make some additions thereto. The petition addressed to the mayor, aldermen, and common council was as follows :—

“The humble desires of us commons are that Sir Peter Riddell, and Mr. Thomas Liddell, now chosen burgesses for the ensuing parliament by this corporation, if it stand with your good liking, may have instructions to this purpose :—

1. “That they be careful to maintain the orthodox faith of our church, and wholly to oppose any innovations both in doctrine and discipline.

2. “To stand out for the liberties and freedom of the subjects, which is principally in the maintenance of Magna Charta and the other fundamental parliamentary laws.

“These two particulars being faithfully preserved, will no doubt settle both church and state in truth and peace ; but if in either there be a sufferance of alteration, we may in short time fear a loss of both. What distractions some few innovations in the church have produced, no observant man can be ignorant of. What burdens the intrenching upon the freedom of the subjects by monopolies of soap, salt, coal, tobacco, starch, and many other such like, are palpable, together with the new great impost on wine, lead, and all other commodities, especially the unparalleled taxation of ship-money upon us. All these are so felt by the merchants and others, that our estates are squeezed from us, and we now be come only to have the name to be rich, but are in truth miserably poor. And lastly, this particular body suffers, in regard within the walls and without ; strangers are suffered to injure both merchants and tradesmen in their privileges, and consequently the whole commonalty of this town is burdened in regard these encroachers are generally beggars, who, dying, leave commonly a great charge and burden behind them,” etc.

Errington’s grievance related to soap, which, he contended, ought to be “free to be made in all parts of the kingdom as formerly ; these great and spacious northern parts, which were wont to be supplied from Newcastle with coarse soap, suffering much by the restriction of the manufacture to London, Bristol, York, etc. Before this restraint coarse soap, without tallow, was sold wholesale at 12s. the firkin, or 2¼d. per lb., and retailed at 2½d., and sweet or best soap at 12s. 6d.

by the firkin, being  $2\frac{1}{2}$ d. per lb., and retailed at 3d. per lb.; while now the former is sold at London by the maker at 16s. 6d. the firkin, or  $3\frac{1}{4}$ d. per lb., and retailed at 4d. per lb., and the latter at 18s. 6d. by the firkin, being  $3\frac{3}{4}$ d. per lb., and retailed at 5d. or 6d. per lb. It is to be wished that permission may be procured for the making of soap to furnish these northern parts as formerly. A soap house was erected here [Newcastle] twenty-six years since for the benefit of the poor and these spacious countries." Refers the members to his petition to the corporation twenty years previous concerning privileged places, etc.

Man's notes and additions were these:—"We find it a great grievance that any stranger, by virtue of any patent for tobacco, should be privileged within the liberty of the town to keep open shop as free merchants. Here set down the grievances of Shields, Gateshead, Castlegarth, Westgate, and all adjacent places, as to starch, cards, pins, iron pots, the great impost on wine, and the grievances of butlerage, increase of custom house fees, pretermitted dues, and all other impositions set down in the book of rates, above the subsidy of tonnage and poundage. We also groan all heavily under the taxes and assessments for ship-money, and other intolerable burdens, insomuch that if they should not be layed in short time they will utterly beggar this corporation, no part of the kingdom being burdened in that proportion."

There was an inquiry, not into the merits of the case, but into the motives of the promoters. Edward Man, who was secretary to the merchants' company, deposed that he heard a report that Sir Peter Riddell wondered at no instructions being given to him and his colleague, and had said the fault must be either that their constituents supposed them too wise, or else did undervalue them. Errington had thereupon several times asked him to call at his (Errington's) house and consider something which he had prepared by way of petition, but deponent refused until Saturday, the 28th March, when Henry Lawson being in his (deponent's) shop, Henry Holmes came and entreated them both to go. They went, and found Errington and Ralph Gray perusing some drafts of Errington's, which seemed very tedious, and so he said it was not convenient to trouble the council with such longsome work, and they asked him to put the document into form. He inquired if he should insert anything touching the church, in regard the church was mentioned in the king's writ as well as the commonwealth, which they all approved; whereupon he framed the petition, "but with no intent that it should have been delivered without their perusal and approbation, whereas Mr. Errington alone read it, and then hastened to deliver it to the mayor and common

council, saying it was so well done that there could be no exceptions taken against it." Ralph Gray disavowed the whole business. William Braithwait, merchant, whose shop adjoined Man's, admitted that he copied the document, being asked to do so by Man, and that Errington took it away when finished. And there, so far as we know, the episode ended.

The second election took place in October, and there was a contest for the honour of representing Newcastle in what proved to be the Long Parliament. The town was in possession of the Scots, but they do not appear to have used any undue influence over the electors. There were three candidates—Sir Henry Anderson and Sir John Melton, who belonged to the court party, and John Blakiston, a pronounced puritan, afterwards one of the regicides. Both the knights were returned amidst great excitement. The puritans were furious, for Melton was almost a stranger to the town. He had been one of the council of the North, and had acted as its secretary ; but he lived at York, and appears to have had no family, and not much commercial interest in Newcastle. How then could he have secured a majority of voices among the burgesses of a place so clannish and so exclusive ? Blakiston's friends were convinced that Melton had not been fairly returned, and they resolved to petition against his election. Evidence of the usual character, then and since, was sent up to the House of Commons. But before the petition could be heard Melton was summoned to a higher tribunal. His death did not, however, stay proceedings in parliament. On the 17th December "it was moved for Newcastle to have a warrant for a new writ for electing of a burgess for that town, in the room and stead of Sir John Melton, formerly returned a burgess for that town, and since is dead ; but there being a petition depending before the Committee for Privileges, questioning the election of Sir John Melton, no warrant is to issue forth until the committee have delivered their opinions touching that election." When the petition came to be heard it was found that no writ was necessary. Melton had not been properly returned, and the House resolved "that Mr. Blakiston is well elected to serve as a burgess for the town of Newcastle, and ought to sit as a member in this house ; and that the sheriff ought to amend the return." The real members for Newcastle, therefore, in the first year of the Long Parliament, were

**Sir Henry Anderson and John Blakiston, Esquire.**

---

In matters pertaining to religion, strife and dissension were at fever heat. Dr. Jenison's position continued to be a subject of warm

discussion, and fresh fuel was added to the flame by a dispute between the corporation and vicar Alvey. The latter, writing to Laud the week before Christmas, 1639, gives his version of the difficulty in the following terms :—" Our lecturer, Mr. Stephenson (of St. Nicholas'), lately left this place upon a distaste and discontent which he took at some of our fiery zealots' harsh carriage towards him, and the mayor, with the consent of some aldermen, picked out a common council for the purpose, and presently proceeded to the election of a new lecturer, not so much as vouchsafing to consult and advise with me whether I would discharge the place myself, or admit a lecturer for a coadjutor and assistant. Nay, though I had given intimation unto them that I was willing to supply the place myself, and to put myself to double pains, only to prevent those mischiefs and inconveniences which had heretofore happened, and may again arise in this corporation, through the multiplicity of lecturers . . . yet, without taking the least notice of what I had intimated unto them, they concluded upon a lecturer, one Mr. Bewick, a townsman born, who is a near kinsman to our mayor and Dr. Jenison, merely to keep a faction on foot, and still to maintain opposition and siding in the town, as may more than probably be supposed ; and this I dare avow, though the lecturer be never so regular a man himself, yet being of the clan, as they call it, and one of their own choosing, he shall be cried up for the only man, and made the head of a disorderly faction, while they who stand for order and make it their study to promote the peace of the church, shall be despised, undervalued, and contemned in comparison of their own creature." Recommends that special order be given that curates or lecturers in the town should turn their afternoon sermons into catechising, and that only one afternoon sermon be preached in the whole town, "and that only at St. Nicholas', the chief church, either by me, the vicar, or by some other able preacher whom I shall think fit," the corporation to allow the same stipend for that afternoon sermon as they did to the former lecturer, or show a reason why they refuse to do it. So long as catechising is discountenanced, and divers men are permitted to preach afternoon sermons in the town, and the statute levying one shilling upon those who absent themselves from their parish church without reasonable cause is neglected, there is no hope or probability that "either the public service of the church should be duly frequented, or that humorous spirits, who love to gad from one parish to another, as their fancies lead them to affect the preacher, should be brought to an orderly uniformity, or to a liking of the church's service and discipline." States that he has not given the least assent to the proceedings of the corporation, but awaits Laud's directions in the matter ; and ends by praying that the Lord will

"daily multiply his blessing upon you, and make you every day more gracious than others in the eyes of our gracious sovereign."

Laud reported the dispute to the king, and on the 11th January Windebank writes to bishop Morton telling him that his majesty has heard of Stephenson's leaving his lectureship, "upon distaste given him by some fiery zealots," and that the mayor, with the consent of some aldermen, picked out a common council for the purpose, and presently proceeded to the election of a new lecturer. "What those popular elections are, especially this, thus cunningly plotted and contrived, his majesty doubts not but you in your judgment well understand," and therefore desires him to ascertain whether the person chosen is well affected and conformable to the church, or whether he has been preferred for private ends, or relationship to the mayor or any of the magistrates; whether they had the consent of Mr. Alvey, the vicar, or whether they made offer to the vicar to undertake it, which, if they have neglected, "they deserve to be reprehended and censured by you." In all cases of this kind the incumbent, if able and without exception, is to have the option of these lectureships, and none to be admitted without his consent; and if Mr. Alvey is willing to undergo the service, "you are then to order him to be settled in that place of lecturer, and the other lately chosen to desist and forbear exercising it." On the 27th vicar Alvey reports to the archbishop that he has been to the bishop of Durham and explained the position, taking a letter from Stephenson with him. [Stephenson's reasons for resigning the lectureship and retiring to Stamfordham, were the want of that comfort and contentment which he had expected, the slighting of his friends, and the indulgence given to insolent and factious spirits.] The lecturer appointed had not accepted the office, and he (Alvey) was willing to undertake the duty. "As touching Mr. Lapthorne, I was present at the high commission when he received his censure, and he was then silenced, fined 50*l.*, and confined to prison for half-a-year."

The corporation, a few weeks later, reply to the bishop of Durham's inquiries, stating that they were not aware of any distaste they had given to Mr. Stephenson; did not choose Bewick till eight days after Stephenson's resignation; were informed that Bewick was conformable to the church; appointed him subject to the bishop's approval; although they did not offer the place to Mr. Alvey, they informed him of Bewick's election, to know whether he would take any exceptions; could not remember any instance of the vicar enjoying the vicarage and lectureship together." And there the matter rested.

As to Dr. Jenison, archbishop Neile writes to Windebank, at the turn of the year, that he has sent to Newcastle to be informed by Mr. Alvey how Jenison behaved himself, and what suspicion or

observation there was of his having secret conventicles, or other meetings and conferences that might tend to his majesty's disservice and nourishing of the faction there. Has also written the bishop of Durham, requesting that he would speak with Dr. Jenison, to advise him to avoid all occasions that might bring such suspicions upon him, and to persuade him to remove his dwelling. Jenison continually professes conformity in all things to the laws, canons, and ceremonies of the church, with dislike of the courses held by the rebellious Scots. Again, on the 10th January he reports that the doctor is living in Newcastle under jealousy and suspicion of doing no good offices there, but nothing can be proved to fasten an accusation against him. The bishop of Durham had requested him to leave the town, "to which he returned answer by protestation that he held not any manner of secret conventicles, or meetings, or conferences with any, nor would do anything to his majesty's disservice, or the disturbance of the government of that place." He complained that by his being suspended from his ministry, and deprived of the place and maintenance which he had there, himself, his wife, and children were undone; he was also in bodily infirmity, "yet in obedience to his majesty's pleasure he would prepare himself, so soon as he could, to remove his dwelling, as the season of the year, his health, and poor means might enable him to do it." The writer adds that "the faction increases, many of them abandon the common prayers of the church, some not coming to the church till the singing of the psalm before the sermon, of which crime I cannot excuse Dr. Jenison; others of them gadding abroad every Sunday to the place where Mr. Lapthorne preaches, and to other like places."

The watchful vicar found further use for his pen. Two leading covenanters came to Newcastle, and received attentions from some of the authorities beyond what the vicar thought right and seemly. He therefore writes to the archbishop an account of their proceedings:—"There have been in our town two covenanters of Scotland, of no mean note—Sir Walter Riddell, and Sir John Bohannan [Buchanan]. I heard that Mr. Middleton of Belsay, and some three or four of our nonconformists, held a more familiar correspondence with them than was fit, and accompanied them both in walking about the town walls, and also at their lodgings and other places. Sir John Buchanan continues yet in the town, for what purpose I cannot guess, unless it be to sound the humours and dispositions of the people, which way they stand inclined or affected. There is not such a watchful eye kept over these men by our mayor as is requisite in these dangerous times." The archbishop, in transmitting Alvey's letter to Windebank on the 11th, adds, that Mr. Middleton of Belsay is a man no better

affected to conformity than he should be ; he has a private chapel at Belsay where all comers are permitted to preach, and to which the factious people of Newcastle have ordinary recourse when they are disposed to abandon common prayer in their parish churches.

On the same day that the vicar's letter was leaving York for London, Windebank was summoning the mayor to appear at Whitehall, ordering him to leave the charge of the mayoralty with the senior alderman of the town. Within the week the king orders Sir William Bellasis and Sir John Marley to apprehend both Buchanan and Middleton ; but this command Sir John was not able to obey, for neither of them could be found. Alvey reports on the 27th that Buchanan had left the town going towards Scotland. While in Newcastle he lay at the house of Mr. Allen [attorney], "a notorious puritan," and "did converse only with those of that faction." Dr. Wishart, "who was lately placed lecturer here in Dr. Jenison's place by his majesty's command," had informed him how Sir Walter Riddell, after his visit to Newcastle, reported to the covenanters that he knew all the places where they might have easy passage and access into the town. "Dr. Jenison, they say, is preparing speedily to go for Holland to Amsterdam, and Mr. Lapthorne being silenced, there is good hope that now the neck of the puritanical faction is broken, if the bishop of Durham will but have a vigilant eye," etc.

January closed with two notable letters relating to the visit of these intrusive covenanters. One of them is from the dean of Durham to Laud, informing him that the strangers were three days in the town, lodging at the inn of Leonard Carr, and diligently viewing the forts and bulwarks by water, the walls of the town, the hills and places of advantage or disadvantage. Those who kept them company were the known puritans of the town, and among those who entertained them at their houses was the mayor. When Mr. Mayor was asked by Sir John Marley why he would suffer Scotch captains and covenanters to view the town, he answered that "it was suspected there was mass said in the town ; he wondered Sir John did not complain of that ;" but further answer he gave him none. The other letter is from Sir John to the dean. Referring to the above quoted answer of the mayor, Sir John states that "Sir Lionel Maddison was by, and if he be put to his oath must justify the truth, though it is well known that he is one of the greatest favourers of [the puritan] faction in all Newcastle, but carries it warily. It appears more of late than before, for a special friend told me he said if Mr. Mayor carried his business right, he would come off with credit, and his accusers with shame ; besides, all the puritans in our town are labouring to make Sir Lionel a parliament man. As for the



meeting with Sir Walter Riddell and others, there is Mr. Ralph Gray, brother-in-law to Sir Lionel Maddison; Mr. Mayor and Dr. Jenison are his uncles, himself a crafty puritan, and one of the captains of our town. He comes up in the mayor's company. . . . If they be examined carefully and severally, there will appear much knavery and dissembling; I mean those who met at Newcastle. For my part I am sure that faction is bending all their wits and devices against me. But, though I am sure they fear me, yet I thank God and his majesty I fear none of them, for my doings are just, and I protest before God I hate none of their persons, but desire to reform their manners, and make them better subjects, which, if God and the king please, I doubt not to do, or make them weary of Newcastle. The mayor set forward upon Monday last, being the 27th inst., when divers accompanied him forth of the town, as, remarkably, Sir Lionel Maddison and Dr. Jenison. His best plea will be ignorance, which in good faith is no lie; but let him be asked if he be not acquainted with Mr. Laphthorne, who was lately censured, etc., for the truth is that there has not been any unconformable minister about us, but they have resorted to his house (I mean Mr. Mayor)."

On the 5th February Sir John reports to Windebank that he has not been able to take Sir John Buchanan, who "never stayed long in one place, as he had many haunts in Northumberland, most of his consorts being strong for the puritan faction." If some of the chief of that faction were strictly dealt with it would be "the ready means to root out that mystery of iniquity from these northern parts." Henry Carr, son of the innkeeper with whom Sir Walter Riddell and his friends lodged while in Newcastle, had deposed to having heard it said that the mayor should have entertained them, it being the custom of the place for the mayor to invite men of good fashion, and that in reply to Sir John Marley the mayor had said he, Sir John, being a justice of the peace, might have stayed them if he knew they were not the king's friends. Further, he was told by Richard Hodgson, that he heard of Edward Man and Henry Holmes of Newcastle, being at a conventicle supper with Sir Walter and his company in Newcastle; "also, that Sir John Marley, meeting with the mayor upon the penthouse, charged him with connivance at those covenanters; to whom the mayor answered that there were divers masses in the town which were never looked after, and he wondered why he should take so much notice of this; and further told deponent that he heard that the mayor invited Sir Walter publicly upon the penthouse one day to dinner, but the latter declined it, saying that he was to dine that day with Sir Thomas Riddell."

The mayor, as we have seen, had been summoned to London.

When he arrived there he found himself practically a prisoner. He was examined by the attorney-general, as was also Ralph Gray, and then was ordered not to leave town without leave of the king. The substance of the mayor's deposition, which Gray confirmed, was to the effect that Sir Walter Riddell and Alexander Murray, Scotchmen, came to Newcastle as alleged, and he saw them walking in the penthouse with Sir William Riddell, but did not know them, nor had any conference with either of them. He was not aware that they had surveyed the town until ten days after their departure, when Sir John Marley told him they had gone about the walls of the town, and that they were covenanters. Divers Scotchmen in the summer repair weekly to Newcastle on business, but deponent knows not any of them to be covenanters. Riddell and Murray did not either dine or sup with him, neither were they invited by him, who was not even aware of their coming, nor how long they stayed. If examinant had known, or been informed, that they were suspicious persons or covenanters, he would have been careful that they should have been examined and put into safe custody.

How long his worship remained in London under surveillance does not appear. Among the State Papers is a petition of his, which the editor of the *Calendar* puts with a query in April, but we know, from the inquiry which followed Anthony Errington's proceedings, that he was home again in the closing days of March. In his petition he informs the king that he is in custody of a messenger on some misinformation that he has favoured factious persons and covenanters. He denies knowing that Sir Walter Riddell, or any in his company, were covenanters, or that any such abode in the town; declaring that he never was and never will be any favourer of covenanters or other factious persons, but is always conformable to the order of church and state. In his shrievalty he paid in 1200*l.* of the ship-money for Northumberland; is now deputy-lieutenant in Newcastle to the earl of Northumberland; and during his absence not only the mayor's court, but also the writs for ship-money and other commands from the king, are at a stay. Prays that he may be discharged from attendance in London, in order that he may attend his majesty's service at home.

---

In the matter of the coal monopoly there are but few items of interest this year. By order of council in March, the king being present (the lord mayor and aldermen having no further proposition to make from themselves, or the wood-mongers and coal merchants, to the Newcastle hostmen, but desire that the contract of 17*s.* and 19*s.* might be kept), the contract, made 2nd July 1638, with the coal

merchants, etc., was ratified ; as were also the orders made by the society of coal merchants among themselves for better regulating the trade, but suspended by order of 15th May 1639. Brand quotes from the hostmen's books a letter, dated 31st July, from the council to the mayor and aldermen of Newcastle, for the purpose of regulating the prices and preventing the scarcity of coal. This was referred to the hostmen, who appointed four of their brethren to examine the several staiths and certify the particulars to their lordships, according to their request. In the Commons, on the 12th November, the docket of Mr. Sandy's patent for receiving 12d. per chaldron more than the old tax that was set upon coals was read. A few days afterwards a paper concerning the hostmen of Newcastle was read and referred to the former committee. In connection with this subject may be cited a petition of Richard Forster, esquire, to the king, referring to his application in 1631 for a grant of the arrears of rent and mean profits due to the crown for the coal-mines at Benwell, which application was referred to the lord-treasurer ; and while it was under consideration, Mrs. Cicely Crofts, a maid-of-honour, became suitor for the arrears, etc. of the coal-mines at four places in Benwell—Stumplewood Head, Crossflatt, Goreflatt, and the Meadow-fields—and obtained a grant for the same. He (Forster) then petitioned for the arrearages not granted to Mrs. Crofts, and obtained his request, but was stopped until Mrs. Crofts' suit should be heard and determined. But after many hearings in the Exchequer, and also before the late lord-keeper, nothing is likely to be determined therein, at least for a long time, and therefore, after seven or eight years' patient expectation, he again becomes a suitor for a renewal of the grant. The king refers the matter to lord-treasurer Juxon, and Francis lord Cottington, who report that "having found the great trouble of the suit commenced by Mrs. Crofts for part of these coal-mines, we have made petitioner declare he will avoid such extremities, and compound for some reasonable sum with Sir Peter Riddell, who now possesses those mines."

---

A petition had been presented to the council in the names of the mayor and aldermen of Newcastle concerning a shore at South Shields, erected by Sir Robert Heath or others, for building of salt-pans there, as also a petition by Sir Robert, desiring that ballast might be cast there again, notwithstanding any former restraint. The lords of the council directed that both sides should attend the Board this last term for settling of the difference. It appeared by a certificate under the hands of eleven persons appointed by the mayor and aldermen to view the shore, that the breaches in the same are

made up, and that they conceive a part at the north end of the shore, lately built up, extending about 55 yards and bound with timber, to be sufficient; that ballast may be cast thereon to fill up the back-water without prejudice to the river, provided that the ballast be taken away as it is cast; and for all other parts of the same shore it is found insufficient, and that no ballast can be cast thereon without hurt to the river until such time that a wall be built according to a former certificate, dated 10th October 1638. It is therefore ordered that the farmers of the said shore shall observe these regulations.

---

Died at his house in Newcastle, May 9, alderman Robert Anderson. On the 12th he was buried in St. Nicholas', and the clerk who kept the register of burials wrote opposite his name—"A good benefactor." Gray, describing the church in the *Chorographia*, notes that:—"In the quire and walks about it is many fair monuments, tombs, and marble-stones of mayors of this town, their names and arms engraven in stone, with their titles of (sometime mayor of Newcastle) honours; not one word of their good deeds; their generations and names are worn out. Only that thrice noble mayor, Master Robert Anderson, whose memory will continue until there be no more time; *Ære vel marmore perennius*—viz., his gift of twenty pounds per annum for ever to the four churches in Newcastle. *Dignum laude virum, Musa vetat mori.*" Brand mentions that the bequest was lost during the civil wars.

The number of Andersons in Newcastle at this time, and especially of Andersons bearing the christian names Henry and Robert, make it difficult to place the "good benefactor" in the pedigrees. He was of a different family to that of the Andersons of Haswell and Bradley, but was probably related to them by marriage. He may have been the sheriff of Newcastle chosen at Michaelmas 1618, and it is certain that he was the mayor elected in 1630. Those who care to carry the inquiry further may find assistance in the following summary of his will [in which, be it noted, no bequest to churches occurs], signed the 6th May, and proved shortly afterwards:—Desires to be buried in St. Nicholas', Newcastle, as near his parents as conveniently might be. Leaves his well-beloved wife, Jane, all his collieries, pits, and staiths within the lordship of Winlaton, and all his corn in Allersydheugh of his own possession, within the lordship of Winlaton, and three of his best keels out of his twelve to be her own choice, also 150*l.*, and all his household furniture, etc., in his dwelling-house in Newcastle; to Robert, son of Gillies Anderson, 100*l.*, provided he "go not about to disturb the executors;" to Robert, son of George Anderson, 30*l.*; to Robert, son of Izak

Anderson, 30*l.* ; to Thomas Haggerston's eldest son, in consideration of his father's care of testator's coal, both past and to come, 50*l.* ; to his servant, George Pearson, twenty nobles, a suit and a cloak ; to his daughter Elizabeth Anderson, twenty nobles, and her two daughters, Ann and Margaret, each of them 10*l.* ; to Elizabeth Anderson, wife of William Anderson, her four daughters 5*l.* a-year ; to Bartram Anderson, son to Henry Anderson, and to Francis and Mary Anderson, 10*l.* each ; to John, son of William Fenwick of London, the sixteenth part of *Hanks*, his new ship, towards his education ; to his four noble friends, the lady Margaret Selby of White House, Mrs. Margaret Blaxton of Gibside, Sir William Fenwick, and Sir Nicholas Tempest, each 20*l.* towards the buying of an "aymond" [emerald], to wear for his remembrance ; to Robert Shafto and his wife, 20*s.* a-piece ; to cousin Henry Anderson and his wife, 20*s.* each, and the like to Elizabeth, wife of William Anderson, deceased ; to the poor, 20*l.*, to be given at his burial. Residue to testator's cousin, Francis Anderson, executor. Witnesses—Thomas Mallabar, Richard Bellshay, Erasmus Towerson.



ST. NICHOLAS' CHURCH. WESTERN ENTRANCE. 13TH CENTURY.

## BATTLE OF NEWBURN.

## SURRENDER OF NEWCASTLE TO THE SCOTS.

Events in Scotland after the pacification of the previous year gave the king and his council good cause for alarm. Being pressed for money, his majesty, as we have seen, summoned a parliament in the hope of obtaining liberal supplies. Before it could assemble there were reports of a possible invasion by the Scots, and preparations were made for the defence of the North. A heavy expenditure was incurred, and the pressure of taxation created much discontent. Robert Mitford, sheriff of Northumberland, writing on the 14th February, acknowledges the receipt of a writ for the levy of 2100*l.* ship-money, and relates the trouble he encounters in obtaining it. Newcastle was to contribute 1700*l.*, and Morpeth and Berwick 200*l.* respectively, but, he writes—"The authorities of Newcastle refused to be assessed, and still persist in their differences of opinion from us, pretending the tax to be an unjust pressure on them." Money or no money, the preparations went on. In March the council of war ordered a hundred carts to carry tents for infantry to be ready at Newcastle by the middle of June, the estimated cost being 1293*l.* 6*s.*, and letters were written to several counties to send 300 horses for these carts, and 1100 more for a train of artillery, and to provide a carter for every three horses. A shilling a-day was the allowance for each horse, and 8*d.* a-day for each carter. The earl of Northumberland, lord-general of the army, ordering provisions and beer to be provided for Berwick and Newcastle by the 25th June, adds, "There is corn of several sorts in Newcastle to serve the army two months at least, and they have very good convenience for grinding and converting the same into bread; besides, the country thereabouts is full of provisions of all kinds, so that the only commodities needful to be sent thither for the present will be 600 tons of beer, 1000 weighs of cheese, and 2500 firkins of butter. Notes of proceedings at the council of war on the 24th March, the king being present, give us a further insight into these military preparations. Captain Vane was raising his troop at Newcastle, and it was agreed that he should remain there till further orders. Sir Jacob Astley reported that "there are in Newcastle 500 trained soldiers and 2000 arms belonging to the king; also, that the last year the mayor and aldermen there promised to have 2000 men belonging to the coal-mines ready to bear those arms upon all occasions, and that there are, besides, some ordnance ready mounted, so that it would not be easy to take the town but by a surprise." To prevent this he recommended that a troop of horse should be at Alnwick, another about Belford, and a

third about Morpeth, both to guard the passages of the river and give warning to Newcastle upon the approach of the enemy, stating that "if there be twelve hours' notice given before an enemy come, it will make it difficult work to take that town, especially if there be an able commander to direct in chief." The council left to the lord-general to think of a fit man to take charge of Newcastle, with power to raise the train-bands in the two counties, and directed the master of the ordnance to have some of the keels of Newcastle in readiness "for making of bridges upon all occasions for the use of the king's army."

Meanwhile more disquieting rumours came from Scotland. From more than one quarter it was reported that the Scots were bragging of their ability to meet force by force. "It is commonly spoken," writes lord Ettrick, "that if they once see his majesty's armies on foot, they will be ready to meet them beyond Newcastle, which I verily believe they will endeavour to do." "They report," writes Sir Michael Ernle, governor of Berwick, "that when the king's army shall march they will meet him between York and Newcastle; but this is only discourse, for I have heard from very good hands that they strive to put a great face upon the business, but were never so much out of countenance as they now are."

At this juncture lord Conway was sent to look after the defences of Newcastle. In a letter to the lord-general, dated April 23rd, he reports his arrival, after being feasted at York on his way by Sir John Melton. The townspeople, he finds, are not much afraid of the Scots. "They think the Scots may do great hurt to the coal-mines, but then they must come with great forces." "I found Sir John Marley's house would be the most convenient for my residence, but I took a worse because he is not in benign aspect with your excellency." Two days afterwards he writes fully to the earl, describing the defences of the town. He has been round the walls, which are in many places very high, and there it will be ill scaling them, but in other places they are better to be attempted; without the walls there are houses and fences of earth made for the inclosure of fields, which will serve the enemy to scour the wall while their ladders are rearing; the cannon upon the wall will be of very little use if an enemy will not be afraid. There are towers upon the wall wherein musketeers might be placed, which would be of great use; they say here they expect some, but the towers would take up many. The gates of the town are easy of approach, being without a ditch, but all except two, which they propose to dam up, have three hindrances; the first is of great bars fitting into the wall, which draw out, only available against horsemen; the next is an iron gate of broad bars, like a grate; and the last is

the great wooden gate; and besides all these there is a portcullis. The town is very willing to do anything which shall be thought fit for its defence, and makes no difficulty of pulling down houses, or plaining of any walls or ditches, provided the expense be not over great. They say it cost them last year 1500*l*." In other letters he mentions that there are several hundreds of Scotchmen who have families here upon the borders, especially on lord Grey's lands, also about 300 in the coal-mines, and many Scotch families in Newcastle, all covenanters, and as much of the Scotch party as if they dwelt at Edinburgh.

The day that parliament was dissolved finds Conway writing to the earl again:—"I have endeavoured with the mayor and aldermen to make them find men for the 2000 arms the king has here. At the first they made it an impossibility; all that I could get from them was, that they were at great charge with the 500 that are put into companies; that there are no more men in the town but keelmen, coalmen, and seamen. Sir John Marley said that the king ought to send forces for their safeguard. I said the king did send horse, and supposing that the townsmen were able to furnish foot for the defence of themselves, did expect that they should do it until his army came. Sir John said that the king had 50,000*l*. yearly by this town, and therefore he thought the king ought with that money to pay soldiers who might defend them. When I could obtain no more I then propounded to them to arm all their companies with muskets, and to appoint a certain number of keelmen and coalmen, that might be armed with pikes, . . . that so there might be the more hands for the defence of this town; they have now promised to do it. I find that they feared that if they should raise any more companies they should be forced to keep them still as trained bands, and that it would be an everlasting charge."

On the 15th there was a small mutiny in the town. We have a note of it in St. Andrew's parish register:—"2 sogers, for denying the kynges pay, was by a kownsell of war apoyted to be shot at, and a pare of galos set up befor Tho. Malabers dore in the byg market. Thay kust lotes wich should dy, and the lotes did fall of one Mr. Anthone Wiccors, and he was set against a wall and shot at by 6 lyght horsmen, and was bured in owre church yard the sam day. May 16 day." In a letter from Conway to Laud the story is told more fully:—"We had a mutiny here last week upon the pay-day, for the twopence which is taken for [payment of] arms. The spokesman on that occasion was apprehended. The next day, when I sent the prisoner, twenty or more soldiers of the troop [Sir Fulke Huncks's] came very mutinously to my door. I took one of them, and con-



demned both to be hanged ; but believing that the death of one would terrify the rest sufficiently, I caused them to cast dice, and one of them was shot dead by five of his fellows, because I could not get any to hang him. The soldiers and townsmen thought—the one that I would not put him to death, the other that I durst not.” The quality of the arms supplied to the troops upon the conditions indicated in the foregoing extract forms the subject of frequent complaint in Conway’s letters ; but an incident which occurred in Newcastle on Sunday, May 30th, shows that the weapons were deadly enough when used in jest. “ Last Sunday,” writes Conway, “ two soldiers, jesting with one another, as it is said, the one ran the other in the belly with a sword, and he died presently ; the same day two women, jesting with two swords, the one ran the other in the belly, a very deep wound, but she lives.”

And now the time came when “ Scotch brag,” hitherto but lightly regarded, caused the people of Newcastle genuine alarm. “ The other night,” writes Conway, on the 8th June, “ a letter came from one who lives upon the border, which saith that the Scots do intend to come to Newcastle. This has affrighted the townsmen, and the mayor and his brethren have been with me ; to-morrow they will muster their forces, and divide them into companies. If I can I will get them to do something for the fortifying of the town, which I believe may be done in such a manner that an enemy may be kept off some reasonable time until an army come for their relief.” It was only a false report, but it served to hasten the languid preparations that were being made for the time when the Scots should come in earnest. Letters were sent to all the northern counties to draw their train-bands together upon short warning, and the earl of Northumberland informed Conway that he was sending him 3000 or 4000 men to lodge in and about Newcastle, where there was some corn of last year’s provisions belonging to Sir John Marley and Mr Pinkney, which those gentlemen would “ put off ” for the use of the army, though he doubted its goodness, and would not “ give way thereun to ” until he was satisfied of its condition. In reply Conway states that he had had Sir John’s corn inspected, and found that twenty-five lasts of rye, worth 250*l.* or 300*l.*, were good ; the other would not keep, being Russian corn, black and white mixed, and dried in a kiln, which gave it an ill condition. “ Those of Newcastle whom I employed to look at the corn are extremely afraid of him, lest he should fetch them up to London upon some accusation. . . . He says that he has much more corn, but he would not show it, and that corn of his which is good is a very small proportion.” In connection with this matter the old feeling of distrust which the earl had of Sir John crops up, and he writes Conway—“ If I thought it possible for a man who has lived

twenty years a knave to prove afterwards an honest man, I should entertain a more charitable opinion of Sir John Marley. He has all this while made himself believe that what oppressions soever he did amongst his neighbours he should be supported in it by his friends at court, some of whom have, perhaps, deceived his expectations, which makes him now contented to set himself right in my good opinion. But he is a person I desire not to have to do with, only if his corn upon a survey appear to be nought, it shall go hard but I will make him pay for it." At the council of war on the 15th a contract with Marley and Pinkney for victuals, with a bond of 12,000*l.*, was handed in, and the earl of Newport was ordered to send 500 saddles, with bits, stirrups, etc., to Newcastle, by sea, 300 of which were to remain in Newcastle for the use of the country roundabout, at reasonable rates, and the rest to go to Carlisle. Next day Conway is informed that troops are on the march from some of the southern counties, "but they run away so fast that scarce half the numbers will appear at the rendezvous." Laud tells him on the 19th that he had submitted his letters to the king, who liked his project for fortifying Newcastle exceedingly well, but demurs to his proposal that a 2d. due upon coals should be used for that purpose. "It is thought," he adds, "the Scots will come into England, and if they do, God preserve Newcastle."

June passed away quietly enough. The Scots did not come, and there were not wanting those who believed that they would never come—lord Conway for one, and to his scepticism is attributable the dilatory measures that were taken to strengthen Newcastle. For although the king issued his writ to the mayor, burgesses, and sheriff of Newcastle, to fortify the place against "the Scottish rebels," very little appears to have been done. Warning came early in July that the Scots were on the move, and that within five or six miles of the border they had an army gathered together; it was known also that on this side they had many sympathisers, who would assist them if they should venture upon an invasion. Sir William Fenwick, midway in the month, reported that one of his brother Heron's men had been at Jedburgh, where he was told that the Scots would either be in England within three or four days, or else disperse. "Their plot," he adds, "is to be master over the Tyne and Sunderland, and by stopping the coal trade to compel the king and kingdom of England to grant them more than ever yet they desired." Conway, having reconsidered his proposals for fortifying Newcastle, wrote that he had found out a place "where a fort may be built, which may be made very strong, and will serve not only for a defence for the town, but for a bridle to keep the town in obedience." Again, on the 17th:—"The assembly of the Scots has put a great fright into Northumber-

land, but I do not conceive they will come into England. . . . Money is wanting here, which will put us all into disorder. I have borrowed of the sheriff of Durham and the mayor of Newcastle enough for this month, but the mayor and his brethren would not lend any out of their own purse. . . . There are four hundred draught horses come hither, eight hundred more will be here within four days; no order is taken for their payment, and no man knows what to do with them."

Still no fear of the Scots. Conway evidently believed that it was only through much tribulation they could enter the kingdom. "They will not come," he declares on the 27th; "it will be the greatest madness that may be for them to think to subsist by robbing, and to make a conquest of England; they have not forces to come into England to do it, or to subsist until a party join with them, for, assure yourself, nobody will join with them until they have won a battle." Equally confident was the sturdy governor of Berwick and Sir John Conyers; the latter declaring that "their army cannot be of strength to invade England. . . . I am still confident they intend only their own defence."

"Will the Scots cross the border?" continued to be the question in the early days of August. "They will not," was still Conway's answer. On the 3rd, referring to a letter stating that sixty-three noblemen and gentlemen had bound themselves to join with the Scots, he expresses an opinion that it was a "counterfeit, sent only to deceive us, and to make us suspect ourselves." "And," he continues (he is writing to Windebank), "neither do I believe the Scots will come into England; this that they do is only to brag; but, however, I will look to myself as well as a man may that has no money in his purse. I would send for more of the foot from Selby, but I fear unpaid soldiers more than I do the Scots and the devil to boot. God keep you from all three."

In a day or two it was known that the Scots were at Chousley Wood, near the border, but nothing could shake the stubborn confidence of Conway and the governor of Berwick. The former, however, showed some sign of yielding; for on the 6th he tells Windebank that he expects every hour to hear that the Scots are come over Tweed, "although it be against my judgment that they should." (There had been some inquiry about a justice of Newcastle acting as intelligencer across the border, and in the same letter Conway declares his inability to identify him. "The mayor and aldermen are all justices; there is but one more, Sir Peter Riddell, who is most zealous for the king's service, and deserves thanks; but if you will have them all I will send them—they will make an excellent kennel, six couple of aldermen to hunt out conspiracy.")

Four days later Conway is obliged to acknowledge that his predictions have been falsified. The earl of Haddington had told Sir Henry Gibb that "without all doubt the Scotch army will come into England within three days. He is most confident of it, and says that their army will be thirty thousand. I see no help for this town [Newcastle], but that it will be lost. I have written divers times that it might be made defensible, but that was not thought fit; now it is impossible to resist if cannon be brought before it. However, I will see if I can persuade the town to make some defence, if it be possible to keep it a day or two. The king commanded me to burn the suburbs—burning them will not be of any use; the houses are all of stone, so that the walls will be of as much annoyance to the town as if the houses were untouched. If I leave any number of men in the town, their arms will help to arm the Scots; and they are in great danger to fall into their power. If I quit the town and leave no soldiers, I am sure it will be imputed to me as a dishonourable thing, [yet] when an enemy is master of the field that ought to be quit to him which cannot be kept, and in such manner as he shall receive least benefit by it. . . . I will immediately give order that all ships go out of the river, and those that cannot to be burned or sunk; they say that there is a means to sink them so that they may be again recovered."

The earl of Northumberland writes to Conway on the 11th that he will join him in a few days; that if the quarrel between Colonel Aston and Sir John Marley be not taken up before he arrives, he will be Aston's second, and that Conway is to get him a fit house to lodge in, "and give notice to the master of it that I intend to be his guest, but it must be a furnished house, for I shall only bring such stuff as is useful in the field." Sir Jacob Astley also writes that he is coming to the Tyne to secure the bishopric. Letters flow in from all sides. Among others is one from Windebank, of the 14th, as follows:—"His majesty having understood from a very good hand that the rebels of Scotland have a design upon the town of Newcastle, and in his wisdom considering the dangerous blow that the taking of a place of that importance would give to his affairs, hath seriously advised upon a means to prevent it; and therefore hath commanded me to signify his pleasure unto your lordship, that you, immediately, upon view of the hills that command the town toward Scotland, and likewise any other hill or place from whence the town may be battered or incommodated by the enemy, do forthwith cause redoubts to be erected, and lines and trenches to be drawn from one redoubt to another, and sufficient number of men to be put into those redoubts and fortifications for the defence and securing of those

places. And if peradventure you are not furnished with ready moneys for such a work, his majesty's pleasure is that your lordship will cause such inhabitants of the town as you shall think fit (seeing their own safeties are so much concerned herein) to labour and work in these fortifications, and to hasten the perfecting of them ; for which his majesty is pleased to promise they shall receive, out of the supply of moneys that shall be sent thither, such satisfaction as shall be fitting."

A cabinet council on the 16th debated a proposition from the king that he should go North the following day. The marquis of Hamilton thought that if the object of his majesty's journey were only the defence of Newcastle, it might be done without him. The king replied that if he went North he should do more than defend Newcastle. If the Scots had not entered England, he thought he could stay them ; if they had, he could cut off provisions from them without costing any man's life. Thought he should be safer there than in London if they should take Newcastle, and the rather secure his wife and children. Earl Strafford was not satisfied that there was so instant a danger of the loss of Newcastle. The only thing was to march up the men to the town, and so long as that might be done it was not important whether in six or eight days. He conceived neither the danger of Newcastle so great, nor that the Scots would come in, and therefore his majesty ought not to stir too soon. The king answered that the news of their coming in was not new, but of six months' date, and he feared he might rather be too late, for no man would undertake to secure Newcastle. It was finally agreed that the king should go North, and he left London on the 20th for York.

The same day that the king came North the Scots, under General Lesley, crossed the Tweed. Conway hears from Sir John Clavering that "they are between 25,000 and 26,000 foot, and 2000 and 3000 horse, this is near 30,000—a strong army and a hungry ; it is likely that they will eat and fight devilishly." Sir John Conyers tells him that they march night and day to be at Newcastle before the king's army, "and some say they will seek to cross the Tyne about Hexham." Secretary Vane, with the king at York, informs Windebank on the 25th, that if the rebels use diligence, and march to Newcastle, that town is in danger. Sir Jacob Astley has done all that a gallant man could do to put the town into a state of defence ; the mayor and governors, in this exigent, spare neither their hands, purses, nor anything else wherein they may assist ; Durham has raised the train-bands, horse and foot, and 2000 men more at their own charge, to defend the Tyne water ; and the king has spoken to the leading men of the county of York to dispose them to march with all their forces and defend the Tees, with himself at their head.

But neither king nor secretary could arrest the steady march of the covenanters across Northumberland. While Vane was writing his letter the Scots were within a few miles of Newcastle. Conway reports this to him, and laments the state of his defences:—"Order was given to cast up works against the fords—Newburn and two more; at Newburn is a regiment to defend it, but what is that? There are more than eight or ten places where the Scots may pass. If you do not take good heed they will be with you, the troops being divided, 12,000 foot and 500 horse with the king, and 10,000 foot and the horse here. If they have a mind to take Newcastle, should they come to Gateside they may do it very quickly." On the 27th they made their arrival known to the people of Newcastle. "The Scots," writes Sir Jacob Astley, "have given us an alarm to-day, which did us much good, for our men here have wrought more than was wont; they were so earnest they stript themselves to their shirts. About two o'clock to-day came a drummer to me from Lesley with two letters. He would have beaten his drum, but I caused him to let it alone, and asked what he was. He told me he belonged to the lord of Montgomery, but the letters came from the general. One was 'For him that commands in chief in Newcastle,' the other, 'To the mayor of Newcastle.' I told the drummer it was no manners for him to bring sealed letters, nor was it lawful for me to receive them, but willed him to remember me to his general, and carry them back. He desired I should send the mayor his letter. I told him I was mayor, and bade him begone."

While this incident was taking place the king was conferring at York with Strafford and the Yorkshire gentry, and in the afternoon John Rushworth, the town's solicitor, being newly come post from London to York, and hearing that a packet of orders was about to be sent to Newcastle, took the opportunity to bear the messenger company hither. In the *Historical Collections* which bear his name is a graphic account of the battle fought at Newburn on the morrow. He relates that after the drummer had been sent to Newcastle the Scots pitched their tents on Heddon Law, above Newburn, with a continuous descent to the river before them. Great fires were made in and about their camp on open moorish ground, coal being plentiful on the spot, so that in the darkness the army seemed to be of large compass and extent. They suffered Englishmen to go into their camp and made them welcome, with expressions of great love, and protestations of doing harm to none but those who should oppose them in demanding justice of the king against incendiaries. The same night part of the king's army, consisting of 3000 foot and 1500 horse, were drawn forth into a plain meadow ground, near a mile in

length, close on the south side of the Tyne called Newburn Haugh, or Stella Haugh, to hinder the Scots from passing the river after dark. Two sconces, or breastworks, were raised by the English against the two fords where the Scots might pass at low water, and into each sconce were put 400 musketeers and four pieces of ordnance. The horse were drawn into squadrons in the haugh at some distance from the foot ; and in this posture horse and foot guarded the river all that night, and next day, till the engagement. The Scots all the forenoon watered their horses at one side of the river, and the English on the other, without affronting one another, or giving any reproachful language. Having the advantage of the rising ground above Newburn, the Scots easily discerned the posture and motion of the English army below on the opposite side of the river ; but the posture of the Scots army the English could not discern, by reason of the houses, hedges, and enclosures in and about Newburn. The Scots brought down cannon into Newburn, and planted some in the church steeple. Their musketeers were placed in the church, houses, lanes, and hedges in and about Newburn.

The skirmish began thus :—A Scottish officer, well mounted, having a black feather in his hat, came out of one of the thatched houses in Newburn, and watered his horse in the Tyne, as had been done all day. An English officer <sup>f</sup>perceiving that he fixed his eye towards the English trenches on the south side of the river, fired at him—whether in earnest or to affright him was not known—but the officer was wounded by the shot, and fell from his horse ; whereupon the Scottish musketeers immediately fired upon the English ; and so the fight began with small shot, and was continued by great shot as well as small. The Scots played with their cannon on the English breastworks and sconce ; the king's army played with their cannon to beat the Scots out of the church steeple.

Thus they continued firing on both sides till it grew to be near low water, and by that time the Scots with their cannon had made a breach in the greater sconce, which colonel Lunsford commanded, wherein many of his men were killed, and others began to retire. Yet the colonel prevailed with them to stand to their arms. But presently after a captain, a lieutenant, and some other officers were slain in that work. Then the soldiers took occasion to complain that they were put upon double duty, and had stood there all night and day to that time, and none were sent from the army at Newcastle to relieve them. But colonel Lunsford again prevailed with them not to desert their post, till another cannon-shot hitting in the works amongst the soldiers, and killing some more of them, the men threw down their arms and would abide in the fort no longer.

The Scots on the rising hill plainly discerned the posture of the king's army, and how the soldiers had quitted the great work, and being low water, twenty-six of their college of justice troop were instructed to cross the river. Their orders were to discover in what position the English were about the uppermost work, and not to come to close engagement, but fire at a distance and retreat. The Scots, playing at this time very hard upon the furthest trench, forced the English foot to retreat from that work also; and this being discerned from the rising ground, more horse, commanded by Sir Thomas Hope, and two regiments of foot under lords Lindsay and Loudoun, waded through the river; while general Lesley played hard with nine pieces of cannon from a new sence raised on a hill to the east, and so galled the king's horse, drawn up in plain meadow ground, that it much disordered them. Then, sending more forces over the river, a retreat was sounded, and colonel Lunsford drew off the cannon. Immediately commissary Wilmot, son of lord Wilmot, Sir John Digby, a Romish recusant, and Daniel O'Neill, an Irishman, jointly engaged the enemy, and had a sharp encounter with their horse, they being commanded to bring up the rear, whilst the foot retreated up Ryton and Stella banks to Newcastle. But the Scots, with their fresh supply newly come over the river, environed these three commanders, and took them and some others of their troops prisoners; Lesley treating them nobly in the Scottish camp, and afterwards giving them their liberty freely to return to the king's army.

Next morning, Saturday, August 29th, by five o'clock, Conway and Astley, with their soldiers, both foot and horse, were in full retreat to Durham. In the afternoon Douglas, sheriff of Teviotdale, came with a trumpet and certain troop of horse to Newcastle, and found the gates shut against him. After some parleying, and threatening to plant ordnance against the town, the mayor [whom Rushworth erroneously names as Sir Peter Riddell], being destitute of men and arms to defend the place, opened the gates and suffered him to come in. Next day, being Sunday, fifteen lords and Douglas came and dined with the mayor, drank a health to the king, and had three sermons by their own divines.

So far Rushworth, an eyewitness of the fight. His narrative may be followed by that of captain Dymoke, one of the combatants:—

“Our regiment, Sir Thomas Glenham's, was commanded to Newcastle, where we kept strict guard, but moved not till the enemy marching within four miles of the town, 2000 foot and 1000 horse were sent in haste to stop them at the ford by Newburn. Their army appeared marching on the hills above the ford, when we were drawing into our miserable works in the valley, where we lay so exposed to



their battery, that their great shot was bowled in amongst our men to their great loss and such confusion as made them quit their works, which the enemy's horse immediately possessed, seconded by their foot in great numbers ; but first the horse on both sides exchanged a most brave but bloody encounter, the enemy's cannon extremely afflicting ours, being within their range. There was another work reasonably strong, but likewise abandoned to the enemy. Our horse retreated, and the flying foot were rallied by Sir Jacob Astley in a wood, where an ambush was fitly placed, but their rashness prevented its success. . . . The fight was sharp and short, the flight general, and the foot being overrun by the horse in a narrow lane, fled for company ; less than 300 of ours fell, and more of the enemy. The next day, early, Newcastle was deserted by us and possessed by the enemy, but Lesley and his guards did not enter till Sunday, where he heard a sermon, and dining with the mayor, for requital turned him out of doors and seized his house and goods to his own use. He seems to dispense with the inhabitants (protestants), but the arms, ammunition, ships, and provisions, besides a levy of 10,000*l.*, were made lawful prize. The town they fortify, and exact the profit on coals and the goods of recusants for payment of their army. . . . If I may speak my opinion, the first error was in sending out so few men ; the next, in placing those in a low valley exposed to the enemy's ordnance, which almost encompassed us on the hills ; thirdly, our want of ordnance ; fourthly, the neglect of two high banks which, commanding the lane wherein our foot were marching, might very aptly have been lined with musketeers to destroy the enemy's horse."

Secretary Vane at Northallerton, in communicating news of the disaster to Windebank on the 30th August, reports that "Newcastle is lost, and Lesley hath possessed himself thereof, but his majesty's army took the opportunity to retreat towards Durham, where they lodged four miles on this side last night, and have orders to use all possible diligence to join the train-bands of this county at York, where his majesty intends to be this night, and to gather all the strength possible to face the enemy. . . . It is strange to see how Lesley steals the hearts of the people in these northern parts." Encloses a narrative of the entry of the Scots into the town :—"Sir William Douglas, sheriff of Teviotdale, with a company of horse, approached Newcastle, and on the town bridge made this declaration to the mayor and other magistrates of the town. He signified that he came from a great lord of Scotland ; that they should acquit their fears ; that though armed, they came not to oppress any of them, being their good friends, and he hoped he should so find them ; that they were going to their good king with a petition in their hands desiring

the establishment of their religion, laws, and liberties, which they had often petitioned for but could not obtain ; . . . that he hoped their good brethren of Newcastle would not conceive amiss of them, it being both their causes, and for the good of both kingdoms and kirks ; that if a letter had been delivered to Conway which was sent but returned undelivered, the disaster of the day before had not happened to the hurt of both nations ; that it was not their seeking, but they were forced to it only in their own defence ; they desired bread, butter, cheese, and beer for their army, only for their money, and that they would take nothing without ready money ; that no violence should be used towards any, and that they might have a supply of ammunition, having wasted much the day before, promising they would not enter the town, but only send in commissioners to treat for victuals and ammunition for their money. Notwithstanding all their promises, next day they entered the town, and forthwith guarded the gates, and set a troop of horse in every street, and so became absolute masters of the town ; they have since seized all the king's magazines of victuals and ammunition, forced men's doors open, taken from all the inhabitants their arms, searched their houses, and taken their corn, salt, fish, and other provisions, without giving any satisfaction ; they have entered the king's custom-house, and control and receive all his customs for the town and port. When some of the inhabitants complained, they were answered with a question whether they were not papists ? And when they replied they were not, answer was made, if they were not papists they were of such religion as the king and the bishops would have them. They have inquired after certain inhabitants who left the town, and have threatened how they will use them if they once seize them. Besides, some men's servants, preferring to dispose of their masters' corn to their masters' use, were told by the Scots they deserved to have their necks laid in irons, and so had the corn taken out of their custody. And now, when they have seized the corn and provision in the town, and taken notice of such goods as men have in their houses, they have imposed on the inhabitants 200*l.* per diem, threatening, if they will not pay, to put soldiers into every man's house, and force them to maintain them."

Again, on the 3rd September, Vane writes to Windebank. Neither Montrose nor any of quality of the Scots' army were killed, but the Lord of Legg [Logie], who married the earl of Roxburgh's daughter ; they buried him in their quarter. They are encamped on the hill on Gateside, but the principal lodge in Newcastle. They will make forts on the Tyne to command the river and make Newcastle fast.

The requisitions demanded by the Scots from the bishopric were these :—"We demand 30,000 lbs. weight of bread per diem, and if

you please to supply any part hereof with cheese, we shall accept 100 weight of cheese for 200 weight of bread. Our pound weight is 16 ounces, and our stone 16 lb.; our cwt. is 6 stone and 4 lbs. We demand 40 oxen and 100 sheep per diem. We demand the use of some mills between this and Durham for preparing corn lying at Newcastle, and the horses of these places to carry the corn. We demand likewise 20 tons of beer per diem."

"They begin to plunder the bishopric," writes Vane (7th), "and have begun at Sunderland, where they came with four troops of horse at twelve o'clock at night, and took away 70% of the king's money. His majesty resolved to stay here [York], and put his army into the best posture he can to see an issue of this unhappy business. The earl of Loudoun is left governor of Newcastle, and has been down at the Shields to persuade the masters of ships to continue their trade; and certainly their end will be to raise all the money they can by a trade there, on coal and otherwise. It has been in his majesty's consideration whether he should not by his shipping shut up the Tyne or no; but since it concerns the southern parts so much, especially London, he would have the committee send him their advice upon it."

John Delaval, writing to Sir John Fenwick on the 8th September, states that he is in great straits how to answer the Scots' demand for provisions. He had not answered their letter, and so, the morning before, they sent a troop of horse before he was out of bed, and took him to Redheugh, where he found Sir William Bellasis, Sir William Lambton, and others, called upon the same business for the bishopric. They were all ordered to attend again in the afternoon at Sir Lionel Maddison's house in Newcastle, where the earl of Lothian, governor of Newcastle, lodged, and were then told that they [the Scots] had no desire to hurt the country, but must have provision for their army, for which they would pay ready money.

Of same date is a letter from a Newcastle alderman, sent by sea to a friend in London:—"We live together quietly enough in appearance, being not troubled with the common soldiers, who are kept in their quarters in camp, some commanders only and men of better rank living with us in the town. We enjoy hitherto all our goods, the money only excepted, which, while the terror of the army was on us, and their intentions yet unknown, they easily persuaded us to lend on their security, which was the greatest part of the ready money then in the town, some having been so provident as to transport their estates away before; but such is their scrutiny into our affairs by their lords of council, who sit here every day, together with the value of every man's estate, and an inventory of the merchandise in the town, which they have caused us to give, that we fear if they be once

irritated by the king's army and forced hence, we shall but preserve our own estates till they please to take them from us, using us meantime as bail to secure our neighbours, etc. They have made that part of the town defensible which we neglected all this summer, and will be able to hold it if they have victual, which, if they want, we must suffer with them, and shall be sure to starve first ; for provisions they endeavour to make good by Tynemouth castle, to bring it in by sea, which they daily expect, and have got some by stealth. I cannot satisfy myself how they will be able to do that by their own shipping, but fear their correspondence with some strangers, by whom, having made themselves considerable by land, they intend to make a party by sea, which they certainly expect, intending this winter to ship away all the coals already dug, and employing colliers to dig more, etc. Divers poor people of the country daily flock hither, finding themselves securer here than in the country from the insolence of their soldiers, for what they provided at their first coming abroad is spent. The soldiers are intolerably insolent in their discourse, slighting the king's army, and, indeed, the whole nation, and persuading themselves of a certain conquest, etc. I pray God we have not warmed a snake in our bosom which will destroy us for our charity. The apprehension of popery and innovation in religion did trouble us all, but he that should now look upon our conditions would scarcely believe this the lively remedy. For my part, I assure you, had I known what I now find, I should much have preferred to suffer as a martyr for my religion than to run the hazard of being a traitor to my country, which he who helps not his majesty will find himself to be too late. God grant this viperous brood so freely received into the belly of this kingdom do not eat through the bowels of their fosterers, for, I assure you, where they shall govern we shall find them proud lords. The day after their arrival at Newcastle Mr. Henderson preached, who so much forgot his text and the duty of his calling, that he fell into a strange, extravagant way of applauding their success and depraving the English, making that the whole subject of his discourse."

Conway, writing to Windebank on the 9th, defends himself from his accusers :—"From the time the Scots came into England till I came to York, I had not time to eat or sleep. I hear I have been blamed for the letters I wrote concerning what would happen if the Scots came in ; look at them, and see if they were stories or no ; look upon the advice I gave ; see what we do ; for what I have done from the Scots' entry till the troops quitted Newcastle I dare stand to the trial of soldiers ; I assure myself I have made no fault."

In a letter from William Roane, Cambridge, to the dean of

Arches, of the same date, occurs this paragraph of gossip :—" Northern news are very various, but most certain it is that five hundred families are come to Lynn from Newcastle, and that the Scots entered the town on the south side, crossing the Tyne at a ford five miles above Newcastle westward, for the east, north, and west of the town were fortified, but not the south. Lesley was carried to church on Sunday, August 30th, there, and there are many Scotch clergymen with the rebels, who march before the army, bible in hand. They paid for what they took the first two days of their march, and afterwards pretended the prices were too dear, and so took what they wanted, and especially of recusants' goods. At Newcastle the soldiers pilfered very much, whereupon some of them were hanged, for a pretence, I conceive, to blind the people."

One John Newport, who seems to have been at the fight, sends Edward Nicholas, clerk of the council, an amusing account of Lesley's doings :—" No wonder we ran well," he writes on the 11th September, " for I assure you, when Lesley was within twenty miles of Newcastle, we were 'very well' provided to resist so strong an army ; for all were confident that he would not come on. The greater part of the town were covenanters, and daily certified him of our strength. For three days before the skirmish we were about 7000 musketeers, and not a cwt. of shot amongst them all, neither had we any in store. But had we had ordnance and order, he had never gotten the town. On the next day he came to the town, the mayor entertaining him with great state, where he lies. On the Sabbath following he went to church, four men bare before him, one lord bareheaded, on whom he lays his arm, and in his other hand his staff, so walked to the church, and sat in state in the same place his majesty sat in when he was there. He has borrowed 40,000*l.* of the mayor and brethren, and keeps his promise, which was that no soldier nor officer should wrong any of the inhabitants, but pay for all they take, and so they do ; for there are 4000 soldiers in the town, and where they lie look what any of the townspeople bring in for their own provisions ; they ask the price of it, and so give the people what they ask for anything they take, but will not suffer any of the town to dress any meat for themselves or their servants but what they buy of them ; and so the townsmen sell them meat at one rate, and they make them give double the price for it again. On that se'nnight the skirmish was there was a sermon in the army some four miles from Newcastle, where some of my acquaintance were, who went on purpose to take notice of the substance of his sermon ; his text was in the Psalms, the words were, ' O give thanks unto the Lord, for His mercy endureth for ever.' No prayer before the sermon, or anything of consequence in the sermon ; only in his

conclusion he exhorted to praise God for his mercies bestowed on them his people. For it was well known that the day before they came over the water they had not meat for their army for one day, no not for an hour; and now God hath brought them into a town flowing with milk and honey; and so fell to prayer, thus—‘ Good Lord, bless our king, and open his eyes that he may see the truth of our covenant. Lord, bless the queen, open her eyes that she may fly her idolatry. Good Lord, bless the king’s bairns. Lord, bless our general. Lord, bless our army, and send us all well to our own homes.’ Lesley has summoned the sheriffs, deputy-lieutenants, and justices of Northumberland and the bishopric; he has taken Durham, and left 2000 foot and four troops of horse there; at Sunderland he has taken away the receiver of his majesty’s customs. He has made proclamation everywhere where he comes, that every one that has anything of his majesty’s shall bring it to him within ten days of the publication, on pain of death. His soldiers pillage the country exceedingly nearly thirty miles on this [south] side of Newcastle. He is called his excellency, and the clothes he goes to church in were never made for 200*l.* a suit. Lord Loudoun is made governor of Newcastle. . . . Lesley swears all the townspeople to the covenant, and those that refuse he imprisons.”

Another correspondent, Dr. Pocklington, writing from York, informs Sir John Lambe, dean of Arches and the queen’s chancellor, that on the day of the skirmish at Newburn the king set out from York for Northallerton, intending to go to Newcastle and keep the Scots from passing the Tyne; but tidings arriving that the Scots had crossed that river, he returned after service on Sunday morning with all speed to York, and his whole army, horse and foot, followed him, to the great discomfort and lamentation of the whole country. “ The Scots marched without resistance to Newcastle, seized the keys of the town, granaries, magazines, and castle, and made the mayor and aldermen attend their general in a most servile manner. This mischief might have been prevented if the town and adjacent countries would have supplied Sir Jacob Astley with 3000*l.* to draw up an army for their defence, but they answered they could not possibly levy so great a sum; and now these very men have compounded with Lesley to pay his army about 12,000*l.* every month.”

In one of Bell’s Reprints, “ Great Newes from Newcastle,” the writer, “ Geo. Browne,” who does not in other respects appear to have received very accurate information, states that “ in the beginning of the conflict 300 of our foot ran away; presently after more of them, and a thousand horse (who cast away their armour and pistols, which the Scots have got), leaving those braver of their commanders to

such unequal battle, who (though far unable) made most valiant resistance to the effusion of their blood, whilst they, like cowards, sought safety by flight, to their own perpetual ignominy and infamy of our nation, whereas if they had showed themselves courageous we had not only been able to oppose but overcome. . . . After the delivery of this news [the defeat] all the beacons of the bishopric of Durham and Yorkshire were set on fire on Friday night. . . . It is written that dissension and mutiny grew first among the townsmen of Newcastle, because they would not have their houses battered down, and among the common soldiers, as the officers (although it hath not yet the best report) thought fit to embark what ammunition they could that night, and take the benefit of the tide, and the next day marched out of the town, and passed over Newburn ford (where the Scots came over), and so to the king's forces at Darlington."

So far we have been reading the story of the surrender and its consequences from the English side. Let us see what Scottish chroniclers have to say on the subject. Dr. Robert Baillie, one of the commissioners appointed to treat with the king, tells us that "on the 27th [August] we met all, according to appointment, in Newcastle Moor, a little before night. We lay near the river, some five miles above the town, at Newburn; the passage was well fortified, ten thousand foot lying, with their cannon, under the trenches; twenty-five hundred horsemen, well mounted, with headpiece, corslet, carabines, pistols. To-morrow their cannon and musket played among us, but it pleased God wonderfully to assist us. Our cannon at the second volley played so well upon their trenches, that their foot, in great numbers, fled from their colours. About four, afternoon, Colonel Blair, with a thousand musketeers and some two troop of horse, by Col. Lesley and Sir Thomas Hope were commanded to go through the water. Twelve of the English troops came to meet them, whereupon they began to retire. The van of the foot that day did fall to Loudoun, who with Lindsay and Queensbury had a brigade of eighteen hundred men; Montgomery had a brigade as strong; these two being directed to second the horse, came running to the river with great courage, and all the army began to march; which the English perceiving, did soon retire, the foot to a wood, the horse to a hill. . . . The night and the near wood, and most of all our good-will to the English nation, hindered our pursuit of the victory; that night we stood in our arms. To-morrow Newcastle was rendered to us; the soldiers and chief citizens had fled out of it in great haste. In the king's magazine were found good store of biscuit and cheese, and five thousand arms, muskets and pikes, and other provision. Messrs. Henderson and Cant preached to a great confluence of people on the

Sunday. My Lord Lothian with his regiment was placed to govern the town ; our camp lay without. The report of this in all our pulpits did make our people sound humble and hearty thanks to the name of our God, in the confidence of whose help this work was begun, and on whose strength it does yet rely. . . . We got the royal standard, Charles Porter, the carrier, being killed. My lord Conway, their general, was near taken. They report he took an oath of all the troopers to die in the place, neither to take nor give quarter ; yet when they stood awhile till their foot was out of danger, they themselves, with little ado, forgot their oath, and saved their lives for a better time. The king was coming on to them as far as Allerton, but hearing of the defeat, returned to York. For all our victory we were in great straits ; all our victuals were spent, all the country had fled with all they could carry. If Newcastle had but closed their ports we had been in great hazard of present disbanding, but all the garrison and principal citizens flying away that same night in a panic-terror, made them to-morrow offer us all they had. Their facility made us at once to try Durham, who willingly received Dunfermline to lie there, with a brigade of foot and some horse. Tynemouth, Shields, under Newcastle, rendered thereafter, which put in our hands the harbour and shipping there ; we welcomed among others two of the king's ships, who brought to us out of the king's garrison in the town good store of victuals. Finding plenty about Newcastle, we sent back some of our greatest ordnance, most cumbersome to carry. . . . Newcastle was put to the contribution of 200*l.* sterling a-day, the county of Northumberland to 300*l.*, the bishoprick to 350*l.* Commissions were given to lift the rents of prelates and papists who had fled and avowed themselves our enemies. . . . We could get but little benefit of Newcastle coal ; the king's ships hindered the traffic ; the owners and workmen were very ' thrawart ' to do any service either for themselves or us ; yea, we found much cozening and knavery among that people. Some of the gentlemen who undertook to contribute did fail of their assurances. We were forced to send out for their cattle to cause them to be true. Those who had the collection of the money, did exact double to that they gave to us ; the heaviest burden was laid by them (abusing our ignorance), on the back of protestants, our friends. Some of the English, under our blue caps, became robbers everywhere. The most of the churchmen having removed all that they had considerable, left their houses with some trash open, which their servants and neighbours spoiled ; at once libels full of outrages, done or feigned by the English themselves, are presented to the king against us. The mayor and aldermen of Newcastle pretend inability to pay their 200*l.* a-day ; we were forced to put a guard about their



town-house till we got new assurances from them. According to our declarations we took nothing for nought, only we borrowed, on good security, so much money a-day as was necessary for our being, to be repaid truly before our departure. Other inconvenients befell us than these—our soldiers began to take fluxes through cold and watching, some of our officers became malcontents ; we remedied both so well as might be. At the general's desire, out of the voluntary contribution of parishes there was with diligence sent to our soldiers, shoes, coats, hose, sarks ; all was lodged in houses, the most in the suburbs of Newcastle ; the fortifications on the south side being perfected against a royal siege."

Another version, from the Scotch side, is that of James Gordon, parson of Rothiemay, published by the Spalding club. After describing the struggle at Newburn, he proceeds:—"The lord Conway, perceiving the cavalry routed, and the infantry run all away, hasted his retreat to the king ; and for the same cause, Sir Jacob Astley, then governor of Newcastle, deserted it, having first sunk the ordnance in the river, knowing it was not tenable, as having no wall that was fencible about it. The English army retreating now from Newcastle was taken into Strafford's command, who brought up the rear, and being come back to York, where the king then was, he charged the principal miscarriage of the action upon the lord Conway's cowardice, or treachery, or his want of skill, or all three ; who, as well as he could, vindicated his own reputation. The next day, which was August 29, the Scottish seized Newcastle, who received them without resistance (for the town was abandoned). There they quartered 2000 of garrison, with the general himself, and several of the Scottish noblemen. There was found laid up therein much arms and ammunition and provision, which had been laid up there for the use of the king's army ; all which was seized upon by the Scottish, and a note and inventory thereof taken. Likewise, ships coming in at Tynemouth from the Baltic laden with corn, all their freight was seized upon, for it was alleged that it was belonging to the army, though afterward it was disputed and accepted against by the king. . . . And now the blue ribbons and blue caps had opened the door in the North of England, and the Covenant colours came triumphantly displayed to Newcastle. For it is to be known that, as the last year, so in the new expedition, the Scottish officers mostly wore blue bonnets, out of contempt of the English, who scoffingly called them blue caps ; and they carried blue ribbons, either in their caps or hung about them, and their spanners thereto appended, like an order of knighthood ; the royalists wearing red ribbons in opposition to that colour. And then upon all their foot colours was written, ' Covenant for religion, crown, and country,' which motto was a little varied afterwards at their next

expedition. They were now possessed of Newcastle; the next day, being August 30, they seize upon Durham, which was likewise garrisoned, and the command of the town given to the earl of Dunfermline. Likewise the castle of Tynemouth; Shields, betwixt Newcastle and the sea, was possessed and garrisoned by the Scottish, and all the country villages about filled with the quarters of the Scottish army."

And here is the chuckling account of an Englishman—lieutenant-colonel John Fenwick, who returned to Newcastle under the "wings and conduct" of the invaders:—"We entered upon the Sabbath day (after God had scattered our enemies in the skirmish at Newburn). . . . Some of my adversaries in Newcastle—Sir John Marley and others—that had proffered large sums of money for men to come into Scotland to apprehend me, and others, who that morning before the skirmish made me their melody in their cups and pots, and drunk my confusion and vowed my death (as I was credibly informed), were some laid low in the dust, and the rest, some glad to give two or three pieces for a pair of oars to fly, some by water and some by land, while the soldiers returned to Newcastle with bloody heads and some without hands, crying to the people of Newcastle, Fly for your lives—naked devils have destroyed us. Fie, fie for a guide to Durham, cry others that were strangers; all the priests and black-coats fled as fast as they could, but meanly mounted, when vicar Alvey himself in great haste got on horseback behind a country-man as before. The next bout, if the Scots come again, he may perhaps learn to foot it (after my friend Windebank) into France, and to dance and sing. Alas, poor vicar! whither wilt thou go? The army coming after forenoon sermon on the Sabbath day towards Newcastle (being in great want of victuals), pitched on the south side of the town; his excellency, General Lesley, accompanied with the lords and divers gentlemen, rode into Newcastle about noon, where they were met upon the bridge by the mayor and some few aldermen, who were not so nimble at flight as Sir Marloe, Sir Daveson, and Sir Riddles [Marley, Davison, and Riddell], and others that were conscious of their guilt of their good service against the Scots, for which they got the honour of knighthood at Newcastle and Berwick, though Sir Marloe, some say, came hardly by his, and had well-nigh missed if some others merits had not surmounted his; the boys say that cuckold luck has raised his fortunes from a tap-house and *et cetera* to a carpet knight. *O tempora, O mores!* Well, we being entered Newcastle, after dinner I had the honour to usher his excellency and the lords to the great church, where Mr. Alexander Henderson preached, and Mr. Andrew Cant at All Hallows', where the organs and sackbuts and

cornets were struck breathless with the fright [flight?] of their vicars, and others of their best friends' flight on Friday at night, before and after Newburn fight, in token of mourning that they should never meet again; for not long after the breath of the Scots covenant in the Scottish soldiers did blow them down both root and branch, with their altars and railing, service-book and fonts, and all such fopperies, as the honest Scots lads found without a warrant, or salvo-guard from their king Jesus, who sent them out. The army being in great straits for victuals, I studied how to gratify the honest soldiers who had conducted me home to my own country. On the Monday morning I found out one of the king's storehouses, and therein about threescore thousand pound of cheese, and about two ton of biscuit, which served the whole army until corn was grinded and other provisions made." In another place this ardent covenanter breaks out with—"The Scots army came near to Newburn, and then there was flying indeed to purpose. The swiftest flight was the greatest honour to the New-castilian new-dubbed knights. A good boat, a pair of oars, a good horse (especially that would carry two men), was more worth than the valour or honour of new knighthood. Surely vicar Alvey, too, would have given his vicarage for a horse, when he for haste leapt on horse-back behind a country-man without a cushion. His faith and qualifications failing him, he might well fear to fall from grace by the Scots coming. We leave him in his flight to the grace of Canterbury, and the new-dubbed knights and others to the Court's grace for full twelve months, until the Scots were gone home again."

To his grace of Canterbury vicar Alvey did apply. "I am for the present," he tells Laud, "ousted of all my spiritual promotions to the yearly value of 300*l.*, and have most of my movable goods seized upon by the rebels; being forced (upon some threatening speeches given out by them, that they would deal more rigorously with me than others) suddenly to desert all, and to provide for the safety of myself, wife, and seven children, by a speedy flight in the night time. How they would have dealt with me they have since made evident by their harsh dealing with two of my curates, whom I left to officiate for me in my absence; who have not only been interrupted in reading divine service, but threatened to be pistolled if they would not desist from the execution of their office. And whereas I had lately purchased 60*l.* per annum in Northumberland, and hoped to have been supplied that way in these calamitous times, till I might with safety return, they have, since I presented my petition to his majesty, seized upon that also, and commanded my servant to be accountable to them for it."

Sir Nicholas L'Estrange relates that during the invasion a sergeant-

major was billeted "in one Mr. Calvert's house, who was musically disposed, and had a portative organ for his pleasure in one of his chambers." The unbidden guest, being "one of the preciser strain," seeing the instrument open, peered suspiciously in among the pipes, and asked, "Art thou a kirk-man?" "No, sir," answered his host. "Then," rejoined the covenanter, "what dost thou with this great box of whistles?"

Resuming the chronological order of events, we find in the State Papers a letter from Vane to Windebank of the 11th of September, in which he reports that fifty wives of the better sort of the Scotch lords and commanders have come to Newcastle, by which it is conjectured that they will not leave the place suddenly. And on the 16th he states that "two of the king's ships have come, and lie before the mouth of the Tyne, and have orders to hinder all trade while the rebels hold Newcastle, so I do not see how London can be supplied with coal. The Scots do not yet advance further than Durham, having brought that county into contribution; they pay 350*l.* a-day, Northumberland 300*l.*, in which are comprised the church and Roman Catholics at equal rates. Yet the horse take hay and oats for nothing; from all those who keep their houses nothing more is taken, but if they find no dwellers in houses in Newcastle or the counties, those they plunder; but if they take an egg or a chicken from those who pay contribution, they are certainly hanged for it. It is not expected by us here that the meeting of the peers will produce anything more than a resolution for a parliament, which is thought sufficient not only to put the Scots out of the kingdom, but a balm to cure all our sores. If you ask this bearer, he will tell you how those of Newcastle suffer."

Sir John Borough, at York, writes to Windebank, 18th September:—"Whereas the Scots at Newcastle formerly demanded of the bishopric 30,000 lbs. weight of bread, 40 oxen, 100 sheep, and 20 tuns of beer every day, they have now altered that demand, and required 350*l.* in money daily from the bishopric, and 300*l.* from Northumberland, in lieu of the provisions, and to secure their cattle and corn from spoil. In regard whereof the inhabitants desired the direction of the Board [Council] what course to take. What direction was given I am not able to write; but it is reported here that they have agreed to the contribution of the sums demanded. This, and the convention of Sir Henry Anderson for disaffection to the present service, and contemptuous words touching the training of men in the place where he lives, who was dismissed with a sharp reprehension, was all that was then done," etc.

Towards the assessment of 850*l.* a-day which the Scots put upon Northumberland and Durham, Newcastle was called upon to contribute 200*l.*, and on the 23rd September an agreement was made

between the mayor and aldermen, and the Committee of Estates of Scotland, for securing payment of the money. The document, after the usual opening statement, runs as follows :—" The said mayor and aldermen, at the request of the said committee, and for eschewing further inconveniences, have condescended to lend the sums of money following in manner—viz., the sum of 200*l.* sterling daily, beginning the first day's payment thereof at the 14th September instant, and so forth daily hereafter during the abode of the Scottish army at Newcastle ; and because there is already nine days spent, they oblige them to pay the whole ten days upon the 23rd and 25th days of September instant, and so forth daily, at least weekly, thereafter, with special condition that after the said first sum for the said first ten days is paid, that what necessities for the entertainment of the army, of any kind of victual, or other provision, is or shall be received by the general commissioner, the same shall be allowed in payment either in whole or in part of the said sum daily to be lent, as said is. For the which causes these of the said committee under-subscribed binds and obliges them for themselves, and in the name of the estates of the said kingdom of Scotland, to refund and pay the said sums, at least so much thereof as shall be received by the general commissioner, either in money, victual, or other provisions, at the prices condescended upon, to the said mayor, aldermen, and their successors, betwixt the day thereof and the last day of November, in this instant year of God 1640 years, together with the sum of 10*l.* money for each 100*l.*, together also with the ordinary interest thereof, so long as the same shall remain unpaid after the last day of November next. And further, the said committee, for themselves, and in the name of the general and others of the Scottish army, doth hereby oblige them that neither the said mayor, aldermen, nor any of the said burgesses, or other the inhabitants foresaid, shall be troubled in their persons, trades, houses, lands, or possessions, but shall have a full and ample safeguard for any harm can come to them, or any of them. Providing every one of them pay their several proportions according as it shall be set down amongst themselves, with declaration always that none of those who have carried arms and appeared against the Scottish army shall have any benefit of this agreement. And in case any of the said burgesses, or others the inhabitants, shall be refractory, and refuse to lend their proportions, the under-subscribed shall be free of so much of the foresaid sums as comes to their part, the said mayor and aldermen giving up a list of their names and sums, and make it good that they are responsible persons, and has goods or land within the said town able to pay their proportion."

While the foregoing document was being signed Windcbanck was

sending these sorely-needed words of comfort to lord Conway :—" I always had that opinion of your worth and abilities in your profession that I was not moved by anything that detraction suggested to your prejudice. Besides, the archbishop of Canterbury has abundantly cleared you concerning the neglecting to fortify Newcastle, which it is evident you did propose in your letters to his grace in time to have preserved it from surprise."

So many harsh things were said about the behaviour of the Scots after their occupation of Newcastle and the bishopric, that they felt it necessary to defend themselves from reproach, and on the 5th October they drew up a reply which (abridged) traverses all the allegations made on the other side :—" Our stay at Newcastle was necessary till we sent a petition to the king, which was returned with a reference to the 24th of September and a command not to come further into England. This forced us to stay at Newcastle, during which time our army could not starve. We sent to the justices of the peace to meet us and lay down a regular way for entertaining our army ; some refused and some came. Those who came from the bishopric voluntarily offered to lend us 350*l.* a-day ; those of Northumberland likewise offered 300*l.* per diem. The offer of the town of Newcastle was also voluntary, and the contract for borrowed money. Had we been such as it pleases them to call us, we might justly have used rigour against them, which we have not done, seeing they kept neither word nor right to us. Our victuals being spent, we demanded victual and money on security from the town of Newcastle, who refused, but showed us the king's magazine of provision and ammunition, which was a very small quantity, not more than 300*l.* worth. We desired they would cause the bakers and brewers to make us meat and drink at a reasonable rate. This they shifted, telling us the bakers and brewers were all fled. This made our soldiers, for want, give what they pleased to exact—a shilling for 5*lbs.* weight of rye bread, and a groat for a pottle of sodden water without any substance. Finding they were resolved to starve us, we told them if they would not sell us their corn we must take it. Lest they should grudge at this, we desired the mayor to send constables to ask for lots of rye, wheat, peas, and other provision, and he accordingly sent constables with some appointed by us, who either agreed with the merchants and gave them security, or, where the owners were fled, made indenture in presence of the constables and townsmen of the quantity for which they were accountable. When we had gotten some corn we desired their millers might grind it ; this they also refused, alleging their millers had fled. All these difficulties were we put into in a strange country and people, with a numerous army ; if

it had not been the mighty hand of God kept our soldiers together, they could not but have pillaged town and country. All the people of any worth, and their money and goods, were transported before we came to Newcastle ; so that if they say our soldiers took anything of any quantity from them they belie themselves, seeing hardly anything was left but empty houses, except some reasonable store of corn, which we are assured the Lord Almighty provided for us, and not for them. The parson of Ryton rifled his own house and fled, leaving a few old books, whereof some being taken by some of our soldiers, and an old riding coat, were immediately sent back and delivered to an old woman, the only living Christian in the town. The parson of Whickham also rifled his own house, and left nothing but some timber work, bedding, and small beer, and in his library a number of profane comedies, unworthy papers, and scurvy pamphlets. The ships with rye were brought up the river, because we, being in need of victual, sent for it, and made a free bargain with the owners, to whom nearly 400*l.* of the price was given ; yet they still detain the victual in their own possession."

Reporting further upon the position of affairs on the 9th October, Vane tells Windebank that the treaty with the Scots makes no advance, they persisting in their first proposition that until they know how their army should subsist at Newcastle, their powers did not warrant them to treat of any other particular ; so you see where they intend to lodge their army this winter. Peace, certainly, there will be none, unless ratified by the parliament of England as well as that of Scotland. The next day Leonard Pinckney, commissary-general, reports to Windebank that the Scots are strong and audacious, for now at the treaty of Ripon they demand of the king 40,000*l.* per month for maintenance of their army till their cause be decided by parliament ; the garrisons at Berwick and Carlisle to be withdrawn ; that they may fortify Edinburgh and other fortresses in Scotland ; and that Newcastle, Northumberland, Cumberland, Lancashire, and Durham may become cautionary towns and provinces for the performance of these their insolent demands. Underwritten is a memorandum that the Scots refuse to come to York till the lord-lieutenant be removed. They imprisoned the mayor and aldermen at Newcastle till they paid Lesley 1400*l.* arrears due, as he says, agreed with him for, and kept them in the dark, allowing them nothing but bread and water.

At a council held at York on the 18th October, Sir John Marley, Sir William Bellasis, and Sir Lionel Maddison were admitted to a conference, and the earl of Bristol addressing them, told them that the king and peers were desirous to give them all ease. The Scots were prepared to take all they could get, or to come to a competency

which they formerly agreed upon of 850*l.* per diem, and if the deputation could arrange for the payment, the king and lords would recommend parliament to give them ease. Sir William Bellasis expressed doubts of their ability to pay the contribution, and in reply to lord Strafford, who asked if they could pay it for two months, he still expressed doubts, adding that they had offered to give security for their own particular portion, but not for the whole sum. Sir John Marley said it was impossible to pay their proportion, for they were not now able to pay that which was past. Sir Lionel Maddison expressed a desire that their estates might be rated, and they would go as far as they could. Lord Bristol reminded them that there was 10,000*l.* worth of coals in Newcastle, and, after a remark by the king, Sir John Marley offered for his part to let his coals be sold, he having the one-half. After some further conversation the deputation retired, and a committee of peers was appointed to have further conference with them.

By the end of the month these tedious negotiations were transferred to London, and the king left the North.

It was agreed that the invaders should receive or levy 850*l.* a-day for two months from the 16th, and be left in undisturbed possession of Newcastle, Durham, and the coast towns north of the Tees, excepting Berwick. "Upon such terms," says May, "was this unnatural war (although the armies could not as yet be disbanded) brought to a cessation, and both nations rested in assured confidence that a peace must needs follow, since the whole matter was now to be debated in the English parliament, which was to begin about a fortnight after."

Great anxiety about the result of these parliamentary debates was manifested throughout the North of England, for the effect of the invasion upon trade was ruinous. Sir Robert Mansell wrote to Windesbank in September, that he had three furnaces near Newcastle fully manned and at work when the Scots came, and 1200 cases of window glass, worth 1500*l.*, made and packed ready to be shipped for the use of London and the southern and eastern parts of the kingdom. He had laid out above 4000*l.* in buildings, provisions, and other necessities for furnishing the kingdom with windowglass. All three furnaces were in excellent working order, with fires in each and the pots full of metal, when his workmen with their wives and families fled for fear, and now demand dead wages, which he must give them to prevent them leaving the kingdom. If the Scots should continue in possession, he would not be furnished with sufficient coal to uphold the glass works in London, which would totally destroy the manufacture, force all the glass-makers, being strangers, to quit the country, losing him twenty years' time and expense of 20,000*l.*



Rushworth draws a dismal picture of the situation :—

“At this time Newcastle and the coal-mines, that had wont to employ 10,000 people all the year long about their coalery, some working underground, some above, others upon the water in keels and lighters, now not a man to be seen, not a coal wrought, all absconding, being possessed with a fear that the Scots would give no quarter ; 400 ships using to be there often at a time in the river, not a ship durst come in ; an hundred and odd coming to the mouth of the haven the day after the fight, and hearing the Scots had possessed Newcastle, returned all empty, and tradesmen in the town for some days kept their shops shut ; many families gone, leaving their houses and goods to the mercy of the Scots, who possessed themselves of such corn, cheese, beer, etc., as they found, giving the owners thereof, or some in their stead, some money in hand and security in writing for the rest, to be paid at four or six months’ end, in money or corn ; and if they refuse the said Scots, such is the necessity of their army that they must take it without a security rather than starve.”

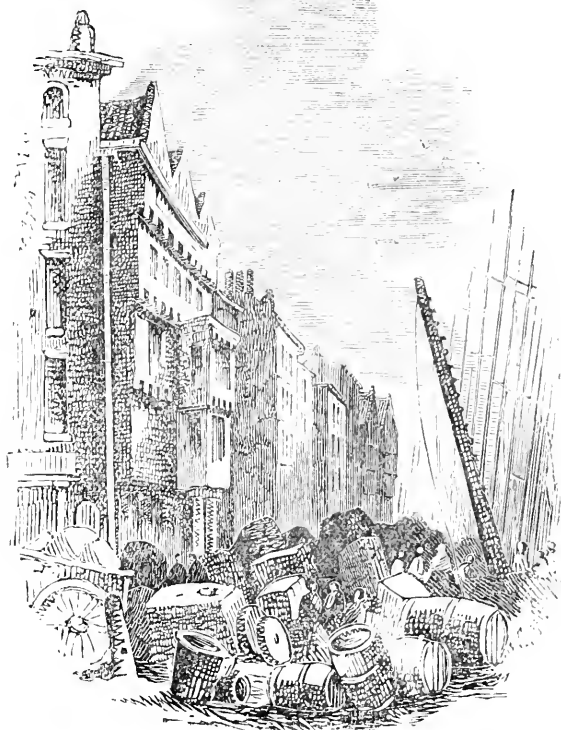
Traces of the Scottish occupation are found in most of the local records of this year. At the Trinity House the cash book contains entries of 1s. 2d. “for carrying wood out of the rooms the soldiers came to ;” 2s. 8d. paid to “a wright for nailing up doors and making up partitions when the Scots came ;” 8s. for “bread and a half barrel of beer which was given to the English soldiers that lay in the houses ;” 2s. given to “prisoners that were shot in the ‘scremedge’ at Newburn” ; 2s. 6d. paid “General Leslie’s servant for a warrant for a safe-guard to the lights” at Tynemouth. Mention is also made of “the great sess the Scottish army inflicted upon us” on the last day of November.

In St. Andrew’s register is recorded the burial, on the 19th September, of “Thomas Watson, soger, a Skotesmen—he wase of the Skotes arme when they towke oup this towne ;” on the 25th October, “one of the Redshankes of the Skotes army ;” and there are several entries of persons interred with the explanation, “one of the Skotes arme.”

So also at All Saints’, 16th September, “Mr. Wm. Bruce, a Scottish trooper,” and 6th October, “Andrew Kinmond, a Scottish lieutenant.” The warden’s books at this church record a payment of 2s. “for taking down the cover of the font and laying in the vault, and making a cover for the stone,” which Bourne, quoting the Milbank MS., explains thus :—“When the Scots sought to deface the ancient monuments, and said they were papistry and superstition, they began with the spoon of this church’s font [St. John’s], and broke it all to pieces. It had been given by one John Bertram. For there was

written about it: 'For the Honour of God and St. John, John Bertram gave this font stone.' Cuthbert Maxwell, a mason, observing the barbarity of the Scots, came in haste to St. Nicholas', and saved the spoon of that font in its vestry, and also that of All-Hallows'. He lived, after the king returned, to set them up again."

Thus ends another volume, with Newcastle in possession of the Scots and the country drifting into the miseries of a protracted civil war.



THE QUAYSIDE, NEWCASTLE 18TH CENTURY.

## LIST OF ENGRAVINGS.

	PAGE
St. John's Church, Newcastle. South Transept. 1843 . . . . .	14
The Nag's Head Inn, facing the Sandhill, Newcastle. 1823 . . . . .	34
The White Friar Tower, Newcastle. 16th Century . . . . .	39
Newgate Prison, Newcastle, from the North. 1754 . . . . .	100
St. Andrew's Church, Newcastle. 18th Century . . . . .	109
The Black Horse Inn, Newcastle. 18th Century . . . . .	124
Head of Middle Street, Newcastle. 1797 . . . . .	131
The Flesh Market, Newcastle. 1772 . . . . .	147
The High Crane, near the Guildhall, Newcastle. 18th Century . . . . .	161
Head of the Side, Newcastle. 18th Century . . . . .	179
A Tower of the old Castle of Ravensworth . . . . .	181
Speed's Plan of Newcastle. 1610 . . . . .	189
Piscina in the Chapel of the Virgin Mary Hospital. 1844 . . . . .	193
St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle. Under the Belfry . . . . .	200
Gunner Tower, Newcastle. Removed in 1885 . . . . .	205
The Glass House Bridge, Newcastle . . . . .	208
Pew Standard in St. Nicholas', Newcastle. 17th Century . . . . .	234
The Golden Lion Inn, Newcastle. 1840 . . . . .	239
Head of Hornsby's Chare, Newcastle. 1842 . . . . .	248
Old House near St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle. 1838 . . . . .	261
The Selby Monument in St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle. 1782 . . . . .	267
Foot of the Side, Newcastle. 18th Century . . . . .	280
The Branks and Drunkard's Cloak . . . . .	286
Central Figures in the Hall Monument, St. Nicholas' . . . . .	303
Tower on Tyne Bridge. 17th Century . . . . .	310
The Old Custom House, Newcastle . . . . .	316
St. Nicholas' Church, Newcastle. Western Entrance. 18th Century . . . . .	389
The Quayside, Newcastle. 18th Century . . . . .	418

## ERRATA.

## IN VOLUME III.

- Page 37, line 17, *for* Barnforth *read* Bradforth.  
 „ 106, „ 6 from bottom, *for* 1601 *read* 1602.  
 „ 164, „ 8 „ „ *for* Jennison *read* Jenison.  
 „ 185, „ 18 „ „ *for* Frances *read* Francis.  
 „ 286, „ 5, *for* The Denisons *read* Thre Denisons.  
 „ 317, „ 11, “Sir Robert Brandling,” *delete* “Sir.”

## IN VOLUME I.

- Page 182, line 9 from bottom, *omit* from “after his death” to “county of Durham”  
 „ 215, „ 5 from bottom, *read* “himself and his second wife.”  
 „ 266, „ 3, *for* 12 and 13 Henry V. *read* 8 and 9 Henry V.  
 „ 377, „ 15, *for* 8 gallons of ale *read* 18 gallons of ale.  
 „ 220, „ 18, *for* Robert ——— *read* Robert Galefer or Gabefor.  
 „ 394, „ 15, *for* buried [1614] *read* buried [1613].

## IN VOLUME II.

- Page 29, lines 6 and 12. Thomas Riddell, mayor, was probably the sheriff in 1500. Mr. Cadwallader J. Bates finds in the visitation of 1575 that he was the son of another Thomas Riddell, and not of John Riddell, or Ridsdale, as Surtees supposed.  
 „ 76, 5th line from bottom, *omit* “and of his admission to fraternity by the convent of Durham.”  
 „ 77, 5th „ *read* “Later on (in 1532) he acquired the manor of North Hebburn.”  
 „ 123, 8th „ „ “and at Michaelmas 1532 was elected mayor.”  
 „ 168, 7th „ „ “although, with the exception of one of the towers, every trace,” etc.  
 „ 331, 16th „ from bottom, *after* “1595” *transpose* from the two following lines the words, “and became the father of Sir Thomas Riddell.”  
 „ 396, 11th „ *for* from Weardale *read* from these dales.  
 „ 521, last line but one, *for* Cuthbert *read* Christopher Mitford

## Mayors and Sheriffs of Newcastle, 1581-1640.

	MAYORS.	ELIZABETH.	SHERIFFS.
1581-82	William Jenison,		Henry Chapman.
1582-83	William Riddell,		Henry Mitford.
1583-84	Henry Anderson,		Roger Nicholson.
1584-85	Henry Mitford,		Lionel Maddison.
1585-86	Robert Barker,		George Whitfield.
1586-87	Henry Chapman,		Robert Dudley.
1587-88	Edward Lewin,		Robert Eden.
1588-89	Roger Nicholson,		George Farnaby.
1589-90	William Selby,		John Gibson.
1590-91	Robert Atkinson,		Ralph Jenison.
1591-92	George Farnaby,		William Greenwell.
1592-93	Roger Rawe,		Thomas Liddell.
1593-94	Lionel Maddison,		William Jenison.
1594-95	Henry Anderson,		George Selby.
1595-96	William Riddell,		Francis Anderson.
1596-97	{ Ralph Jenison,		Adrian Hedworth.
	{ Henry Chapman,		
1597-98	Thomas Liddell,		William Huntley.
1598-99	George Farnaby,		William Warmouth.
1599-1600	William Jenison,		James Clavering.
1600-01	George Selby,		Robert Anderson.
1601-02	Francis Anderson,		Thomas Riddell.
1602-03	Robert Dudley,		Francis Burrell.

## JAMES I.

1603-04	William Warmouth,	Matthew Chapman.
1604-05	Thomas Riddell,	Peter Riddell.
1605-06	Lionel Maddison,	Henry Maddison.
1606-07	Sir George Selby,	Hugh Selby.
1607-08	James Clavering,	Robert Shafto.
1608-09	Henry Chapman,	William Hall.
1609-10	Thomas Liddell,	Thomas Liddell.
1610-11	William Jenison,	Timothy Draper.
1611-12	Sir George Selby,	Alexander Davison.
1612-13	Francis Anderson,	Roger Anderson.
1613-14	Sir Henry Anderson,	Henry Chapman, Junior.
1614-15	William Warmouth,	John Cook.
1615-16	Francis Burrell,	Robert Bewick.
1616-17	Sir Thomas Riddell,	Nicholas (or Michael) Milburn
1617-18	Lionel Maddison,	William Bonner.
1618-19	James Clavering,	John Clavering.
1619-20	Sir Peter Riddell,	Robert Anderson.
1620-21	Henry Chapman,	Nicholas Tempest.
1621-22	William Jenison,	Henry Liddell.
1622-23	Sir George Selby,	{ Robert Ledger.
		{ William Jackson.
1623-24	Henry Maddison,	{ Henry Bowes.
		{ William Jackson.
1624-25	William Hall.	Lionel Maddison.

## MAYORS. CHARLES I. SHERIFFS.

1625-26	Thomas Liddell,	Ralph Cole.
1626-27	Alexander Davison,	Ralph Cock.
1627-28	Henry Chapman,	Henry Cock.
1628-29	Robert Bewick,	Ralph Gray.
1629-30	John Clavering,	Robert Shafto.
1630-31	Robert Anderson,	James Carr.
1631-32	William Warmouth,	Henry Warmouth.
1632-33	Sir Lionel Maddison	Francis Bowes.
1633-34	Ralph Cole,	Nicholas Cole.
1634-35	Ralph Cock,	John Marley.
1635-36	Sir Peter Riddell,	Leonard Carr.
1636-37	Thomas Liddell,	Henry Lawson.
1637-38	John Marley,	Peter Maddison.
1638-39	Alexander Davison,	Mark Milbank.
1639-40	Robert Bewick,	John Emmerson.
1640-41	Sir Nicholas Cole,	Francis Liddell.

## Members of Parliament for Newcastle, 1581-1640.

## ELIZABETH.

## ELECTED

- 1584 William Jenison and Henry Anderson the younger.  
 1586 Henry Anderson and Edward Lewen, aldermen.  
 1588 Henry Anderson and Henry Mitford, aldermen.  
 1592 Henry Anderson and Henry Mitford, aldermen.  
 1597 Henry Chapman, alderman, and ——.   
 1601 William Jenison and George Selby, aldermen.

## JAMES I.

- 1604 George Selby and Henry Chapman, aldermen.  
 1614 Sir Henry Anderson, knight, and Henry Chapman the younger.  
 1620 Sir Henry Anderson, knight, and Sir Thomas Riddell, knight.  
 1624 Sir Henry Anderson, knight, and Sir Peter Riddell, knight.

## CHARLES I.

- 1625 Sir Henry Anderson, knight, and Sir Thomas Riddell, knight.  
 1626 Sir Henry Anderson, knight, and Sir Peter Riddell, knight.  
 1628 Sir Thomas Riddell, knight, and Sir Peter Riddell, knight.  
 1640 Sir Peter Riddell, knight, and Thomas Liddell, esquire.  
 „ Sir Henry Anderson, knight, and John Blakiston, esquire.



## NEWCASTLE NECROLOGY.

*Extracts from the Registers of Burials in Newcastle, 1581-1640.*

## Church of St. Nicholas.

1581.

- Jan. 29. Cuthbert Ellison, merchant  
 Feb. 11. Elizabeth, wife of William Greenwell, merchant  
 Feb. 12. The wife of Robert Barker  
 May 7. Christopher Marley, merchant  
 May 31. Christopher Mitford, alderman. [Sheriff 1551. Mayor 1556, 1569]  
 July 30. Roger Fenwick of Kirkharle, gent.  
 Sep. 26. Old Dame Errington  
 Oct. 16. John Barnes, wait  
 Oct. 16. "Mr. Ralph Pharand, a stranger, lying at Clem. Anderson's"  
 Dec. 16. Ninian Shafto, merchant  
 Dec. 16. Edward Decan, jailer

1582.

- Jan. 19. "A Dutchman lying at Edward Suerties his house"  
 May 3. "Old William Thorenton, cook"  
 May 19. John Sotheran, merchant  
 July 2. Humphrey Key or Rey, merchant  
 July 28. John Lassels, swordbearer  
 Aug. 15. Isabel, wife of Henry Anderson  
 Aug. 17. Elizabeth, wife of Richd. Hodgson, merchant & alderman  
 Sep. 9. "Robert Stott, a kinsman of Tho. Stott, merchant, being lost in the water of Tyne"  
 Nov. 7. Ladie Agnes Hilton, Mr. Baxter, his mother  
 Nov. 17. Robert Eland, merchant

1583.

- Jan. 30. "Henry, son of Helias Partridge, grate-maker"  
 Jan. 31. Thomas Bowes, merchant  
 Mar. 29. Lady Anne Widdrington  
 Mar. 30. "Mr. Cuthbert Claxton, gentleman, dwelling in the countree, and dying at William Billingham his house, the tailor"  
 July 21. "A miner of George Clarkson's, which died in the mines"  
 Aug. 17. John Shafto, merchant  
 Aug. 27. William Carr, merchant  
 Oct. 3. Anthony Ray, merchant

1584.

- Apr. 8. Edward, son of Robert Dudley, customer

1584.

- June 25. "Michael, brother to John Cockson, sometime jailer of this town"  
 Aug. 12. John Gray, schoolmaster  
 Aug. 22. Mr. Cuthbert Ridley  
 Sep. 28. Edward Stott  
 Nov. 16. "John Mackbray, preacher, and some time curate"

1585.

- Jan. 25. Isaac Anderson, merchant  
 May 4. "Adryan Hedworth's two children, new born"  
 Aug. 7. Cuthbert Sheile, "executed and buried"  
 Nov. 15. Robert Lambe, merchant  
 Dec. 16. Robert Heley, merchant  
 Dec. 19. "Mr. Robert Hagthropp, preacher of the word of God"  
 Dec. 19. Hugh, son of Giles Wallis, jailer  
 Dec. 31. Richard Hodgson, [Sheriff 1549. Mayor 1555, 1566, 1580]

1586.

- Jan. 25. Thomas Kay, minister of St. Nicholas'  
 Apr. 2. Margaret, wife of Geo. Selby, merchant.  
 Apr. 21. Margaret, wife of Thomas Liddell, merchant  
 May 8. Agnes, widow of the Rev. John Magbray, preacher, and sometime curate of Newcastle  
 June 27. Mrs. Isabel Ridley, at Mr. Wm. Selby's, alderman  
 Aug. 6. John Watson. [Sheriff 1567. Mayor 1574]  
 Sep. 8. Thomas Pearson, parish clerk of St. Nicholas'  
 Dec. 10. George Heslop, swordslipper

1587.

- Apr. 7. Elizabeth, wife of Robert Lambe, merchant  
 May 24. Elizabeth, wife of Matthew Chapman, merchant  
 June 6. Margaret, wife of Robert Ellison, merchant  
 June 13. "A poore wench which dyed in the church poorch"

1587.

- July 2. William Jenison. [Sheriff 1568.  
Mayor 1571, 1581. M.P. 1572, 1584.]  
July 23. Cuthbert Hunter, merchant  
July 23. Edward Tailor, merchant  
Aug. 3. "O'd Robson of the castle"  
Aug. 19. Christopher Marley  
Aug. 19. "A poore younge man which  
dyed in the Gun-house of the Sandhill"  
Aug. 22. Henry Tennant, merchant.  
[Sheriff 1578]  
Aug. 23. Gilbert Heron, gent., prisoner  
in the high castle  
Sep. 2. Katherine, wife of Adrian Hed-  
worth, merchant  
Sep. 6. John Carr, merchant  
Sep. 7. Dorothy, wife of Robert Hun-  
ter, merchant  
Sep. 9. Joan, wife of William Carr  
Sep. 10. Robert Hunter, merchant  
Sep. 11. Matthew Matfin, merchant  
Sep. 11. William Swinburne, merchant  
Sep. 15. Elliner, wife of Henry Rawe,  
merchant  
Sep. 24. Christopher Rawe, merchant  
Oct. 3. Edward Carr, merchant  
Oct. 4. Thomas Manweth, merchant  
Oct. 9. Robert Blunt, merchant  
Oct. 11. Agnes, wife of Robert Mitford  
Oct. 23. Bennet Chessye  
Oct. 30. Humphrey Ellison, merchant  
Nov. 4. Robert Mitford, merchant  
Nov. 5. George Whitfield. [Sheriff 1585]  
Nov. 10. Edward Blunt, merchant

1588.

- Feb. 18. Thomas Barker, merchant  
Mar. 5. George Heley, merchant  
Apr. 6. Jane, wife of Robert Atchison,  
merchant  
Apr. 12. Elizabeth, wife of William  
Selby, mercht. & alderman  
Oct. 6. Margaret, wife of Robert Bar-  
ker, merchant & alderman

1589.

- Jan. 2. "Ladie Bowes, wife to the Right  
wor. Sir William Bowes, knight"  
Feb. 5. Christopher Ord, merchant  
Aug. 2. Andrew Westwood, merchant  
Sep. 19. The gardener of The Nun's,  
servant to Mr. Henry Anderson,  
alderman  
Sep. 20. Bartram Cowghram, minister.  
[Curate of St. Andrew's]  
Oct. 4. Dame Whitfield, wife of Thomas  
Whitfield.

1590.

- June 15. Cornelius Brandling, gent.  
June 21. "A Strainger which lodged be-  
hind the Shamels"  
July 25. Alice, wife of John Butler, mer-  
chant

1590.

- July 29. Mrs. Jane Carnaby of Langley  
Aug. 4. Robert Barker, merchant &  
alderman. [Sheriff 1572. Mayor 1577,  
1585]  
Aug. 30. "A poore woman, came  
forth of the castle"  
Sep. 20. Elizabeth Shafto  
Nov. 12. The wife of John Coxon, jailer  
Dec. 1. Widow Ewbanke

1591.

- Jan. 22. Roger Nicholson [Sheriff  
1583. Mayor 1588]  
Mar. 19. John Coxon, sometime jailer  
Mar. 22. Martin Turpin, scrivener  
Apr. 8. Christopher Morpeth, merchant  
May 25. Old Mrs. Bennett, widow  
Oct. 1. Anthony Hedworth, merchant  
Dec. 18. Sandars Hilton, tailor

1592.

- Jan. 7. John Whitfield the elder  
Apr. 8. John Blenkinsopp, merchant  
Apr. 13. Roger Huntley, merchant  
June 4. Robert Ridley, merchant  
Sep. 6. William Swinburne, gent.  
Sep. 30. Dame Whitfield, widow  
Dec. 1. Catherine, wife of Roger Raw,  
being mayor  
Dec. 3. Christopher Errington, merchant  
Dec. 4. Robert Mitford, merchant  
Dec. 11. Michael Milbourne, merchant

1593.

- Jan. 31. "Annes Manna, & wif to the  
Fleming wch is Mr. of the house  
of correction"  
Mar. 20. Mrs. Errington, "ladie of  
Butterley"  
Apr. 8. Thomas Bowes, merchant  
Apr. 10. Mark Shafto. [Sheriff 1573.  
Mayor 1578]  
June 1. William Wrenn, gent.  
June 5. Robert Anderson. [Sheriff 1559.  
Mayor 1567]

- July 24. Anne, wife of Bartram Ander-  
son, brother to alderman Anderson  
Aug. 24. Christopher Shafto, lawyer  
Sep. 9. Mrs. Ursula Brandling  
Sep. 26. Widow Ridley  
Sep. 27. Robert Watson, merchant  
Sep. 30. Judith Felton  
Oct. 5. "Dame Hall of the Tutehill."  
Nov. 1. James Carr. [Sheriff 1579]

1594.

- Feb. 1. Elizabeth Bamford, widow,  
mother of Mr. James Bamford,  
preacher of God's word  
Apr. 16. Mr. John Baxter  
June 10. Elizabeth, wife of alderman  
Farnaby

1594.

July 8. Humphrey Gray, schoolmaster  
 Sep. 11. Mrs. Gray, widow of Humphrey, deceased  
 Sep. 21. Valentine Baker, goldsmith  
 Nov. 8. Richard Marley, and 15th, Thomas Marley  
 Dec. 6. Leonard Shafto, merchant

1595.

Jan. 22. Mark Shafto, merchant  
 Apr. 4. Barbara, wife of Cuthbert Blunt, merchant  
 Apr. 6. Anthony Eland, merchant  
 Apr. 23. Mrs. Rawe, wife of Christopher Rawe, merchant  
 Nov. 2. Joan, daughter of William Malballe, parchment maker  
 Nov. 28. Clement Anderson, merchant

1596.

Jan. 1. Roger Watson, merchant  
 Jan. 6. William Brandling, merchant  
 Jan. 17. John Gray, draper  
 May 16. Henry Mitford. [Sheriff 1582. Mayor 1584. M.P. 1588, 1593]  
 May 19. Barbara, wife of Henry Mitford, alderman  
 May 22. Isabell, wife of Robert Eden, merchant  
 June 6. Roger Rawe. [Sheriff 1574. Mayor 1579 & 1592]  
 June 8. The wife of Richard Gibson, merchant  
 June 29. Richard Gibson, merchant  
 July 29. Anne, wife of John Whitfield  
 Aug. 6. Oswald Mitford, merchant  
 Aug. 11. Bertram Anderson, merchant  
 Sep. 5. Richard Houldsworth, vicar & preacher of God's word  
 Oct. 3. Ralph Rawe, swordbearer  
 Oct. 6. Robert Atkinson. [Sheriff 1590. Mayor 1590]  
 Oct. 28. Grace, wife of Bertram Anderson, merchant  
 Nov. 10. Margaret, wife of William Bonner, merchant  
 Dec. 4. Mark Blunt, merchant  
 Dec. 13. Katherine, wife of William Brandling, merchant

1597.

Jan. 20. William Greenwell, merchant. [Sheriff 1591]  
 Feb. 8. Matthew Rawe, gent.  
 Mar. 30. George Whitfield, skinner  
 May 12. Fortune, wife of Henry Anderson, alderman  
 May 17. Ralph Jenison, merchant & alderman, " & now mayor of this town "

1597.

June 6. William Ellison the younger merchant  
 June 11. Edmund Milbanks, yeoman  
 Aug. 29. Thos. Kirsopp, merchant, & sometime sergeant at the mace  
 Aug. 31. Robert Mitford, merchant  
 Sep. 21. Susan, wife to Cuthbert Bewick, merchant  
 Oct. 5. Dorothy, wife of Henry Anderson, senior, merchant

1598.

Jan. 22. John Baxter, lawyer, buried before the library door  
 Mar. 8. Henry Fenkell, merchant  
 Apr. 15. Thomas Errington, a prisoner  
 Apr. 17. Ellinor, wife of Richard Stott, merchant  
 May 14. Margaret, wife of Mark Blunt, merchant  
 Sep. 22. Widow Lampton.  
 Dec. 12. Ellinor, wife of Wm. Sherwood, merchant

1599.

Feb. 15. Cuthbert Hoppen, merchant  
 Mar. 29. Robert Hebborne, gentleman  
 Apr. 24. Ann, wife of Wm. Jenison, alderman  
 Apr. 24. Widow Rawe, late wife of Roger Rawe, master and mariner  
 June 8. Anne, wife of John Pearson, merchant  
 Sep. 25. Timothy Warmouth  
 Dec. 3. Oswald Chapman, junior, merchant

1600.

Apr. 10. George, son of George Selby, alderman  
 Apr. 11. Jane, wife of Bertram Anderson, merchant  
 Aug. 31. William Riddell, merchant & alderman. [Sheriff 1575. Mayor 1582, 1595]  
 Nov. 3. Elizabeth, wife of Michael Milborne, merchant  
 Nov. 19. William, son of George Selby, mayor

1601.

June 6. John, son of George Selby, mayor  
 Aug. 18. "Doctor Bellise wch dyed at widowe Pearson's (not buried here)"  
 Nov. 18. John Cook, merchant  
 Dec. 27. Francis Hall, merchant

1602.

Jan. 1. Mrs. Dorothy Draper  
 Feb. 13. Thomas Cock, merchant



1602.  
 Feb. 22. Edward Shafto, merchant  
 Feb. 24. George Farnaby, merchant & alderman. [Sheriff 1588. Mayor 1591, 1598]  
 May 23. Richard Bowes  
 June 7. Thomas Clavering  
 July 12. Jane, wife of Thos. Liddell  
 Sep. 26. Robert Ellison the elder  
 Dec. 3. William Huntley, merchant & alderman  
 Dec. 12. William Allenson, preacher of God's word

1603.  
 Jan. 3. Robert Smyth, physician  
 Feb. 5. Henry Anderson, merchant  
 Aug. 8. John Shafto, merchant  
 Sep. 4. Ellinor, wife of Timothy Draper  
 Sep. 26. Ralph Atkinson, merchant  
 Oct. 15. Ralph Carr  
 Oct. 18. Henry Lawes, merchant  
 Nov. 15. Cornelius Brandling  
 Dec. 1. Robert Brandling, merchant

1604.  
 Mar. 31. John Butler, merchant  
 June 6. Elizabeth, wife of Mark Shafto, alderman  
 Oct. 2. Joanna, wife of Henry Chapman  
 Oct. 13. Anne, wife of Matthew Chapman  
 Oct. 30. Luke Ogle of Eglington, gent.  
 Oct. 31. Mrs. Margaret Liddell

1605.  
 Feb. 15. Margaret, wife of Robert Bewicke, merchant  
 June 7. Lancelot Claxton, gent.  
 June 27. Bartram Anderson, merchant  
 July 6. Thomas, son of Sir George Selby, knight  
 July 23. Grace, wife of James Clavering  
 Nov. 6. Mr. Henry Anderson. [See p. 170]  
 Nov. 20. Ralph Carr, esquire

1606.  
 May 30. Richard Pitts, one of the customers  
 June 22. Peter Riddell, merchant  
 Aug. 28. Bartram Anderson  
 Aug. 3. Matthew Chapman. [Sheriff 1603]  
 Dec. 16. Richard Brandling

1607.  
 Jany. 8. Simon Marley, merchant  
 Jany. 17. Jane, wife of Robert Brandling  
 Sep. 21. John Sotheran, merchant  
 Sep. 25. Adrian Hedworth, merchant. [Sheriff 1596]

1608.  
 Jan. 2. Nicholas Sotheran  
 Feb. 19. Robert Matfen, merchant  
 Aug. 14. "Edward Anderson, hanged & buried"

1609.  
 Apr. 18. John Barker  
 Apr. 22. Margaret, wife of Robert Brandling  
 May 19. William Simpson, town clerk  
 Aug. 27. Hugh (or Henry) Selby, merchant  
 Sep. 7. Felix Morton, one of the king's customers  
 Dec. 28. William Marley, merchant

1611.  
 Jan. 10. Christopher Moyses, sergeant  
 Feb. 22. Thos. Swinburne, gent.  
 July 13. Jane, wife of Lionel Maddison  
 Sep. 6. Ralph Cock, merchant

1613.  
 May 7. Robert Dudley, alderman  
 June 12. Richard Hodgson  
 Dec. 21. William Selby. [Sheriff 1564. Mayor 1573, 1589]

1614.  
 Apr. 19. Mr. Doctor Sticknell  
 Oct. 7. Thomas Liddell  
 Oct. 12. The wife of Peter Riddell  
 Dec. 7. The wife of Bulmer Ile

1615.  
 Jan. 13. Robert Anderson, alderman. [Sheriff 1600.]  
 July 5. Mr. Horsley of Scranwood  
 July 16. Mrs. Bonner

1616.  
 Jan. 30. Old Mrs. Selby  
 Mar. 18. Mr. Richard Hodgson  
 Aug. 1. "Yongehusbande, beinge executyd for the death & murther of Mr. Swenno, gent. : was buried in this Church of Snt. Nic. : one the North Syde"  
 Sep. 3. John Cook, merchant, & sometime sheriff [1614]  
 Nov. 8. Mr. Robert Eden

1617.  
 Jan. 13. Christopher Midforth  
 June 27. Christopher Shafto, gent.  
 July 18. Mr. Doctor Bentley  
 Sep. 12. Isak Anderson, merchant  
 Nov. 20. Henry Bonner

1618.  
 Feb. 16. Francis Liddell  
 Feb. 28. Mr. Lewin, sometime alderman. [Sheriff 1577. Mayor 1587]  
 Mar. 23. Jane, wife of Cuthbert Ellison

1619.  
Apr. 29. Lionel Greenwell, merchant  
Aug. 19. Thomas Liddell, alderman.  
[Sheriff 1592. Mayor 1597, 1609]  
Nov. 12. Mrs. Clavering  
Dec. 30. George Matfin.

1620.  
July 18. "The Worll. Willm. Morton,  
Archdeacon of Durham & Vickar of  
Newcastell—the funerall was worth-  
ily effected the 26 of Julye Anno 1620.  
Mr. Jenneson did preach"

July 18. Valentyne Baker  
Aug. 1. Michael Kirkley, merchant  
Aug. 13. "Nicholas Foster was executed  
for the death of Mr. Swenno, &  
buried in Snt. Nicholas Church neigh  
unto the North Church Doore, neigh  
unto Yongehusband where he was  
buried"

Dec. 12. The wife of Mr. Charles Selby  
Dec. 19. George Fenwick, merchant

1621.  
Feb. 2. William Lawson, merchant  
Feb. 3. William Selby, merchant  
May 13. Robert Brandling  
July 13. Cuthbert Bewicke  
July 20. Henry Whitfield, sergeant  
Sept. 10. Abraham Barker, merchant  
Dec. 9. Robert Bowes, merchant

1622.  
Jan. 16. Robert Chapman, merchant  
May 22. Robert Liddell, merchant  
Sep. 1. Mr. Roger Anderson. [Sheriff  
1612]

1623.  
Jan. 23. Mr. Timothy Draper  
Apr. 5. Mr. William Heley  
Apr. 15. Robert Selby, merchant  
Apr. 19. Mr. Henry Chapman, alder-  
man  
Apr. 21. Mr. Robert Ledgar, sheriff  
Apr. 22. Jacob Farnaby, merchant  
Apr. 23. William Chambers, merchant  
Apr. 24. Cuthbert Gray, merchant  
Apr. 25. Henry Farnaby, merchant  
Apr. 26. Mr. Francis Anderson, alder-  
man. [Sheriff 1595. Mayor 1601, 1612]  
Apr. 26. Ralph Carr, merchant  
Apr. 28. Mr. Claudius Delaval, gent.  
May 14. Mr. Redhead, postmaster  
June 26. Christopher Mitford, merchant  
Sep. 3. Mr. Henry Power, vicar  
Sep. 12. Robert Shafto, alderman.  
[Sheriff 1607]

1624.  
June 4. Mr. Henry Bowes, sheriff  
July 1. Francis Anderson, merchant  
Oct. 20. William Shafto, merchant

1624.  
Dec. 8. Mr. Lionel Maddison, alder-  
man. [Sheriff, 1584. Mayor 1593,  
1605, 1617]

1625.  
Mar. 30. "The Right Worll. Sir George  
Selbie, knight & alderman." [Sheriff  
1594. Mayor 1600, 1606, 1611, 1622.  
M.P. 1604 to 1611]

1626.  
Feb. 21. "Captain Crauforth was  
worthiely & with great triumph at  
the charges of the Towne of New-  
castell upon tynne in Snt. Nicholas  
Church in the Queare buried"  
Apr. 28. The wife of George Baker &  
child, in the plague  
Nov. 1 "Mr. Charles Selbie esquire"  
Nov. 3. Oswald Horsley, in the visitation  
Dec. 4. Mr. Lancelot Hodgson

1627.  
Jan. 5. Cuthbert Ellison  
Jan. 24. Mr. William Bonner. [Sheriff  
1617]  
June 19. "Margrat the grace wife"  
Aug. 15. The lady Anne Tempest

1628.  
Apr. 10. Cornelius Brandling  
June 19. James Hodgson  
Aug. 19. "Thre denisons for murdar"  
Oct. 28. Mr. Robert Slingsbie, preacher

1629.  
Feb. 9. Thomas Cock, merchant  
Mar. 5. Henry Bowes, merchant  
May 31. Mr. Thomas Surtees, gent.

1630.  
Jan. 6. Henry Marley  
Feb. 17. William Riddell  
Mar. 25. John Clavering  
Apr. 3. Henry Cock. [Sheriff 1627]  
May 2. Mr. James Clavering, alderman.  
[Sheriff 1599. Mayor 1607, 1618]  
Aug. 10. Mr. William Jackson. [Town  
clerk, and twice sheriff]  
Aug. 19. Dame Haggerston

1631.  
Jan. 5. Mrs. Judith Booth  
Mar. 25. John Bonner  
Apr. 17. Thomas Marley  
July 30. William Hall, alderman. [Sheriff  
1608. Mayor 1624]  
Aug. 8. William Selby

1632.  
Jan. 3. Lady Riddell  
Feb. 7. William Marley, merchant  
Feb. 25. Dame Bonner

1632.  
May 7. Robert Anderson  
May 23. Mrs. Alice Ile

1633.  
Feb. 18. Mr. Henry Chapman, alderman. [Sheriff 1613. Mayor 1620, 1627]  
Aug. 3. Lady Ratcliff, wife to Sir William Ratcliff  
Sep. 3. Dame Davison  
Sep. 8. Henry Shadforth, merchant  
Dec. 15. John Butler

1634.  
Apr. 16 William Eden, physician  
July 14. Mr. Henry Maddison, alderman. [Sheriff 1605. Mayor 1623]  
July 20. Gawin Aydon  
Aug. 11. Mr. Roger Blakiston  
Aug. 30. Mr. William Jenison, merchant [Sheriff 1593. Mayor 1599, 1610, 1621]  
Sep. 6. Jane, wife of William War-mouth, alderman  
Sep. 22. Mary, wife of John Marley, merchant  
Oct. 11. Mr. James Clavering, merchant  
Dec. 25. John Milbanke, merchant

1635.  
Jan. 8. William Marley, merchant  
Mar. 7. Nicholas Raine, pursuivant  
July 8. William Clavering  
Oct. 19. Mr. John Brandling

1636.  
Apr. 30. Elizabeth, wife of Mr. George Baker  
July 1. Robert Brandling  
July 19. Peter Bonner  
Aug. 17. John Wallis, clerk  
Aug. 22. Elizabeth Gray, widow  
Aug. 25. Robert Anderson

1636.  
Sep. 1. John Eden, merchant  
Sep. 10. Captain Thomas Jackson  
Sep. 12. Robert Tunstall  
Sep. 26. George Brandling  
Oct. 26. Henry Eden, merchant  
Oct. 31. Francis Anderson  
Nov. 2. Matthew White  
Dec. 29. William Fenwick, gent.

1637.  
Feb. 24. Mr. William Bewicke  
Mar. 11. Henry Anderson  
Apr. 20. Ellinor, wife of Mr. Francis Bowes  
Apr. 26. Mr. Lancelot Shafto  
June 29. John Anderson

1638.  
Feb. 2. Mr. John Ord, gent.  
Feb. 24. William Anderson  
Feb. 26. Abraham Booth, merchant  
May 5. "Edward Fenwick slayne"  
Sep. 10. Charles Barker, merchant  
Dec. 22. Mr. James Carr

1639.  
Jan. 16. Mr. Joseph Alvey, clerk  
Jan. 22. Mrs. Dorothy Selby  
May 4. Ralph Jenison  
Aug. 13. "John Anderson, James Browne, George Ranson, Thomas Dabdell, Oswald Browne, Annas Hall, prisoners, executed"  
Aug. 16. Robert Clavering  
Sep. 10. Arthur Hebburne, gent.  
Nov. 1. Dame Milburne  
Dec. 26. Dame Carr

1640.  
Feb. 6. Sir Henry Hayes, a stranger  
May 12. "Mr. Robert Anderson, alderman, a good benefactor." [Sheriff 1619. Mayor 1630]

## Church of All Saints.

*(The Register commences in 1600.)*

1601.  
Oct. 13. Isabell Frisell, late wife of Michael, clerk

1602.  
Apr. 26. Robert Dent, gent., of Byker  
July 30. Robert Brandling, merchant adventurer, executed  
Sep. 17. William, son of William Jackson, town clerk  
Dec. 25. John Wycliffe, gent.

1604.  
Apr. 17. "Dame Whittingham, murdered by her husband"  
May 27. John Knardsayle, minister

1605.  
Dec. 6. Christopher Elmer, merchant adventurer

1606.  
Jan. 26. Roger Nicholson, merchant  
June 1. Elizabeth Selby

1606.  
Sep. 4. "Andrew Bowne, not a clerk of the town"

1607.  
Jan. 22. Mrs. Margaret Burrell, wife to Mr. Francis, merchant  
Aug 7. William Ellison, merchant

1608.  
Feb. 27. Anne, widow of Laurence Garnett of Eggescliffe  
Aug. 21. Allayne King, gent.  
Aug. 23. Anthony Wilson, yeoman, of Craster, Northumberland

1610.  
May 26. Henry Lambe, merchant  
Sep. 5. Katherine Brandling, wife to John Brandling  
Oct. 1. Mrs. Alice Tonge, wife to Mr. William Tonge

1611.  
Feb. 16. John Wood, curate  
July 2. Edward Bartram, merchant  
Nov. 22. Mr. George Dent, gent.

1613.  
Jan. 15. Mr. Robert Errington, gent.  
Apr. 23. John Moore, merchant  
May 7. Mr. John Tonge, gent.  
July 8. William Cookson, gent.  
Nov. 15. Mr. Christopher Ridley, clerk of the Custom House

1614.  
Jan. 30. Bartram Pattison, merchant  
Oct. 30. Katherine, wife to Mr. Geo. Read, merchant

1615.  
May 26. "Henry Ruxby gent. suspendet" [executed]  
June 20. John Waller, merchant

1616.  
Mar. 11. Robert Gilstop, gent.  
Apr. 22. George Auder, son to Wm. Auder, a minister  
Sep. 3. John Jackson, gent.  
Sep. 11. Francis Lighton, scrivener

1618.  
May 29. Joseph Gray, scrivener  
June 28. Thomas Umphray, merchant adventurer  
Nov. 28. Robert Wilkinson, musician

1619.  
Mar. 22. Nicholas Newton, gent.  
June 30. William Dent, gent.  
July 25. Anderson Midforth, merchant

1619.  
July 31. Matthew Bird, merchant  
Aug. 14. Henry Tunstall, preacher of God's word  
Oct. 10. James Miller, gent.

1620.  
Jan. 7. John Beadnall, gent.  
Feb. 18. John Conyers, gent.  
Apr. 3. Matthew Wright, merchant  
May 17. Roger Carnaby, gent.  
Sep. 10. Elizabeth, wife to Robert Brandling, gent.

1621.  
Apr. 8. Thomas Nicholson, merchant  
Apr. 8. James Conyers, gent.  
May 17. Henry Watson, apothecary  
May 20. John Deane, silk weaver  
Dec. 17. Nathan Montagu, gent.

1622.  
Apr. 25. William Cooke, esquire  
Aug. 17. James Driden, yeoman, executed  
Sep. 27. James Sanford, gent.  
Dec. 2. Andrew Burn, merchant  
Dec. 30. Mr. William Tonge, gent.

1623.  
Mar. 3. Abraham Crabtree, merchant  
Apr. 27. Roger Chambers, merchant adventurer  
June 20. William Swan, preacher  
July 7. Nicholas Jackson, gent.  
Aug. 22. Elizabeth, wife of Francis Bainbridge, merchant  
Aug. 25. Catherine, wife of Rainold Horsley, gent.  
Oct. 15. Thomas Watson, notary public  
Nov. 12. Roger Hall, merchant  
Dec. 9. Christopher Stobbs, scrivener

1624.  
July 26. William Clavering, merchant adventurer  
Aug. 6. Margaret, wife to Robert Brandling, merchant  
Aug. 11. Percival Aire, merchant  
Sep. 5. Robert Goodinge, merchant  
Sep. 25. Hugh Clifton, gent.  
Nov. 9. George Reede, merchant

1625.  
Mar. 26. Edward Crome, merchant  
Oct. 20. Robert Nott, merchant  
Dec. 8. James Scoles, scrivener

1626.  
July 11. John Lowes, scrivener

1627.  
Mar. 4. William Grundie, merchant  
May 11. Robert Beckwith, merchant  
July 30. Peregrine Henzey, gent.  
Nov. 25. Ralph Gray, gent.

1628.  
Jan. 20. Francis Clarke, merchant  
Aug. 18. "Nich. Nickson, tayler, executed"  
Nov. 20. Henry Lent, gent.  
Dec. 6. William Carr, master and mariner

1629.  
Feb. 8. Thomas Carr, yeoman  
Feb. 13. William Davison, merchant  
July 9. Cuthbert Carnaby, gent.  
Dec. 9. Geo. Cooke, yeoman

1630.  
Apr. 19. Nathaniel Pinckney, gent.  
June 26. Thomas More, yeoman  
Sep. 25. Nicholas Fisher, yeoman

1631.  
Jan. 6. Simon Eglinton, yeoman  
Mar. 5. Catherine Collingwood, widow  
Mar. 13. Barnard Patterson, gent.  
Aug. 8. Thomas Carr, merchant  
Sep. 18. Jane Maddison, gentlewoman  
Nov. 25. Andrew Gofton, merchant  
Nov. 29. Robert Ellison, merchant adventurer

1632.  
Feb. 12. Godfrey Cominn, merchant  
Mar. 6. Marmaduke Fenwick, gent.  
Mar. 27. Mrs. Dorothy Lawson  
July 15. Thomas Smith, merchant & butcher

1632.  
Nov. 8. Dudley Swann, gent.  
Nov. 25. Robert Heslop, yeoman

1633.  
June 6. Thomas Kitchin, yeoman  
June 6. Richard Dockley, yeoman  
July 2. Robt Lavarack, merchant  
July 21. Rowland Barker, merchant  
Oct. 12. Dorothy, wife of Mr. Henry Delaval, gent.

1634.  
May 28. Jane, daughter to Mr. John Blakiston

1635.  
Aug. 3. John Parker, merchant  
Sep. 30. James Riddell, gent.  
Oct. 14. John Dent, gent.  
Dec. 7. Isabella, wife to Leonard Carr, merchant

1636.  
Jan. 17. Henry Lawson, esquire  
Jan. 23. Lancelot Fell, merchant

1638.  
May 27. Mr. George Hodgson, merchant & draper

1639.  
Mar. 20. John Brough, yeoman  
July 26. Anne Brandling, widow

1640.  
Sep. 16. Mr. Wm. Bruce, a Scottish trooper  
Oct. 6. Andrew Kinmond, a Scottish lieutenant  
Dec. 30. Roger Hodgson, merchant

## Church of St. Andrew.

(The Register commences in 1597.)

1600.  
May 23. Edward Watson, weaver  
May 27. Isabell, wife to Conan Stephenson  
June 1. Henry Brough, servant to Mr. George Selby, alderman  
Dec. 11. Margaret, wife to Richard Rowmayne

1601.  
Jan. 17. "Sir Thos. Maslet, curat of St. Andrewes"

1602.  
Sep. 14. "A woman wch was slayne at the colle pit"

1603.  
Jan. 6. Thomas Wigham, parish clerk of St. Nicholas'

1604.  
Sep. 17. Robert Akenside  
Sep. 20. Robert Akenside's man  
Dec. 31. Elinor Maslet

1605.  
Feb. 1. "Ould Mother Ord"

1607.  
Apr. 23. Barnard Hebson, parish clerk of this church  
Oct. 31. Gawen Read, & John Gibson, executed

1608.  
Jan. 12. "A poore ould beagell that cam from Durham and was buried"  
Mar. 3. Ralph Carr

1611.  
Mar. 23. "Elsa : a maid of Thos. Carres  
in Sandgate"
1613.  
July 23. William Dalton, esquire
1617.  
July 10. "A pore man that died in Ges-  
mond field"  
Nov. 9. The wife of John Bewicke
1618.  
Nov. 25. Rudtherfoot's las
1623.  
Sep. 18. "John Dickinson, George  
Coultert, Mathew Natres, James Kir-  
sop, Edward Harle, being smored in  
Wm. Brandling's Pitts"
1624.  
Jan. 17. Gerard Browne, a prisoner  
Feb. 15. Robert Browne, a prisoner  
June 16 "Ann Skelton, wife to Gilbt.  
Skelton, Recusant"  
July 28. William Huntley  
July 29. Elizabeth, wife to Wm. Huntley
1625.  
Oct 4. "An infant buried & not bap-  
tized"
1628.  
Aug. 18. Mathew Hall, prisoner, exe-  
cuted  
Dec. 19. "A pore man, a scoler out of  
pilgd. prison."
1629.  
Nov. 8. Edward Wigham, preacher
1630.  
May 2. "Margaret Hunter the pore  
Midwif"
1632.  
Mar. 4. "The Bells rong for Mr. John-  
son the upholdster"
1633.  
Apr. 24. "Barbara d. to Geo. Redhead.  
No bels"
1634.  
Apr. 1. "John Yettes, late Belma—"
1635.  
Mar. 30. German Stanton, parish clerk
1636.  
Aug. 10. "Jo. Skowre-felld and his wife,  
both in a grave  
Aug. 14. "Robert Toddricke, slator,  
which had the louch beck"
1636.  
Aug. 14. Mrs. Gray, the papist  
Aug. 21. Matthew Hall, the overman of  
the Town Moor  
Aug. 21. "A kobler at the gaytes"  
Sep. 5. "John Hall (backer), his 2  
chilldre, bothe in one coffin"  
Sep. 17. Mr. Dawsons, a papist  
Sep. 21. "Margret Stoocke and hir  
chillde both in one chist. Michell his  
wife"  
Sep. 30. "Tho. Skolles, Geo. Skolles, in  
one grave"  
Oct. 1. "Edward Pigge, Thomas Pigge,  
in one kofing"
1637.  
Dec. 22. "John Dawsons, a prisoner in  
the Jayll, dyed in the prisone for 16  
[shillings?] layd in by one John King,  
hatter of Gatsid"
1638.  
Feb. 3. "Roger Slayges, Gilbert Feters.  
Prisoners hanged and buryed in our  
churchyard. A poure woman : she  
was saued and not hanged"  
Mar. 30. "Ellsebeth Gipsone skalded in  
a brew-led with her wort"  
Apr. 6. "4 hanged and buried in oure  
churchyarde"  
Apr. 7. Jo. Harop, within the church,  
sone of George Harop, hanged ; Jo.  
Hall, hanged ; Jayn Jackson, hanged ;  
Ralffe Dode, hanged"  
Aug. 11. "Tho. Mylborne & 2 poure  
women hanged"  
Oct 21. "Mabell Lawson buried & one  
child with her the 21 day. She died  
in childbed and 2 of her children bap-  
tized when she was buried shew had  
3 children all at one tyme"
1639.  
Aug. 12. "Robart Robsone bured the  
12 day which was hanged for stelling  
of a horse from Thomas Dining the  
myller"
- 1640  
Feb. 20. "Thomas Kell and his wif and  
2 chilldren bured the 20 day all of  
thame in one grave which was kild in  
a howse at the Sandefor stone did  
fall of tham when thay wer in there  
bedes"  
May 16. "2 sogers, for denying the  
kynges pay, was by a kownsell of war  
apoyted to be shot at, a pare of galos  
set up befor Tho. Malabars dore in  
the byg market. Thay kust lotes wich  
should dy, and the lotes did fall of one

1640.

Mr. Anthone Wiccors, and he was set against a wall and shot at by 6 lyght horsmen, and was bured in owre church yard the sam day. May 16 day"

1640.

Sep. 19. "Thomas Watson, soger, a Skotesman, he wase of the Skotes arme when thay towke oup this towne"  
Oct. 25. "One of the Redshankes of the Skotes arme"

## Church of St. John.

(*The Register commences in 1588.*)

1588.

Jan. 11. Margery Stott, wife to Thomas Stott, merchant

Jan. 21. John Boutflower, tanner

Feb. 3. Margaret Phillipson, widow

Feb. 13. Thomas Acheson, yeoman

Mar. 8. Alison Davison, wife to Christopher Davison

Aug. 23. Mary, daughter of Mr. Richard Holdsworth, pastor of New-castle

Dec. 7. "John Dickson, an old man dying with widow Heron in a tower of the walls"

1589.

Feb. 6. Christopher Davison, skinner & glover

Apr. 5. John Gray, miller

May 13. Alice Stokoe. She was servant to Thomas Hodgson, butcher, and did put down herself [committed suicide] in her master's house in her own belt

June 8. 1 child & 1 woman died in the plague

July 4. A poor man buried. The first which died of the plague

July 29. "John Phiff, servant to Mr. Simpson, drowned in the river at the Close yate, going to swime"

Aug. 23. Edward Errington, "the townes fool buried, died in the pest"

Aug. 27. Edmund Robinson, curate of St. John's parish; pest

Sep. 25. Widow Unthank, which died at Elswick Staith; pest

Oct. 4. Margaret Ewbanck servant, & 6th, Agnes daughter of Cuthbert Ewbanck, minister of St. Nicholas'; pest

Oct. 6. Elizabeth, wife of Thos. Hairhope, "musishioner"

Oct. 12. Gregory, son of Mr Holdsworth, pastor

Oct. 16. Thomas Hairhope, "musishioner"

Nov. 14. Robert Dent, tanner, & ser-geant of the town mace; pest

Dec. 12. John Gray, the elder, miller; pest

1591.

Mar. 14. "Infant Dods, d. John Dods pedler, bur. unbaptist"

Apr. 7. "A poor woman dieinge on the donghill"

1592.

Apr. 27. Roger Leaslaw, armorer

May 19. William Welshe, merchant

May 28. Dorothy, d. Roger Davison

1593.

Feb. 6. Ralph Anderson, yeoman

May 24. Ralph Lawrence, gentleman

June 21. William Bennett, "musishioner."

Aug. 8. Robert Harbittle, gent.

1595.

Sep. 7. Emmeric Ogle, litster

Oct. 20. "James Niffe, colier; he was slaine in a coal pit"

1596.

Mar. 26. Alexander Lighton, "ane old prieste"

Mar. 30. "Jeane Robson, wh died in the almons house in the puddinge chaire"

May 21. Mrs. Lorrance, gentlewoman

Oct. 5. Lavericke Horsley, gent.

Dec. 4. John Graye

1597.

Aug. 20. Henry Featherstone, sergeant of mace

Sep. 10. "Grizzell Fenwicke wiff to George F. gen., pest; the 11 daye his mothers man was buried att Benwell in the feld"

Sep. 23. Vahan Hodges, gent.

1598.

Jan. 2. "Elizabeth Nicholson. She was drowned in the bigg marcott pant"

Apr. 27. Robert Grieve, "musitioner"

Oct. 27. Clement Cockson, curate of St. John's

1599.  
Apr. 16. James Bartram, merchant  
adventurer  
Aug. 22. "Clement Roderforthe, gent.  
Was executid in the castle"

1604.  
Aug. 24. Ralph Ewbank, gent.  
Dec. 22. Dorothy Shafto, pest

1605.  
May 12. "Alexander Davison, a prisoner  
hanged in the hye castle"  
July 22. Frances Davyson, wife of  
Thomas Davyson, skinner and glover  
Aug. 10. Anthony Storoo, executed  
Nov. 14. "Renold Charlton, Henry  
Dods, Arthur Robson, Arche Rogers ;  
executed in the castle"

1606.  
Jan. 25. "John Hall, Arche Armstrong,  
Thos. Armstrong, Cuthbert Charlton,  
Wm. Charlton; executed in the castle"

1607.  
Apr. 15. "John Pott, Simye Armstrong,  
George Reade, executed and buried"  
Dec. 11. Ambrose Liddell, merchant  
Apr. 6. Edward Eden, yeoman

1608.  
Feb. 1. Barnard Hewson, musician  
Feb. 5. Thomas Ilderton, gentleman  
Feb. 5. Isabell, wife of John Ellison  
Oct. 30. Elizabeth, wife of Mr. Edward  
Wigham, minister of St. John's

1609.  
Sep. 22. Tristram Horsley

1611.  
Mar. 27. Robert Mathew, musician  
May 26. George Nickson, out of the  
castle  
July 13. William Wilkinson, merchant  
July 20. Bartram Potts, William Charl-  
ton, executed

1612.  
Mar. 30. "Robert Softleye, husband-  
man, hangd himself"  
June 28. Dorothy Ogle, widow  
Sep. 1. George Bartram, gent.  
Dec. 24. Clement Shafto, tanner.

1613.  
Jan. 3. Christopher Bennett, musician  
June 27. "Elizabeth Midleton, cast  
awaye in the Tyne"  
Oct. 12. William Mallabar, merchant  
adventurer

1614.  
Mar. 4. Robert Sotheran, merchant  
adventurer

1615.  
Aug. 23. John Thomson, skinner and  
glover

1616.  
Aug. 2. Thomas Goss, gentleman  
Aug. 26. "Poore Margery Dente"  
Sep. 13. Frances Pilleye, gentlewoman

1617.  
Aug. 7. "Mrs. Barbery Henderson,  
wyf to Mr. Robert Henderson, phis-  
ityon"

1618.  
Apr. 4. Edward Knowles, schoolmaster

1619.  
June 23. William Carr, gent.

1620.  
Jan. 21. John Carr, gent.  
Oct. 20. Margaret Swinburne, gentle-  
woman  
Dec. 14. Richard Bittleston, yeoman

1621.  
Apr. 30. Mrs. Elizabeth Shawe, wife to  
Mr. John Shawe, preacher of the  
word of God

1622.  
Dec. —. Matthew Stanley, fuller and  
dyer  
— —. Jane Cole, widow

1623.  
Mar. 20. George Harle, yeoman  
Apr. 12. Gualter Preston, gent.†  
July 21. "Oswald Chaytor, clerk of this  
church & weaver"  
Sep. 10. Edward Ahkman, gent.  
Sep. 18. Robert Gray, yeoman

1625.  
Feb. 17. George Nicholson, notary  
public  
Apr. 8. George Errington, gent.  
May —. George Lile, gent.  
June 26. Alice, wife of Mr. John Shaw,  
preacher

1626.  
Mar. 12. Phillip Grey, gent.  
Apr. 28. Robert Shafto, skinner & glover  
Aug. 13. Henry Penn, "slaine in a pit"  
Oct. 10. John Stead, gent.



1627.  
Apr. 2. William Errington, gent., of Benwell  
June 3. Thomas Coulson, "slaine in a pit"

1628.  
June 19. Elizabeth Ellison, widow  
Dec. 17. Isabella Grey, widow

1629.  
Aug. 1. Cuthbert Forster, gent.  
May 18. Alice. d. Mr. Yelderd Alvey, preacher of God's word at St. Nicholas  
Oct. 8. Edward Wigham, "Mr. of the Hospital"

1630.  
Mar. 13. Robert Jefferson, yeoman

1631.  
Mar. 24. Yelderd, s. Mr. Yelderd Alvey, preacher  
Sep. 22. Andrew Shafto, yeoman  
Dec. 2. Robert Carr, yeoman

1632.  
May 8. Isabell Bewick, widow  
June 1. Cuthbert Errington, merchant  
July 8. Edward Vesse, gent.

1633.  
Mar. 12. Thomas, son of Mr. Alvey, vicar  
June 14. Josias Rea, schoolmaster  
Sep. 7. Mr. William Moore, physician  
Sep. 15. Mr. Robert Bartram, merchant

1634.  
Mar. 20. Mr. John Austen, lawyer  
Sep. 28. "Dorothie Murtherer, d. Gabriell Murtherer, yeoman"

1635.  
Jan. 10. William Grey, tanner  
Dec. 4. George Bittleston, yeoman

1636.  
May 15. Arthur, son of Mr. Alvey, vicar  
Aug. 18. William Cresswell, yeoman  
Aug. 19. Mrs. Ogle  
Aug. 20. John Cranston, fuller and dyer  
Sep. 7. Rowland Hedley, fuller and dyer  
Sep. 8. Matthew Dent, skinner and glover  
Sep. 20. Katherine, wife to Robert Eden  
Oct. 2. Ralph Rowmaine, clerk  
Oct. 14. "Gabriel Murder, his child"  
Nov. 8. Robert Mallabar, sergeant at mace  
Dec. 1. "Seven poore things out of the Warden Close"

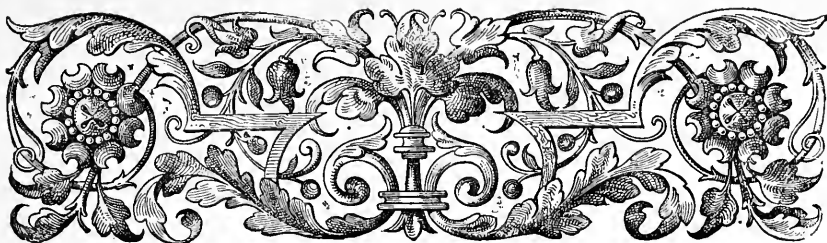
1638.  
April 7. Ralph Errington; executed  
July 4. Mrs. Dorothy Swinburne  
Aug. 5. Jane, daughter of Mr. Yeldard Alvey, vicar  
Aug. 13. Mr. Nicholas Hodgson  
Oct. 1. George Medcalfe, merchant  
Oct. 15. Mr. Charles Kellish, gent.  
Dec. 1. Thomas, son of Mr. Anthony Swinburne  
Dec. 4. Isabel Elder, servant to ditto  
Dec. 5. Mary, daughter of ditto  
Dec. 7. Ellinor, daughter of ditto  
Dec. 23. George Anderson, yeoman

1639.  
Mar. 4. Thomas Towers, gent.  
May 1. Edward Swinburne, gent.  
Nov. 5. Peter Fowler, gent.

1640.  
June 20. "Thomas Eskott, slaine by a trooper"







## INDEX.

\* \* *The contents of the Appendix are not included in the Index.*

- Abraham, Giles, suspected, 293  
 Achewick, 146  
 Acklington Park, 250  
 Adam, a chest called, 70  
 Adams, Isabel, 32  
 Adams, Richard, 32  
 Addeston, Alexander, 6  
 Addeston, Janet, 6  
 Addled Parliament, the, 201  
 Adkinson, George, 188  
 Admiralty jurisdiction, 7, 54, 177, 203  
 Affray near Morpeth, 38  
 Akenside, Robert, 12; Thomas and Janet, 12  
 Ale brewing, 98  
 Allaine, Anthony, 102  
 Allan, Andrew, card playing, 182  
 Allen, Edmund, 291; Mr., puritan, 384;  
 Richard, 327  
 Allenson, John, clerk, 228  
 Allersydheugh, 388  
 Allgood, Lancelot, county clerk, 284  
 All Hallow Bank, 5, 188  
 All Hallow Gate, 5, 135  
 All Hallows' Street, 188  
 Allon the fool, 99, 109  
 All Saints' (see "Churches")  
 Almshouses, the, 25, 96, 189  
 Almshouses, Nether Dean Bridge, 64  
 Almshouses at the Spital, 31  
 Alms-asking authorised, 69  
 Alnwick, 71, 127, 157, 317, 347, 390  
 Alnwick Abbey, 285, 297, 368  
 Alnwick Castle, 17  
 Alston, Cuthbert, shipmaster, 45  
 Alstwick, 146  
 Alum works on the Tyne, 359  
 Alvey, Arthur, 306  
 Alvey, Joseph, dismissed, 348  
 Alvey, Yeldard, vicar, 251, 260, 276, 299,  
 301, 332, 333, 336, 341, 345, 358, 369,  
 375, 381, 382, 410, 411  
 Amorie, Christian, 6  
 Anbell tithe, 50  
 Anchor in the Broad Chare, 48  
 Anderson, Abraham, 7; Alice, 13; Ann,  
 225, 389; Anna, widow, 237; Anne, 66,  
 206; Anne and Margaret, 340; Barbara,  
 13, 36, 66, 185, 246; Bertram, 36, 66, 68,  
 74, 88, 389, hostman, 142, 154, M.P.,  
 170; Clement, 10, 37, 298; Cuthbert,  
 251; David, 6; Dorothy, irregular mar-  
 riage of, 173; Elizabeth, 13, 170, 230,  
 389; Emmat, 17; Fortune, 127, 170;  
 Francis, 83, 88, 98, 142, 154, 182, 185,  
 191, 231, 237, 246, 249, 259, 389, alder-  
 man, 138, 178, 206, 255, mayor, 66,  
 148, 151, 194, 197, 249, sheriff, 95, 101;  
 Sir Francis, 246, 268; George, 43, 388;  
 Gillies, 388; Henry, 13, 36, 67, 68, 116,  
 120, 122, 152, 185, 389, alderman, 41,  
 74, 83, 127, 133, charges against, 114,  
 117, 119, burial of, 170, commissioner, 77,  
 135, defaulter, 224, draper, 221, executor,  
 4, hostman, 142, 154, 204, impropriety of,  
 173, lessee, 18, 42, 47, 64, 145, mayor,  
 7, 15, 17, 19, 22, 86, 95, 98, M.P., 13,  
 20, 35, 48, 76, 178, will of, 340; Sir  
 Henry, 170, 209, 213, 237, 252, 271, 302,  
 308, fined, 308, mayor, 197, 201, M.P.,  
 235, 257, 262, 269, 275, 380; Isaac, 13,  
 142, 153, 170, 206, 221; Izak, 389;  
 Isabel, 13; J., 223; Jane, 7, 388; John;  
 charges against, 173; Marion, 17, 178,  
 Mark, 8; Margaret, 35, 349, 389; Mary,  
 389; Mr., 69, 81; Ralph, 8; Richard, 5;  
 Robert, 191, 237, 249, 251, 338, 351, 364,  
 alderman, 22, 41, 74, 206, coalowner, 346,  
 death of, 388, defaulter, 224, hostman,  
 142, 153, 213, 241, 243, mayor, 292, 301,  
 salter, 342, sheriff, 135, 148, 224, 227,  
 vote of, 252; Roger, 67, 237, 246, sheriff,  
 194, 197; Thomas, 36, 116, 249; widow,  
 112; William, 389  
 Andrew, Mary, brewer, 349  
 Andrews, Robert, 172  
 Andrew, Robert, 238  
 Andrew, Thomas, brewer, 349  
 Andrew, Thomas, excommunicated, 147  
 Andrew, William, 280  
 Angus, earl of, in Newcastle, 27  
 Anthony, Henry, notary, 135, 185  
 Anthony, Marck, 6  
 Antonio, Marcus, 37  
 Antrim, lord, 362

- Apes, how to catch, 336  
 Appleby, Christopher, 93, sergeant, 130, shipowner, 45  
 Apprentices, extravagance of, 3, regulations, 14, 42, 52, 159, 238, 359, riot of the, 311, (Scotch) forbidden, 103  
 Armirer, John, mariner, 19  
 Armorer, Alexander, postmaster, 347; Grace, 178; Thomas, postmaster, 347; William, 178  
 Armourers wanted, 365  
 Arms of bad quality, 393  
 Arms of the town, Bridge end, 75  
 Armstrong, Arche, executed, 172; Lionel, Trinity House, 174; Thomas, executed, 172; William, executed, 197  
 Army (see "Defences")  
 Arnold, James, 10  
 Arrowsmith, Thomas, epitaph, 310  
 Arthur, Ralph, waterman, 128  
 Arundel, earl of, 310, 311  
 Ascough, Bryan, 163  
 Ashe, Robert, 19  
 Ashton, Roger, gent., 66  
 Askew, Robert, musician, 84, 93  
 Assessment for suppressing pirates, 224  
 Assessment to ship-money, 326, 328  
 Astley, Sir Jacob, in Newcastle, 350, 351, 363, 365, 396  
 Aston, Colonel, 396  
 Astwick, 146  
 Athy, Nicholas, carpenter, 97  
 Atkinson, Anthony, informer, 83; Isabel, 107, 219; Ralph, hostman, 154, merchant, 152; Robert, 68, age of, 78, alderman, 74, 219, buried, 107, marriage of, 79, mayor, 58, 65, merchant, 60, payment to, 76, sheriff, 1; Thomas, charge against, 182, tailor, 81  
 Atlanson, William, charge against, 150  
 Auditors, payment of, 314  
 Austin Friars (see "Hospitals")  
 Axwell, 96, 290, 294  
 Aydon, Emmett, 335  
 Aydon, Gawen, 237, merchant, 335  
 Ayrick-borne, the, 222  
 Ayre, Percival, hostman, 142  
  
 Babbington, Henry, knighted, 219  
 Bachelor, Thomas, 6  
 Back Row, the, 256  
 Backworth, 203  
 Badges for the poor, 69  
 Baileygate, 85, 256  
 Baillie, Dr. Robert, 407  
 Baite, Michael, teacher, 150  
 Baker, George, cordiner, 71; Sir George, 295; Oswald, 294  
 Bakers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Ballast Hills Riot, the, 311  
 Ballast Shores (see "Tyne")  
 Bamborough Castle, 17  
 Bamford, James, preacher, 94, 109; Mr., 68, preacher, 115  
 Bancroftes, 370  
 Banquets (see "Hospitality")  
 Bankes, Ralphe, 101  
 Banners, painting the, 64  
 Barde, Edward, mariner, 23, 135  
 Barker, Abraham, 60, 68, 159; Agnes, 178; Andrew, 369; Edward, 29, 45, 346; Elizabeth, 60, 68; Ellinor, 59; George, 50, 77; Isaac, 60, 68, 127; Jane, 68; John, 60, 68, 122, 127, 142, 154, 182; Mrs., 47; Robert, alderman, 22, 25, 107, mayor, 28, 35, printer, 375, sponsor, 127, will of, 59; Sarah, 60, 68; Susan, 60, 68, widow, 136  
 Barnard Castle, 88, 201, 236  
 Barnes, Ambrose, 294; bishop, death of, 40; John, minstrel, 9; Mungo, cook, 285  
 Barras Bridge, the, 56, 191, 233  
 Barthrum, Humphrey, 52  
 Bartlett, Richard, gentleman, 132, witness, 165, yeoman, 128  
 Bartram, Edward, age of, 78, hostman, 142; Elizabeth, 34; George, 24; James, 24, 34, 60, payment to, 76  
 Barwicke, William, 327  
 Basnett, George, puritan, 369  
 Bates, Cuthbert and Eleanor, 250; John, Trinity House, 22; Thomas, councillor 138, gentleman, 40  
 Batson, Roger, 26  
 Bawflower, David, 6  
 Baxter, John, 7, 33, 47, 116, 118, awyer, 69, Trinity House, 174, witness, 80  
 Baytes, William, 188  
 Beacons fired, 407  
 Beadham, Richard, mariner, 135  
 Beamish Park, 280  
 Beard, Edward, Trinity House, 174  
 Bear Market, the, 172  
 Beaumont, master, 221  
 Beckwith, Margaret, 152  
 Beckwith, Robert, merchant, 152  
 Bedford, countess of, 226  
 Bedlington, 37  
 Beerager brewing, 98  
 Beer, brewing of at Shields forbidden, 321; license for brewing, 98; "well-hopt," 283  
 Begging in Newcastle, 342; tolerated, 88  
 Belford, 347, 390  
 Bell, Christopher, 72; Gavin, excommunicated, 147; James, keelowner, 72; Percival, gentleman, 72; Thomas, payment to, 94; William, penance, 309  
 Bellasis's Company, 47  
 Bellasis, William, 266; Sir William, 275, 345, 346, 368, 369, 384, 403, 415; Timothea, 345  
 Bellingham, William, mace sergeant, 138  
 Bellman, the, 124  
 Bells, 85, 94, 99, 108, 207, 276, 291, 298, 303, 311, 316, 337, 375, 376  
 Belsay, 383  
 Bellshay, Richard, 389  
 Bennett, William, musician, 9  
 Bensham, 167  
 Benton, 13, 27  
 Benwell, 8, 34, 43, 96, 146, 387  
 Benwell hills, 284  
 Benwell Tower, 9

- Berry, Anthony, recusant, 274  
 Bertram, James, 34; John, 418; Robert, 268  
 Berwick, 47, 81, 157, 183, 311, 315, 326, 338, 347, 350, 356, 362, 367, 368, 390, 395, 415  
 Berwick Hill, 8  
 Bevelston, George, 6  
 Bewicke, Andrew, 111, shipmaster, 45;  
   Barbara, 178, 239; Cuthbert, 60, 178;  
   complaints by, 238, conservator, 215, 218, death of, 239, merchant, 172, petition of, 223; John, clerk, 165, 381; Robert, 231, 237, 351, 364, 221, 340, hostman, 166, mayor, 281, 287, 289, 362, 377, 372, sheriff, 206, 209, summoned to London, 384, 386, vote of, 252; Susan, 60  
 Biddleston, 199  
 Bigg Market, the, 3, 172, 392  
 Bilboes, a captain in the, 318  
 Bill, John, printer, 375  
 Billingford and Gresham, 10  
 Billingham, 27  
 Bilson, bishop of Winchester, 180  
 Bilton, Catherine, 133; James, 191, councillor, 138, payment to, 76  
 Bird, Matthew, witness, 185  
 Birnage, William, Frenchman, 132  
 Bishop Auckland, 27, 219, 375  
 Bittleston the tanner, 368, 369  
 Bitton, James, 237  
 Black Barborie, whipping of, 291  
 Black-burn, 96  
 Blackburn, Margaret, 194  
 Black Friars (see "Hospitals")  
 Black hall, 198  
 Black Heddon, 283  
 Black Horse Inn, the, 124  
 Black-lead, exported, 162  
 Blackley, Hob, executed, 198  
 Blair, Colonel, 407  
 Blakiston, John, chamberlain, 309, conduct in church, 333, dispute with Alvey, 332, M.P., 380; Sir Thomas, 207; Susanna, 332  
 Blaxton, Nicholas, coal vend, 242, hostman, 185, 213; William, 107, 185  
 Blenkinsop, Robert, churchwarden, 291  
 Blind Chare, Sidgate, the, 85  
 Blind man in Sandgate, 88  
 Blindman's Chare, 345  
 Bludder, Sir, 287; Sir Thomas, 163, 177, 233  
 Blue Stone on Tyne Bridge, 127  
 Blunt, Margaret, 44; Mark, payment to, 76; old Mrs., 109; widow, 45  
 Blyth, 174, 186, 187, 226, 356  
 Boast, John, priest, 29, 83, 87  
 Bohemian minister, a poor, 316  
 Boide, widow, 136  
 Boll of coal, explained, 149  
 Bome, William, 108  
 Bonfires, 99, 407  
 Bonner, Dorothy, 152; Mary, 250; William, 179, 238, commissioner, 127, hostman, 142, 154, 241, 243, merchant, 227, sheriff, 213, 220, witness, 80  
 Books, seditious, distributed, 370  
 Booth, Abraham, 238, 295, charge against, 352, merchant, 318, vote of, 252; Judith, 295  
 Borders, malefactors on the, 197; raids on the, 127; state of the, 175; soldiers levied for the, 45, 49; survey of the, 220  
 Borderers in Newcastle, 348  
 Boring rods for coal, 221  
 Borne, Bartram, 335  
 Borough, Sir John, in Newcastle, 367  
 Bost, John, priest, 29, 83, 87  
 Boston, Roger, 51  
 Bothal, 69  
 Bothwell, Earl of, in Newcastle, 82, 90  
 Bouth, Walter, 330  
 Bowdon, Stephen, 191  
 Bower, Jane, 246; William, 246  
 Bowes, Anne, 259; Annise, 79; Eleanor, 259; Francis, sheriff, 304, 311; Sir Francis, 259; George, 72, 79; Sir George, 259; Henry, 230, burial of, 258, senior, 237, sheriff, 249, 257, vote of, 252; Sir John, 295; Mary, 259; Mr., 81; Roger, 259; Robert, 79, 237; Thomas, burial of, 79, merchant, 258; William, 336, muster master, 359  
 Bowing at the name of Jesus, 371  
 Bowle, Richard, 226  
 Bowling in church alleys, 210  
 Bowmer, Lancelot, plumber, 97, 135; Thomas, hostman, 142  
 Bowyers and fletchers, 302  
 Box of whistles, 412  
 Boy cut for the stone, 88  
 Boyd, Andrew, coal surveyor, 210, 226, 253; Sir Andrew, 245, 261, 269  
 Bradforth, Luke, 37  
 Bradley, 35, 246, 268, 388  
 Bragging of the Scots, 395  
 Braithwait, William, merchant, 380  
 Brampton Church, disturbance in, 210  
 Brancepeth, 16, 42, 316, 340  
 Brandling, —, challenged, 225; Anne, 9; Cornelius, 10; Sir Francis, 242, 243, 283, 330; Henry, 9, mayor, 82; Jane, 296; John, 255, mariner, 42; Mrs., 7; Richard, 74, 83, 166; Robert, 130, 135, 166, 185, 233, 238, 256, 296, excommunicated, 297, fined, 317, high sheriff, 285, 297, M.P., 236, penance ordered, 318; William, 83; Ursula, 82  
 Brandon, East, 83  
 Branks, the, 104, 286  
 Brantingham, Anne, 38  
 Brereton, Sir William, account of Newcastle, 330  
 Brestoo, Nicholas, 101  
 Brewes, John, sheepstealer, 283  
 Brewers in Newcastle, number of, 349; taxed for defence of Newcastle, 358  
 Brewhouse at Shields forbidden, 288, 321  
 Brewing ale and beer, 98  
 Bricklayers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Bridge at the Cale Cross, 95  
 Bridge, the (see "Tyne Bridge")

- Brigg, George, councillor, 138, fishmonger, 133, hostman, 142  
 Briggess, Massie, 6, 129, 134  
 Briggs, Mr., 10  
 Brigham, Robert, 253; William, 295; widow, 136  
 Brighthouse, Robert, 203; Tempest, 203  
 Broad Chare, anchor in the, 48  
 Broad Garth, the, 5  
 Brookhorne, Martin, glazier, 97  
 Browne, Cuthbert, 6, 129; Edward, Trinity House, 174; George, 238, 406; James, 129; John, 6, 101, 129, brewer, 349; Joseph, rector of Gateshead, 230; Maryan, 6; Richard, 252, brewer, 349, keelman, 59; Thomas, shipowner, 45  
 Broxholme, John, 166  
 Brugh, 34  
 Brunton, 150  
 Buchanan, Sir John, 383, 385  
 Buckham, George, 101  
 Buckton, William, 82  
 Bullena, William, 129  
 Bulmer, Anne, 320; Charles, 320; Edward, steersman, 315, 319, 320; Margaret, 320; Sir Ralph, 233; Sir William, 320  
 Bunny, Francis, clerk, 27  
 Burgh, 129  
 Burial Registers of Newcastle, 422  
 Burn, Gerard, 12  
 Burne Hall, manor of, 167  
 Burne, Richard, slater, 52  
 Burra, my lord, 75  
 Burrell, Francis, 191, 237, chamberlain, 138, coal lessee, 197, 242, 243, conservator, 223, merchant, 136, mayor, 206, 209, sheriff, 151, 153; Mr., hostman, 185; Reynold, 284  
 Burrows, Francis, schoolmaster, 114, 120, 134  
 Burton, Edward, 257  
 Butchers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Buteland, John, bellman, 124  
 Butler, Alice, 47; Elizabeth, 152; Janet, 47; John, 237, 251, 315, conservator, 215, 223, letters of marque to, 271, merchant, 152; Mary, 294; Ralph, mariner, 271; Thomas, 237, 294, 330  
 Butlerage, complained of, 379  
 Butter, exportation of, 365; proclamation respecting, 374  
 Butterby, 70, 72  
 Byers, Richard, brewer, 349  
 Byker, 167, 230, 293  
 Bywell Dam, 33  
  
 Cale Cross, the, 33, 95, 280, 325  
 Callaley, 293  
 Callerton, High, 58  
 Calendar of prisoners, 284  
 Calverley, Sir John, 244, 275, commissioner, 255, 256  
 Calverley, Thomas, 11, 77, 88  
 Calvert, Mr., 412  
 Calvert, Nicholas, stall-holder, 332  
 Cambo, 199  
 Candles for Shields lighthouses, 199  
 Cant, Rev. Andrew, 407, 410  
 Cardecues, 276  
 Carlell, Isabel, 29  
 Carliol Croft, 188  
 Carlisle, 46, 82, 95, 123, 175, 350, 394, 415  
 Carpenter's Company (see "Incorp. Comp.")  
 Carr, Alice, 61, 105; Alse, 44; Anne, 44; Barbara, 43, 80, 259, 333, marriage of, 332; Catherine, 44; Christopher, 6; Edward, 44; Gracy, 44; Henry, 385; Isabel, 44; Isabella, 84; James, 44, 105, 237, 332, burial of, 84; Jane, 44; indicted, 288; John, 6, 33, 44, postmaster, 29, 30, 83, 85, 87, 90, 93, 112, 131, 182; Katherine, 289; Lawrence, 291; Leonard, 136, 238, 338, 345, 376, 384, charge against, 352, conservator, 215, 218, 223, hostman, 185, Nag's Head Inn, 325, 326, 331, salter, 342, sheriff, 328, 337, Margaret, 44, Ralph, 43, 44, 79, 84, 91, 118, death of, 249, merchant, 221, senior, 237; Robert, 288, 332; Thomas, 91, 125, 132, 284, 347; William, 11, 15, 79, 129; M.P., 44  
 Carsome, Richard, executed, 198  
 Carus, Katherine, 6, Richard, 6  
 Carvil, John, gent., 146  
 Cary, Sir Robert, 157  
 Casson, Anne, 13  
 Castle, the, 53, 171, 183, 189, 197, 250, 283; crown lease of, 225; inquisition, 231, 256  
 Castle-field, the, 85, 233, 256  
 Castle Garth, the, 225, 285, 279  
 Castle-moor, the, 256  
 Castle-mote, the, 85  
 Castle Stairs, the, 230  
 Castle Walls, the, 256  
 Catechising neglected, 381  
 Catholics (See "Papists")  
 Chaldron of coal explained, 149  
 Chamber, Robert, 83; Simon, 226; Robert, butcher, 11, Trinity House, 174, conservator, 215, 223  
 Chamberlains, 138  
 Champemon, Captain, 53  
 Chanlye, John, 12  
 Chapman, Henry, 17, 116, 119, 122, 125, 133, 178, 194, 237, 289, 344, alderman, 74, 138, 152, burial of, 250, coal lessee, 197, coalowner, 61, 242, commissioner, 135, conservator, 223, grand lessee, 133, defaulter, 224, hostman, 142, 153, 180, mayor, 35, 40, 41, 101, 110, 182, 184, 227, 235, 277, 281, M.P., 110, 162, payment to, 76, 159, sheriff, 1, 10, 13, 197, 201, vote of, 252; Marian, 6, 7, 178, the will of, 17; Matthew, 17, 105, 250, burial of, 178, coroner, 138, hostman, 142, 154, lease to, 290, payment to, 76, sheriff, 153, 162, witness, 67; Mr., 69, 245; Oswald, 43, mayor, 66, 178, sheriff, 17, Rebecca, 250; Robert, merchant, 132; Thomas, letters of marque to, 271; William, salter, 342  
 Chapman Chare, 107  
 Charles I., accession of, 262; in Newcastle, 311, 362, 368  
 Charley, Robert, 101

- Charlton, Cuthbert, Renold, and Wil iam, executed, 172, 197
- Charters :—To Trinity House, 22, 174; Newcastle, 53, 91, 137, 161; merchant adventurers, 162
- Chaitor, Chaytor, etc., Christopher of Butterby, 71; Cuthbert, 172; John, 71, character of, 114, merchant, 94, 128, gentleman, 245, 255, 256; Oswald, 12, 14, 107, 136, 228, 237, parish clerk, 56, 59, 252, weaver, 172; Roger, weaver, 172; Thomas of Butterby, 200, 204, 220, commissioner, 132
- Cheator, Nicholas, 192
- Cheisman, Sandrs., 85, 86
- Chesman, Alexander, mason, 97
- Chertsye, Benedict, 34
- Chest called "Adam," the, 70
- Chester-le-Street, 99, 108, 279, 336
- Chevarria, captain, 321
- Chicken, Robert, 19
- Chirton, 268
- Chopwell, 198, 279
- Chousley Wood, 395
- Church ceremonies omitted, 371
- Church livings on Tyneside, 47
- Churches, chapels, etc. :—
- All Saints' Church*—
- Bells of, 99, 298, 303, 375; bequests to, 96; bible, new, 376; Blakiston, John, at, 334; burials in, 9, 11, 25, 96, 133, 134, 162, 165, 225, 417; chimes, the, 376; churchwardens of, 136, 150, 375; clock, the, 376; communion plate, 290; communion wine for, 73, 80; curates of, 31, 247, 334, 371, 373; gallery of, 223, 375; in Speed's map, 189; inventory of, 297; mayor's pew in, 69; organ in, 303, 316; parish clerk of, 326; penance in, 61, 309; puritan preacher at, 410; repaired, 375; stalls in, 359; vane renewed, 359; vicar Alvey at, 333; visitation dinner, 376
- Gateshead Church*—
- Bells of, 291; burials at, 38; disbursements at, 276, 291; epitaph in, 310; parish clerk of, 259; rectors of, 42, 100, 230; stalls in, 332; value of, 47
- St. Andrew's Church*—
- Bells of, 99; bequests to, 71; burials in, 152, 339; churchwardens of, 173; communion wine for, 73, 80, 153; curates of, 55, 56, 99, 151, 247, 373; gifts to, 69; in Speed's map, 189; parish clerk of, 260; parish register, 392; penance in, 126, 173, 309; stipendiary priest at, 48
- St. Ann's Chapel*, 56, 123
- St. John's Church*—
- Baptism at, 268; bells of, 99; burials at, 8, 31, 56, 172, 197, 266, 339, 348, 417; chantry land, 172; communion wine for, 73, 80; curates of, 56, 71, 109, 150, 151; gravedigger at, 56; homilies, not read at, 183; in Speed's map, 189; parish clerk of, 14, 56, 59, 253; penance in, 182; stipendiary priest at, 48
- St. Nicholas' Church*—
- Afternoon lecture, 164; baptisms in, 112, 150, 246; bells of, 94, 99, 108, 207; bequests to, 36, 178; burials in, 2, 7, 9, 12, 13, 32, 33, 36, 37, 43, 47, 50, 57, 59, 66, 68, 74, 79, 82, 84, 91, 104, 106, 107, 110, 111, 152, 172, 178, 180, 198, 199, 211, 221, 231, 239, 246, 250, 253, 258, 267, 289, 294, 295, 302, 329, 335, 339, 340, 348, 388; chantry in, 50; churchwardens of, 375; churchyard of, 36, 134, 336; commission held in, 136; communion wine for, 73, 80, 98; Cosin's sermon in, 335; covenanters at, 410; curates of, 36, 52, 56, 59, 104, 334, 373; description of, 330; dispute about lectureship, 381; feast of St. George in, 219; gallery in, 231, 375; in Speed's map, 189; lectures in, 373, 381; marriages in, 79, 332; mending windows in, 94; monuments in, 267, 289, 303; parish clerks of, 36, 127, 152, 334; penance in, 309, 318; puritan preacher in, 404, 405, 410; stalls in, 99, 134, 335; steeple, repair of, 184; tithes of, 178, 327; value of the living, 47; vicars of, 26, 29, 51, 56, 60, 67, 106, 107, 284, 301; vicarage of, 52; visitations in, 23, 55, 146, 150, 153, 167, 173, 182; Wishart, Dr., to preach at, 373
- St. Thomas's*, Tyne Bridge, 24, 47, 173, 191, 192, 324
- Trinity House Chapel*, 327, 341
- City Road, 11
- Clandestine meetings in Newcastle, 369, 370
- Clarke, Dame, payment to, 109
- Clarke, Thomas, churchwarden, 298
- Clarkson, Ann, 25, 60; George, councillor, 138; Jane, 178; Robert and Thomas, 252
- Clavering, Anne, 294; Dudley, 198; Edward, indicted, 313; Eleanor, 294; Grace, 66; James, 191, 237, alderman, 230, 231, 252, 298, burial of, 293, conservator, 223, hostman, 162, mayor, 66, 180, 182, 220, 224, sheriff, 132, 135; Jane, 198; John, 198, 237, 252, 351, 364, coalowner, 243, high sheriff, 201, mayor, 287, 290, 292, 294, 315, sheriff, 220, 224; Sir John, 338, 397; Joseph, 242; Robert, 198, 293, high sheriff, 37; Sarah, 198; Thomas, 289; William, 37, 280
- Clavering Place, 290
- Claxton, Anne, 43; Henry, merchant, 64; Sir John, 207; Mr., 64, tax gatherer, 85; William, 43
- Clerck, John, 6, 67; Thomas, 6
- Clervaux, Elizabeth and William, 72
- Clesby, Humphrey, 207
- Cleugh, Alexander, carriageman, 5; Thomas, brewer, 349; Sanders, 83
- Cliborn, Cliborne, Cleborn, etc. :—Henry, Trinity House, 174; John, 107, church-

- warden, 150, scrivener, 135, Trinity House, 174, witness, 80  
 Clifford, lord, governor of Newcastle, 367  
 Clifton, Mark, witness, 336  
 Clinker-built lighter, a, 72  
 Clock on the Sandhill, 38  
 Clopton, John, receiver, 45, 49  
 Close, the, 43, 60, 216, 230, 256, 324, 334, 344  
 Close Gate, the, 67, 88, 188, 208  
 Cloths, customs duties upon, 77, 227, 341 ; exports of, 162 ; seized at Shields, 128 ; shipments of, 260 ; stolen by Hollanders, 319  
 Cloth Market, the, 79  
 Clowers, John, prisoner, 286  
 Clughe, Sanders, carriageman, 83  
 Coal, coal trade, etc. :—  
   Adulteration, 221, 241, 246, 345  
   Answers to complaints, 63, 244, 296  
   Bills concerning, 163, 176, 236, 269  
   Boring rods, 221  
   Collectors of impost, 226, 253  
   Collieries : Bellasis, 250 ; Benwell, 96, 289, 387 ; Black Burn, 96 ; Brunton, 150 ; Cocken, 43 ; Crossflatt, 387 ; Cross Moor, 43, 60 ; East Denton, 25 ; Elswick, 7, 74, 178, 252 ; Fitburn Moor, 43, 250 ; Gateshead, 18, 29, 32, 33, 34, 42, 60, 61, 67, 252 ; Goreflatt, 387 ; Greenlawe, 197 ; Grindley, 197 ; Hartley, 150 ; Higham Dykes, 250 ; Hollinbush, 80, Hollinside, 43 ; Kenton, 7 ; Meadow fields, 387 ; Newburn, 61 ; Newbiggin, 43, 195, 250 ; Newham, 250 ; Ravensworth, 61, 96, 206 ; Ravenshall, 221 ; South side of Tyne, 40 ; Stumple-wood-head, 387 ; Whickham, 18, 33, 34, 42, 60, 61, 64, 67, 206, 228, 249 ; Whitby Moor, 250 ; Winlaton, 388  
   Collieries laid up, 349  
   Colliers, arming of, 390  
   Digging for, 216  
   Farmers of, 177, 233, 287, 387  
   Fitting and fitters, 143, 340  
   Fleet, protection of the, 204, 224, 253, 263, 270, 277, 281, 293, 331  
   Free trade in, 236, 296, 345, 354  
   Gift coal, 346  
   Glass making, use of in, 212, 416  
   "Grand lease," the, 18, 32, 33, 34, 37, 42, 43, 47, 60, 61, 67, 69, 83, 85, 96, 110, 112, 117, 125, 132, 133, 198 ; assignment of, 133 ; dispute respecting, 117, 125, 206, 360  
   Hoys, 104, 204  
   Liable to ship-money, 346  
   Loading at Shields forbidden, 319  
   London citizens' grievance, 62, 154  
   A maid-of-honour's interest in, 387  
   Measure of, 149, 163, 167, 182, 226, 241, 269, 356  
   New project concerning, 376  
   Parliamentary grievances, 236, 253, 261, 269, 287, 387  
   Presents of, 83, 337  
   Price of, 62, 153, 270, 345, 355, 387  
   Ships employed in, 204, 332  
 Coal, coal trade, etc. :—  
   Shipment of, 139, 186, 212, 278  
   Shipmasters' complaints, 345, 354  
   Staple town for, 205  
   Stoppage of, threatened, 394  
   Surveyorship of, 211, 226, 233, 236, 245, 253, 260, 269, 287  
   Taxes on, 72, 75, 85, 104, 143, 163, 167, 186, 187, 226, 233, 244, 255, 272, 278, 281, 287, 296, 326, 331, 343, 354, 357, 387  
   "Ten" weight, the, explained, 150  
   Vend regulations, 153, 164, 241, 255, 357, 387  
   Workers, number of, 349  
 Coats, James, 276  
 Cock, Garrett, 248 ; George, cordiner, 50 ; Gerrard, 238 ; Henry, 237, defaulter, 224, merchant, 318, sheriff, 277, 281 ; John, 224, 303, 370, fined, 340 ; Ralph, 33, 237, 351, 364, 370, sheriff, 269, 277, mayor, 317, 321, 328, witness, 67 ; Samuel, 298 ; Thomas, 224 ; William, 237, 244  
 Cocken, 15, 79, 259  
 Coke, secretary, in Newcastle, 367  
 Cockson, Robert, 102  
 Cole, Edward, 16 ; James, smith, 11, 36, will of, 16, yeoman, 194 ; Jane, 16, 36, 194 ; Janet, 16 ; John, 221, 332 ; Nicholas, 16, 36, 194, 340, mayor, 377, sheriff, 311, 317 ; Ralph, 16, 276, 306, 338, 340, 364, hostman, 166, mayor, 311, 317, 322, 325, sheriff, 262, 269, stallholder, 332, summoned to London, 323, will of, 36 ; Richard, 16, 36 ; Robert, 16, 36 ; Thomas, 16, 37, 102, 340  
 Collingwood, Dorothy, 285 ; Edward, 45 ; Fortune, 170 ; Francis, 180 ; George, 82 ; Henry, 178 ; John, 45 ; Margaret, 178 ; Robert, 56 ; Sir Cuthbert, 37, 82 ; Trevanion, 83 ; William, 45  
 Collingwood House, Grindon Chare, 60  
 Colmore, Clement, LL.D., 23, 42, 61, 83, 88, 100, 135  
 Colson, Janet, 111 ; John, surgeon, 135 ; Thomas, yeoman, 45  
 Colverley, Mr., payment to, 76  
 Colyer, William, brewer, 349  
 Comedy of Terence played, 145  
 Commandments omitted, 150  
 Comminge, Francis, swordbearer, 26  
 Common bell, the, 108, 207, 337  
 Communion wine, 73, 80, 98, 153  
 Conduit, the common, 129, 360 ; without Westgate, 109  
 Coney skins exported, 162  
 Conference with Charles I., 415  
 Conformity enforced, 86  
 Coniscliffe, 152  
 Conservancy (see "Tyne")  
 Constable, Michael, 95 ; Robert, 199 ; Sir William, coal meter, 167  
 Constables of Newcastle, the, 259  
 Conventicle supper, a, 385  
 Conway, lord, 391, 393, 414  
 Conyers, Alice, 326 ; family, the, 225 ; James,



- yeoman, 166; John, 326; burial of, 225  
 Sir John, 395, 397; Mr., royal nominee, 251; Roger, 225, 326; Sarah, 326; Thomas, will of, 326
- Cook, Cooke, etc., Ally, 10; Anne, 59; Christian, 188; Christopher, 198; Elizabeth, 2; Henry, 50, 188; John, 2, sheriff, 201, 206; Margaret, 237; Robert, 192, 230, suit against, 353; Thomasine, 2; William, 194, 231, 238, charge against, 182, Trinity House, 174
- Cookson, Ann, 332; John, tailor, 182
- Coopers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")
- Copper mine on the Derwent, 66
- Copperthwaite, Christopher, 332
- Corbrick, George, shipmaster, 45
- Cordwainers, Company ("see Incorporated Companies")
- Cork shoes forbidden, 160
- Cornelius, John, victualler, 359
- Corner, Thomas, 337
- Corn in Newcastle, 116, 122, 364, 390, 393, 417
- Corpus Christi plays, the, 8, 52, 133
- Coroners, 54, 138
- Cosin, Dr., 294, 335
- Cotham, Mundeville, 295
- Cotton, Oliver, gentleman, 66; Sir Robert, 170, 183
- Cottons exported, 162
- Coulson, John, 376; John, surgeon, 75
- Counters, two cast of, 69
- Court of Pie-powder, 138; of Record, 138
- Couthard, Alexander, 229
- Covenant and Covenanters, 344, 350, 367, 368, 371, 383, 405, 409, 411
- Coward, Alice, widow, 336
- Cowgate, 233
- Cowling, Elizabeth, 152
- Cowpen, 259
- Cowper, lord chancellor, 198
- Cowtherd, Alexander, 192
- Cowton, East, 308
- Cowton Grange, 302, 308
- Cowghram, Bartram, 55
- Cox, Ralph, 44, 215
- Coxlodge, 233
- Coxon, Elizabeth, common scold, 173
- Cozen, Edward, brewer, 349
- Cradocke, Dr., 275
- Craggs, Thomas, charge against, 183
- Crake, Anna, 183
- Cramlington, 48
- Crane, the high, 161
- Cranforth, Hector, 129
- Craster, Alice, 7, 178; Edmund, 7, 178; Edward, 239; Eleanor, 178; Jane, 7; John, 178; Thomas, 178
- Crawforth, William, mariner, 5
- Crofts, Cicely, maid-of-honour, 387
- Croft bridge, 127
- Crome, Edward, 142, 154; Robert, 4; Thomas, 136, 238, hostman, 154, coal-owner, 242
- Cross Moor, the, 34, 43
- Crowe, Ralph, 298
- Curfew bell, 108
- Curry, Richard, shipwright, 135
- Curtailed knave, a, 61
- Curwen, Patrick, 266
- Customers of Newcastle, the, 71, 97, 106, 111, 112, 122, 125, 127, 198, 227, 249
- Custom House, the, 166
- Customs, alleged fraud on the, 128; grievance, a, 260; fees, 379; orders, 282; payment of evaded, 319; on wares, 112
- Cuthbert, Thomas, notary, 194
- Cutter, William, witness, 9
- Cutpurse, 82, 217
- Dabbs, Mr., 376
- Dagg, Thomas, councillor, 138
- Dallahaie, widow, 6
- Dalton, Elizabeth, widow, 146; John, 153; Robert, 192; Robert, brewer, 349; Roger, brewer, 349; Symond, brewer, 349; Thomas, 94, tanner, 77; William, brewer, 349
- Dancing forbidden, 160
- Danish fleet recruited in Newcastle, 280
- Dansker, Simon, captain, 318
- Darell, Sir Marmaduke, 177, 233
- Dark Saturday, 125
- Darlington, 36, 71, 87, 123, 236, 347, 407
- Darnbrook, 197, 294
- Davel, John, 274
- Davison, Alexander, 191, 237, 240, 289, 303, alderman, 344, executed, 172, hostman, 194, knighted, 368, letters of marque to, 271; mayor, 269, 277, 350, 351, 362, 363, 366, 367, 371, merchant, 226, receiver, 272, sheriff, 190, 194; Sir Alexander, 410; Edward, 345; John, 133; Joseph, 345; Ralph, 345; Samuel, 345; Thomas, chamberlain, 138, vote of, 252; widow, 6; William, 376
- Davy, Robert, collector, 226
- Dawson, Elizabeth, 334; George, churchwarden, 136; payment to, 76; Henry, 334, 369
- Day, Edward, 102
- Deckham, Henry, 203; John, 203; Thomas, 203; William, 203
- Deckham Hall, Gateshead, 203
- Defence of the coasts, 281, 293, 294
- Defences of Newcastle, 263, 270, 277, 278, 332, 342, 351, 352, 357, 363, 366, 391, 394, 396
- Defences of Tynemouth, 342
- Delaval, Claudius, 237, 249; Edward, gentleman, 26; John, 403, esquire, 295, knighted, 219; Sir John, 266, 288; Mr., Tynemouth, 49; Peter, 146; Ralph, commissioner, 184; Sir Ralph, 266; Robert, 107, 237, 259, 266
- Denant, Christopher, 72
- Denam, 7
- Dent, Alice, 178; George, 50, 73, 85, 88, clerk of the chamber, 136, hostman, 142; Mr., 85; Robert, 50, 85, 88, hostman, 142; William, 10, 84, 95, 136
- Denton, James, 245; Mr., curate, 173
- Denton, a dog from, 99, 109
- Denton Chare, 50, 59

- Dent's Close, 345  
Dennyson, Ambrose, Edward, and John, executed, 285  
Deodands, 55, 177  
Derwent, copper mine on the, 66  
Devil's Chancellor, the, 286  
Dice playing forbidden, 160  
Dickham, Mary, 130; Thomas, 130  
Dickens, William, gilder, 75  
Dickenson, Joselin, 246; William, 60  
Dickson, John, miller, 135; Thomas, rope-maker, 123  
Digby, Sir John, 400  
Diggles, Leonard, 19, 77  
Dinsdale, 289  
Dinners, etc. (see "Hospitality")  
Dinning, Barbara, 173  
Dispute about the grand lease, 112; at a wedding, 332  
Disputed Parliamentary election, 380  
Dissington, 48, 146, 266  
Dobson, George, brewer, 349; Peter, 101; William, brewer, 349  
Dod, Paul, master and mariner, 305  
Dodds, Matthew, 230; Thomas, a natural, 94; skinner, 76, 97  
Dodds, Thomas, fool, 109  
Dods, David, labourer, 37; Henry, executed, 172; William, brewer, 349  
Doffenbye's house, 199  
Doggett, Thomas, yeoman, 128  
Doncombe, Edward, 226  
Dominicans (see "Hospitals")  
Doughtie, Margaret, indicted, 288  
Douglas, Sir William, 400, 401  
Dove Cote Close, 232  
Downes, Ralph, searcher, 128, 132  
Drap, Mr. 246  
Drapers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
Draper, Timothy, 106, 237, conservator, 215, commissioner, 77, customer, 249, hostman, 142, 154, sheriff, 187, 190  
Drawbridge on Tyne bridge, 364, 366  
Drinking at Alice Coward's, 336  
Dryburn, 87  
Ducking stool, the, 276, 291  
Dudley, Ambrose, 128, 165, 198, 227; Anne, 198; Dorothy, 198; Jane, 198; Robert, 122, 191, alderman, 138, burial of, 198, character of, 113, commissioner, 77, 136, customer, 79, 198, hostman, 142, knighted, 159, mayor, 151, 153, payment to, 76, sheriff, 35, 40, 41; Sir Robert, 198  
Dudley, Toby, 198, 272  
Duel between Selby and Trollop, 343  
Duglas, Thomas, 191  
Dunbar, earl of, 166  
Dungeon in the Castle, 54  
Dunghill at the Castle, 232  
Dunkirkers, reports of, 263, 271, 277, 292, 320  
Dunn, Thomas, brewer, 349  
Dunning, John, 89  
Dunse, 363  
Dunstanborough Castle, 17  
Dunston, 228  
Dunglass, 157  
Durham, William, Sabbath breaker, 173  
Durham, 11, 33, 47, 72, 87, 99, 123, 201, 219, 236, 282, 286, 326, 347, 375, 400, 406, 408, 415  
Dust-little-mill, 199  
Dutchmen, alms to, 303  
Duxfield, William, churchwarden, 291  
Dymoke, Captain, 400  
Eachwick, 59  
Earlocks prohibited, 160  
Earsdon, 27, 48  
Easington, 279  
East Cowton, 308  
East Field, the, 347  
Eastgate, the, 68  
East Leyton, 225  
East Renton, 213  
Eclipse of the sun, 125  
Edderstone, 199  
Eden, Ann, 250; Henry, 237, coalowner, 242, 243, hostman, 185; John, conservator, 215; Robert, 24, 44, apothecary, 77, character of, 114, payment to, 76, sheriff, 40, 48; Thomas, cordiner, 44; William, master and mariner, 77  
Eglingham, 24  
Eight o'clock bell, the, 108  
Eighton, Hedley, 181  
Eighton, Over and Nether, 181  
Ejectment, case of, 85  
Eland, Anthony, age of, 78  
Ellerker's Company, 47  
Ellins, Christopher, 136  
Ellison, Ann, 11; Andrew, 11; Barbara, 3; Catherine, 44; Cuthbert, 2, 3, 4, 11, 198, 237; Dorothy, 198; George, 11; Jane, 303; John, merchant, 2; Margaret, 11; Matthew, 136; Percival, 230; Robert, 3, 4, 135, 138, 206, 256, 303, chamberlain, 138, wife of, 150; Stephen, 11  
Elizabeth, Queen, death of, 157  
Elmeden, William, 320  
Elmer, Christopher, hostman, 142  
Elswick, 43, 111, 178, 233, 259, 283, 289; coalmines at, 7, 74, 178, 252; farmhold at, 34; town of, 146  
Elstwick, 146  
Elvinge church, 112  
Ely, bishop of, in Newcastle, 311  
Embroiderer without a nose, 99  
Emildon's Arms, 320  
Emerson, George, 60, 68; John, sheriff, 362, 377; Richard, 60; Robert, 60  
Errington, Anthony, 238, 315, merchant, 377, 379; Christopher, shipowner, 45; George, Hurst Castle, 29, 31; Lancelot, 285; Martin, 45, 174, 238; Mr., of the Manor, 96; Ralph, 359; Robert, 22, 77; Stephen, 8; Thomas, 97, 182; William, yeoman, 146  
Eslington, 82, 170  
Esplee, widow, 136  
Essex, earl of, 93, 122  
Estman, Paul, a Dutchman, 6  
Estropp, 95

- Eure, lord, 87  
 Ewbank, Cuthbert, curate, 9, 31, 52, 59;  
     Henry, 207, clerk, 29, 192; Thomas,  
     237, conservator, 215  
 Ewes Burne, the, 167  
 Exchange, the burned, 376  
 Executions in Newcastle, 65, 70, 83, 86,  
     172, 175, 197, 211, 284, 286, 292  
 Exports from the Tyne, 162  
 Eye of the North, 39
- Fairs, 256  
 Fallowfield, Henry, councillor, 138  
 False villains in Newcastle, 369  
 Faralles, Jasper, 44  
 Farbridge, John, glover, 67  
 Farnaby, Alice, 5; George, 4, 12, 68, 97,  
     116, age of, 78, alderman, 111, 138, burial  
     of, 152, commissioner, 127, 129, 135,  
     grand lessee, 133, hostman, 142, mayor,  
     65, 70, 74, 85, 115, 125, 132, sheriff, 48,  
     51, sued, 127, witness, 5; Henry and  
     Jacob, 249.  
 Farnside, Henry, 194; Jacob, 194  
 Fee-farm of Newcastle, 53, 94, 119  
 Fell, Alice, 320; John, brewer, 349;  
     Richard, captain, 282  
 Felling, 289, 296  
 Felling Shore, 290  
 Felling Wharf, 238  
 Felton, Anthony, 71, 77, 129, gentleman, 6,  
     orchard of, 71; Eleanor, 282; John,  
     assassin, 282  
 Fenham, 345  
 Fenkell, Henry, 31  
 Fenwick, Barbary, charge against, 182,  
     indicted, 288, widow, 167; Dorothy, 199;  
     George, wedding guest, 332, 334; Gerard,  
     33, 199; Grace, 199; Isabel, 33; Janet,  
     6; John, 47, 199, 276, 389; Colonel  
     John, 338, 350, commissioner, 184;  
     Lieutenant-Colonel John, 57, 368, 369,  
     376; merchant, 318; Sir John, 213, 263,  
     322, 403; Margaret, 199; Marmaduke,  
     304; Oswald, charge against, 182, indicted,  
     288; Rendall, indicted, 288; Robert,  
     ancient bearer, 93, of Kenton, 7, weaver,  
     222; Roger, 199; Sir Roger, 199;  
     Thomas, 172; William, 127, 172, 389;  
     Sir William, 199, 276, 394  
 Ferinsed, Jacob, 251  
 Festivities (see "Hospitality")  
 Fewler, Raphie, 330  
 Field Houses, the, 34  
 Fife, Thomas, Trinity House, 22  
 Fire in town clerk's office, 376  
 Fish, supply of, 365  
 Fisher, Margaret, 47; Richard, parish clerk, 267  
 Fith-Harris, Grace, 4  
 Fitting coals, first named, 143  
 Flacke, G., 206  
 Flanders, States of, in Newcastle, 92  
 Fleetwood, Sir William, 185  
 Flesh Market, the, 147  
 Fletcher, Christobel, 31; Nicholas, min-  
     strel, 9  
 Fletchers and bowyers, 302
- Flotsam and jetsam, 55, 177  
 Foggart, Thomas, 12  
 Fools, 69, 84, 99, 109  
 Foot-posts, 328  
 Ford, 284  
 Foreshore of the Tyne, 353 (see also "Tyne")  
 Forsyde, William, 129  
 Forster, Christopher, curate, 334; Gawin,  
     336, 349; John, neglecting church, 182;  
     Sir John, 199; Nicholas, executed, 211,  
     high sheriff, 157; Peter, councillor, 138;  
     Richard, 387; Thomas, mettor, 193  
 Fort to be built, 394  
 Forth, the, 88, 232, 256  
 Fortification of Newcastle ordered, 366  
 Foster, Angus, 57; John, prisoner, 286;  
     Robert, 101  
 Fountaine, Richard, 238  
 Fowberry, John, 246; Robert, 134, 207,  
     246, 251, will of, 246; Thomas, 246  
 Fowler, Ralph, merchant, 370  
 Fox skins exported, 162  
 Franklin, Isabella, 68, 84; John, 84; be-  
     quest, 15; of Cocken, 212  
 Free eatage of Bensham, 167  
 Freer, Elizabeth, 6  
 Freese Rooter, a, 364  
 French, Edward, 237, conservator, 215, 223,  
     innkeeper, 284  
 French, a teacher of, 109  
 French noblemen's sons in Newcastle, 131  
 Freville, George, commissioner, 132  
 Friars (see "Hospitals")  
 Friar Chare, 79  
 Friarside, 106  
 Friende, Ann, excommunicated, 146  
 Frind, John, 102; Nicholas, 102; Peter,  
     102  
 Frisell, Michael, Gosforth, 51  
 Fruitfulness of a Scotchwoman, 295  
 Full water, death at, 105  
 Fuster, George, surgeon, 69  
 Fye, John, of Ipswich, 111
- Gainsby, Anne, 61  
 Gallery in All Saints', 223  
 Gallery in St. Nicholas', 231  
 Gallowgate, 229  
 Gallows, the, 55, 86, 139, 161, 233, 284,  
     285  
 Gaol (see "Castle")  
 Garbutt, Richard, plasterer, 336  
 Gardiner, Ralph, baptism of, 268  
 Garnett, William, defaulter, 224  
 Garrand, Samuel, 250  
 Garret, Henry, 6; Robert, clerk, 24  
 Garters of silk forbidden, 160  
 Gascoigne, Barbara, 170, 181; Jane, 105;  
     Mr., 61; Thomas, 185; Sir William, 13,  
     170, 181  
 Gastell, John, 42  
 Gates of Newcastle, 314, 351  
 Gateshead, chantry at, 33; church-stile, 67;  
     coal (see "Coal"); execution at, 87  
 Geary, Edward, 122  
 Genison, name of, 16  
 George, Isabel, 129; Mathew, 129

- Gibb, Sir Henry, 396  
 Gibbins, William, letters of marque to, 271  
 Gibson, Alan, 19; Gossip, 10; James, locksmith, 172; Jane, 96; John, 110, age of, 78, death of, 96, merchant, 80, payment to, 76, sheriff, 51, 56, 58; Reginald, Trinity House, 174; Richard, merchant, 58; Robert, 96, hostman, 142; William, churchwarden, 271  
 Gilbert Leazes, 340  
 Gilbert, Thomas, chapman, 135  
 Gilpin, Bernard, 15, 106; Elizabeth, 15  
 Girdles of silk forbidden, 160  
 Girlington, Nicholas, jun., 11  
 Glass trade, the, 207, 208, 228, 352, 416  
 Glass works, 331  
 Glaziers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Glenham, Sir Thomas, 400  
 Gloucester Hill, Warkworth, 2  
 Glover, John, postmaster, 347  
 Godfraie, Mr., 69  
 Gofton, Bartram, 71, 95, 99, 108, 138; John, brewer, 349  
 Golden Lion Inn, 239  
 Goldsborough, John, chaplain, 50  
 Goldsmiths' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Good, Alice, sponsor, 112; George, 112  
 Goose Green Close, 232  
 Gordon, James, 409  
 Gosforth, 48, 51, 151, 173, 289, 297  
 Goswick, encampment at, 368  
 Gower, Alice, 13, 170; Sir Edward, fined, 225; John, 13, 170  
 Grame, Alexander, 6  
 Grames, the, 175  
 Grammar School, the, 91, 109, 140, 189, 246, 251, 268  
 Grand lease, the (see "Coal")  
 Gray, Grey, etc., Agnes, 247; Alice, 32; Anne, 294; Barbara, 247; Christobel, 31; Cuthbert, 150, 183, 195, 237, 243, 250; Dorothy, 31, 91, 247; Edward, 185, 251; Elizabeth, 150, 259, 335; Francis, 247; Henry, 185, 247; Humphrey, 31, 91; Isabel, 31, 248; John, 6, 31, 248, 251, draper, 24, 77, 150, tailor, 77, widow of, 251; Margaret, 32, 150, 154; Mary, 32; Oswald, 248, 251, 349; Ralph, 251, 376, 378, 380, 385, 386, defaulter, 224, merchant, 258, sheriff, 281, 287; Sir Ralph, 202; Richard, 248; Robert, 32, 91, coal-owner, 242, seminary priest, 203, tailor, 185, 247; Thomas, 335, mace sergeant, 138, mariner, 247, tanner, 185, Trinity House, 23; Sir Thomas, 294; William, 24, ballast watcher, 94, draper, 150, historian, 150, 250, merchant, 335, tanner, 248, will of, 31  
 Grey of Wark, lord, 288  
 Great Charter, the, 137  
 Greatham Hospital (see "Hospitals")  
 Greensworlle, Anne, healed, 88  
 Greenwell, Anne, 96, 110; John, 96, 97, 110, 111, hostman, 142; Lionel, 74, 138; Margaret, 111; Michael, 56; Robert, 110; Thomas, 111; William, 96, burial of, 110, merchant, 80, payment to, 76, sheriff, 65, 70, 74  
 Gresham and Billingford, 10  
 Grievances (see "Municipal Abuses")  
 Grindon Chare, 60, 107  
 Groat Market, the, 50  
 Guildhall, the, 38, 219, 324  
 Guilds, complaint respecting the, 313  
 Gunner Tower, 205  
 Gunpowder plot, the, 210  
 Guns fired in church, 210  
 Haddington, earl of, 396  
 Haggerston, Thomas, 389  
 Hair, not to be worn long, 160  
 Hall, Adrian, drunkard, 182; Alice, baptised, 112; Sir Alexander, 302, 332; Anne, 35, 50, 112; Edward, brewer, 349, hostman, 142, payment to, 76; Elizabeth, penance, 309; Francis, 47, 182; Isabel, 185; Jane, brewer, 349; John, 375, 376, brewer, 349, executed, 172; Lancelot, yeoman, 135; Mary, coal-owner, 242; Matthew, brewer, 349; horsestealer, 283; Nicholas, 31; Pallas, witness, 166; Richard, 31; Thomas, 33, 179, 185, coalowner, 242, hostman, 154, fined, 221; William, 12, 237, burial of, 302, letters of marque to, 271, merchant, 221, mayor, 257, 262, 315, penance, 309, sheriff, 182, 184, vote of, 252  
 Hall of Chester-le-Street, 99, 109  
 Hall monument, the, 303  
 Halliman, Martin, 24  
 Hallman, Thomas, evidence of, 336  
 Hamilton, marquis of, 363, 397  
 Hancock, Humphrey, 27; Mr., 69  
 Handley, Thomas, surgeon, 135  
 Harbottle, 46  
 Harbottle, Percival, 96  
 Harbott, William, drunkard, 173  
 Harcas, Edward, 12  
 Harcastle, John, 64, 69, 97  
 Harding, Agnes, 180; Isabel, 25; Ralph, 180; Richard, patron, 50  
 Harle, George, defaulter, 224, salter, 342; James, 12, defaulter, 224; Leonard, 19, 45; Marg., 12; Ralph, 12; Robert, 332  
 Harrigade, Richard, mariner, 23, 107  
 Harris, Mr., 69  
 Harrison, Barnard, 101; James, excommunicated, 147; John, 340; Nicholas, 11; Richard, mariner, 136, shipowner, 45; William, 238, shipmaster, 45  
 Hartburn rectory, 199  
 Hart Close, 345  
 Hartlepool, 174, 214, 236, 326  
 Hartlie, priest, 31  
 Haswell, 43, 302, 388  
 Hatbands regulated, 160  
 Hathericke, William, 231  
 Haughton, 96  
 Havercamp, Godfrey, collector, 226  
 Hawcopp, 198  
 Hawfield, 30

- Hawick, 199  
 Hawks-bill, the, 319  
 Hayning, grounds of, 290  
 Hayning, Luke, 61  
 Hayropp, George, 238  
 Head of the Side, 179  
 Heath, John and Thomas, 197; Sir Robert, 294, 304, 320, 342, 348, 351, 357; Thomas, storekeeper, 351  
 Heaton, 7, 167, 264  
 Heaton Hall, royal visit to, 219  
 Hebborn, Ralph, 44  
 Hebburn, 4, 33, 207  
 Hebson, Anthony, 259; Barnard, parish clerk, 260; family, 260; Thomas, parish clerk, 260  
 Heckstetter, Daniel, 66, 221; Emmanuel, 66; Jane, 66; Thomasine, 67  
 Heddou-on-the-Wall, 5  
 Heddon Law, 398  
 Hedley, Alexander, coal-surveyor, 253; Nicholas, 12, 33, 68, 133; Robert, wright, 75; Rowland, 44.  
 Hedleyhope, 249  
 Hedwin Streams, 53, 177, 309, 327, 353  
 Hedworth, Adrian, 116, burial of, 180, character of, 113, councillor, 138, hostman, 142, sheriff, 101, 110; Agnes, 180; Charles, 83, 237; John, 237; Marmaduke, 336; Richard, 180  
 Heighington, 68  
 Helcote, John, excommunicated, 147  
 Heley, George, merchant, 50; sheriff, 35; 50; Robert, merchant, 35; William, 50, 206, chamberlain, 138, payment to, 76  
 Henderson, James, excommunicated 146; Rev. Alexander, 404, 410; Robert, 237  
 Henryson, Dr., 251, 260, 300, 309  
 Henzell family, the, 208  
 Heron, Barbrey, 13; Christian, 6; Cuthbert, charge against, 258; Elizabeth 23; Geoffrey, 288; Margaret 13; Thomas, will of, 13; Tristram, musician, 23  
 Heron's close, 199  
 Heslop, Robert, armourer, 76, 100, 130  
 Hethe, Margaret, 17  
 Hethfield, Robert, 29  
 Heworth, 12  
 Heworth, Nether, 2  
 Heworth Staith, 17  
 Hexham, 233, 397  
 Hexhamshire poisoned with popery, 210  
 Hickes, Mr, 69  
 Hidage, 140  
 High Crane, the, 161  
 High Friar Chare, 229  
 Hildyard, Sir Christopher, 33  
 Hills overlooking Newcastle, 364  
 Hills, Mr., Trinity House, 245  
 Hills, Roger, 330  
 Hilton, Henry, complaint against, 321; John, 84; lady, 71; Ralph, 95; Thomas, 109; Sir William, 95  
 Hinde, Thomas, cook, 92  
 Hindmers, Gaven, chandler, 133; George, brewer, 349; mace sergeant, 138; William, Trinity House, 174  
 Hobson, Lancelot, 352  
 Hodshon, Hodgson, etc.; Dorothy, 60; Elizabeth, 33; George, 376, chamberlain, 138; Isabel, 33; James, 130, merchant, 24, 33; John, 6, 24, 129; Lancelot, 33; Mr., of Hebburn, 207; Owinge, 34; Richard, 24, 89, 130, 385, alderman, 10, 22, charge against, 335, fined, 221, mayor, 1, 6, 7, will of, 33; Robert, 33, coalowner, 242; Sir Robert, charge against, 264, 274; Thomas, 56; William, 11, 24, 130, 133, hostman, 142, 153, parson of Gateshead, 24, sheriff, 33  
 Hogmagog, 69  
 Hogg, John, brewer, 349  
 Holbron, John, 111  
 Holbourne, John, 215, 224, 238; Roger, 224; Robert, 224; Thomas, 224  
 Holden, Richard, carpenter, 97  
 Holdsworth, Elizabeth, 107; Henry, 107; John, 107; Mary, 107; Mr., preacher, 115; Rachel, 107; Richard, vicar, 29, 51, 60, 67, 68, 97, 105, 109, 124, 131, 164, buried, 106; William, 107  
 Holland, earl of, in Newcastle, 311  
 Hollinbush, 80  
 Hollinside, 180  
 Holy Island, 263  
 Holmes, Henry, 379, 385  
 Hood, Agnes, 228  
 Hook, Thomas, rector of Gateshead, 195  
 Hope, Sir Thomas, 400  
 Hopkirk, William, 129  
 Hornby, alderman, 64  
 Hornsby's Chare, 247, 248  
 Horne, John, vintner, 5  
 Horses in the churchyard, 173  
 Horsley, Charles, 112; Thomas, 12  
 Horth, Thomas, salter, 342; of Yarmouth, 355  
 Horton, 294  
*Hospitals, Monasteries, etc.:—*  
 Augustines, 17, 97, 166, 189  
 Barnard Castle, 88  
 Black Friars, 188  
 Gateshead, 29, 33, 42, 88, 167, 191, 193, 195  
 Greatham, 88  
 Kepier, 197, 340  
 Maison Dieu, the, 23, 39, 47, 258, 324  
 Mary Magdalene, 24, 47, 123, 191,  
 Neasham, 33  
 Newminster, 185  
 Sherburn, 88  
 Shod Friars, 64, 85  
 Thornton's, 258  
 Trinitarian, 10  
 Virgin Mary, 17, 23, 24, 29, 31, 47, 77, 94, 134, 188, 191, 207, 246, 252.  
 Hospital lands at Gateshead, 167  
 Hospitality, 69, 75, 77, 84, 92, 98, 130, 159, 309, 337  
 Hostages from Scotland, 127  
 Hostmen (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Houghton-le-Spring, 15, 212  
 Houses on Tyne Bridge, 364  
 Householdors and their frontages, 367

Houton, Henry, 16  
 Howard of Eftingham, lord, 54, 203  
 Howard, Sir Francis, 264; of Walden, lord, 213; William, 195; lord William, 170, 183, 195, 198, 209, 221, 285; Sir William, 264  
 Howbourne, Edward, smith, 135; John, 174  
 Howeson, Edward, 16  
 Howetson, Christopher, 6; John, 6  
 Howland, Sir John, 250  
 Howson, bishop, appointed, 280  
 Hoys employed, 104  
 Hucheson family, the, 133; Henry, 221  
 Huckster's Booths, the, 267  
 Hudson, John, defaulter, 224, merchant, 59, will of, 24; Margaret, 25, 59, 60  
 Hulam, 105  
 Hull, 175, 227, 293, 341  
 Hulne Abbey, 327  
 Humbleton, Alex., witch, 286  
 Hume, earl of Dunbar, 166; Sir George, 286  
 Humphrey, widow, 61  
 Hunter, Anthony, 9; Cuthbert, 111, salter, 342  
 Huntingdon, lord, in Newcastle, 101  
 Huntley, George, 251, defaulter, 224; Henry, 10; John, 376; marquis of, 363; William, 251; age of, 78; councillor, 138; hostman, 142; sheriff, 110, 125; sponsor, 150  
 Hurworth, 43  
 Husband, Sisley, 326; Thomas, 225  
 Hutchison, Christopher, 185; Henry, inn-keeper, 284  
 Hutton, Besse, 194; bishop of Durham, 51, 95; Florence, 194; John, rector of Gateshead, 100, 133, 193, 194; Matthew, 337; Michael, cooper, 135  
 Huncke, Sir Fulke, 392  
 Hylton, Thomas, 77  
 Hynde, Elizabeth, 6  
 Hyndmers, Margaret, 222  
 Ightham, 200  
 Iderton, Isabel, 33  
 Ile, Bulmer, 237; Christopher, 191  
 Incident of the Plague, 59  
 Incorporated Companies:—  
   Bakers and Brewers, 15, 349  
   Bricklayers, 193, 348  
   Butchers, 238  
   Bye-trades, the, 160  
   Carpenters, 52  
   Chandlers, 101  
   Cordwainers, 102, 279  
   Coopers, 101  
   Drapers, etc., 14, 101  
   Glaziers, 133, 207, 227, 352  
   Goldsmiths, 133, 227, 365  
   Hardwaremen, 101  
   Hostmen, 19, 61, 141, 143, 149, 151, 153, 159, 162, 163, 166, 180, 182, 185, 186, 194, 199, 204, 212, 221, 233, 236, 253, 261, 270, 291, 296, 300, 319, 321, 326, 340, 343, 345, 355, 386  
   Joiners, 52, 227

Incorporated Companies—*continued*—

  Keelmen, 185  
   Masons, 8, 193  
   Mercers, 101  
   Mettors, 193  
   Merchant Adventurers, 37, 96, 162, 203, 227, 231, 240, 260, 282, 341, 377, 379  
   Millers, 52  
   Painters, 133, 227  
   Pewterers, 133, 227  
   Plumbers, 133, 227  
   Shipwrights, 359  
   Slaters, 227  
   Tailors, 42, 80, 101, 273  
   Trinity House, 10, 19, 20, 22, 48, 123, 153, 174, 189, 199, 203, 217, 220, 223, 245, 256, 303, 311, 327, 339, 341, 348, 356, 417  
   Twelve mysteries, the, 137, 160  
   Waits, 8  
   Wallers, 348  
   Weavers, 183  
 Ingram, John, executed, 87  
 Invasion of the Scots, 390, 397  
 Ipswich, 287  
 Ipswich puritans, 367  
 Irish soldiers in Newcastle, 187  
 Iron, 240  
 Iron market, the, 50  
 Iron pots, sale of, 379  
 Itchwick, 59

Jacksleazes, 96, 110  
 Jackson, Dr. Thomas, vicar, 27, 253, 276, 299; Elizabeth, 184; Henry, 295, 352; Jane, 295; John, 60, 73, 78, 295, scrivener, 45; Sir John, 184, 186, 240, 295; Thomas, charge against, 353, mettor, 193; William, 69, 85, 91, 238, 246, 255, 298, burial of, 295, hostman, 142, payments to, 83, sheriff, 240, 249, 257, town clerk, 116, 119, 121, 122, 178, 184, vote of, 252  
 James, Dr., dean, 124, 126, 135, bishop of Durham, 219; Francis, 219; John, 219; William, 219  
 James I., accession of, 157; death of, 262; lease of the castle from, 225; in Newcastle, 158, 219  
 Jameson, Lawrence, 192  
 Jamieson, alderman, fined, 225  
 Jarrow, 33, 43  
 Jarrow Slake purchased, 327  
 Jedburgh, 394  
 Jenison, Barbara, 259; Dr. 334, 341, 368, 370, 371, 372, 373, 380, 382, 385, book written by, 338, stipend of, 247; Henry, 43; Isabel, 43; Margaret, 111; Mr., 231; Ralph, 43, 72, 115, 259, age of, 78, assigns grand lease, 133, burial of, 111, mayor, 101, 110, M.P., 111, payment to, 76, sheriff, 58, 65; Sir Ralph, 111; Robert, 43, 251, clerk, 192, vicar, 111; Thomas, 43; William, 91, 111, 116, 125, alderman, 22, 41, 43, charge against, 164, 258, coal vend, 243, fined, 221, hostman, 142, 154, mayor, 1, 10, 132, 135, 187,

- 193, 235, 240, M.P., 20, 148, 201, sheriff, 76, 86, 94, vote of, 251  
 Jenyson, 122  
 Jerrom, Steven, preacher, 226  
 Jersey stockings forbidden, 160  
 Jesmond, 95, 233, 249  
 Jewels stolen, 90  
 Johns, Michael, shipmaster, 45  
 Johnson, Edward, shipmaster, 45; George, 101, merchant, 132; Henry, conservator, 215; Humphrey, 288; John, payment to, 94, plasterer, 98, Trinity House, 174; Matthew, commissioner, 77; Richard, tanner, 50, 77; Robert, shipowner, 45, Trinity House, 23; William, 50  
 Joiners' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Jones, Sir Francis, 226; Robert, teacher, 173  
 Jorden, Ralph, 101  
 Judges, the, at Shields, 337  
 Judges, banquets to the, 75, 284, gifts to the, 99, 130  
 Kay, John, beer brewer, 349; Robert, beer brewer, 248; Thomas, curate, 36  
 Keel bridges to be made, 391  
 Keelmen's Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Keelmen, number of, 348  
 Kell, Richard, payment to, 76, shipowner, 45; Robert, councillor, 138  
 Kenton, coalmines at, 7  
 Kepier School, 15  
 Kepier Hospital (see "Hospitals")  
 Kerr, lord, in Newcastle, 367; Sir Robert, 127  
 Kerseys, 162, 227  
 Kibblesworth, 96, 110  
 Killingworth Moor races, 309  
 Killingworth, Oliver, 335  
 Kine geats at Bensham, 169  
 King, Thomas, 6  
 King's lodgings, the, 188  
 Kingsmote, Mr., 69  
 Kirkhouse, Richard, councillor, 138, tanner, 290, vote of, 252, witness, 256  
 Kirkley, Elizabeth, 237, 250  
 Kirkus, Agnes, 6; Richard, 77  
 Knowells, Henry, Trinity House, 174  
 Knox, Margaret, charge against, 336; John, 58, the wife of, 336  
 Kyng, Thomas, 6  
 Lace, not to be worn, 160  
 Lagon, 177  
 Lamb, or Lambe; Janet, 33; Robert, 32, 37; William, 33, 79, 96  
 Lambert, George, councillor, 138  
 Lammas Fair, 256  
 Lambskins exported, 162  
 Lambton, John, 38; Ralph, 72; Sir William, 403; seminary priest, 125  
 Lamesley, 181  
 Lanchester, 130  
 Lanchester Manor House, 33  
 Laphorne, Mr., silenced, 382, 384  
 Lassels, Anne, 13; George, of Darlington, 13; John, swordbearer, 12; William, 13, musician, 84  
 Laud, archbishop, in Newcastle, 311  
 Lavarocke, Agnes, 32  
 Lawe, Henry, hostman, 142  
 Lawes, Ellinor, 34; John, chaplain, 51; Roger, 132  
 Laws, etc., of war printed, 375  
 Lawson, Dorothy, 167, 264, 274, 307; Edward, 376, charge against, 182; Eppye, Painter Heugh, 96; George, 11; Henry, 34, 237, 379, sheriff, 337, 344, vote of, 252; Isabel, 33; James, alderman, 33; John, of Chester-le-Street, 13, drunkard, 182, fool, 69, 84, 99; Mrs. 304; Ralph, 34, 68, 129, commissioner, 11; Sir Ralph, 167, 169; Roger, 167; Thomas, 268; William, 34, 42, of Thorpe Bulmer, 11; Sir Wilfrid, 175  
 Laybourn, George, of Durham, 11  
 Layton, Thomas, of Sexon, 11  
 Lead, exports of, 162, the impost on, 378  
 League and Covenant (see "Covenant")  
 Leather exported, 162  
 Leazes, the, 188  
 Ledger, Robert, 237, sheriff, 240, 249  
 Ledger's wife, 10  
 Lee, Arthur, fugitive, 336; Margaret, 6; William, 11  
 Lee houses, the, 199  
 Leek, John, 171  
 Leger, Robert, conservator, 215  
 Legard, Thomas, 252  
 Legge, Colonel William, 350  
 Leighton, Alexander, curate, 173; Francis, scrivener, 172, witness, 185  
 Lemmen, John, 101  
 Lewin, Christopher, 97, character of, 113, payment to, 76; Edward, 97, character of, 113, mayor, 40, 46, 48, 64, M.P., 35, payment to, 76; Henry, 229; Robert, 71, 97  
 Lesley, General, in Newcastle, 400, 405  
 Letherington, John, executioner, 86  
 Liddell, Barbara, 105; Bartram, 231, indicted, 288; Elizabeth, 112; Francis, hostman, 142, 154, sheriff, 377, stallholder, 332, wedding guest, 332; George, 59, 68, 71, 294, age of, 256, merchant, 133, sponsor, 127; Henry, coal vend, 242, 243, sheriff, 235, 240; Isabel, 170; Mr., 353; Roger, hostman, 204, stallholder, 332; Thomas, 59, 105, 112, 116, 121, 181, 271, 275, 364, age of, 136, alderman, 138, 197, charge against, 121, 164, hostman, 142, 154, 241, 243, mayor, 110, 125, 184, 187, 262, 265, 269, 337, 344, 346, merchant, 88, M.P., 377, sheriff, 70, 76, 184, 187; Sir Thomas, 13, 170, 295, 306  
 Liddensdale, Alexander, witness, 228  
 Liederdaile, Alexander, butcher, 135  
 Lieutenant, etc., from Norwich, in Newcastle, 323  
 Lighter, clinker-built, a, 72  
 Lightfoot, George, commissioner, 135

- Lighthouse at Shields, 199, built, 327  
 Lights at Tynemouth, 417  
 Lilburn, George, councillor, 138  
 Limekiln Riot, the, 311  
 Lindsay, lord, 400  
 Lindsey, Thomas, Trinity House, 174  
 Linen seized at Shields, 128  
 Lintz, 33  
 Lion, John, tax collector, 85  
 Lion king-at-arms, prisoner, 367  
 Livery for the sergeants, 85  
 Loan-money (see "Ship-money")  
 Locks at the ears forbidden, 160  
 Locke, Samuel, 376  
 Lodge, John, 334  
 Logie, lord of, killed, 402  
 Longacres, 181  
 Longbow, shooting with the, 302  
 Long Newton, 107  
 Long Parliament, the, 380  
 Long Stairs, the, 67  
 Loraine, Elizabeth, 334, 335  
 Lord-lieutenants of Newcastle, 363  
 Lorke, John, tailor, 81  
 Lort Burn, the, 84, 188  
 Loudoun, Lord, 400, 403  
 Low Walworth, 43  
 Low water, death at, 105  
 Lowes, —, 6  
 Lowson, James, preacher, 28  
 Litherdale, Alexander, councillor, 138  
 Little, Robert, merchant, 5  
 Liturgy, (see "Covenant")  
 Lucas, Henry, 226  
 Lucke, Mr., goldsmith, 337  
 Lumley, 279, 289  
 Lumley, Francis, 303, lord, 47, 85, Sir Richard, 258  
 Lunsford, colonel, 399  
 Lute-player, a, 23  
 Lytle, Eleanor, 44  
 Lynesley, Thomas, excommunicated, 147  
 Lynn, 175  
 Lyons, John, 105, receiver, 172, 197  
  
 Maddison, Elizabeth, 60; Francis, 101, G., hostman, 182; Henry, 60, 237, 259, 289, chamberlain, 138, coal vend, 242, fined, 221, hostman, 142, 154, mayor, 249, 257, sheriff, 19, 166, 173, vote of, 252, wedding guest, 332; Lionel, 43, 119, 122, 191, 351, 363, age of, 244, 255, alderman, 138, grand lessee, 133, character of, 113, charges against, 114, coal vend, 242, commissioner, 136, hostman, 142, 154, junior, 237, knighted, 311, mayor, 76, 86, 90, 94, 166, 173, 213, 220, 223, 304, 311, senior, 237, sheriff, 28, 257, 262, shipowner, 45, Sir Lionel, 325, 329, 384, 403, 415, grand lessee, 346, vote of, 252; Peter, 43, sheriff, 344, 350; Ralph, coal vend, 242; Thomas, 376.  
 Magbray, John, vicar, 26, 29, 51  
 Maid-of-honour, a, and the coal tax, 387  
 Maire, Christopher, gentleman, 11  
 Maison Dieu (see "Hospitals")  
 Maitland, William, Trinity House, 174  
  
 Malabar, Thomas, 392, tailor, 221, witness, 389  
 Mallett, Ellinor and William, 332  
 Maltravers, lord, in Newcastle, 363  
 Man, Edward, 378; 385, evidence of, 334, 336  
 Manor, the, 188  
 Manors, the, 17, 97, 112  
 Mansell, Sir Robert, 208, 228, 306, 352, 416, Marr, earl of, in Newcastle, 27  
 March, John, 60, 67, 127  
 Market Cross, penance at the, 309  
 Market days in Newcastle, 330  
 Market-place of Newcastle, the, 325  
 Marley, Elizabeth, 79; George, 230; John, 351, 355, 364, 367, fined, 340, knighted, 368, mayor, 344, 350, sheriff, 317, 328; Sir John, 372, 384, 391, 392, 410, 415, character of, 394; Thomas, defaulter, 224; William, 79, 303  
 Marley's Land, 251  
 Marshall, Elizabeth, 6; George, 228  
 Marske, 4  
 Martyn, Agnes, 6  
 Mary, (Queen of Scots, 35, 40, 90  
 Mash tuns in Newcastle, number of, 349  
 Maslet, Thomas, curate, 99, 151  
 Masons' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Mason, Hugh, mace sergeant, 138  
 Matfen, Janc, 289; George, hostman, 194; John, hostman, 162; Matthew, 162, 289; Robert, 289, 162  
 Mathew, Toby, elected bishop of Durham, 95, preaching in Newcastle, 158, presents to, 111, translation of, 173, dean of Durham, 74, 88  
 Mathew's Plan of Newcastle, 188  
 Matrimonial cause, 56  
 Maughan, Richard, brewer, 349  
 Mauleverer, Richard, 11  
 Mawe, William, Trinity House, 174  
 Maxwell, bishop of Ross, 373; Cuthbert, 418  
 Mayson, Robert, of Morden, 11  
 Mayor-choosing dispute, 76  
 Mayors and sheriffs, list of, 420  
 Mayor, the first puritan, 374  
 Meal Market, the, 107  
 Meldon, 199  
 Melton, Sir John, returned M.P., 380  
 Members of Parliament, list of, 421  
 Merceis' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Merchants' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Mermaid in church window, 290  
 Metage, rates for, 193  
 Metcalf, Anthony, 206; Elizabeth, 2, 326; family, the, 225; Richard, 225  
 Mettors' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Michaelmas election dispute, 76  
 Michaelson, John, Trinity House, 22; Henry, Trinity House, 23  
 Michelson, William, master and mariner, 135  
 Middleburgh, 37



- Mickie Benton, 13  
 Middle Street, 44, 131  
 Middleham, 279  
 Middleton, Ann, 340; Jane, widow, 172;  
   James, 45, witness, 5; John, commissioner,  
   11; Mr., of Belsay, 383  
 Middleton, North, 199  
 Mills, Alice, 288; William, 288, charge  
   against, 353  
 Mill at Bywell, 33, 199  
 Mill at Heaton, 199  
 Mill in the Painter Heugh, 79, 80  
 Mill in the Postern, 290  
 Mill at Ovingham, 33  
 Mill at the Teams, 169  
 Mills, the town, 366  
 Milbank, John, 237, 289, vote of, 252;  
   Margery, 289, Mark, 268, 298, sheriff,  
   350, 362, 367; Matthew, 376  
 Milbourne, 48  
 Milburn, Milbourne, etc., Anne, 16; Ann,  
   drunkard, 182; Barbara, 178, 237, 242;  
   Elizabeth, 47; John, 102; Matthew, 237,  
   weaver, 222; Michael, 7, 47; Nicholas,  
   sheriff, 209, 213; Robert, 16.  
 Miller, Andrew, adventurer, 100; Edward,  
   194; Thomas, 178  
 Millers' Company (see "Incorporated  
   Companies")  
 Millerson, Humphry, 8; Janet, 8; Robert,  
   8  
 Milner, Elizabeth, 172  
 Minstrels at Whickham, 64  
 Mitchelson, Henry, shipmaster, 45; John,  
   shipowner, 45  
 Mitcheson, William, brewer, 349, Trinity  
   House, 174  
 Mitford, Midforth, etc., Alice, 105;  
   Anderson, 178, 203; Anne, 105;  
   Barbara, 7, 84, 105; Charles, 251, 290;  
   Christopher, 66, 74, 105, 142, 237, junior,  
   178, 237, will of, 7, 252; Edmund, 178;  
   Elizabeth, 105, 203; Ellinor, 7, 66;  
   Henry, 7, 13, 68, 178, 203, 252, age of, 78,  
   alderman, 22, 41, 84, buried, 105, coal-  
   owner, 61, mayor, 19, 28, M.P., 48, 26,  
   110, sheriff, 10, 15, stallholder, 332;  
   Jane, 7, 74, 178; John, 251; Mary, 105,  
   178; Oswald, 84; Robert, 7, 24, 178,  
   merchant, 74, high sheriff 390; Thomas,  
   178, brewer, 349; Uswen, 42  
 Mitford rectory, 110  
 Mohur, Peter, 339  
 Moiser, Christopher, glover, 68  
 Mole, Christopher, 8; Robert and family, 8  
 Monasteries (see "Hospitals")  
 Money stowed away, 61  
 Montaigne, bishop, appointed, 280  
 Moody, John, 375, 376  
 Moor, Moore, etc., Alexander, 359; Janet, 36;  
   John, 136; Marie, 288; Robert, 230;  
   Susanna, 291  
 Morden, 11  
 Morden tower, 227  
 Moot Hall, the, 54, 225, 286  
 Morehouse, Mr., 107, preacher, 99  
 Morgan, Captain, 53  
 Morland, Christopher, 13, 170; Isabella, 170  
 Morning draught drinking, 336  
 Morpeth, Anthony, 231, hostman, 142;  
   Christopher, 68; Richard, merchant, 68  
 Morpeth, 24, 27, 37, 157, 207, 233, 347,  
   290, 391  
 Morrison, John, neglecting church, 182  
 Morrison's office, records in, 69  
 Moss, Ambrose, 291  
 Mortham, 5  
 Morton, bishop, sermon by, 374; Sir Thomas,  
   350; William, preacher, 133, 368, 369,  
   370, vicar, 107, 111, 112, 152, 209, 213,  
   funeral of, 231  
 Mote, John, 6  
 Mouldavve, nobleman of, 69  
 Mummung forbidden, 160  
 Municipal abuses, 112, 125, 313, 319, 359,  
   378  
 Munitions of war, 364, 366  
 Murray, Alexander, 386; Cuthbert, slater,  
   52, 59; John, minister, 71, usher, 85, 109  
 Muschampe, Thomas, 253  
 Muscropp, Laurence, 349  
 Musgrave, Cuthbert, 72; Elizabeth, 128;  
   Henry, executed, 198; Robert, gentleman,  
   66, payment to, 95; Thomas, mariner,  
   23, 128  
 Musketeers in Newcastle, 365, 392  
 Musters in the North, 104  
 Muster-masters, 359  
 Musters on the Forth, 256  
 Mutiny in Newcastle, 392  
 Mylborn (see "Milburn")  
 Nag's Head Inn, 34, 280, 325, 331  
 National Covenant (see "Covenant")  
 Naworth, 183, 195, 264, 325  
 Neasham, 33, 34, 43  
 Neelson, Richard, 238  
 Neile, archbishop, 371, 372  
 Neile, bishop of Durham, appointed, 220,  
   translated, 280  
 Nelson, Luke, 349; Richard, brewer, 349  
 Nether Dean Bridge, 64, 96  
 Nether Eighton, 181  
 Nether Heworth, 2  
 Nettleworth, 207  
 Neville's Cross, 30  
 Newburn, 27, 47, 196; battle of, 399: col-  
   liery, 61  
 Newcastle, earl of, 258, 277  
 New Gate, the, 64, 94, 99, 100, 138, 172,  
   188  
 New Gate Street, 267  
 New House, the, 189  
 Newkes, the, 345  
 Newkirk, Christopher, 207  
 Newlands, Robert, 102  
 Newminster (see "Hospitals")  
 Newport John, 405  
 Newton, Agnes, 172; Alexander, 180;  
   Edward, 172; Jennet, 172; Margaret,  
   180  
 Nicholson, Agnes, 66; Anthony, 238,  
   cordwainer, 172; Barbara, 66, 246;  
   Christopher, cordwainer, 135; Cuthbert,

- payment to, 76, blacksmith, 77; Edwin, 194; Francis, 67; George, 248, cutler, 135, notary, 248, 264; James, mariner, 23, shipmaster, 45; Jane, 17, 172; Robert, shipmaster, 45, Trinity House, 174; Roger, 17, 294, charge against, 182, mayor, 48, 51, 56, sheriff, 15, 19, 22, shipowner, 45, will of, 66; Thomas, 67, smith, 94, 172, master and mariner, 135, Trinity House, 23  
 Nickson, George, executed, 197; Nick, executed, 284  
 Nixon, Hetherington, 50  
 Noblemen's sons entertained, 131  
 Nonconformity, danger of, 373  
 Norgate, Edward, 374  
 Norham, 157  
 Norman, Anthony, 330; Thomas, 330  
 Normandy glass, 208  
 Northenders, 181  
 North, eye of the, 39  
 Northern counties, condition of, 124  
 North Middleton, 199  
 Northumberland, earl of, 17, 28, 311, 330, 396  
 Norton, 27, 43  
 Norwich soldiers' account of Newcastle, 323  
 Nowtherdship of Newcastle, 84, 95  
 Nowt-market, the, 185, 199, 247  
 Nun's Gate, the, 268  
 Nun's Moor, the, 166, 233  
  
 Offerton, 289  
 Ogle, Clement, 34, indicted, 288; Dorothy, 99; Ellinor, indicted, 288; Isabel, 178; Luke, 178; Mr., preacher, 291, schoolmaster, 99; Thomas, indicted, 288  
 Oldfield, Mr., bell-founder, 375  
 Oliver, Leonard, brewer, 349  
 O'Neill, Daniel, 400  
 Ord, Richard, 221  
 Orde, Mrs., 7  
 Ordnance on the Quay, 364  
 Organ in All Saints', 303  
 Organs and sackbuts, 410  
 Osbourne, John, Katherine, and Sanders, 129  
 Osgodby, 163  
 Ouseburn, the, 145, 167, 352  
 Overden Brig, 71  
 Over Eighton, 181  
 Ovingham Dam, 33  
 Overgarthe, Friar Chare, 79  
 Oxen-le-field, 246  
  
 Pacification of Dunse Law, 363  
 Pacock, William, councillor, 138  
 Pacocke, William, 191  
 Page, Henry, silkman, 248  
 Paice, William, 35  
 Painters' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Painter Heugh, the, 96; mill in the, 79  
 Pancake Bell, the, 108  
 Pandon, 129, 152  
 Pandon Gate, 188, 250  
 Pandon Hall, 188  
  
 Pant in Sandgate built, 85  
 Papists, execution of, 70, 83, 86; persecution of, 2, 29, 65, 66, 83, 86, 99, 114, 124, 158, 186, 207, 264, 274, 279, 293, 329, 335, 336; reports concerning, 29, 33, 38, 41, 66, 83, 91, 209, 213, 234, 252, 258, 307, 402  
 Parker, Thomas, of Rickledon, 11; William, 102  
 Parkinson, Alice, 84; Edmund, 84, 105  
 Parliament, list of Newcastle members of, 421  
 Parliamentary elections, 377, 380; representation of Durham, 236  
 Parish Registers of Newcastle, 422  
 Parsons, John, coal inspector, 246  
 Partus, John, 86  
 Pattenson, John, Trinity House, 174  
 Patteson, Cuthbert, weaver, 26  
 Pattinson, Ralph, 24, clerk, 17, 29  
 Pattison, Agnes, 61; Isabel, 17; John, organ blower, 316; Lawrence, 61; Margery, 44; Thomas, 129; William, 238, hostman, 182, vintner, 255, 256  
 Pawling, Robert, 89  
 Paxon, Christopher, charge against, 183  
 Peacock, William, 238  
 Pealefflates, 96, 110  
 Peareth, Edward, 298; Roger and Susan, 332  
 Pearson, Agnes, 31, 32; George, 389; Mr., preacher, 131; Peter, charge against, 335, indicted, 288; Robert, 303, shipowner, 45; Roger, 102; Thomas, parish clerk, 36, 127; William, curate, 106, 164  
 Pelton, 279  
 Pembroke, earl of, in Newcastle, 311  
 Penance (see "Churches")  
 Penington, Joseph, 175  
 Penthouse, the, 94, 99  
 Percy the traitor, 175, 250; Thomas, and Gunpowder Plot, 210; Sir Thomas, 29  
 Persia, noblemen of, 69  
 Peskott, Mr., preacher, 291  
 Pespoole, 302  
 Pew for Mr. Mayor, 69  
 Pewterers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Phecock, Ralph, 194  
 Philipson family, the, 5; Marian, 6; Miles, 6; Robert, of Hollinghall, 6; Rowland, 5  
 Physician, town's, appointed, 132  
 Picage, 140  
 Pickering, Alice, 89  
 Pies and puddings in church, 210  
 Pilgrim Street, 5, 37, 47, 107, 136, 222, 323; Gate, 5, 94, 188, 227, 330  
 Pilkington, John, 88  
 Pillory, the, at work, 83, 95  
 Pilotage dispute, 20  
 Pinkney, Leonard, 415; Mr., 393  
 Pins, sale of, 379  
 Piracy, charge of, 322  
 Pirates, suppression of, 224  
 Pistolmakers wanted, 365  
 Pithy, John, chamberlain, 309  
 Pittington, 13, 170, 302  
 Pitts, Richard, customer, 111, 127, 165

- Plague, the, 23, 30, 56, 59, 85, 116, 123, 130, 165, 180, 230, 263, 276, 337, 347, 376  
 Plan of Newcastle, 188  
 Ploughs laid idle, 124  
 Plumbers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Plummer Chare, 5, 96  
 Pockerley, 181  
 Pocklington, Dr., 406  
 Pockerley, 180  
 Polonian physician, a, 99  
 Ponder, Nicholas, hostman, 142  
 Ponteland, 27  
 Poole, John, butcher, 135  
 Poor of All-Saints, inquiry, 135  
 Pope, Jane, 6  
 Population of Newcastle, 339  
 Porter, Charles, killed, 408  
 Postern, the, 290  
 Post-horses, refusal to supply, 259  
 Post, London to Edinburgh, established, 328  
 Postmasters, payments to, 347  
 Potte, John, brewer, 349  
 Potter, Nicholas, Trinity House, 23  
 Potts, Bartram, executed, 197; Reginald, brewer, 349; Stephen, payment to, 76; William, 102, cordiner, 128  
 Poundage, 140  
 Power, Henry, vicar, 251, died, 253; Thomas, 237, lieutenant, 90; Mr., 246  
 Pow Pans, North Shields, 327  
 Prayers, extemporay, 371  
 Presbyterians, (see "Covenant")  
 Press-gang at the Trinity House, 341  
 Preston, Gawin, brewer, 349  
 Prices of provisions, etc., 195, 196  
 Prierman, Christopher, councillor, 138  
 Priests, stipendiary, 48  
 Primage, dispute about, 220  
 Printing press, the first in Newcastle, 374  
 Prison for apprentices, 160  
 Prison for the county, 54  
 Privileges of the town infringed, 360  
 Prockter, Cuthbert, 238  
 Proctor, Cuthbert, 288  
 Protestant Gateshead, 185  
 Provisions, cost of, 284  
 Pumps not to be worn, 160  
 Purdus, William, 31  
 Purefoy, Mr. 125  
 Puritans and Puritanism, 28, 209, 344, 350, 362, 367, 368, 369, 370, 372, 374, 380, 383, 384  
 Puritan mayor and sheriff elected, 374  
 Pursuivants described, 329  
 Purvis, Margaret, 32  
 Pusey, Daniel, parish clerk, 326  
 Pye, John, postmaster, 347  
 Pyepowder, court of, 256  
 Pynder, Matthew, smith, 97  
 Quarrel about a yard stick, 35  
 Quay, the, 188, 325, 331  
 Quay, the new, 96  
 Quayside, 5, 37, 60, 107, 133, 135, 212, 216; defence of the, 364  
 Queen Elizabeth, death of, 157  
 Queen Henrietta and the bishopric, 279  
 Races on Killingworth Moor, 309  
 Raine, Christopher, 68  
 Rand, Christopher, 45; Cuthbert, 5; Doctor, 376; Elizabeth, 194; John, councillor, 138, deputy customer, 166, hostman, 142, 145; Ralph, 45; Robert, 45; Thomas, 45, weaver, 37; William, 194, 222  
 Ravenshall, 221  
 Ravenshelme, 181, 271, 294  
 Ravensworth, 13, 60, 96, 181, 249, 295  
 Ravensworth colliery, 61  
 Raw, Thomas, mace-sergeant, 138  
 Rawe, Barbara, 26; Christopher, 106; Dorothy, 106; Isabella, 59; James, 59, 106; Judith, 107; Katherine, 106; Matthew, 106; Ralph, 74, 106, 107, master and mariner, 77; Richard, 26, Trinity House, 174; Robert, 26, 59, Trinity House, 174; Roger, alderman, 22, 26, 41, 74, burial of, 106, mayor, 70, 76, 78, 85, merchant, 15, payment made to, 94, shipowner, 45; William, 26  
 Rawlings, Richard, 111; Samuel, hostman, 166  
 Rawlings, James, yeoman, 166  
 Raymes, John, 191  
 Rayne, Margaret, 329; Nicholas, pursuivant, 329  
 Read, Christian, 6; Gilbert, 184, 295; Isabel, 184; Sir William, 81  
 Reade, Robert, 374  
 Readman, Roger, 275  
 Readot, Richard, 12  
 Reasley, Christopher, 312  
 Reasley's rebellion, 312  
 Reavely, Isabella, 248; John, 153; Richard, 248  
 Reay, Margaret, 259; Thomas, merchant, 259  
 Receiver of Northumberland and Durham, 197  
 Record, court of, 138  
 Records of Newcastle, 54, 138, 161, 184, 186, 209, 240, 295, 325, 347, 363  
 Recusants, etc., 2, 74, 86, 87, 124, 167, 185, 209, 213, 258, 272, 278, 288, 335, 400.  
 Redgarth Sheele, 199  
 Redhead, Edmund, 56; James, 85, post-master, 249  
 Redheugh, 38, 403  
 Redworth, 67  
 Reed, Bartram, 228; George, 285; Katherine, 268; Thomas, 228  
 Reede, Arche, executed, 197  
 Reefley, John, miller, 290  
 Reesley, William, 31  
 Registers of Burials in Newcastle, 422  
 Remonstrance, the grand, 282  
 Reneicke, William, 102  
 Rennyson, John, 6  
 Key, Margaret, 336; William, merchant, 336  
 Richardson, George, 71; Peter, 192; Ralph, will of, 29

- Riches, Thomas, payment to, 76  
 Richeson, Roger, carpenter, 52  
 Richmondshire, 152  
 Richmond on Thames, 157  
 Rickabie, Henry, drunkard, 182  
 Rickbye, Alice, 6  
 Rickledon, 11  
 Riddell, Barbara, 153, 237, coal vend, 242 : family, the, 240 ; George and Robert, 291 ; Henry, 29, merchant, 112 ; Katherine, 298 ; Mary, 29, 289 ; Mr., 68, 353 ; Peter, 29, 34, 183, 185, 289, 298, 351, 352, 363, coalowner, 153, fined, 199, hostman, 151, 153, knighted, 219, payment to, 159, sheriff, 162, 166, 170 ; Sir Peter, 231, 238, 247, 289, 304, 306, 376, 387, 395, 400, 410, charge against, 233, hostman, 241, lease to, 293, mayor, 224, 227, 328, 337, 338, M.P., 257, 269, 281, 377, vote of, 251 ; Robert, 276 : Thomas, 29, 122, 167, 191, 193, 204, bailiff of Gateshead, 167, church stallholder, 291, coal measurer, 182, commissioner, 136, conservator, 223, hostman, 166, 185, mayor, 162, 166, merchant, 230, M.P., 351, recorder, 363, sheriff, 148, 151, town clerk, knighted, 368, wife of, 185 ; Sir Thomas, 211, 237, 385, charge against, 258, 265, coal vend, 242, 243, mayor, 209, 213, M.P., 235, 236, 262, 281, recorder, 325, 347, sent to London, 210, sheriff, 148, stallholder, 332, trunk seized, 252, vote of 251 ; Sir Thomas of Fenham, 209, 240, 345 ; Sir Walter, 383, 386 ; William, 29, 34, 116, 133, alderman, 22, 74, 138, 151, bequest to, 91, hostman, 142, 159, mayor, 10, 15, 58, 95, 101, merchant, 80, 89  
 Riddesdale men in Newcastle, 348, thieves, 250  
 Rider, Sir William, 233  
 Ridley, Nicholas, 229, 238 ; William, senior, executed, 198  
 Righ, Ralph, brewer, 349  
 Riley, Isabel, 79  
 Ringall, Rebecca, 47  
 Riot of apprentices, 311  
 Ripley, Agnes, 19 ; Robert, 19  
 Ripon, treaty of, 415  
 Rivers, Henry, 238  
 Rix, Edward, 6  
 Road, Thomas, saddler, 330  
 Roane, William, 404  
 Robson, Arthur, executed, 172 ; Charles, plasterer, 376 ; Henry, gaoler, 284 : John, executed, 197, Trinity House, 174 ; Nicholas, tailor, 284 ; Robert, commissioner, 132 ; Simon, gaoler, 283, 284 ; Walter, 12 ; William, 375, 376  
 Robinson, Abraham, 107 ; Avery, hostman, 213 ; Catherine, 72 ; Henry, keelman, 72 ; John, 237, suit against R. Cook, 353 ; Matilda, 50 ; Robert, 12, brewer, 349 ; Thomas, brewer, 349, joiner, 70, tailor, 5 ; William, 376, brewer, 349  
 Rochester, George, aymnt to, 76, saddler, 77 ; James, 191, 288  
 Roderforth, Thomas, churchwarden, 291  
 Rogers, Archie, executed, 172  
 Rogerson, John and Mark, 31 ; Ralph, met-tor, 193  
 Rogue Stob, the, 276  
 Rokeby, archdeacon, 4 ; Christopher of Mortham, 5 ; Cuthbert, 5 ; family, the, 4 ; John, 5 ; Laurence, will of, 4 ; Ralph, J.P., 4 ; Robert, of Marske, 4, 5 ; William, attorney, 4  
 Rookbye, Alice and Katherin, 288 ; Dorothy, indicted, 288 ; Robert, indicted, 288  
 Rookesby, Mr., of Marske, 152  
 Rooker, Ralph, 45  
 Roman antiquities, 170, 183  
 Romaine, Richard, vote of, 252  
 Rose in Holborn, the, 48  
 Ross, Mr., teacher of French, 109  
 Rothbury, parson of, 329  
 Rowcastle, Henry, brewer, 349, churchwarden, 291, 298  
 Rowmane, Margaret, 152 ; Ralph, 152 ; Thomas, 152  
 Rowmaine, Anthony, 191 ; Richard, 248, witness, 185  
 Rowmayne, Richard, councillor, 138  
 Roxbie, Agnes, 167 ; Henry, recusant, 167  
 Roxburgh, earl of, 402, prisoner in New-castle, 367  
 Royal fishes, 55, 177  
 Rubstones, 142  
 Ruffled bands forbidden, 160  
 Running post, establishment of, 328  
 Rusforth, Laurence, 250  
 Rushes for the chapel, 77, Spital, 123, town court, 94  
 Rushworth, John, 398, town solicitor, 358  
 Russell, Ralph, barber, 11  
 Rutherford, George, clandestine marriage, 358  
 Rutherford of Blackhall, 198  
 Rutherford, Ellinor, 288  
 Rutland, James, 10  
 Rutledge, Thomas, Sabbath-breaker, 173  
 Ryall, 42  
 Ryder, Sir William, 177  
 Rye, twenty lasts of, sold, 49  
 Ryton, 27, 212  
 Ryton-haugh, 107  
 Ryton, the parson of, 415  
 Sabbath breaking, 147, 173  
 Saborne, Thomas, 101  
 Sadberge, 279  
 Saddles, etc., for Newcastle, 394  
 Sadler, William, brewer, 349  
 Sailors' Gallery, the, 223  
 Salkeld, John, 327 ; Ralph, 327  
 Sallyport, the, 129  
 Salt, duty upon, 342  
 Salters, corporation of, 342  
 Salt Grasses, the, 230  
 Salt Meadows, the, 347  
 Salt monopoly, the, 378  
 Saltmakers' petition, a, 296  
 Salt-pans, 7, 43, 387, 253, number of, 342, in Northumberland and Durham, 171, at Shields, 107

- Salt trade, the, 376  
 Saltwellside, 60  
 Saltworks, 321, 331, on the Tyne, 215  
 Salvin, Gerard, commissioner, 132  
 Sanderson, Henry, 125, 291, customer, 97,  
 111, 112, 114, 116, fined, 132, Mr., 99,  
 named, 78, searcher, 128  
 Sandgate, 5, 59, 88, 96, 123, 135, 188, 212,  
 216, 257, 312; pant built, 85; ward, 72  
 Sandgate, Kent, 30  
 Sandhill, 33, 35, 37, 38, 130, 145, 166, 219,  
 258, 309, 313, 324, 376  
 Savil, Elizabeth, 184; John, recorder, 122,  
 138; Sir John, 184, receiver, 272  
 Sayer, John, 34  
 Scabby Neeves, 61  
 Scarborough, earl of, 227  
 Schism, suppression of, 133  
 School Gallery, the, 231  
 Scoles, James, yeoman, 221  
 Sconce to be raised at Shields, 352  
 Scotchwoman, fruitfulness of a, 295  
 Scotch linen seized at Shields, 128  
 Scots House, 340  
 Scots, pardon to the, 374  
 Scots not to be taken apprentice, 52  
 Scotsmen in Newcastle, 348, number of,  
 in Newcastle, 392  
 Scott, Francis, fuller, 133  
 Scottish Inn, 188  
 Scottish Invasion, 390, 397  
 Scourging a boy, 109  
 Scrivener, Barbara, 34  
 Scuttle's House, 29  
 Seal of silver for town court, 337  
 Seamen employed in coal trade, 204  
 Seamen, mutiny among, 271, wages of, 153  
 Seas, passage of the, 252  
 Seaton Delaval, 107  
 Seditious books distributed, 370  
 Selby, Captain, 295; Catherine, 237;  
 Charles, 237, chamber clerk, 255, host-  
 man, 166, irregular marriage, 173; George,  
 47, 83, 116, 120, alderman, 138, assigns  
 grand lease, 133, coalowner, 153, hostman,  
 142, 153, mace-sergeant, 138, mayor, 135,  
 148, M.P., 148, 162, sheriff, 86, 95, 98;  
 Sir George, 199, coal vend, 242, 243, death  
 of, 266, executor, 206, king's host, 158,  
 219, mayor, 173, 180, 190, 194, 240, 249,  
 M.P., 201, sent to London, 210, subsidy,  
 237; Hugh, 289, hostman, 162, sheriff, 173,  
 180; John, 135, 191, 199, 266, church-  
 warden, 150, complaint against, 130,  
 hostman, 185, merchant, 60; Sir John, 37,  
 283; Katherine, 280; Mr., 98; Sir Ralph,  
 high sheriff 329; Robert, death of, 249,  
 merchant, 255; Susan, 60; William, 6,  
 37, 40, 47, 116, 122, 125, 199, age of,  
 78, alderman, 13, 22, 34, 74, 138, burial of,  
 199, charges against, 117, coalowner, 153,  
 commissioner, 129, 184, entertained, 94,  
 host of lord Bothwell, 90, hostman, 142,  
 153, killed, 343, lessee, 18, 42, 47, 64,  
 mayor, 51, 56, 58, payment to, 76,  
 knighted, 157; Sir William, 175, 199,  
 203, 204, 343, 346, charge against, 258  
 Selby monument, the, 267  
 Seminary priests (see "Papists")  
 Sergeants at mace, 121, 138, 145  
 Sergeant of the water, 122, 251  
 Sermons at Henry Dawson's, 369  
 Sermons in Scots army, 405  
 Seven errors in a sermon, 333  
 Sever, William, sergeant, 86  
 Seaton Delaval, 71  
 Shadforth, Henry, 230, 237; William, 230  
 Shafto, Anne, 9, 80, 294; Charles, witness,  
 80; Christopher, 80, hostman, 204, lawyer,  
 85; Edward, 80; Elizabeth, 79; Henry,  
 9; Humphrey, boatman, 59; Isabel, 59,  
 80; James, 58; Jasper, husbandman, 59;  
 John, 9, 67, 80; Lancelot, 237; Leonard,  
 merchant, 56; Margaret, 59; Mark, 67,  
 79, age of, 78, alderman, 22, 40, 41, 74,  
 burial of, 79; Mark, payment to, 76,  
 recorder, 9; Mrs., 303; Ninian, 80,  
 buried, 9, churchwarden, 291, wedding  
 guest, 332; Robert, 80, 96, 111, 178, 231,  
 238, 389, alderman, 294, charge against,  
 352, coal lessee, 197, death of, 249, hostman,  
 142, 154, 241, 243, merchant, 228, to  
 measure coals, 182, sheriff, 9, 180, 182, 287,  
 292, vote of, 252; Stephen, 9; Thomas,  
 67; William, 304  
 Sharpe, Alice, 178  
 Sharpey, Sir Robert, 260, coal patent, 253  
 Shaw, Alice and Elizabeth, 348; John, clerk,  
 348  
 Sheep skins, exported, 162  
 Shemanye, Janet, 6  
 Sherburne hospital, 88  
 Sheriffs' court, 138  
 Sheriff of Newcastle, the first puritan, 374  
 Sherrington, William, 347  
 Sherwood, William, 191, 237, 242  
 Shiel, John, shipowner, 45  
 Shieldfield, the, 5  
 Shields, North and South, 42, 49, 66, 71, 90,  
 128, 151, 199, 217, 218, 245, 253, 268,  
 275, 288, 296, 304, 319, 320, 321, 325,  
 327, 331, 337, 339, 342, 348, 352, 365,  
 379, 387, 410  
 Sheills, Margaret, 13  
 Sheile, Thomas, 192  
 Ship-broken men, 257  
 Ship for Cadiz, 115  
 Shipman's Chare, 60  
 Ship-money, 272, 278, 326, 328, 330, 337,  
 346, 351, 378, 386, 390  
 Ships, arming of, 263  
 Ships detained in France, 40  
 Ships, names of:—Alexander, 271; Amity,  
 282; Chancewell, 44, 45, 108; Elizabeth,  
 263; Elline, 45; Ellinor, 45; Flying  
 Hart, 274; Friendship, 271; Gift of God,  
 45; Grace of God, 45; Good Fortune,  
 274; Hanks, 389; Holy Ghost, 72;  
 Hopewell, 45; John, 278; John Baptist,  
 45; Jonas, 45; Lambe, The, 32; Lion,  
 271; Mary Fortune, 45, 108; Mary Ann,  
 45; Mary Grace, 45; Mary Magdalene,  
 271; Mayflower, 45, 318; New John,  
 108; Prince Gift, 45; Revenge, 271;

- Robert, 45, 271 : Robert Bonaventure, 36 ;  
 Roger and Catherine, 45, 53 ; Sara, 280 ;  
 St. Peter, 321 ; Thomas, 45 ; White Lion,  
 305  
 Ships of Newcastle captured, 318  
 Ships, payment of, 287 ; pursued into the  
 Tyne, 321 ; in the Tyne, 417 ; of war,  
 setting forth, 64, 115, 270, 281, 293  
 Shipwrights' Company (see "Incorporated  
 Companies")  
 Shod Friars, the, (see "Hospitals")  
 Shoemakers, petition of, 279  
 Shopkeepers and their frontages, 367  
 Shops on Tyne Bridge, 364  
 Shortflat, 203  
 Short, John, neglecting church, 182  
 Short Parliament, the, 377  
 Shotley Bridge, 89, 193  
 Shrievalty of Northumberland, expenses of,  
 283  
 Sick Man's House, 233  
 Sicklemore, Humphrey, clerk, 8  
 Side, the, 43, 47, 79, 107, 195, 250, 251,  
 256, head of the, 179  
 Sidgate, 345 ; Blind Chare in, 85  
 Silk garters, etc., prohibited, 160  
 Silver pots for the races, 309  
 Simpson, Anthony, goldsmith, 135 ;  
 Barbara, 43 ; Bartram, Trinity House,  
 174 ; George, draper, 43 ; Isabel, 43 ;  
 John, charge against, 336 ; William,  
 elector, 118 ; hostman, 142  
 Simson, Alicia, 173  
 Sipann, Richard, 136  
 Skell, Jane, 6  
 Skelton, John, mariner, 23  
 Skelton of Wetheral, 210  
 Skirvie knave, a, 153  
 Slaitor, Robert, mason, 376  
 Slaters' Company (see "Incorporated Com-  
 panies")  
 Slatiford, 352  
 Slator, John, Chamberlain, 138  
 Sleuth-hound employed, 71, 99, 108  
 Slinger, Anne, indicted, 288 ; Francis,  
 scrivener, 288  
 Slingsby, Charles, clerk, 329  
 Slut, common, 61  
 Smathwaite, Mr., preacher, 112  
 Smelt, John, 225  
 Smith, George, 101 ; Henry, bequest to  
 poor, 227 ; Isabel, 135 ; Isabella, widow,  
 58 ; John, cordwainer, 135, yeoman, 77 ;  
 Margaret, 237 ; Mrs., of Durham, 294 ;  
 Richard, Sabbath-breaker, 173, witness,  
 107 ; Robert, town's physician, 132 ;  
 Thomas, 59, 246, brewer, 349, charge  
 against, 182, shipwright, 135 ; William,  
 churchwarden, 136, commissioner, 255,  
 of Durham, 290  
 Smyth, Richard, water bailiff, 320  
 Soap-house in Newcastle, 379  
 Soap monopoly, the, 378  
 Soldiers (see "Defences")  
 Solicitor of the town, 358  
 Sorcery in Newcastle 12  
 Sotheran, Adonell, indicted, 288 ; Alice, 2 ;  
 Catherine, 34, 130 ; Christopher, 24 ;  
 Cuthbert, 12 ; Elizabeth, 2 ; family, the,  
 12 ; Florence, 12 ; Jane, 24 ; John, 12,  
 101, merchant, 12 ; Katherine, 24 ;  
 Nicholas, 12 ; Robert, 2, 12, 22 ; Roger,  
 12 ; Rowland, 12 ; Thomas, 12 ; William,  
 12, 24, 130, priest, 207, will of, 2  
 Southampton, earl of, in Newcastle, 311  
 Southgate, William, 288  
 Spaine, John and Raynold, 101  
 Spanish Armada, 48  
 Spanish Invasion, 40  
 Spanish patache, a, 321  
 Sparhawk, the, 53, 139, 177, 327, 353  
 Speed's Plan of Newcastle, 138  
 Spence Alexander, 6 : George, fool, 109  
 Spencer, Augustus, scholar, 75 ; Mr., 69  
 Spital (see "Hospitals")  
 Spital Tongues, 123  
 Spoons in pawn, 105  
 Spoore, Elizabeth, indicted, 288 ; George,  
 345 ; Robert, barber, 288  
 Spratt, Ralph, 286  
 Spurre, Thomas, 31  
 Squire, Marmaduke, labourer, 288  
 St. Andrew's (see "Churches")  
 St. Anthony's 264, 276  
 St. Edmund's (see "Hospitals")  
 St. Ellin's Well, 85  
 St. George, feast of in Newcastle, 219  
 St. James's Hospital (see "Hospitals")  
 St. John's (see "Churches")  
 St. Lawrence, 145, 230, 293, 352  
 St. Luke's Fair, 256  
 St. Michael of Wall Knoll, 11  
 St. Nicholas' (see "Churches")  
 Staiths, 174  
 Stafford, Robert, 101  
 Stamfordham, 382  
 Stanger, Heugh, brewer, 349  
 Stanton, Jarman, parish clerk, 260  
 Stannee, John, 6  
 Staple town for sea-coal, 205  
 Star Chamber proceedings, 221  
 Starch monopoly, the, 378  
 States of the Low Country entertained in  
 Newcastle, 92  
 Statute, an obsolete, 302  
 Stell, George, 7  
 Stella, 61  
 Stella Haugh, 399  
 Stephenson, Jane, 56 ; John, 8 ; Matthew,  
 50 ; Thomas, lecturer, 381, 382 ; William,  
 Trinity House, 174  
 Stevenson, Alexander, castle lessee, 225,  
 231, coal lessee, 249 ; David, architect,  
 268 ; Isabel, 10  
 Steward, Elizabeth, 6 ; Janet, 6 ; William,  
 suspected priest, 279  
 Stile, Walter, 307  
 Still, George, 37, 71, 74, 97, 178, age of, 78,  
 payment to, 76, sword bearer, 138, witness  
 67  
 Stillington, 68  
 Stipendiary priests, 48  
 Stobbs, John, 238  
 Stobbe Close, the, 33

- Stobert, Jane, 31  
 Stockings of worsted forbidden, 160  
 Stockton, 24, 71, 123, 236  
 Stoker, Thomas, 85  
 Stone, cutting for the, 88  
 Stone Hill, the, 189  
 Stony Flat, Gateshead, 169  
 Storehouse on the bridge, 75  
 Storehouse at the Manors, 97, 112  
 Storehouse in Newcastle, 351  
 Storge acre, 228  
 Storie, Elizabeth, 37; George, 37; Giles, 37; John, 101; Ralph, 37; Thomas, excommunicated, 147; William, 101  
 Storoo, Anthony, executed, 172  
 Storee, John, mariner, 23  
 Story, Janet, 9  
 Stote, Barbara, widow, 185  
 Stott, Richard, 68; Thomas, penance, 126  
 Stow, Dorothy, 237  
 Strafford, Earl of, 397  
 Straker, George, brewer, 349  
 Stranwich, John, hostman, 142, 154  
 Street music prohibited, 160  
 Streets to be swept, 367  
 Strolling players in Newcastle, 145  
 Stubbs, Mary, 326  
 Stubs, John, conservator, 215  
 Subsidy Rolls, 6, 129, 237  
 Subsidies and customs, 227  
 Subsidies and tenths, 85  
 Suburbs to be burned, 396  
 Sunderland, 174, 186, 187, 214, 226, 356, 394, 403, 406  
 Surgeon (a woman), 88  
 Surplice and hood, neglect to wear, 371  
 Surplice unwearable, 150  
 Surtees, Ann, 25; Ralph, 25; Robert, 25; Thomas, 237, 194, burial of, 289, commissioner, 136, 256  
 Surveyor-General of the North, 72  
 Sutton, Thomas, 18, 61  
 Swaddell, Ellinor, 136; John, 359; William, glover, 136  
 Swallow, George, executed, 87; Margaret, 133; William, yeoman, 221  
 Swan, Bartram, tailor, 288; Elizabeth, indicted, 288; George, postmaster, 347; Mr., postmaster, 331; Richard, 230, 237; Thomas, councillor, 138, notary, 249; William, preacher, 249  
 Swann, Dudley, yeoman, 128; Thomas, 191  
 Sweeping the streets, 367  
 Swenno, Mr., murdered, 211  
 Swinborne, George, brewer, 349  
 Swinburne, Anthony, 237, vote of, 252, 289; Eleanor, 294; Ellice, 50; Isabel, 289; Margery, 60; Sir Thomas, high sheriff, 283; William, 50; Mr., of Capheaton, 207  
 Swine in the churchyard, 173  
 Swordbearers, 13, 26, 64, 107, 138  
 Symson, William, 91  
 Tailbois, Ralph, 11, 43  
 Taillor, George, barber, 50  
 Tailors' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Talbot, Thomas, 327  
 Tanfield, 279  
 Taylor, Agnes, will of, 59; Edward, Trinity House, 22, witness, 5; Humphrey, 10; John, 42, brewer, 349, master and mariner, 318; Robert, witness, 9; Mrs. Ursula, 66; Valentine, 30  
 Taylor the water poet in Newcastle, 222  
 Team Bridge, 169  
 Tempest, Charles, coal vend, 242, stallholder, 332; Sir Charles, 289; Elizabeth, 35, 50, 289; Margaret, 35; Nicholas, 40, 72, 113, 118, 237, hostman, 142, 153, 182, sheriff, 227, 235, wife of, 87; Sir Nicholas, 389, coal vend, 242, salter, 342, vote of, 252; Robert, 294; Roland, 91; Rowland, coroner, 138, hostman, 142, 154; Thomas, 34, 329, coal vend, 242, 243, hostman, 180, 241; Sir Thomas, 276, 346; William, hostman, 194  
 Temple, Henry, 73, shipowner, 45, shipwright, 78  
 Ten of coal, explained, 149  
 Tenant, Jane, 222; John, blacksmith, 222  
 Tennant, Elizabeth, 13; Henry, merchant, 13, 32  
 Tenths and subsidies, 85  
 Tenter's Close, 345  
 Terence, comedy of, 145  
 Thief and reiver bell, 108, 207  
 Thirkeld, Dorothy, 95; Marmaduke, 84, 95  
 Thirlwall of Calgarth, 5; of Thwatterden, 6  
 Thistle Close, Gateshead, 169  
 Thompson, George, 230; Margaret, 58; Peter, 245, witness, 256; Richard, 59; Robert, Sabbath-breaker, 173; Thomas, brewer, 349, joiner 11  
 Thomson, Lawrence, excommunicated, 147  
 Thornell, Mary, 36  
 Thorp Bulmer, 11, 34, 73  
 Thorpe, 43  
 Thorpe, Christopher, 291  
 Thorney Close, 34  
 Thornton Hall, 259  
 Thornton, John, 102; Roger, 258  
 Thornton's Hospital (see "Hospitals")  
 Thorn tree, St. Nicholas' Churchyard, 36  
 Thynne, Captain, 72  
 Tickell, Richard, coal inspector, 357  
 Tides, deaths at high and low, 105  
 Tillage, decay of, 124  
 Tithe corn of Newcastle, the, 171, 252, 327  
 Tithe dispute, 146  
 Tithes, a cause respecting, 83  
 Tithes of Wylam, 96  
 Tobacco, monopoly, the, 378; sellers taxed, 358  
 Todd, Christopher's wife, 167; Henry, 7, 8; John, 101; Robert, councillor, 138, mettor, 193  
 Tomkins, John, gentleman, 326  
 Tomlinson, Barbara, 35; George, mason, 97; Mrs. 50  
 Tonge, George, marriage of, 332; Henry, 40; Isabella, 40; William, gentleman, 244  
 Tood, Margaret, 111  
 Topliff, Thomas, 47

- Totherick, Anthony, indicted, 288; Richard, brewer, 349; Robert, 10; William, slater, 222  
 Tower on the Bridge, 82, 310  
 Towers of the Wall, 32, 56, 364, 391  
 Towerson, Erasmus, 389  
 Town chamber box repaired, 70  
 Town clerk appointed, 140  
 Town clerk's office burned, 376  
 Town defences (see "Defences")  
 Town mills, the, 366  
 Town Moor, the, 407  
 Town records badly kept, 360  
 Townson, Henry, 50  
 Town's physician, 132, 300, 309  
 Trainbands, the, 350; of Newcastle, 359, 363, 364, 366  
 Trevor, Sir John, 177, 233  
 Trinitarian monastery, 10  
 Trinity House (see "Incorporated companies")  
 Trollop, John, kills William Selby, 343; Thomas, 291  
 Tromble, Robert, 6  
 Tronage, 140  
 Troops, mutiny among the, 392  
 Tucker, Thomas, 94, mariner, 23, master and mariner, 77  
 Tully, Janet, 6; John, 6  
 Tumbling before the mayor, 181  
 Tunstall, Sir F., 343  
 Turgis, William, 180  
 Turner, George, 6  
 Tuthill, the, 344  
 Tweed, the, crossed by the Scots, 397  
 Twigbird, Agnes, 9  
 Twisel, 199  
 Tyndell, Christobell, 16  
 Tyne Bridge, 38, 93, 118, 127, 159, 212, 325, 401, 410; chapel on the, 24; described, 325, 330; repair of, 8, 11, 74, 364; storehouse on, 75  
 Tynedale men executed, 286; in Newcastle, 348; thieves, 250  
 Tynemouth, 7, 27, 29, 40, 47, 146, 205, 214, 263, 272, 278, 311, 315, 322, 327, 330, 331, 351, 365, 410, 417  
 Tynemouth Abbey, 17  
 Tynemouth Castle, 49, 90  
 Tynemouth, Edward, 26  
 Tyne River, the, 17, 45, 53, 94, 139, 188; access to by night, 212; ballast shores, 215, 222, 230, 233, 257, 276, 293, 294, 304, 320, 347, 387; Charles I. on, 311, 319; conservancy, 53, 94, 120, 162, 203, 214, 222, 238, 251, 257, 276, 304, 314, 347; danger of blocking up, 213; description of, 330; foreshore question, 257, 276, 290, 327, 353; lighthouses upon the, 199; pilotage in, 22; ships in, 45; St. Anthony's picture in, 264; trade of stopped, 338, 417  
 Tytory family, the, 208  
 Tyzack family, the, 208  
 Udal, John, 27  
 Udale, John, puritan, 57  
 Unfreemen, complaint of, 315  
 Upton, 327  
 Urpeth, 279; Elizabeth, 72  
 Urthwart, Robert, clerk, 348  
 Urwin, William, penance, 309  
 Vandackam, Anthony, 274  
 Vandersteen, Zach, prisoner, 293  
 Vaughanne, Mr., 69  
 Velvet not to be worn, 160  
 Ventress, John, on bells, 108  
 Vicars (see "Churches")  
 Vienna, native of Newcastle at, 100  
 Vincent, Agnes, 107  
 Vinegar brewing, 98  
 Virginals, a pair of, 44  
 Virgin Mary Hospital (see "Hospitals")  
 Visitations of clergy, 23, 150, 153, 173, 182  
 Wafers for colliers, 282, 293  
 Wafting colliers, 294  
 Waister, Ralph, 147  
 Waits' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Walker, 276  
 Walker, Ralph, house-wright, 375  
 Wall, Henry, brewer, 349  
 Wall-knoll Close, 129  
 Wall-knoll, the, 95, 189  
 Wall-knoll Tower, 10  
 Wall, towers in the, 32, 56, 364, 391  
 Walls of Newcastle, the, 212, 290, 331, 364, 351, 352, 384, 391; repair of the, 74  
 Wallace, James, 136; Hugh, 135  
 Wallas, John, singing master, 36  
 Waller, Thomas, master and mariner, 245  
 Wallers' Company (see "Incorporated Companies")  
 Walles, John, 6  
 Wallington, 199  
 Wallis, George, conservator, 215, witness, 8; Giles, gaoler, 171; Richard, painter, 376  
 Wallsend, 48  
 Wallys, George, plumber, 97  
 Walters, —, chirurgeon, 9  
 Walton, Ranold, tailor, 11; Richard, mayor of Durham, 24  
 Walwick Grange, 29  
 Walworth, Low, 43  
 Wansworth, William, 128, yeoman, 166  
 War (see "Defences")  
 War, council of, 390, laws, etc., of, printed, 375  
 War ships, setting forth, 64, 115, 270, 281, 293  
 Ward, George, 327  
 Wardley, 83  
 Wares, customs on, 112  
 Warkworth, 2  
 Warkworth Castle, 17, 330  
 Warmouth, Henry, sheriff, 301, 304; William, 50, 191, 237, 338, 351, 364, alderman, 231, 329, 355, conservator, 215, 223, councillor, 138, mayor, 201, 206, 301, 304, 306, 153, 162, sheriff, 125, 132,  
 Warwick, Thomas, clerk, 24  
 Washington, 207, 219  
 Water bailiff, the, 320  
 Water, complaint about, 360



- Watergate, the, 39, 324  
 Water gates in Newcastle, 212, 216  
 Water, deaths at high and low, 105; ser-  
 geant, the, 122, 251; supply, 129  
 Waterhouse, the, 83  
 Waterhouse, Michael, 237  
 Watermen, number of, 348  
 Waterson, Edward, priest, 83; Katherine,  
 6; William, executed, 83, 87  
 Watkinson, William, Trinity House, 174  
 Watson, Isabel, 8; James, fugitive, 71;  
 John 25, 150, alderman, 22, buried, 37,  
 churchwarden, 136, councillor, 138, host-  
 man, 142; Magdalen, 8; Richard, 60;  
 Robert, 222; William, 101  
 Weavers' Company (see "Incorporated Com-  
 panies")  
 Wedding, dispute at a, 332  
 Weetlslade, 83  
 Welbury, Anthony, 68  
 Weldon, Michael, 345  
 Welland, William, 101  
 Well of St. Ellin, 85  
 Welton's land, 110  
 Westgate prison, 160  
 Westgate Street, 290  
 Westgate, the, 38, 44, 189, 191, 230, 379  
 West Spital (see "Virgin Mary Hospital")  
 Westmorland, earl of, 42  
 Wharey, George, 101  
 Wharfage, 140  
 Wharton, lord, in Newcastle, 93  
 Wharton, Mr., 41  
 Wheelbarrow councillors, 117, 118  
 Whessoe, the fine of, 68  
 Whetstones, 142  
 Whickham, 11, 18, 123, 180, 207, 212, 228  
 Whickham, the parson of, 415  
 Whilie, Richard, excommunicated, 147  
 Whinny Close, Gateshead, 169  
 Whipping Black Barborie, 291  
 Whistle, dispute about a, 19  
 Whistles, box of, 412  
 Whitall-dyke, 276  
 Whitburn, 107  
 Whitburn Lizard, 276  
 Whitby, 174  
 Whitcheater, 172  
 White, Anne, 38; Ann and Johan, 250;  
 Anthony, 38; Emmot, 250; Jacob, 38;  
 Margaret, 38; Matthew, 38, 291;  
 Miles, 30; Nathaniel, 38; Nicholas, 38,  
 291; Robert, 291; Roger, 38; Susan, 38  
 White Cross, the, 188, 267  
 White Friar Tower, 39, 193, 230  
 White Hall Dyke Nook, 343  
 Whitelock, Sir James, in Newcastle, 279, 284  
 Whitfield, Barbara, 47, 59; Dorothy, 47;  
 George, sheriff, 28, 35, 47; Henry, 47;  
 Isabel, 47; Nicholas, 47; Robert, 47;  
 William, 47  
 Whittingham, dame, 162; Sir Timothy, 162  
 Whitworth, 9  
 Whorlton coal seam, 150  
 Willy, Dorothy, 34  
 Willys, John, parish clerk, 334  
 Willmot, lord, 400  
 Wilson, Alice, 96; Ann, 25  
 Wiccors, Anthonie, shot, 392  
 Wiclif, Mr., 50  
 Widdrington, 157  
 Widdrington, Sir Ephraim, 244; Sir  
 Henry, 202, 213, 222, 244; Sir John, 43,  
 199; Mary, 43; Mr., 210; Roger, 213,  
 arrested, 210; Sir William, high sheriff, 347  
 Wigham, Bertram, 152; Edward, 152,  
 schoolmaster, 251; Henry, 152; Margaret,  
 152, 248; Robert, 152; Thomas, 152,  
 parish clerk, 152, sponsor, 112, yeoman, 77  
 Wilkinson, Alice, 348; Alison, 45;  
 Catherine, 35, 50, 61; George, 232, 237;  
 Janet, widow, 10; John, defaulter, 224;  
 Peter, slater, 97; Robert, 25, 47, mer-  
 chant, 74, shipmaster, 45, slater, 97, 238;  
 William, 35  
 Willey, Jane, widow, 24; Ralph, 24  
 Williams, George, seminary priest, 66  
 Williamson, Henry, 6; Hugh, 6  
 Willis, Dorothy, 326; Robert, 375  
 Willoughby, lord, in Newcastle, 130  
 Wilson, Christopher, sergeant-at-mace,  
 25; Elizabeth, 26; John, 6, 101;  
 Margaret, 32; Mark, 26; Richard, 26;  
 William, 26  
 Wimprey, Cuthbert, baker, 135, brewer, 60,  
 chamberlain, 138  
 Winchester, bishop of, 180  
 Windmill Hill, Gateshead, 169  
 Windoes, the, 351  
 Window glass, 417  
 Wine, the impost on, 378  
 Wingate, 206, 302; Grange, 226  
 Winlaton, 206, 207, 343, 388  
 Winston, 253, 299  
 Wishart, Dr. George, 373, 384  
 Witchcraft, 12, 183, 286  
 Witherings, Thomas, postmaster, 328  
 Witton-le-Wear, 299  
 Wills, Inventories, etc.—  
     Anderson, Francis, 185  
     "    Henry, 340  
     "    Isak, 221  
     "    Robert, 206, 388  
     Atkinson, Robert, 107  
     Briggs, George, 134  
     Barker, Robert, 59  
     Barnes, John, 9  
     Bowes, Anne, 259  
     Bowes, Thomas, 79  
     Brandling, Ursula, 82  
     Carr, Edward, 44  
     "    John, 44  
     "    James, 84  
     Chapman, Henry, 250  
     "    Marion, 250  
     "    Matthew, 178  
     Chaytor, Christopher, 71  
     Collingwood, Edward, 45  
     Cole, James, 16  
     "    Ralph, 36  
     Conyers, Thomas, 326  
     "    John, 225  
     Ellison, Cuthbert, 2  
     "    George, 11

Wills, Inventories, etc.—*continued*—

Farnaby, George, 152  
 Fenwick, Sir, William, 199  
 Fowberry, Robert, 246  
 Gray, Humphrey, 91  
   " John, 248  
   " Thomas, 247  
   " Cuthbert, 250  
 Grey, William, 31  
   " Elizabeth, 335  
 Gibson, John, 96  
 Gilpin, Bernard, 15  
 Greenwell, William, 110  
 Heley, George, 50  
   " Robert, 35  
 Heron, Thomas, 13  
   " Tristram, 23  
 Hobson, Anthony, 259  
 Hodgson, Richard, 33  
   " William, 130  
 Holdsworth, Richard, 107  
 Hucheson, Hugh, 133  
 Hudson, John, 24  
 Hutton, John, 194  
 Jenison, William, 43  
 Key, Thomas, 36  
 Lambe, Robert, 32  
 Lassels, John, 12  
 March, John, 67  
 Millerson, Humphrey, 8  
 Mitford, Christopher, 7, 252  
   " Robert, 74  
   " Henry, 104  
   " Jane, 178  
 Morpeth, Christopher, 68  
 Nicholson, Roger, 66  
 Rawe, Ralph, 107  
   " Roger, 106  
 Rayne, Nicholas, 329  
 Richardson, Ralph, 29  
 Riddle, Henry, 112  
 Ripley, Robert, 19  
 Robinson, Henry, 72  
 Rookbye, Laurence, 4  
 Selby, William, 199  
 Shalto, Mark, 79  
   " Ninian, 9  
 Sotheran, John, 12  
   " William, 2  
 Surtees, Thomas, 289  
 Taylor, Agnes, 59  
 Walton, Richard, 24  
 Watson, John, 37  
 Whitfield, George, 47  
 White, Matthew, 38

Wills, Inventories, etc.—*continued*—

Wigham, Thomas, 152  
 Wilson, Christopher, 25  
 Willey, Jane, 24  
 Yowton, Humphry, 9  
 Wodston house, 25  
 Woldhave, Henry, 228, 237; Richard, 192,  
   vote of, 252  
 Woman surgeon, a, 88  
 Wood, Anne, 198; Christopher, 198;  
   Nicholas, 6  
 Woodcroft, 43  
 Woodfal, John, 42, clerk, 89, 90  
 Wood for fuel, scarcity of, 211  
 Woodham, 43  
 Woodman, Anthony, Elswick, 283  
 Woodrington, Gareth, 71  
 Woodsword, 198  
 Wool, customs on, 77, 227; exported, 162  
 Wool market, the, 50  
 Workington, 266  
 Worsall, 34  
 Worsted stockings prohibited, 160  
 Wortley, Francis, 296  
 Wotton, Sir Henry, 100  
 Wrangham, Cuthbert, brewer, 349  
 Wreck of the sea, 54, 177  
 Wreighte, Margaret, widow, 172  
 Wrenn, Lindley, wedding guest, 332  
 Wright, Hugh, 283; John, 305; Richard,  
   283; William, 282  
 Wyckham, Bartholomew, 91; Clement, 91  
 Wylam, tithes of, 96  
 Wynn, Thomas, conservator, 215, 223  
 Wynne, Richard, 272  
 Wynyard, 43  
 Wysse, William, 172  
 Yard-stick quarrel, 35  
 Yarmouth, 175, 342  
 Yarnold, William, 268  
 Yokeflete, 43  
 Yonge, Henry, 102  
 York, 159, 227, 287, 293, 315, 320, 341, 397  
 York, archbishop of, in Newcastle, 98;  
   dean of, 69  
 Young, Henry, 101; John, 192; Robert,  
   churchwarden, 291, shipowner, 271; Roger,  
   mace-sergeant, 138  
 Younger, George, brewer, 349; Thomas,  
   brewer, 349  
 Younge's Fiddle, 87  
 Younghusband, George, executed, 211  
 Yowton family, the, 9  
 Zouch, lord, 93, 100

# LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS

## TO THE

# Chronological History of Newcastle and Gateshead.



His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales  
 His Royal Highness the Duke of Cambridge  
 His Grace the Duke of Northumberland, K.G.  
 The Most Noble The Marquis of Ripon,  
 K.G.  
 The Right Hon. Earl Percy  
 The Right Hon. the Earl of Durham  
 The Right Hon. the Earl of Ravensworth  
 The Right Rev. the Lord Bishop of Durham  
 The Right Rev. the Lord Bishop of Newcastle  
 The Right Rev. the Bishop of Hexham and  
 Newcastle (the late)  
 Lord Armstrong  
 The Hon. Albert Grey, Chathill  
 The Hon. Walter H. James, M.P.  
 Sir John Haggerston, Bart., Chathill  
 Sir Charles Mark Palmer, Bart., M.P.  
 Sir Matthew White Ridley, Bart., M.P.  
 Sir Charles Trevelyan, Bart. (the late)  
 The Right Hon. Sir George Trevelyan, Bart.,  
 M.P.  
 The Right Hon. John Morley, M.P.  
 Sir Edward Grey, Bart., M.P.  
 Sir Joseph Pease, Bart., M.P.

Sir Benjamin C. Browne, Knt.  
 Colonel Addison Potter, C.B.  
 Henry John Atkinson, M.P.  
 Thomas Burt, M.P.  
 James Craig, M.P.  
 R. S. Donkin, M.P.  
 James Joicey, M.P.  
 J. C. Stevenson, M.P.  
 W. D. Stephens, J.P., Mayor of Newcastle  
 George Davidson, J.P., Mayor of Gateshead  
 Price, John, J.P., Mayor of Jarrow  
 Joseph Baxter Ellis, Sheriff of Newcastle  
 Hill Motum, Town Clerk of Newcastle  
 J. W. Swinburne, Town Clerk of Gateshead  
 Horatio A. Adamson, Town Clerk of Tyne-  
 mouth  
 The Very Rev. the Dean of York  
 The Rev. Canon Lloyd, Newcastle  
 The Rev. Canon Franklin, V.G., Newcastle  
 Rev. J. C. Bruce, LL.D., D.C.L., F.S.A.  
 The Chevalier Best, Antwerp  
 The Newcastle Society of Antiquaries  
 Thomas Hodgkin, B.A., D.C.L.  
 W. H. Dyer Longstaffe, F.S.A.

### A

Adamson, H. E. P., J.P., Tynemouth  
 Adamson, Rev. E. Hussey, Heworth  
 Adamson, Thomas, Springfield House, Gosforth.  
 Aiston, Andrew, 144 Shields Road, Byker, Newcastle  
 Aitken, David, Somerset Place, Newcastle, (the late)  
 Allan, P., North Shields  
 Allen, Thomas, 285 Shields Road, Byker, Newcastle  
 Angus, George, Beech Grove, Newcastle  
 Angus, Jonathan, (the late) Alderman, Newcastle  
 Archer, Mark, Bensham Lodge, Gateshead  
 Arkness, John, Whickham, Gateshead  
 Armstrong, Dr. Luke, Eldon Square, Newcastle  
 Armstrong, George, Solicitor, Newcastle  
 Armstrong, P., 67 Shield Street, Newcastle  
 Armstrong, W. R., New Bridge Street, Newcastle  
 Arnison, Christopher Wm., M.D., Newcastle  
 Arthur, John, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Atkinson, H. J., Gunnerbury House, Acton, London  
 Atkinson, Major, Angerton, Morpeth  
 Attwater, Dr. Arthur, Whickham  
 Aynsley, Michael (Aynsley & Rennie), Newcastle  
 Aynsley, R. J., Gosforth, Newcastle

### B

Bainbridge, Thomas, The Grange, Gosforth  
 Bainbridge, Thomas H., Market Street, Newcastle  
 Bainbridge, William, Tynemouth  
 Baker, James, 13 Camden Street, Newcastle  
 Bartram, R. W., South Dock, Sunderland  
 Bates, Cadwallader J., J.P., Langley Castle  
 Beall, Robert, Portland Terrace, Newcastle  
 Beecroft, W. H., Gosforth  
 Bell, George, Alderman and J.P., Tynemouth  
 Bell, John, 26 Molendine Terrace, Gateshead  
 Bell, Robert, 40 Askew Road, Gateshead  
 Bell, Thomas, High Street, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Bell, Thomas, Windsor Terrace, Newcastle  
 Bennett, John R., Northumberland St., Newcastle  
 Benson, Mrs. J., 2 Abbotsford Terrace, Newcastle  
 Benson, T. W., 11 Newgate Street, Newcastle  
 Berkley, Philip A., Alderman and J.P., Jarrow  
 Bernasconi, A., Newcastle  
 Bigge, Chr. W., 22 Market Street, Newcastle  
 Bilton, Williams, & Co., Messrs., Sandhill, Newcastle  
 Bindley, Rev. F. W., Rectory, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Birkett, George, Ryehill, Newcastle

## B.

Blakey, G. B., Whickham, Gateshead  
 Black, James E. L. (the late), Newcastle  
 Blackburn, Thomas, Cotfield Terrace, Gateshead  
 Blair, Robert, Solicitor, F.S.A., South Shields  
 Blakey, James, 165 High Park Road, Newcastle  
 Bolam, Charles, King Street, Newcastle  
 Bold, Edwin, Longbenton  
 Bonner, John, 61 Rosedale Street, Newcastle  
 Booth, Geo. R., J.P., Sunderland  
 Bowman, Walter, 22 Windsor Terrace, Newcastle  
 Bowman, John, Quayside, Newcastle, and West Oakfield, Hexham  
 Bowden, Thomas, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Bowes, J. B., Low Friar Street, Newcastle  
 Boyd, J. F., Royal Arcade, Newcastle  
 Boyd, Dr., Somerset Terrace, Newcastle  
 Boyd, Julia, Moss House, Leamside  
 Boyle, Rev. J. R., West Boldon  
 Bradburn, John, Cullercoats  
 Bramwell, Thomas, 35 West Street, Gateshead  
 Bramwell, C. B., Whitburn Colliery and 20 Beverley Terrace, Cullercoats  
 Breckon, G. R., Sunderland  
 Brewis, George Robson, Tynemouth  
 Brightmann, H. A., Austrian Vice-Consul, Shields  
 Brockie, William, Olive Street, Sunderland  
 Brown, J., Newgate Street, Newcastle  
 Brown, Allen, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Brown, Peter, Newcastle  
 Brown, Thomas, Newcastle  
 Brown, Thomas (the late), Lombard Street, Newcastle  
 Brown, W. C., 133 Elswick Road, Newcastle  
 Brown, W. F., 5 Nelson Street, Gateshead  
 Brown, Chas. H., 279 Shields Road, Byker  
 Brown, Ralph, Benwell Grange, Newcastle  
 Brooks, John C., Lovaine Place, Newcastle  
 Brumell, George, The Willows, Morpeth  
 Bulmer, John, Pitt Street, Newcastle  
 Bunning, Theo. Wood, Neville Hall, Newcastle  
 Bushell, C. A., 1 Benton Terrace, Newcastle  
 Burnup, John, Ryehill, Newcastle

## C.

Cail, Richard, Alderman and J.P., Newcastle  
 Cairns, Thomas, Preston, North Shields  
 Campbell, Geo., 14 Grainger Street, Newcastle  
 Carneegie, J., 112 Northumberland St., Newcastle  
 Carr, R., 16 High West Street, Gateshead  
 Carr, Ralph, Claremont Place, Newcastle  
 Carr, Rev. T. W., Barming Rectory, Maidstone  
 Carr-Ellison, Ralph, J.P. (the late), Dunston Hill  
 Carr-Ellison, Col., J. R., Dunston Hill  
 Carr, Rev. H. B., Whickham  
 Carr, William, Cullercoats  
 Carter, Thomas, Gateshead  
 Cay, Matthew, Shipowner, South Shields  
 Cay, Alexander, Captain, 5 Higham Place, Newcastle  
 Chapman, Hedley, Councillor, Park Road, Newcastle  
 Chapman, Geo., Coney Street, York  
 Charlton, Geo., 41 Grainger Street, Newcastle  
 Charlton, J. G., 14 Normanton Terrace, Newcastle  
 Charlton, W., Corn-factor, Elswick Road, Newcastle  
 Christie, C. J. D., Colbeck Terrace, Tynemouth  
 Clark, T. T., Solicitor, North Shields  
 Clark, Geo., 25 Belgrave Terrace, Newcastle

## C.

Clark, J. G., Royal Museum, North Shields  
 Clark, J. W., Solicitor, Newcastle  
 Clark, J., 116 Askew Road, Gateshead  
 Clarke, T. J., Chirton Lodge, North Shields  
 Clarke, George, Plumber, North Shields  
 Clayton, Nathaniel G., West Denton  
 Clemmetsen, J., North Shields  
 Clennell, John M., 52 Derby Street, Newcastle  
 Close, Thomas, Preston, North Shields  
 Clough, E., 56 High West Street, Gateshead  
 Clutterbuck, Thos., J.P., Acklington  
 Cohen, Andrew M., Newcastle  
 Collier, George, Newgate Street, Newcastle  
 Cooke, Thos., Croft House, Newcastle  
 Cooke, R. H. N., 8 Osborne Avenue, Jesmond  
 Cooke, H., Barrister, West Grainger Street  
 Coote, Arthur, The Minories, Newcastle  
 Connell, Geo., 42 Mosley Street, Newcastle  
 Copland, Geo., Whickham, Gateshead  
 Corbitt, John, Highfield House, Gateshead  
 Coward, John, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Cowen, Joseph, Stella Hall (2 copies)  
 Cowen, Colonel John A., Blaydon  
 Cowens, Robert, 76 Mill Lane, Bentineck, Newcastle  
 Coxon, Herbert, Market Street, Newcastle  
 Cracknell, Captain, 104 George's Road  
 Craggs, Joseph, Percy Street, Newcastle  
 Crawford, Captain, Trinity House, Quay  
 Crowthall, Joseph, Newcastle  
 Criggs, Thomas, Captain (the late), Westgate Road  
 Crocker, James, Neville Street, Newcastle  
 Cross, William, Framlington Place, Newcastle  
 Cruddas, W. D., J.P., Elswick Dene, Newcastle  
 Culliford, T. H. W., Shipowner, Sunderland  
 Curry, W. R., 108 Portland Road, Newcastle  
 Cutter, John, Councillor, Newcastle

## D.

Daggett, Wm., Dean Street, Newcastle  
 Dale, John Broderick, J.P., Westoe, The Villas, Cleadon, South Shields  
 Dale, S. J., Dockwray Square, North Shields  
 Darling, Thomas, 45 Butcher Market, Newcastle  
 Davidson, J. T., North Shields  
 Davidson, John, Westmorland Terrace, Newcastle  
 Davidson, J. E., Quayside, Newcastle  
 Davidson, Joshua, Newgate Street, Newcastle  
 Davison, G. T., Sandhill, Newcastle  
 Dendy, F. W., 3 Mardale Parade, Gateshead  
 Deuchar, James, Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Deuchar, Robert, Eslington Road, Newcastle  
 Dickinson, William, Shipowner, Benton House, Newcastle  
 Dickinson, Robert, Solicitor, Newcastle  
 Dickinson, I. G., Banker, Newcastle  
 Dickinson, John (the late), 24 New Bridge Street, Newcastle  
 Dinning, Alfred Stephen, Ellison Place E., Newcastle  
 Dixon, C. W., Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Dixon, George, Tynevale House, Gateshead  
 Dobbing, Chas., 59 Gibson Street, Newcastle  
 Dolson, J. T., Windsor Place, Newcastle  
 Dodds, George, 71 High Street, Gateshead  
 Dodds, John, King Street, Newcastle  
 Dodds, A. P., Lansdowne Terrace, Gosforth  
 Donaldson, A., 41 West Street, Gateshead

## D.

Donnison, Fred, West Parade, Newcastle  
 Douglas, George, Bank Chambers, Newcastle  
 Dovener, Thos., Newcastle  
 Dransfield, John, Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Drummond, Chas. F., Howard Street, North Shields  
 Dudgeon, A. T., Baltic Chambers, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Dunford, Thomas G., 5 Osborne Avenue, Newcastle  
 Dunn, William, Forth Station, Newcastle  
 Dunn, Henry J., 486 Scotswood Road, Newcastle

## E.

Eccles, Edward, King Street, Newcastle  
 Edwards, Harry E., Byethorn, Corbridge  
 Eeles, J. Procter, Gateshead  
 Ellander, Samuel, Whickham, Gateshead  
 Elliott, George, Town Hall, Newcastle  
 Elliott, Thomas, Swalwell  
 Ellis, J. Barker, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Ellis, Richard, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Eltringham, Joseph T., South Shields  
 Embleton, Dennis, M.D., Eldon Square, Newcastle  
 Embleton, R. J., Lintz Green, Durham  
 Emmerson, E., Spring Terrace, North Shields

## F.

Faber, J. V., St. Nicholas' Buildings, Newcastle  
 Farrer, S. H., Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Fenwick, John George, J.P., Moorlands, Gosforth  
 Fenwick, Hugh, Banker, Newcastle, and Sandhoe House  
 Fenwick, George Anthony, Bywell Hall  
 Fenwick, Charles, M.P., 95 Vauxhall Bridge Road, London  
 Finlay, William (the late), High Street, Gosforth  
 Finlay, Evan, Shields Road, Byker, Newcastle  
 Fitzgerald, D. S., Westoe, South Shields  
 Fleming, John, Gresham House, Newcastle  
 Forrest, J., Howard Street, North Shields  
 Forsyth, Thos. H., Northumberland St., Newcastle  
 Forsyth, William, 424 Scotswood Road, Newcastle  
 Forster, George Baker, J.P., Newcastle  
 Forster, R. C., 19 Osborne Avenue, Jesmond  
 Fothergill, Edward, 10 Eldon Square, Newcastle  
 France, J. A., St. John Street, Newcastle  
 Fraser, Donald, N.E. Railway, Newcastle  
 Fretwell, E. C., 179 Shields Road, Byker, Newcastle  
 Furness, Charles, King Street, Newcastle

## G.

Gaddes, William, 95 High Street, Gateshead  
 Galbraith, Dr., Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Galloway, J., Cottenham Street, Newcastle  
 Gamwell, Mrs. J., Mill Lane, Bentineck, Newcastle  
 Garland, James, Jeweller, Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Gateshead Free Library  
 Gibb, Dr. Charles John, Newcastle  
 Gibb, George, Merchant Tailor, 32 Kyle Street, Newcastle  
 Gibson, Charles, North Shields  
 Gibson, Rev. Marsden, St. Thomas' Vicarage, Newcastle  
 Gibson, John, 2 Windsor Terrace, Newcastle  
 Gillespie, J. D., North Shields  
 Gillespie, Thomas, Morpeth  
 Glover, W., Architect, Market Street, Newcastle

## G.

Goddard, Alfred, 18 North Terrace, Newcastle  
 Goddard, F. R., Victoria Square, Newcastle  
 Goundry, Ralph, Captain, 14 Milton Street, Newcastle  
 Grabham, John, Grainger Street, Newcastle  
 Graham, William, North Shields  
 Gray, Edward, Benton Cottage, Benton  
 Grainger, T. C., B.A. (the late), Newcastle  
 Gray, Thomas, Alderman, Spital Hill, Morpeth  
 Gregory, J. V., Framlington Place, Newcastle  
 Gregson, Thomas, Alderman and J.P. (the late), Newcastle  
 Greenwell, G. C., Duffield, Derby  
 Gullachsen, L. H., Newcastle

## H.

Haansbergen, W. B. Van, Woodlands, Consett  
 Hadaway, George, Washington Terrace, N. Shields  
 Hails, William, 39 Park Road, Newcastle  
 Hall, James, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Harbottle, J., Sandhill, Newcastle  
 Harbottle, Joseph, Swalwell  
 Hardy, B. C., Linden Road, Gosforth  
 Hardy, T. Conyers, Osborne Villas, Newcastle  
 Harle, Thomas E., Broad Chare, Newcastle  
 Harle, Geo. (the late), 24 Eldon Place, Newcastle  
 Harper, Thomas, Sacriston Colliery  
 Harper, Thomas, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Hastie, Thomas, 119 Elswick Road, Newcastle  
 Haswell, James, Felling Chemical Works  
 Haswell, F. R. N., Architect, North Shields  
 Havelock, John, Bedlington Coal Office, Lombard Street  
 Havelock, Michael, Akenside Hill, Newcastle  
 Heath, G. Y., M.D., Newcastle  
 Hedley, George R., Newcastle  
 Hedley, Thomas, Alderman and J.P., Newcastle  
 Hedley, Thomas, Armorer, Mayfield, Gosforth  
 Hedley, William, Beech Grove, Chester-le-Street  
 Henderson, Thomas, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Henderson, Thomas, 13 Mulgrave Terrace, Gateshead  
 Henzell, W. M., Councillor, Newcastle  
 Henzell, Charles W., Tynemouth  
 Hepburn, Alexander, Councillor, 20 East Clayton Street, Newcastle  
 Herdman, Thomas, Westgate Road, Newcastle  
 Heslop, J. C., Maritime Buildings, Newcastle  
 Heslop, R. O., The Crofts, Corbridge  
 Hetherington, David, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Hewitson, George, Red Lion Inn, Earsdon  
 Hewitt, William, Painter, Felling  
 Hicks, W. S., Mosley Street, Newcastle  
 Hill, A. H., Cleveland House, North Shields  
 Hill, Thomas, 156 Askew Road, Gateshead  
 Hills, Robert, 78 Askew Road, Gateshead  
 Hirschmann, Augustus, Music Warehouse, Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Hodge, W., Dene House, Tynemouth  
 Hodgson, R. W., Alderman (the late), Gateshead  
 Hodgson, Edward, Teams, Gateshead  
 Hogg, George, High Street, Gateshead  
 Hogg, Thomas, 78 Park Road, Newcastle  
 Holl, W. H., Q.C., Newcastle  
 Holmes, R. H., Councillor, Newcastle  
 Holmes, Sheriton, Jesmond, Newcastle  
 Holmes, William, 72 High West Street, Gateshead

## H.

Hope, Robert, 47 Groat Market, Newcastle  
 Hopper, Charles, Croft  
 Hopper, John (the late), Lombard Street, Newcastle  
 Howden, John, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Howard & Wyndham, Theatre Royal, Newcastle  
 Hudson, R. M., Jun., Park Place East, Sunderland  
 Humble, C., Queen Street, Newcastle  
 Hume, Dr., Ellison Place, Newcastle  
 Hunter, J. J., J.P., Whickham, Gateshead  
 Hutchinson, J., Bearpark Colliery Co., Quayside, Newcastle  
 Hutchinson, C. & W., South Shields  
 Hutchinson, G., St. Nicholas' Buildings, Newcastle  
 Hutchinson, Geo., Manager, Tyne Ferry Co., Newcastle  
 Hutchinson, Wm., 1 Roseworth Villa, Gosforth

## I. &amp; J.

Ismay, Thomas, Whickham, Gateshead  
 Jack, Richard, Fitter, Dean Street, Newcastle  
 Jackson, Francis (the late), Market Street, Newcastle  
 Jameson and Schaeffer, Printing Court Buildings, Newcastle  
 Jobling, Mrs., Brookfield, Gosforth  
 Jobling, Mrs. B. H., St. Thomas' Street, Newcastle  
 Jobling, Wm. J., Lombard Street, Newcastle  
 Joel, Jos. Geo., Solicitor, Newgate Street, Newcastle  
 Johnson, J., Derwent Place, Newcastle  
 Johnson, E. D., Bebside, Northumberland  
 Johnson, Robert, Councillor, Stote's Hall, Jesmond  
 Johnson, R. J., Architect, Royal Arcade, Newcastle  
 Johnson, William, Shipowner, North Shields  
 Joicey, Wm. James, Esq., Urpeth Hall  
 Jones, J. Rock, Benton, Newcastle  
 Jopling, Wm. H., Brighton Grove, Newcastle

## K.

Kenier, George, Hayhole Farm, Percy Main  
 Kent, Mrs., 1 Westgate Road, Newcastle  
 Kirkley, James, Solicitor, South Shields  
 Kirkup, William, 95 High West Street, Gateshead  
 Kirton, William, Queen Street, Newcastle  
 Knight, G. S., Jun., London (2 copies)  
 Knott, George, York (2 copies)

## L.

Laidler, Adam, Eslington Terrace, Newcastle  
 Laidler, George Gavin, Northumberland St., Newcastle  
 Laing, Alexander, Cook Street, Newcastle  
 Laing, James, J.P., Deptford, Sunderland  
 Laird, James C., Councillor, Newcastle  
 Lamb, John, Architect, Clayton Street, Newcastle  
 Lamb, Thomas (the late), 32 Bewick Road, Gateshead  
 Latimer, Richard, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Laws, G. A., Prudhoe Castle, Newcastle  
 Laws, P. M., Photographer, Blackett Street, Newcastle  
 Lawson, Thomas, 29 Gibson Street, Newcastle  
 Leadbitter, Edward, The Spital, Hexham  
 Leathart, James, J.P., Breckon Dene, Gateshead  
 Liddell, Edward, Newton House, Chathill, Northumberland  
 Lockhart, H. B., Elswick Lodge, Newcastle  
 Logan, James, 25 Mosley Street, Newcastle  
 Lord, Riley, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Lowrie, William, Preston, North Shields  
 Lyall, George, Market Place, South Shields  
 Lyon, Robert D., 7 Sandhill, Newcastle

## M.

Macaulay, John, M.D., Rye Hill, Newcastle  
 Macintyre, James, Maritime Buildings, Newcastle  
 Mack, Richard, Holly Avenue, Newcastle  
 Maddison, Joseph, Teams, Gateshead  
 Main, D. D., St. Edmund's Road, Gateshead  
 Mansfield, Sergt., North Shields  
 Markham, R. L., Eldon Square, Newcastle  
 Marshall, Frank, Tynemouth  
 Marshall, Andrew, 411 Scotswood Road, Newcastle  
 Martin, A. M. (the late), 32 Hawthorn Street, Newcastle  
 Martin, William T., Manager, *Leader* Office, High Bridge, Newcastle  
 Mather, Miss, Bentinck Place, Newcastle  
 Mathwin, William, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Mañ, Adolph, 51 Sandhill, Newcastle  
 McGill, Augustine, Bath Lane High School, Newcastle  
 McKendrick, James, Newcastle  
 McKenzie, Thomas, Shields Road, Newcastle  
 McNabb, Capt., Cail's Buildings, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Messenger, John, Gosforth, Newcastle  
 Messent, Philip J., C.E., Tynemouth  
 Millican, R. H., Market Street, Newcastle  
 Milburn, John D., West Jesmond House, Newcastle  
 Miller, Thomas R., London  
 Milvain, Thos., Plowden Buildings, Temple, London  
 Mitcalfe, John Stanley, Tynemouth  
 Mitchell, C., J.P., Jesmond Towers, Newcastle  
 Mitchell, William, Gosforth  
 Moffat, David, Falconar Street, Newcastle  
 Moffitt, T. A., 90 High Street, Gateshead  
 Moore, John, Longbenton  
 Monkhouse, John, Barnard Castle  
 Montaldi, V. E., Scott Brothers, Newcastle  
 Morton, James, Saville Place, Sunderland  
 Morton, Hugh, Councillor, Grainger Street, Newcastle  
 Morton, T. H., J.P., Biddick Hall, Co. Durham  
 Murray, James, Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Murray, William, M.D., Jesmond Park, Newcastle

## N.

Nelson, Henry, J.P., Westoe, South Shields  
 Nelson, Thomas, J.P., 9 Windsor Terrace, Newcastle  
 Newcastle Public Library (2 copies)  
 Newcombe, F., New Bridge Street, Newcastle  
 Newton, Joseph, 7 High Street, Gateshead  
 Newton, W. H., Alderman, Newcastle  
 Nichol, B. G., 14 Leazes Terrace, Newcastle  
 Nichol, William, Portland Road, Newcastle  
 Nicholson, Eliza, Floor Cloth Manufacturer, Felling  
 Nicholson, John, St. Nicholas' Buildings, Newcastle  
 Nicholson, George, South Shields  
 Nicholson, John, King Street, South Shields  
 Nienstaedt, Louis, Copenhagen  
 Nixon, Hetherington, Printer, 42 Walker Terrace, Gateshead  
 North Shields Public Library

## O.

Ogilvie, James Finlay, Solicitor, North Shields  
 Orde, John, Brassfounder, Newcastle  
 Ormston, Charles W., Sandhill, Newcastle  
 Orwin, W. J., Barras Bridge, Newcastle  
 Otto, George, Shipowner, North Shields and Supply

## P.

Palmer, A. M., J.P., South Shields  
 Park, James, 5 Bigg Market, Newcastle  
 Parrish, Thomas, Shields Road, Newcastle  
 Pattinson, John, City Analyst, Newcastle  
 Pattinson, W. W., J.P., Felling House, Gateshead  
 Pattinson, Wm. J., Quayside, Newcastle  
 Pattinson, Wm., Dean Street, Newcastle  
 Pattison, William, 18 Askew Road West, Gateshead  
 Patton, George, Westgate Road, Newcastle  
 Pearson, T. S., Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Pease, J. W., J.P., Pendower, Newcastle  
 Phalp, A., Westmoreland Road, Newcastle  
 Philipson, G. H., M.D. and J.P., Newcastle  
 Philipson, Hilton, J.P., Tynemouth  
 Philipson, Jno., J.P., Victoria Square, Newcastle  
 Philipson, Joseph A., Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Phillips, Maberly, Grafton Road, Whitley  
 Pinkney, Thomas, Sunderland  
 Plummer, Benj., Chamber of Commerce, Newcastle  
 Plumpton, Robert, 9 Bigg Market, Newcastle  
 Porteous, R. J., Grainger Street, Newcastle  
 Pot, G. Vander, Rotterdam  
 Potter, W. A., J.P. (the late), Cramlington House  
 Poulton, Henry, Ely Street, Gateshead  
 Pragnell, T., Dean Street, Newcastle  
 Pretswell, E. F., Shields Road, Newcastle  
 Priestman, F., Queen Street, Newcastle  
 Priestman, Jonathan, J.P., Derwent Lodge, Shotley  
 Bridge  
 Proctor, J. H., Hardwareman, 29 Side, Newcastle

## R.

Railton, Isa, 275 High Street, Gateshead  
 Raine, B. W., Collingwood Street, Newcastle  
 Rea, Dr. William, City Organist, Newcastle  
 Rea, Jas., Beverley Terrace, Cullercoats  
 Readhead, John, J.P., South Shields  
 Reah, J. H., Lombard Street, Newcastle  
 Ridsdow, W., Grainger Street, Newcastle  
 Reid, C. J., J.P., Oakfield, Benwell  
 Reid, George, Belgian Consul, Newcastle  
 Reid, W. B., Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Rhagg, Adamson, Solicitor, Grainger Street,  
 Newcastle  
 Richardson, David, The Gables, Newcastle  
 Richardson, James, South Ashfield Villa, Newcastle  
 Richardson, James, Westgate Road, Newcastle  
 Richardson, J. H., Dean Street, Newcastle  
 Richardson, J. Wigham, Newcastle  
 Richardson, Thomas, Councillor, 7 Windsor Terrace  
 Ridley, Thomas, Barrister, 13 Grey Street  
 Ridley, Samuel, Victoria Square, Newcastle  
 Ridsdale, J., 4 Bigg Market, Newcastle  
 Ritson, Utrick A., J.P., Newcastle  
 Robinson, C., Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Robinson, J. W., Alderman and J.P., Gateshead  
 Robinson, Jos., Etal Villa, North Shields  
 Robinson, John, Pudding Chare, Newcastle  
 Robinson, T. W. U., F.S.A., Hardwick Hall  
 Robinson, Walter, Sunny Villa, South Shields  
 Robson, Emmerson, Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Robson, Isaac R., Low Chirton, North Shields  
 Robson, John S., 2 Burdon Terrace, Newcastle  
 Robson, Shaftoe, Town Hall, Gateshead  
 Robson, Thos., Whickham, Gateshead  
 Russell, J., Northumberland Street, Newcastle

## S.

Sadler, Mark, Newcastle  
 Salmon, John, Solicitor, Cleadon Park  
 Sanders, C. S. (the late), Victoria Square, Newcastle  
 Sanderson, T. B., Councillor, Newcastle  
 Scholefield, Henry (the late), Councillor, Newcastle  
 Scott, Fife John, St. Thomas's Place, Newcastle  
 Scott, George, Gladstone Street, Newcastle  
 Scott, J. O., Alderman and J.P., Newcastle  
 Scott, W. B., Cheyne Walk, Chelsea, London  
 Scott, William Henry, Tynemouth  
 Searle, Captain J. W., Clavemont Place, Gateshead  
 Senior, George, Belgrave Parade, Newcastle  
 Shand, Hinton, Ridley Villas, Newcastle  
 Shildon, Robert, Ormonde Street, Jarrow  
 Shipley, J. A. D., Newcastle  
 Short, Wm. (the late), North Shields  
 Simpson, John Bell, Hedgefield House, Blaydon  
 Simpson, Thos. (the late), Newcastle  
 Simpson, Thomas, 14 Haldane Terrace, Jesmond  
 Sinclair, A. & G., 151 High Street, Gateshead  
 Singleton, Albert, Side, Newcastle  
 Smith, Captain Fred. (the late), Cullercoats  
 Smith, George, Nile Street, South Shields  
 Smith, George, Secretary, Water Co., Newcastle  
 Smith, T. Eustace, Jun., Newcastle  
 Southern, Thomas, Prudhoe Street, Newcastle  
 South Shields Public Library  
 Spence, G. W., Royal Arcade, Newcastle  
 Spence, William, 1 Bottle Bank, Gateshead  
 Spencer, Edward, Teams, Gateshead  
 Spencer, John, 38 Sandhill, Newcastle  
 Spencer, John, Whorlton Hall, Newcastle  
 Stanley, William, St. Cuthbert's Road, Gateshead  
 Stephenson, W. H., Alderman and J.P., Newcastle  
 Stephenson, Thomas, King Street, Newcastle  
 Stephens, John, Police Supt. (the late), South Shields  
 Stewart, Geo., 127 Westmoreland Road, Newcastle  
 Stewart, William, Alderman (the late), Newcastle  
 Stobart, William, J.P., Pepper Arden, Northallerton  
 Strachan, Henry, Shipowner, Newcastle  
 Strachan, T. Y., F.S.S., Gosforth  
 Straker, Charles, Forth Banks, Newcastle  
 Straker, John, J.P. (the late), Stagshaw House  
 Strang, J. R., Stained Glass Works, Bath Lane,  
 Newcastle  
 Strangways, W. N., 59 Westmoreland Road, New-  
 castle  
 Surtees, C., 58 Dean Street, Newcastle  
 Surtees, R. W., Tynemouth  
 Surtees, Thomas, Westgate Road, Newcastle  
 Sutton, William, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Swanston, T. W., Quay, Newcastle  
 Swanston, A., 172 Rye Hill, Newcastle

## T.

Taylor, Hugh, Chipchase Castle, Northumberland  
 Taylor, Matthew, Deputy Chief Constable, Gosforth  
 Taylor, James J., 22 Roker Terrace, Sunderland  
 Telford, Thomas, Wharnciffe Place, Newcastle  
 Temperley, John, St Nicholas' Buildings, Newcastle  
 Temperley, Joseph, Quayside, Newcastle  
 Temple, William, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Thiedemann, C. R. F., 3 Lombard Street, Newcastle  
 Thompson, B. J., Higham Place, Newcastle  
 Thompson, Fanny, 14 Duke Street, Whitley

## T.

Thompson, G. H., Bailey Gate, Alnwick  
 Thompson, H. O. (Dunn & Co.), Newcastle  
 Thompson, James, Bath Lane, Newcastle  
 Thompson, John, Post Office Chambers, Newcastle  
 Thompson, James, Causey Street, Gosforth  
 Thompson, R., 6 Day Street, Newcastle  
 Thompson, Samuel, 87 King Street, South Shields  
 Todd, G., Westgate Road, Newcastle  
 Todd, William, 186 High Street, Gateshead  
 Tokell, J. W., South Shields  
 Towart, John, Bensham Road, Gateshead  
 Towers, Edward, Latimer Street, Tynemouth  
 Trotter, J. R., New Quay, North Shields  
 Tully, Charles, J.P., Tynemouth  
 Turnbull & Ross, 43 Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Turner, Thomas, 121 Pilgrim Street, Newcastle

## U.

Urwin, Michael, 29 Lawton Street, Newcastle  
 Urwin, R., Secretary, River Tyne Commissioners

## W.

Wait, John, J.P., North Shields  
 Waite, J. C. M., Whickham, Gateshead  
 Wallace, Henry, Trench Hall, Gateshead  
 Waller, Thomas, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Waller, John (the late), Royal Turf Hotel, Newcastle  
 Walker, Ernest A., Low Elswick House, Newcastle  
 Walker, John George (Walker & Emley), Newcastle  
 Walker, J. D., Solicitor, Newcastle  
 Ward, G. C., Custom House Chambers, Newcastle  
 Wardropper, E. S., 1 Elmfield Road, Gosforth  
 Warwick, John, 108 Rye Hill, Newcastle  
 Watson, Edward, New Bridge Street, Newcastle  
 Watson, Mason, Prudhoe Street, Newcastle  
 Watson, John, De Grey Street, Newcastle  
 Watson, P. T., 97 Clayton Street, Newcastle

## W.

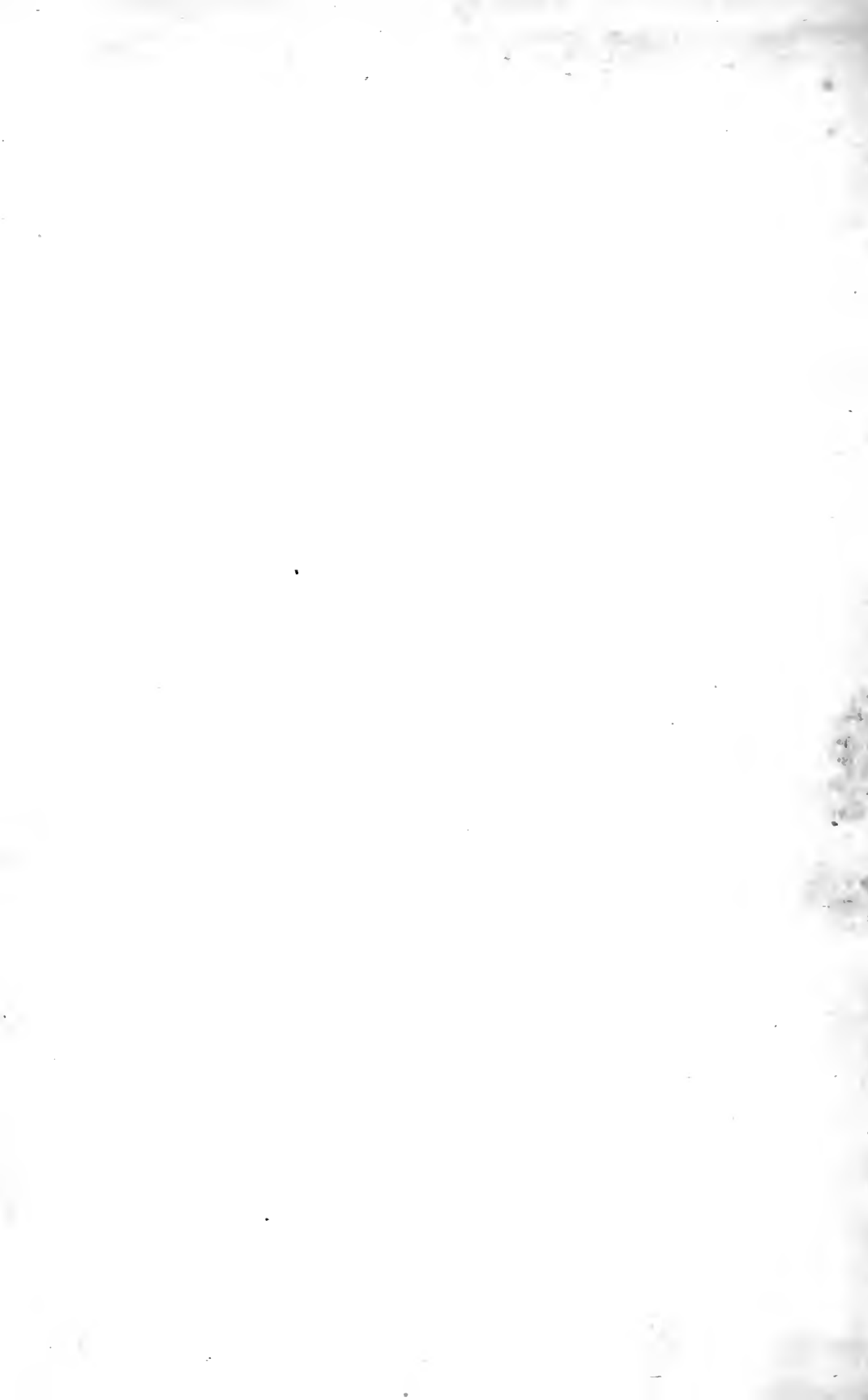
Watson, Dr. Robert Spence, Bensham  
 Watt, William, South Shields  
 Wear, Arthur T., 1 Wentworth Place, Newcastle  
 Welsh, Richard, 76 West Street, Gateshead  
 Westmacott, G. Fred., Solicitor, Newcastle  
 Westmacott, Percy G. E. (Armstrong, Mitchell, & Co.)  
 White, Junius, 1 Mill Lane, Bentinck, Newcastle  
 Wheatley, M. J., Winterbottom Street, South Shields  
 Whitfield, Mrs. Mary, Roseworth Terrace, Gosforth  
 Whitfield, Robert, Bloomfield Terrace, Gateshead  
 Wiencke, D. (Clephans & Wiencke), Side, Newcastle  
 Wightman, James, 3 Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Williamson, John, Alderman (the late), South Shields  
 Williamson, T., West Percy Street, North Shields  
 Wilkie, John, Shipowner, Tyne Street, North Shields  
 Wilkinson, W. B., J.P., Ellison Place, Newcastle  
 Wilkinson, T. T., Hawthorn Terrace, Newcastle  
 Wilson, Edward, Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Wilson, Fenwick, Marden Farm, Cullercoats  
 Wilson, Wm., St. Nicholas' Buildings, Newcastle  
 Wilson, John, Pilgrim Street, Newcastle  
 Wilson, J. Straker, Moorfield, Gosforth  
 Wilson, Thomas, Alderman and J.P., Riding Mill  
 Wilson, William, Councillor, Newcastle  
 Wilson, John, Monkhouse Farm, Tynemouth  
 Winter, Charles, Whickham, Gateshead  
 Wood, R. A., Globe Insurance Company, Newcastle  
 Woods, John Anthony, Benton Hall  
 Woods, Lieut.-Col., Holeyn Hall  
 Worthington, Ralph, 51 Gibson Street, Newcastle

## Y.

Young, Charles Gofton, Broad Chare, Newcastle  
 Young, Chas. Henry, Alderman (the late), Newcastle  
 Young, James, Low Moor Iron Works, Bradford  
 Younge, R. W. (the late), Tyne Theatre, Newcastle







PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

H&SS

A

388

V.3

UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C  
39 09 13 19 04 023 8